THE INVERTED DRAGON'S SCALE

by Liu Xia Hui

IDS-Toc

[The Inverted Dragon's Scale]

[IDS-Prologue]

[IDS-C01]

[IDS-C02]

[IDS-C03]

[IDS-C04]

[IDS-C05]

[IDS-C06]

[IDS-C07]

[IDS-C08]

[IDS-C09]

[IDS-C010]

[IDS-C011]

[IDS-C012]

[IDS-C013]

[IDS-C014]

[IDS-C015]

[IDS-C016]

[IDS-C017]

[IDS-C018]

[IDS-C019]

[IDS-C020]

[IDS-C021]

[IDS-C022]

IDS-C023

IDS-C024

IDS-C025

IDS-C026

IDS-C027

IDS-C028

IDS-C029

IDS-C030

IDS-C031

IDS-C032

IDS-C033

IDS-C034

IDS-C035

IDS-C036

IDS-C037

IDS-C038

IDS-C039

IDS-C040

IDS-C041

IDS-C042

IDS-C043

IDS-C044

IDS-C045

IDS-C046

IDS-C047

IDS-C048

IDS-C049

IDS-C050

IDS-C051

IDS-C052

IDS-C053

IDS-C054

IDS-C055

IDS-C056

IDS-C057

IDS-C058

IDS-C059

IDS-C060

IDS-C061

IDS-C062

IDS-C063

IDS-C064

IDS-C065

IDS-C066

IDS-C067

IDS-C068

IDS-C069

IDS-C070

IDS-C071

IDS-C072

IDS-C073

IDS-C074

IDS-C075

IDS-C076

IDS-C077

IDS-C078

IDS-C079

IDS-C080

IDS-C081

IDS-C082

IDS-C083

IDS-C084

IDS-C085

IDS-C086

IDS-C087

IDS-C088

IDS-C089

IDS-C090

IDS-C091

IDS-C092

IDS-C093

IDS-C094

IDS-C095

IDS-C096

IDS-C097

IDS-C098

IDS-C099

IDS-C0100

IDS-C0101

IDS-C0102

IDS-C0103

IDS-C0104

IDS-C0105

IDS-C0106

IDS-C0107

IDS-C0108

IDS-C0109

IDS-C0110

IDS-C0111

IDS-C0112

IDS-C0113

IDS-C0114

IDS-C0115

IDS-C0116

IDS-C0117

IDS-C0118

IDS-C0119

IDS-C0120

IDS-C0121

IDS-C0122

IDS-C0123

IDS-C0124

IDS-C0125

IDS-C0126

IDS-C0127

IDS-C0128

IDS-C0129

IDS-C0130

IDS-C0131

wink

The Inverted Dragon's Scale

Nì lín 逆鳞

Author : LiuXiaHui 柳下挥

Status : 350+ Chapters (Ongoing)

Synopsis [Book] :

Born naturally defective but possessed by the spirit of a divine dragon. Inheriting the divine dragon's will and power, growing scales and magical claws, imperial waters containing the breath of the dragon, travelling through clouds and summoning rain, an invincible physical body. In this world and era, countless men dream of slaying dragons. LiMuYang has always lived a hard life.

Synopsis [Translator] :

Li Muyang had always been a defected child. Struck by lightning when he was born, he had an ugly appearance, was slow and possessed below average levels of fitness. From when he was small, he had always been bullied and laughed at. But when he encounters an assassin, something in his body began changing…..Set in a pseudo modern world with fantasy elements, Dragon's wrath is a novel that incorporates Xianxia elements into contemporary life.

Notes :

The author Liu Xiahui is one of the twelve Olympians of the Chinese Novel scene. Famed for his works such as 'Personal Bodyguard' or ' Genius Doctor', he specialises in writing modern fiction.

Translated by Selda

Translation checked by Aran

Edited by Nicholas C.

Info :

http://www.novelupdates.com/series/the-inverted-dragons-scale/

Raws :

http://book.zongheng.com/book/512648.html

Translator :

http://www.arantranslations.com/dragons-wrath/

000 – Prologue

The rain poured down like a waterfall. Lightning tore apart the sky, causing cracks upon cracks to appear in the sky.

Black clouds covered the sky and hurricane-like wind howled. It was as if the entire world was about to undergo an apocalypse, being completely drowned by the rain.

Zi Chen hospital. Lu Xingkong, the head of the Lu family stood beside the luxury window of the resting room, looking at the strange weather outside. He said with a serious expression: “When a noble person is born, there is sure to be wind and rain. I wonder how Xiaoyu is doing?”

“Father, nothing will happen.”Lu Qingmeng said comfortingly. “The Zi Chen hospital is the best hospital in Tiandu, and Qin Xiaoluo is the best maternity doctor in the entire kingdom.”

Lu Xingkong pointed at the black and white balls of light intersecting in the sky and said with a smile: “Two dragons swallowing a pearl*, an abnormal apparition. This little kid can cause such a large disturbance just by being born, then what about after? The grandson of Lu Xingkong is sure to cause great things.”

“It’s best if he isn’t a lazy fellow.” Lu Qingmeng said teasingly.

“He dares.” Liu Qingkong said with a cold and serious glare. “The Lu family doesn’t need trash.”

Bam—

Another bolt of lightning streaked across, causing a pain in the eardrums and the shivering of their bodies.

If not for the fact that both Liu Qingmeng and Liu Qingkong had techniques inherited from their family, they would both be thrown to the ground by this sudden bolt of lightning.

The beasts in the forest were silent, the demons in the abyss bowing their heads.

Stars suddenly appeared above the torrential rain. The Milky Way was like a silver chain, spanning time and space, appearing in the sky.

This was chaos of time and space. It was something against the laws of Heaven.

The black and white globes in the sky began to rapidly fall down, exploding on the hospital. A golden colour illuminated the entire expanse of Heaven and Earth, then disappeared.

“Wa—-“

A mournful cried out from the delivery room, then the excited voice of the maternity doctor Qin Xiaoluo could be heard. “He’s born, he’s born–”

Liu Qingkong was immediately overjoyed but before a smile could fully form in his face, he could hear a sharp scream. “What happened?”

“Let me look.” Lu Xingming said, rushing towards the delivery room.

———

“What’s the situation?” Liu Qingkong said in a low voice.

“His skin is as black as coal. His eyes are blind, there is no way he can open it. All his apertures are bleeding and the pulse of his heart is extremely weak, I fear —“ The eyes of Lu Xingming was wet, hardly able to form words.

Pak!

Lu Qingkong slapped the coffee table in front of him, the thousand-year-old red sandalwood table made from the hands of a master being instantly crushed into pieces.

“The deceitful Heavens is oppressing our Lu family.”

“Father—-“

Lu Qingkong did not speak. After a long time, he asked in a long voice: “I’ve heard that a servant girl has just given birth to a girl?”

“That’s right, she is Xiaoyu’s servant.” Lu Xingming suddenly widened his eyes, his face filled with shock. “Father, you—“

“Swap them.”

“Father, he is still the flesh and bones of the Lu family. He is your true grandson…”

“I’ve already said, our Lu family doesn’t need trash.” Lu Qingkong strictly shouted. “Do you really want the outside world to know that a deformed child was born in the Lu family? Do you really want people to know, that the grandson of Lu Qingkong and the son of Lu Xingming was —struck by lightning?”

“But what about Xiaoyu…”

“She’s tired, she should rest.” The voice of Lu Qingkong lowered by a lot. “You go accompany her.”

Lu Xingming bowed his head, walking outside. His originally tall body was bent by the harsh and cruel reality.

“She’s called Lu Qiji**.” Lu Qingkong suddenly shouted.

“What?”

“The name of the girl is to be called Lu Qiji, this is the name I have chosen for her.” Lu Qingkong said. “Tomorrow morning, bring her out to receive the compliments and glory.”

“Yes father.” Lu Qingming said with a hoarse voice.

His son—

No, he never had a son before.

His daughter was called Lu Qiji.

*It’s some sort of eclipse.

** Lu Qiji, the second part of her name can also be interpreted as ‘opportunity’.

001 – Young man, Li Muyang!

Some people said that Li Muyang was a cripple.

This made Li Muyang angry, something that was especially out of character for him. It was originally a family secret, how could it be known by the people outside?

The grass was gently blowing, red flowers appearing in the green grass.

Small groups of young people were jumping in the grass, or singing and dancing, or playing wrestling games. Laughter flowed around everywhere.

As the high school examinations neared, every student was working hard to be admitted to their dream school.

The time till the high school examination was one month and seven days. The trip to the lake was organised by the school, with the purpose being to relieve the tension and stress of the students. Then, with their most optimal mental condition, take and eventually pass the examination.

Beside the edge of the lake, a young man with dark skin was sleeping in the grass.

Even when he is sleeping, the change in his facial expression was a sight to see. First was happiness, then was embarrassment, then it was a type of confusion and shame —

One month ago he was talking happily to the long legged beauty of class nine, Xu Shirui, during the seafood buffet in a hotel in the Imperial capital. Half a month ago, when the personality goddess of class three, Zhang Xingqi invited him to review homework at a coffee shop after school, he had immediately accepted. And right now, the omnipotent star student of class one, Cui Xiaoxin who just blocked him and wanted him to invite watch a movie, <<Titanic>>, he said he would consider, but he had never thought of rejecting…

Li Muyang, only wanted to graze one sheep, who would have thought he would graze an entire flock of sheep*.

Therefore, too many romantic debts caused him to be in turmoil. He did not want to become a playboy.

Bang Clang—-

A loud metallic clashing sound was heard.

An old steel bucket was kicked into the lake, floating for a few seconds before disappearing under the surface with a gurgle.

Li Muyang opened his eyes, a look of confusion on his face when he saw the students in front of him.

“Li Muyang —I think you shouldn’t be called Li Muyang, but you should be called Li SiZhu**. You sleep in class, you sleep when we’re on a trip, do you really sleep more than a pig?” A handsome young man with a fashionable haircut mockingly said, his voice intentionally loud to attract the attention of the surrounding students.

“Zhang Chen, can you not insults pigs? Even though pigs are lazy and greedy, but they at least have large heads and big ears with white skin. They can be quite good and cute — Have another look at Li Muyang, he is skinny and his skin is black, it looks like he a piece of coal —how can he be compared to a pig?” The muscular Yang Jun said in a backhanded way, invoking the laughter of everyone.

“Li Miyuan, didn’t you say you want to go fishing?” The flat headed fatty lifted a simple rod made from bamboo by the lakeside. “It looks like there was no catches, the bucket is empty. Did you not even manage to catch a single fish? It’s really regretful, just now everyone was saying that Li Muyang was sure to catch a lot since he fished for the entire afternoon. Then, we can a rich fish dinner, you’ve really made people too disappointed?”

Li Muyang rubbed his eyes, furtively wiping the water at the corner of his eyes with his sleeve.

This action made the laughter of the surrounding students even louder.

“What? Li Muyang had a look of confusion on his face. “What do you want to do?”

“Li Muyang, we only want to see – want to see your expression when you sleep.”

Zhang Chen smoothed back the hair of his head with his hand. He looked down at the Li Muyang lying in the grass below, saying “You’ve slept well today.”

“Very well.” Li Muyang truthfully nodded his head. This sleep made him feel extremely comfortable, it was only that fact that he had not yet decided on his answer that made him conflicted – should he agree to go and see the movie with Cui Xiaoxin?

“What did you dream about?”

The dark face of Li Muyang turned red, lowering his head in embarrassment. “I can’t say.”

“Say it.” Zhang Chen had the expression of a cat playing with a mouse. This was a game they had played often. They were the cat and Li Muyang was the mouse who they could play with as they want. “Don’t worry, we won’t laugh at you.”

“I can’t say.” Li Muyang said, shaking his head.

“Did you dream about the beauty in our class, Cui Xiaoxin?”

Behind the crowd, a pretty girl with long hair and a white floral dress frowned. Very evidently, she did not like them leading the fire towards her.

Li Muyang looked at Zhang Chen thoughtfully. He said: “You are not mature.”

“What?” Zhang Chen widened his eyes, not believing what he had heard. “What did you say?”

Did this guy eat the wrong medicine?

Li Muyang was an abnormal existence in their class. His skin was black, as if it was a piece of coal. Therefore everyone liked to call him ‘Black coal’ or ‘Black kid’.

And also because for Li Muyang, sleeping was akin to life. He slept when he was in the classroom, he slept when he was on trips. Everyone gave him a nickname, the ‘Sleeping god’.

Because of his dark skin and his tendency to fall asleep, he became a famous person in the school. Everyone would say, “heh, that is the black coal in our class”, “He’s probably asleep, he can sleep from the first lesson in the morning till the fourth lesson in the afternoon. By the time the teacher wipes the board, he still has not awoken…”

Li Muyang was the class treasure. He was a mascot.

When everyone’s mood was good, they would tease him. When they were in a bad mood, they would bully him.

Today, Zhang Chen’s mood was not good. He had stealthily confessed to Cui Xiaoxin, but was rejected by her. There was only one month left till the high school examinations, when at that time the class would be split up. If he could not establish a normal boyfriend-girlfriend relationship with her, he could only watch as such a beautiful flower disappeared from his life.

The more he thought about it, the more dejected he grew. Zhang Chen wanted to find something to vent his anger, when he saw the Li Muyang sleeping sweetly in the grass.

However, this little mouse would retaliate and laugh at him? It was an action no one would have expected.

“You’re not mature.” Li Muyang repeated his words. Although it was only four

words, but the power in these words were terrifying.

Zhang Chen's face darkened, his gaze fierce as he stared at Li Muyang. He said bitingly, "You're looking to die?"

Li Muyang fixed the messy bed hair of his head. He said: "You can so casually throw out such threatening words — I only want to ask, there are so many people passing the Naihe bridge***, how many people were sent personally by you?"

"Beat him up."

Zhang Chen shouted, rushing towards Li Muyang.

He had a body with a height of 1 metre and seventy eight centimetres. On top of that, he had a muscular body through often playing basketball. When he ran, he was like a majestic tiger. It seems as if just one impact was enough to send the dark and skinny Li Muyang flying.

This was the thought of everyone.

At this instant, Li Muyang was like a small boat within a stormy sea, a trembling lamb in front of a tiger. All it needed was a wave, a pounce, and Li Muyang would be destroyed on the spot.

Li Muyang did not move from his spot, as if he was entirely dumbfounded.

His pupils began to turn as black as an ink stone, blood lines appearing in the whites of his eyes.

At first the lines were faint and hard to see. But extremely rapidly, it was noticeable and disconcerting.

From a glance, it was as if they were red eyes covered in black ink. Like a black sun in the sky, surrounded by vast expanses of blood red undulating around.

Li Muyang's raised fist starting growing a thin scale, looking like a translucent fish scale. The fish scale glowed with a purple light, causing the dark skin of his hand to turn into a purple red.

Li Muyang's heart was filled ruthlessness, as if there was some negative emotions he needed to vent, as if there was some grievance that he had to tell.

Zhang Chen ran closer, then suddenly aimed a punch at Li Muyang's face.

Pak—-

Li Muyang moved his hand to block.

"Aaaa——"

Some people shouted in shock and others closed their eyes.

The skinny arm of Li Muyang, how could it possibly block the steel like arm of Zhang Chen?

On Zhang Chen's face, an excited smile appeared on his face. As the person's dark face came closer and closer, his expression was filled with disdain.

“A pitiful mouse —dares challenge a cat?”

At the time when the fists meet, the smile on Zhang Chen’s face froze. Then a majestic force travelled through his fist.

Overwhelming, unable to put up any shred of resistance.

Bang —

The body of Zhang Chen flew high up, then landed heavily on the grass.

The surroundings were so silent that one could hear the drop of a pin, apart from the gentle swaying of the willow and the chirping of the insects.

Li Muyang really sent Zhang Chen flying with one punch?

*It’s a pun, Li Muyang translates to ‘grazing sheep’.

**Li Sizhu – Dead pig

***place where dead souls pass through

002 – Ten thousand Koi's following the dragon!

The scene that happened was too quick and too sudden. No one was able to react at all.

At the same time of Zhang Chen’s attack, his two underlings also took action.

They planned to attack from three directions, forming an oval shape to siege Li Muyang. Although they both thought that Zhang Chen himself can easily deal with a person like Li Muyang, letting Zhang Chen attack by himself would seem to barbaric and would affect his image in the school as the male god.

If the three of them went up together, it would make them seem much more powerful and glorious. It would also make people think they are loyal to their friends.

They only ran half the distance and Zhang Chen was already sent flying; the sudden change in the situation made them unsure what to do.

Their plan to charge straight on took a sudden curve; they ran past Li Muyang at a distance and stared at him from the back at a daze.

“What just happened?” They were busy running and didn’t manage to see what had happened.

Li Muyang stared suspiciously at his fist.

What just happened? Why did he felt this sudden burst of violent anger?

Previously Li Muyang's principle would be to tolerate as much as possible, as long as the bullying was not too extreme he would always play along. This was the only way for him to keep any harm to a minimum. –What else could he do if he can't beat them?

Also, how did the usually weak Li Muyang send Zhang Chen flying with just his fist?

Moreover, he didn't even use any force——he wanted Zhang Chen to stand up and take another punch to see what would happen.

Zhang Chen moaned and struggled to stand back up.

He looked at Li Muyang with the expression of three parts surprise and seven parts panic.

He was shocked by the sudden overbearing strength of Li Muyang. How can Li Muyang have that kind of power?

He hated people who acted as a pig in order to eat a tiger!

Cha–

Cha–

Cha–

Li Muyang's white trainers treaded on the grass. Step by step walked towards Zhang Chen.

"Were you trying to attract the attention of Cui Xiaoxin?" Li Muyang asked.

It was Li Muyang turn to look down on Zhang Chen, he felt great. His black face appeared more handsome, resembling kingdom's idol Gu Tianyue[1] .

Zhang Chen's mouth opened but no words came out. He was like a fish that accidently jumped out of the water and about to die of thirst.

The fact that he liked Cui Xiaoxin was no secret. Being the captain of the basketball club, he was well known in the school, and this matter quickly spread throughout the school.

Although he did not look backed, he knew Cui Xiaoxin was standing behind the crowd; she always likes to stand at the very back of the crowd, looking as if keeping a distance from everyone.

Could he refute the question? He can't.

"You've used the wrong method." Li Muyang looked at Zhang Chen regretfully, shook his head and sighed: "Cui Xiaoxin is a smart, reserved and confident girl. She likes someone who is gentle, intelligent, and keeps to himself but also has the ability to take control of a situation. From time to time, you would come to ridicule me, bully me; you think by doing so you are showing your strengths?"

The maiden that was as quiet as a lily opened her mouth but ultimately did not say anything.

The look in her eyes was like a sharp blade, slicing through Li Muyang's skin to see what he was thinking inside his heart.

"This guy is not only ugly, he is also hateful." She thought to herself.

"The truth is that in the eyes of classmate Cui Xiaoxin, your acts are just tricks on the table. When people see these ugly acts, they look at you with contempt and disdain. You made me out to be a clown that anyone can bully, but in the eyes of Cui Xiaoxin, the way you pick on me is the same as a clown's antics——"

Li Muyang pointed at his own face and said: "Look at me–you're more handsome than I am. At the very least, you're whiter than me."

"You're taller than me, smarter than me and your grades are better than me—oh, that's right, you also play basketball. Whenever your play basketball, countless girls madly call your name, many times I wish I could be you."

"A philosopher once said: To see a person's world is to look at who his enemies are. You made someone like me your enemy or perhaps a target for you to bully. You have already dragged yourself to the same level as me. Do you think someone like you would be liked by Cui Xiaoxin classmate? Naive."

Li Muyang, you—"

"I'm very ordinary." Li Muyang smiled. His eyes that was as dark as his complexion demonstrated an indescribable charm. This is the most dazzling and

prominent feature of his face–actually his whole body. He continued: “You’re very pitiful.”

Zhang Chen was completely exasperated; He grabbed Li Muyang by the neck and screamed: “You say I’m pitiful? You say I’m pitiful?”

“They’re going to fight! They’re going to fight—-”

” Someone help, separate them—”

“Teacher, there’s a fight—”

————————

” Use more force.” Li Muyang’s eyes reddened and looked at Zhang Chen again: “Use more force, like you’ve always done when you step on me.”

“Poof——” Zhang Chen spurted out a mouthful of blood, either because of internal injuries or because of suffocation from resentment.

Zhang Chen, who had gone mad with anger, was pulled away by someone. Zhang Chen kicked Li Muyang’s fishing rod away and said with a cold smile: “Li Muyang, how can a trash like you pity me? You can’t study, you have no talent in any arts, you’re ugly, every test you’ve taken you were last place in the entire school——you haven’t even caught one fish before. Do you think you will have any future accomplishments? Your whole life, you’re just like a pig waiting to die.”

Li Muyang rubbed the red marks on his neck, smiled and said: ” You were just sent flying by me with one punch.”

“——-” “———”

Zhang Chen pointed at Li Muyang’s head, turned and walked away with big strides.

His underlings behind him were stunned for a while; they looked at Li Muyang like they haven’t met him before and hurriedly left.

The commotion was over and the crowd began to disperse. Li Muyang sat alone by the lake in a daze.

He was alone.

Just like how he had always been.

“Li Muyang—” a clear maiden’s voice could be heard, like the arc of vibration from the gliding of a kingfisher.

Li Muyang turned around to look; Cui Xiaoxin was standing where she was before.

This time it seemed to be different from the other times.

“You can criticise what I said was wrong, but that doesn’t matter—actually, do

you know? If you stay behind and talk to me, people will look at me with an abnormal expression–with shock, jealousy and also envy. A pile of mud that has suddenly sprouted a beautiful flower, is indeed something very fresh. To me, this is taking advantage of you. If I were you, I would pretend that nothing had happened whatsoever."

Without looking around, Li Muyang knew that the other students were shocked that the class flower[2] remained behind to talk to him.

Cui Xiaoxin did not think Li Muyang would say something like that; a layer of haze emerged in her beautiful eyes but then they suddenly became clear again. She pondered for a moment and said: " You got two things wrong and two things right."

"It seems you are willing to continue to talk to me. This is our first proper conversation right?" said Li Muyang smilingly.

"Firstly, I don't like Zhang Chen; in my eyes, his actions are indeed like a clown being vulgar to please the audience."

"Secondly, I agree with what you said– Men who are gentle and intelligent but keeps to himself; who have the ability to take control, but will not show off his skills; That is the type of men I like."

Li Muyang nodded his head and said: "Then what are the things that I said wrong?"

"Firstly, I don't think you're a clown, you're just a. ordinary person, the same as everyone else. You've done nothing wrong, just that–"

“Just that fate is unfair to me.” Li Muyang said smiled self-deprecatingly and said: “My family is poor and I am ugly. My brain is like a paste, I can’t study nor am I good at any arts. I can only accept fate and become a trash that’s waiting to die. Am I right?”

Cui Xiaoxin’s eyes once again glowed, the coal that was always bullied, whose name spread far and wide but still kept quiet and looked as if he had no extraordinary traits, actually had such keen and sharp thoughts.

” I just said it casually.” Li Muyang put a piece of peeled sugar cane grass into his mouth to chew, the bittersweet taste of the grass juice slightly eased his mood.“ You can continue”.

“It is inevitable that a pile of mud can sprout a flower. On the outside it is not pleasing to the eyes but in reality it provides a rich source of energy for the flower to grow and bloom–It will make every effort and use that fresh flower to prove the value of it’s existence.

“Do you think I am the same as mud, in that I can be saved?” Li Muyang smiled out loud and said: “Then you are willing—“

“I’m not willing.” Cui Xiaoxin bluntly declined. “I’m going to West Wind University, where will you go? We’re people of different world, our paths in the future will not intersect.”

West Wind University was the greatest university in the kingdom, while Li Muyang, with his current grades, can’t enter West Wind University — he could only attend lower class University if he had the money.

“What you said is right.” Li Muyang smiled bitterly and said “This is also the reason why I have never confessed to you even though I liked you.”

“What?”

“This is very normal isn’t it? I’m the same as any adolescent teens, always attracted towards the beautiful girls in the school. We like Xu Jiarui, Zhang Xinqi and also you. We want to be as dazzling as you are, we hoped to be able to walk alongside you, and we all dreamed that you would sit in the back seat of our bicycles smiling like a blooming flower.”

“However, beautiful girls all direct their attention to outstanding boys–we can only look from afar, if any one of the beautiful girls suddenly do come close and say a few words without warmth or with indifference, then it is already a gift bestowed by the heavens.” Li Muyang looked up at the clouds and said: “What else is there?”

Cui Xiaoxin stayed silent for a long moment and finally said with a voice full of complex emotions: “Good luck.”

After she finished, she turned and walked towards the area where the crowd was gathered.

The lake trip has ended and what awaited them is a brutal fight.

“Cui Xiaoxin—” Li Muyang suddenly shouted.

Cui Xiaoxing turned around to look, she could not understand what else the boy, whom she had no previous communications with in the past, had to say to her.

In fact, no matter what he said would not help. It was impossible for her to accept a love that arose out of sympathy.

“I refuse.” Li Muyang shouted.

“What?”

“You asked me to go to the cinema with you, I decline.” Li Muyang said in a bright voice.

Under the sun, Cui Xiaoxin’s face was as translucent as jade, she coldly stared at Li Muyang and said: “Idiot.”

The sun was setting; the sunset lake was wrapped around by the crimson light of the sunset, creating a surreal scene.

Li Muyang carries his fishing rod, getting ready to follow the rest of the crowd home.

Whoosh —

On the surface of the tranquil lake, a colorful koi fish suddenly leapt out.

Just like getting some sort of hint, countless koi fish jumped out from the sunset lake.

There were tens of thousands of them, countless. They covered the sky, and their colourful scales concealed half of the sunset lake.

In places that can't be seen by the eyes, there were even more koi rushing towards the lake as if on a pilgrimage.

They surged towards the direction of where Li Muyang just left, just like following after their most devoted faith.

If a wise old man were to witness this scene, he would definitely exclaim: ten thousands of Koi following the dragon, this is a once in a millennium-Koi following the dragon!

[1] Louis Koo – he's an actual guy lol xD

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Louis_Koo

[2] Prettiest girl in the class

003 – Shinian too sweet!

For some people, they are angels with broken wings; for some people, heaven wants to break your wings and make you die.

According to his mother, when Li Muyang was born, he was struck by lightning. He almost didn’t get a chance to catch a glimpse of the beautiful world.

This made Li Muyang confused; what terrible things had he committed in his previous life to receive this sort of punishment?

Li Muyang was only able to open his eyes and see when he was three years old. At the age of seven he still walked unsteadily. At the age of ten, he was able to finally learn to talk, and up to the age of fourteen he did not have the strength to tie up a chicken; hence could not undergo sword training like other youths of a similar age.

It is said that when the heaven closes a door for you, he will leave a window open for you.

If you are have no talent in any arts then focus on studying, you might turn out to be a great scholar, drink a few bowls of liquor and write a few poems that will be passed down generations. However, every time Li Muyang opened a book he would feel groggy and when he looked at the blocks of words he would quickly fall into a deep sleep.

Classmates would shout at him, but he would not wake up.

The teacher would scold him, but it was no use.

Once a new teacher broke a board eraser because Li Muyang was sleeping in class–this was an eraser was made out of metal alloy.

However, Li Muyang remained unchanged.

Sleeping was his way of life!

As long as you let him sleep enough, everything was negotiable.

If he didn't sleep well, he would easily lose his temper.

Just like today by the lake, the conflict between him and Zhang Chen resulted due to his lack of sleep and the disturbance of his sweet dreams.

At the least, this is what Li Muyang believed inside his heart.

Wua—

Li Muyang head emerged from the bathtub, taking deep breath after deep breath.

He had settled down for a long time but there was still a feeling of excitement within his heart.

"I'm not a trash?" Li Muyang thought. "Back then, that punch—what

happened?”

He carefully looked at his own arm, his skin was as delicate as always. Only that it was a fuchsia colour caused by immersing himself for so long in the hot water.

Thud!

The shower door was being pushed with great force, a cute girl rushed in and anxiously asked: “Brother, did those assholes bully you again?”

Her eyes were large, like a natural contact lense effect. In addition to her eyes, which looked like ink-black pearls, it seemed like hardly any white could be seen within her eyes.

The tip of her nose was slightly pointing out, and her lip was small and red. Her skin was like snow that would melt from a gentle touch.

Her white shirt dazzled the eye and her black skirt swayed slightly from running too fast.

The girl has a sweet face. Even if she was in a state of anger, people would still have the urge to pinch her little face.

Li Shinian, Li Muyang’s younger sister by three years. Both of them are attending Renaissance High School, Li Muyang was in third year and Li Shinian was in second year.

Of course, compared to her ‘trash’ brother Li Muyang, Li Shinian was different.

Ever since a young age, she had been very smart. From Kindergarten onwards she was the best at everything. Every year she would have the most outstanding scores and won the crown of first place at school.

She started studying three years later than Li Muyang who is only one year below him. This was due to her intelligence, which allowed her to skip years during primary and junior high school.

During high school, they also recommended her to skip more years but her parents rejected this. They believed that the three years of high school are the most important time; if you prepare and study hard during these three years you could be admitted to the best university in the kingdom.

Li Shinian was the little beauty of the school. She is also one of the famous flowers of the school. The fact that she was able to know in the first instance that Li Muyang was bullied was no surprise to Li Muyang.

Li Muyang used his hands to cover parts of his chest, smiling wryly he said: ” Li Shinian, how many times have I told you to knock before you come in–”

Li Shinian never developed the habit of knocking on the door; every time, she entered his room she would barge in. Because of this, Li Muyang did not know how many times he had to hide his secret stash of <<Playboy>>.

Every time Li Shinian caught Li Muyang reading these ‘bad books’, she would righteously snatch it off and turn it into their parents.

The strange thing is that their parents never had a discussion with Li Muyang about this problem.

“Oh.” Li Shinian’s pretty face turned slightly red. she swept her glance over Li Muyang and went back out again.

When she left, she did not forget to close the bathroom door.

Knock, knock, knock—

Knocking noises came from outside.

“Brother, can I come in?” Li Shinian shouted behind the door.

Li Muyang had a look of helplessness, then said: “Come in.”

Li Shinian once again pushed open the door and hurriedly asked: ” Big brother, which asshole was bullying you?”

“I was the one bullying people.” Li Muyang said. He wasn’t bragging to his sister, he did send Zhang Chen flying with one punch. Many people had witnessed this.

“Big brother which asshole did you bully?” Li Shinian face eased slightly and asked.

Li Muyang was touched. He thought to himself – as expected of my little sister.

He smiled at Li Shinian and said: “Zhang Chen tried to bully me, but I bullied

him instead——but that's in the past now."

"Well—" Li Shinian looked up with her little face and coldly snorted out loud. Her short hair swayed along with her movements. "It's Zhang Chen again, I won't let this go."

Li Muyang quickly tried to dissuade her: "Shinian, it's in the past now, I didn't get hurt, don't go and find trouble–you're a girl after all–"

Li Muyang was worry for Li Shinian's safety. After all, Li Shianian is a fragile girl, if Zhang Chen was to take his anger out on her, that would definitely be the situation that Li Muyang does not want to see the most.

He would rather suffer by himself.

This was one of the main reasons why he would not have any conflict with anyone, and why he didn't tell his family that he was bullied at school.

"No way." Li Shinian said firmly: "No one can bully my big brother."

"Shinian—"

"Big brother, I'll give you a baked sweet potato" Li Shinian pulled out a box from her bag. Without opening the box, a rich aroma of sweet potato could be smelled. "Here, eat it while it's still hot."

Li Muyang was touched. He took the sweet potato and divided it between the two of them. "Here, we will each have a half."

“You eat it, I won’t eat any.” Li Shinian shook her head. “Eating sweet potatoes will make me fart.”

————

————

————

At the school’s basketball gymnasium, an inter-school friendly match was taking place.

As the captain of Renaissance High School’s basketball club, playing basketball everyday was compulsory for Zhang Chen.

Furthermore, he liked hearing the sweet cheering voices of girls as he wipes his sweat.

“Zhang Chen”

“Zhang Chen, you’re the best—-”

“Zhang Chen, I love you, Mwha—-”

————————

Zhang Chen could not help but look towards the spectators once again. There was a group of girls cheering for him. Among the group, the girl that was cheering most actively and the sweetest-looking girl was someone he had never seen before.

“What a pretty girl–”

“What a nice voice–”

“She looks so cute jumping up and down, just like a little angel.”

Since he frequently glanced over at the crowd, the ball that his teammates tried to pass to him was snatched off him several times.

The game paused; a group of players surrounded him and started winking.

“Captain, there’s new goods–”

“A fresh little cabbage, this time I give ninety points–”

“I give ninety-eight points, if you don’t want her then give her to me——”

“When you’re tired of eating large meals, you have change and eat something lighter right?”

Zhang Chen joked around with his teammates for a while then headed towards the crowd.

The fans in the gallery immediately screamed, some people brought drinks, some brought towels and some people prepared a lunchbox filled with love.

“Thank you. Thank you everyone.” Zhang Chen smilingly thanked his fans for their care.

He saw the little maiden that cheered the loudest hiding behind the crowd, looking thrill to see him but was embarrassed to come too close.

A new fan, that’s understandable.

Zhang Chen left the crowd and headed towards the little cabbage.

“What’s your name?” Zhang Chen’s voice was mellow. His face was full of gentleness and smiles.

“I’m called Shinian.” The maiden lifted her head to take a glance at Zhang Chen, then like a frightened rabbit lowering her head quickly.

“Shinian, that’s good name–” Zhang Chen smiled more attractively.

What a great girl, the moments when she looked up and back down caused his heart to beat rapidly.

She reminded Zhang Chen of the poem written by the kingdom’s poet Xu Zhimo: ‘The bowing of her head is gentle, just like the cool shyness of a water lotus.’

“Thank you.” The maiden said with her cheeks in red.

“What are you holding in your arms?”

“It’s the soup that I made”

“Really? Nowadays not many girls know how to make soup, the guy that you’ve made the soup for really is someone to be jealous of.”

“This is for you—“The maiden lifted her head, with eyes like the starry sky, she looked firmly into Zhang Chen’s eyes.

“Really?” Zhang Chen chuckled. “So I’m the lucky guy?”

“My skills are not very good–”

“It’s already rare for a girl to make this.”

“It might not taste good–”

“It’s the thought that counts.”

“Will you really drink all of it?”

Zhang Chen smiled and said: “Of course. How can I let a beauty’s goodwill go

to waste?”

The maiden handed over the thermos mug in her arms and said softly: “Careful it’s hot.”

“It won’t be.” Zhang Chen felt his heart is beginning to melt. He opened the thermos mug and said: “This is the best present I’ve ever received–”

He lifted his head and began to gulp it down.

While drinking, his eyebrow wrinkled.

Thinking about what the maiden had said: ‘My skills are not very good,’ he continued drinking.

As he continued to drink, he felt convulsions occurring in his stomach.

Thinking what the maiden had said- “It might not taste good”, he insisted on drinking.

As he continued to drink, his heart began to ache.

Remembering what he said to the maiden- “How can I let a beauty’s goodwill go to waste?” He wanted to endure till the end.

“Ouuu”

He turned around abruptly and vomited on the wooden floor behind him.

004 – Tears too salty!

Zhang Chen vomited until his heart tore and his lungs cracked; he felt as if his liver and guts were cut into pieces. He even vomited the breakfast he ate the day before yesterday.

At first he bent over then he fell on one knee on the ground, when he could no longer throw up, his body went limp and he lied flat on the ground.

All his energy was drained; right now he looked like a cripple.

Zhang Chen had snot flowing from his nose and residues of the liquid on the corner of his mouth; he looked miserable.

“Are–are you okay?” Li Shinian face was full of worry, her eyes were red as if about to cry.” How could it be? The soup that I made whole heartedly, did it really taste that bad?”

Zhang Chen lifted his head to look at the little cabbage in front of him, he wanted to give her a comforting smile but instead his smile was uglier than him crying. His voice was coarse and weak as he asked: “What–what did you put in the soup?”

“What I added?” Li Shinian had an innocent expression as she thought carefully and said: “Ribs, Female Ginseng, Chinese Yam, Liquorice, Chameleon Plant, Bat faeces, Wulingzhi–”

“Wulingzhi?” Zhang Chen felt his stomach convulsing again. He began to retch,

clutching his throat he angrily said: “that’s–that’s faeces from a complex-toothed flying squirrel, you– you added faeces in the soup?”

“Wulingzhi is a traditional Chinese medicine, it stops bleeding and disperse blood stasis. For example, a lady’s uterus can bleed a lot during her period, which can cause a lot of purple bruises; it can reduce lower abdominal pain. You like playing basketball, your body will inevitably have bumps. I am using Wulingzhi to help your blood circulation, whats wrong with that?”

“You–You–”

Zhang Chen pointed his trembling finger at Li Shinian but couldn’t say a word.

Seeing their idol throwing up to such extent, other cheerleaders all crowded over.

“Little Chen-Chen, are you okay? My heart aches.”

“Zhang Chen, what’s the matter? Are you sick?”

“Hey! Who are you? What did you give our Zhang Chen to drink?”

———————-

These reinforcements were already jealous of Li Shinian beauty that emanates from the inside to the outside, and her spirited temperament made her extremely attractive.

Seeing the special attention and care Zhang Chen give Li Shinian, even rejecting their mineral water and soft drinks, caused them to be extremely upset. They didn't think that after drinking her soup Zhang Chen would vomit wildly. Of course they had to take advantage of this moment to stand up and accuse Li Shinian.

"I just–" Li Shinian showed a timid expression then suddenly raised her voice and said: " I just gave him a cup of fecal soup."

"What did you say?" The girls were enraged, getting ready to come forward.

Li Shinian picked up the soup mug by her feet that Zhang Chen threw to the ground.

She looked regretfully at the cartoon stickers of Paul Frank on the mug and sighed: " This is my favourite thermos flask but it was wasted by a pig."

She applied some force onto her fingers that were holding the mug, only to hear the "Ka Cha" sound. The special materials of the thermos flask were shattered into numerous pieces.

Crash—

The girls who gathered around retreated like the tides.

Li Shinian threw the remaining of the mug onto Zhang Chen, took out a handkerchief from her pocket and wiped the soup stains carefully on her hands.

Her handkerchief was white but her hands were whiter than the handkerchief.

Then, under the attention of everyone, Li Shinian raised her head and left.

Just as she reached the door of the hall, Li Shinian suddenly turned around, and with a face full of sweet smiles she said in a soft voice: “Be good now, don’t bully my brother again.”

“Who is your big brother?” Someone asked.

“Li Muyang.”

——“————”

————

————

Pa!

Zhang Chen slammed his palm on the table and angrily shouted: “Li Muyang, stand up.”

Li Muyang was still sleeping sweetly and showed no reaction at all.

Zhang Chen knew Li Muyang’s habit, and so used even more force to slam the table.

PaPaPa–

Right now it was noon-break. Seeing Zhang Chen with a group of people rushing towards Li Muyang, the gaze of the whole class all shifted towards them.

Cui Xiaoxin was absorbed in reading an economics journal, but she heard the loud noise of slamming she glanced over at the commotion, with her brows knitted slightly.

Not because she had the intention of helping Li Muyang but because she did not like being disturbed.

Under the anticipation of the whole class, Li Muyang finally woke up. He lifted his head up from behind a pile of books, looked at Zhang Chen who was standing in front of him and said: “You’re here to bully me again?”

“——” Zhang Chen’s eye turned red, almost bursting into tears.

Just who is bullying whom here? I am here to bully you—- Do I look like someone who is here to bully someone right now?

He tried to quell his anger, staring aggressively at Li Muyang and asked:” Li Muyang, why are you so despicable?”

“Despicable? “Li Muyang scratched his ruffled bed hair, wanting to make them slightly more docile. However the hair hasd a strong personality; no matter how hard Li Muyang tried they refused to bow down.

Li Muyang used one hand to compress his hair, over time it would naturally be flattened. He adopted a funny posture while lifting up his head and said:" Everyday I'm either sleeping or preparing to sleep. The only value I have is some ornamental value from being bullied by you guys; all the other times I don't even have a sense of belonging. How do you have the nerve to use that kind of word to describe me?"

"Li Muyang, you despicable human, you two-faced three knives[1], you pretend to be a pig to eat a tiger–" The more Zhang Chen thought about it the more angry he got. Added to his violent stomach muscle convulsions, he felt he was about to go insane. "You obviously had some skills but yet you pretended to be a weakling that can't even stand in the wind. If you really are what you portrayed, then that time at the lake-how did that punch–why was that punch so powerful? In addition to all this, you let your sister—- you let your sister to lay a trap to harm me by making me drink soup.—-"

"Li Shinian?" Li Muyang frowned, stared at Zhang Chen and asked: "What did you do with her?"

Although the little girl wanted to protect him from when she was young and she was hundred times better than him at everything, she is still just a girl and also his sister. If Zhang Chen dared to lay his fingers on her, Li Muyang will definitely rush into a conflict with Zhang Chen.

"What did I do to her?" Why don't you ask what she did to me? Zhang Chen burst into a rage. Before he was able to jump up, he clutched his stomach once again and quickly squatted down.

"Pu—"

After a loud farting sound came from his lower body, his stomach felt a lot better.

However, when his stomach felt better, he himself did not feel any better.

Seeing the whole class staring at him with wide eyes, people covering their nose and fanning the air, Zhang Chen felt an impulse to find a hole to crawl into.

From a young age until now, he was brought up in flowers and praises, when was he subjected to such humiliation?

“Brothers, beat him up.” Zhang Chen yelled angrily.

The basketball players behind Zhang Chen immediately surrounded Li Muyang, preparing to teach him a lesson to vent their captain’s anger.

Li Muyang extended his arm, punching the air and looked at Zhang Chen: “You were sent flying by me with one punch.”

————“————-”

Those who witnessed Li Muyang sending Zhang Chen flying with just one punch immediately retreated, those that did not witness the scene also backed off after seeing the others retreating.

Everyone retreated; it must have been very powerful.

Thus, except for Zhang Chen who was still standing next to Li Muyang, everyone else had fled far away.

Li Muyang covered his nose with one hand and used the other hand to fan the air with a textbook. He angrily said to Zhang Chen:" I can smell Chamelion plant, Bat faeces, and Wulingzhi—- There is poison contained within your fart. Why don't you let everyone else judge, just who is the despicable one?"

Zhang Chen's nose turned sour and large drops of tears started to flow down.

He was crying.

[1]double-dealing and back-stabbing

005 – Morals are declining!

Li Muyang was a kind-hearted person. He had never bullied anyone when he was growing up.

In his memory, he had not done this sort of thing before.

Furthermore, by being bullied, just how much juvenile crime did he manage to alleviate for the kingdom?

If these energetic and impulsive youths didn't spend all their time insulting and venting their anger on him, more awful things could have happened to other people.

And so, Li Muyang can't help but think about that question–he's like an angel, why was he struck by lightning?

The incident of being struck by lightning had always troubled Li Muyang. From deep within he feels a strong sense of inferiority.

Think about it, the heavens have sent you to this world but also regretted it and tried to take you back. Anyone that had gone through this experience would feel insulted?

It is precisely because he was struck by lightning that caused Li Muyang's body to be in such a bad state since he was born.

Other kids grew up in honey pots but Li Muyang grew up in medicinal pots.

He just remembered-his family often went to see an old taoist monk.

He wore a dirty threadbare cassock for years; his sleeves were extremely greasy as if he hid a roasted chicken inside. Every time he came over, he would be holding a big box of medicinal herbs and head straight into the kitchen. Then you would see a bowl filled with medicine more disgusting than his sleeves, and Li Muyang was forced to drink it.

Initially Li Muyang would refuse, the old monk also didn't force him. After playing with his fingers for a little bit, Li Muyang would foolishly drink it by himself.

Li Muyang always felt that his actions did not leave a good taste, but he was too young to find suitable words to express his feelings at the time.

Afterwards, he unintentionally discovered a term that made his body feel numb all over: "Masochist!"

When Li Muyang was eleven years old, the old taoist monk touched around his body and said to Li Muyang's parents with a face filled with relieve: "This old monk did not fail to accomplish his mission and managed to preserve the life of young master. Being strike by lightning, it is a miracle that the weak body of a mortal was able to survive. Young master would have great luck and a long life; I do not need to say that he would be rich in the future. Although his life is preserved but his body and qualities are significantly different from others and so learning martial arts and sword training is impossible. And his brain–"

"His brain is damaged?" Li Muyang's father asked anxiously.

“About that, no.” The old monk shook his head and told Li Yan not to panic “Because of the lightning, he suffered a huge impact to his brain. There’s a possibility that he may become stupid–maybe as he grows older and with his luck, he will recover day by day.”

“His brain is damaged.” Li Yan’s face became ashen. “Master, Is there nothing you can do?” This child has an unfortunate life, since birth he had encountered so many hardships. Can you see if there’s anything you can do?” You’ve been in Jiangnan for years, I can guarantee you have good wine and food each day–no, we pledge to make you live comfortably. Please?”

“Do your best, listen to destiny.” The monk refused with a smile and said: “I have a tribulation coming up that I need to prepare for. We will meet again.”

Ever since the old taoist monk left, Li Muyang had missed him.

This was because he was the only one that would call a the taxi driver’s son as ‘young master’. Li Muyang likes title a lot. Unfortunately no one had called him by this title ever since.

Many people call him by ‘little charcoal’ instead.

Anything you do for three years is enough for you to become an expert in that field. Li Muyang had eaten Traditional Chinese Medicine for ten years and so was able to easily identify all the pungent herbal medicine from Zhang Chen’s fart.

“Public morals are degenerating with each passing day, human hearts are not what they were in the past. Zhang Chen, I did not think you would malicious

methods to get back at me. Each time you took the initiative to bully me first, how can you blame me for what happened by the lake? You ran over to hit me, I just blocked for a moment and you flew off. Can you blame me?”

Li Muyang could not continue talking because he realised that Zhang Chen had started crying.

He really was crying. Tears were dripping down, just like someone had taken him out and abused him over a thousand times.

Li Muyang was stunned. He whispered: “What’s going on with you?”

“Don’t say anymore–” Zhang Chen wiped his tears and said: “Please, don’t say anymore–”

Li Muyang had a wary expression as he asked: “Are you intentionally playing the sympathy card?”

“Li Muyang–” Zhang Chen clutched his stomach, he couldn’t even stand straight anymore. “Nobody has ever bullied someone to death like you before.”

Li Muyang glanced around and saw the attention of the whole class was on both of them.

Lee Muyang panicked slightly and hurriedly explained: “Classmates you saw what happened, he came to bully me first, I didn’t do anything–”

“You accused Zhang Chen’s of concealing poison in his farts.” Someone said in defense of Zhang Chen.

At that moment, a lot of people began to feel sympathy for Zhang Chen.

Although they did not like Zhang Chen, they always felt Zhang Chen likes to show off and often bullied students in the class.

They've all seen people being insulted, but never insulted to this extent.

"His farts really does have the scent of Wulingzhi, if you don't believe me you can smell it for yourself." Li Muyang said with a serious face. He was always a serious person, serious when sleeping and just as serious when explaining. "He doesn't look for anyone else and just stood right next to me when he released the fart– Wasn't this all to get revenge for that time when I embarrassed him?"

"——""———"

Zhang Chen felt like he was being stabbed with a knife again.

Ding—

The bell rang.

The kingdom's history teacher Zhao Mingzhu stepped inside the classroom as the bell rang. When she stood on the platform getting ready to start class, she noticed her most beloved student Zhang Chen was in tears standing next to Li Muyang. She couldn't suppress her anger and shouted: Li Muyang, what did you do this time?"

Li Muyang saw Zhao Mingzhu's anger was directed at him. His speculation was

right, he stared at Zhang Chen coldly and said: “I knew that you were deliberately playing the sympathy card.”

“——“”———”

Li Muyang lifted his head and looked directly at Zhao Mingzhu’s eyes and said: “Miss Zhao, I didn’t do anything.”

Zhao Mingzhu became angrier, in her ten years of teaching, she had never seen a student as lazy and as stupid as Li Muyang.

She stormed towards Li Muyang, slammed her palm onto his desk and shouted: “Li Muyang, you think I’m an idiot? If you did nothing why is Zhang Chen like this? Zhang Chen will stand in front of you and cry like that? Can you use your brain? Can you be a little more smarter than what we imagined you to be?”

“Teacher, I really didn’t do anything.” Li Muyang said with a wry smile:” Zhang Chen rushed towards me and slammed my desk, and he said I’m despicable——”

“Then that means you’re really are despicable.” Zhao Mingzhu interrupted Li Muyang’s explanation. “What type of person you are, do you think I don’t know? From the first day I met you, I knew you were an obstinate person.”

Zhao Mingzhu is a famous teacher in Jiangnan, she transferred to Renaissance High school to teach the history of the kingdom to third year. Her reason for doing so was to help the students who were already half a step into elite universities to achieve better results.

What she did not expect was that on the first day of her transfer something

unpleasant happened. There was someone who dared to sleep in her class.

This was extremely disrespectful to her, and she see saw it as contempt and provocation towards her.

Zhao Mingzhu flew into a rage and shouted aloud a few times with no response, holding an eraser she slammed the eraser during the lesson until the eraser was broken into pieces———-

Zhao Mingzhu asked if Li Muyang could refrain from sleeping in her class, but to her surprise Li Muyang shook his head and said ‘ No ‘.

From then on, the more she looked at this student, the more of an eyesore it was to her. As long as she has the opportunity, she would taunt him, she treats him as a typical case of a bad student. Even the description of pig that was used to describe Li Muyang originated from her.

But no matter how she insulted Li Muyang, he would laugh it off and doze off again.

“Miss Zhao, I think you’ve misunderstood, you don’t even know the situation.”

“Misunderstood? “Zhao Mingzhu sneered again and again. She turned to look at the students behind and asked: “Did I misunderstood Li Muyang? ”

No one dared to answer her.

Everyone could tell that Zhao Mingzhu did not want to let Li Muyang go, who

would be willing to stand up and defend Li Muyang and offend the demoness?

“Li Muyang, do you know who was the first emperor of the West Wind Kingdom? Do you know what year did the incident ‘ Rule of the new Moon’, which affected the whole continent, started? Do you know what two sages the words ‘Wen Cheng Wu De’ refers to? ”

“Li Muyang, you don’t know anything–All you do is eat and sleep. I find it strange, did your parents pay for you to come to school and sleep? If you enjoy sleeping so much, just go home and sleep all you want–no one will disturb you, don’t waste your parent’s money. “

“Miss Zhao–”

“Get out.”

“Teacher–”

“Out!”

“Teacher, you’re wrong.” A soft voice suddenly sounded out of the noisy atmosphere of the classroom.

006 – Be careful of lightning!

“You’re wrong.” A gentle but firm voice spoke out, like a fish bone.

You can swallow it but it will make your whole body feel uncomfortable and your throat to bleed.

Zhao Mingzhu suddenly turned around and shouted in anger: “Who says I’m wrong—”

Seeing who it was, Zhao Mingzhu’s attitude became much more kind, she said with a smile: “Cui Xiaoxin, what did you just say? This doesn’t concern you, quickly sit down.”

Cui Xiaoxin was a good student; she was the best in the whole class and the whole school. If there aren’t any setbacks, she definitely would be admitted into the West Wind University.

Zhao Mingzhu doted on her, she liked a hardworking and talented young girl.

Most importantly she is beautiful and reminded Zhao Mingzhu of herself when she was younger.

“Miss Zhao, I’m saying you’re wrong.” Wearing Renaissance High school uniform’s Cui Xiaoxin stood up, as straight as a pencil, and said once more.

Zhao Mingzhu showed an awkward expression and said with a cold and serious tone: “Cui Xiaoxin sit down.”

“Teacher, you should apologise to Li Muyang.” Cui Xiaoxin had no intention to back down and said aloud: “This conflict has nothing to do with Li Muyang, he is also a victim.“

Zhao Mingzhu looked at Cui Xiaoxin suspiciously, then looked at Li Muyang, and said with a pained expression: “Cui Xiaoxin how could you defend someone like Li Muyang?”

“Teacher, I’m not defending anyone, I’m just saying what needs to be said–” Cui Xiaoxin was calm and was not overwhelmed by Zhu Mingzhu pressure. ” I just said what I saw, what I witnessed with my own eyes.”

Cui Xiaoxin scanned the audience, everyone who met with her gaze all lowered their head in shame.

“They don’t dare to say it, but someone has to stand up. Otherwise, whether it’s black or white, we will never find answers. What happened was Zhang Chen came over and slammed Li Muyang’s table, disturbing everyone’s break time. Li Muyang did not do anything to Zhang Chen–as for why Zhang Chen was crying, you have to ask him yourself.”

Zhao Mingzhu stared at Cui Xiaoxin and asked: “Cui Xiaoxin, what is your relationship with Li Muyang?”

“We are classmates.”

“Student Cui Xiaoxin, you should be aware of the consequences.” Zhao Mingzhu gaze pondered around and said: “After the lake trip someone told me that you and Li Muyang have a close relationship. I didn’t believe it at the time–

Xiaoxin, Li Muyang had already given up, with his present attitude and grades, there is no chance of him getting into any university. You are different from him, you're aiming to go to West Wind University, the best university in the kingdom– This is an important period, you can not afford to have the slightest slackness. This is the same for other students."

Zhao Mingzhu waved her hand and said: "Xiaoxin, you sit down. Zhang Chen, return to your seat. Li Muyang, you stand at the door."

" Miss Zhao–" Cui Xiaoxin tried to explain yet again.

"Cui Xiaoxin Classmate." Li Muyang interrupted. He smiled, pretending that he did not mind at all and said: "Doesn't matter, I can still sleep outside–start class. I don't want to waste the precious time of other students, I wish that you all achieve good results."

As he spoke, he headed towards the exit of the classroom.

This is the kind of person Li Muyang is, he doesn't want his parents to be heartbroken and Shinian to get involved, so he had never told them that he was bullied.

He doesn't want Cui Xiaoxin to get into a conflict with Zhao Mingzhu, and so he pretended he doesn't care at all.

He feels he's just a pile of mud, how could he hinder other peoples' future?

Seeing Li Muyang smiling brightly at her and then watching him exit the classroom under the gaze of everyone, Cui Xiaoxin suddenly felt an unusual

discomfort in her heart.

The matter did not concern her from start to finish but she feels she had been severely wronged.

Biting her lips, Cui Xiaoxin pushed away her chair and rushed outside the classroom.

“Cui Xiaoxin, what are you doing?” Zhao Mingzhu shouted behind.

“I’m going to help Li Muyang with his school work.”Cui Xiaoxin’s voice floated from a distance.

——————

——————

At the café: Cui Xiaoxin ordered a latte, Li Muyang did not look at the menu and said to the waiter: “I’d also like a latte.”

He then crossed his hands on the desk and stared brightly at Cui Xiaoxin who was sitting opposite him.

Until now, Li Muyang still couldn’t believe his eyes.

The charcoal-black and stupid ‘pig’ student of Renaissance High School is sitting with the school’s goddess Cui Xiaoxin and drinking coffee together. This

was something that was taboo to even dream about.

Li Muyang looked at Cui Xiaoxin and asked: “Do you really want to help me with my lessons? ”

Cui Xiaoxin’s eyebrows twitched, looked at Li Muyang and said: “If you don’t love yourself, then how can you expect others to love you? If one doesn’t respect themselves, then how can anyone respect you? I know you’re not stupid, since the day we talked, I know you’re smart—-if you try harder and don’t sleep during class, then your grades would be better. The teacher wouldn’t adopt a prejudiced attitude towards you and classmates won’t feel you’re holding them back–”

Li Muyang looked at Cui Xiaoxin and asked, “Do you not blame me for holding the class back? ”

“I did.” Cui Xiaoxin said without any hesitation. “A couple of times our class should be top of the year but you dragged down our class average score—– otherwise, Miss Zhao wouldn’t have been so angry.”

“——” “———-”

“Don’t you think, as a boy, with perfectly fine hands and legs, and also being very young——- it’s very irresponsible to muddle through the days?”

Although Cui Xiaoxin is blaming Li Muyang and criticising him for not seeking to improve, Li Muyang was still very happy at this moment. Within Cui Xiaoxin eyes he could see care, concern and a burning expectation.

Such expression he had only seen countless times in his parents' eyes, and also his sister Li Shinian's eyes.

At this moment, he also saw such expression in a girl that originally had nothing to do with him.

"I've been struck by lightning." said Li Muyang.

He decided to disclose his experience to Cui Xiaoxin, even though it's incredibly embarrassing and humiliating. It may even attract her laughter at him.

Cui Xiaoxin looked shocked, her little snow-white face turned red, then purple. Her eyes were full of disappointment, and she said angrily: "Li Muyang, you're hopeless."

After she finished, she turned around getting ready to leave.

She was extremely angry, but was even more disappointed. She hesitated when she chased after him, and now that slight hesitation had turned into a sense of deep regret.

He was treated unjustly but what did that had to do with herself? Why get she involved with this matter?

"Cui Xiaoxin, Cui Xiaoxin, you have to be more cautious from now on–"

Li Muyang panicked; he didn't know whether he had said something wrong or did something wrong.

He just wanted to let Cui Xiaoxin know that he did strive to be better, he is not complacent, and he doesn't want to be lethargic. In contrast, he wanted to learn more than anyone else. He wanted to put in more effort than anyone else.

However——however, he was struck by lightning——

Except for his sister Li Shinian, Li Muyang had no experience of communicating with girls of his age. Let alone the goddess that he had secretly admired.

Li Muyang followed and got up, he clumsily explained: "Cui Xiaoxin classmate, don't misunderstand—I did not say that you're lightning——"

"—-"

"No, what I mean to say is that your words are not like lightning at all–"

"—-"

The more desperate Li Muyang tried to explain, the more angry Cui Xiaoxin was.

The angrier Cui Xiaoxin was, the more desperate Li Muyang became.

Cui Xiaoxin had already arrived at the exit; she reached out and grabbed the glass door handle.

As long as she pushed through the transparent door, Li Muyang would not have any connections with her again.

Just like what she had said before.

Li Muyang did not want to give up, because this is the first, and the only girl who cared about him.

This concern was different from his sister Li Shinian's.

His sister's concern was family affection, and Cui Xiaoxin is—friendship.

Li Muyang was eager to have this friendship, because since he was small he had never had a friend.

"Cui Xiaoxin–" Li Muyang shouted.

Cui Xiaoxin hesitated, but turned around after all.

Li Muyang was out of breath. Even if it's just to say a few words, because his emotions were too intense, it left him feeling fatigue.

As he looked at Cui Xiaoxin's eyes, his voice was husky with a trace of shyness, he stammered: "I just forgot to say——-your ponytail, looks very nice."

007 – Indirectly saving the country!

Right now it was class time. Two students wearing Renaissance High's uniform appearing at a cafe was rather distinctive.

And so, customers that came to enjoy a cup of coffee and to read half a novel in the afternoon to kill time, all directed their gazes on to Li Muyang and Cui Xiaoxin.

Furthermore, a pretty girl like Cui Xiaoxin sitting together with Li Muyang, a dark ugly boy, they wanted to know the deep reason behind this.

Turns out, it's just another couple doing silly things.

"Its a typical drama of 'toad trying to swallow a swan'. The boy might confess. At times when the women is in control and the man is submissive, the man must absolutely not open his mouth so easily—-"

"Oh, the girl is angry—"

"The girl is leaving but was called back by the boy—–What's the girl called? Cui Xiaoxin? A good name. However, the boy is persuading her to stay, stubborn guy this one-"

"What?" He said what? Her ponytail looks pretty—-I did not expect it, can't believe he is such an expert in this field–"

——————-

Cui Xiaoxin blinked her eyes, one hand holding the brass knob, but her footsteps stopped and she did not push the glass door open.

She saw that Li Muyang's showed an expression of confusion, eyes of panic, and trying to open his mouth and speak, but don't know what to say, was he going to confess?

However, even if that's the case, she won't accept it.

He's asking for a rejection!

"I just forgot to say–your ponytail, looks very nice." Li Muyang said to Cui Xiaoxin. Because he was nervous, he was stuttering.

This made him a little annoyed, he's worried that his stuttering undermined the effect of that sentence. Li Shinian had always told him to say it casually to not let people feel that it is forced praise.

His performance today –should not make people feel very endearing, right?

Cui Xiaoxin stood at the doorway for a moment, turned around and walked toward Li Muyang.

This surprised many of the guests in the café; they had never thought that the charcoal boy had this sort of ability. One word from him is enough to make a girl in a state of anger to surrender.

She now returned and sat on a sofa in front of Li Muyang, just like nothing happened.

The waiter brought the matcha latte that she ordered, and she nodded at the waiter to express her thanks. She had used the standard noble etiquette of the

kingdom but she herself failed to notice this little detail.

Instead, Li Muyang couldn't understand the immediate situation, standing there not knowing what his next step should be.

Cui Xiaoxin took a sip of her latte, and said to Li Muyang: "You try it too, but its a slightly too sweet and deviated from the silky bitter taste that latte is supposed to have, but this is the style of Jiangnan—considering that, it is already quite a good latte."

Li Muyang sat down obediently. He picked up the coffee and took a sip. He nodded and said: "it is very good.

He mostly drank herbal medicine tea; coffee is a contraband item in his house because the old monk said that it would stimulate his heart.

So, as long as it is better than the herbal drink he was already very satisfied.

Cui Xiaoxin laid her eyes on the heart-shaped flower in her coffee cup, and softly asked: "This is the first time you said such thing to a girl right?"

Li Muyang's black face turned slightly red.

Of course, because his face was too dark, even if he blushed, it is still black-red.

"I've said it to my sister. " Li Muyang sheepishly said: "Every time I angered her, as long as I praised how beautiful she is, praised how her eyes look like pearls of the Southern sea, praised that her skin is like the the Northern snow of the kingdom, praise that the clothes she wore all matched perfectly and can lead

Jiangnan fashion wave, She would dispel all previous arguments and pull my sleeves asking if its really true—-”

“She told me this technique is called ‘indirectly saving the country’. When a girl is angry of something, do not continue with this matter or try to explain yourself. You can find a better way to communicate. This is what she taught me. ”

Cui Xiaoxin lifted her head and examined the facial expression of Li Muyang seriously.

At the moment when Li Muyang was talking about his sister, his voice seemed as if a thick layer of honey was added and a substance made out of happiness would drip down from his face.

It is easy to tell that their relationship was very good.

Cui Xiaoxin’s emotions were stirred, she recalled a day in Tiandu, a tall but inarticulate boy would stand in front of her when there is danger. She softly asked: “You love your sister, don’t you? ”

“Yes.” Li Muyang replied while nodding.” But I feel she loves me more.”

A smile emerged on Cui Xiaoxin’s lips and said: “You must spoil her?”

Li Muyang shook his head and sighed: “It should have been like that, an older brother taking care of his little sister, spoiling her with delicious food, letting her play with everything first, protecting her if anyone bullies her, and helping her out if she’s bullying someone—-It’s quite obvious, I’m not a good brother. Most of the time, it’s always my sister taking care of me.”

“She’s smarter than me, and she excels at everything. From a young age, she would already claim to protect me, and so, she had always worked hard. At times when my school grades were at the bottom, she would easily take the first place of the school. She would tell others with a lofty tone that her brother is not stupid, he just don’t want to learn it. When she saw I was pushed to the ground, she followed an old monk to learn type of kung fu called ‘art of breaking air’, she would train throughout the winter and summer, and practiced consecutively for 365 days a year ”

At times when the old taoist monk came to treat Li Muyang, Li Shinian would pull his greasy sleeve and request him to teach her own kung fu.

The old monk’s attitude towards Li Shinian was much more affectionate compared to Li Muyang, every time he visited he brought her delicious food, when he saw Li Shinian return from school, he would smile happily and his laughter lines appear much prominent.

He didn’t have the heart to refuse any request of Li Shinian, and after discussing with Li Muyang’s parents, he officially took in Li Shinian as his disciple.

Later, Li Muyang personally witness Li Shinian using her fist to break a tree with the thickness of a bowl in the yard.

Li Muyang also wanted to learn, he suppressed his disgust of the old monk’s robe and pulled his sleeve, begging him to take him in as a disciple.

He copied his sister tone and said: “Taoist grandpa, grandpa taoist—- teach me—————”

“Talk properly.” The old taoist monk would fling his sleeve and say in a serious tone. “

Li Shinian would roll on the floor and laugh.

“Art of breaking air? “Cui Xiaoxin thought for a moment, smiled and said:” It seems familiar. ”

“A jianghu herbalist taught her. It was probably named casually.””Li Muyang said with a smile. “If someone is mocking my IQ, she would taunt them back with her scores. If someone is bullying me because I’m weak and powerless, she would fight back with her martial arts——-As a brother I’m a failure, right?”

Cui Xiaoxin shook her head and said: “On the contrary, you are a very successful brother–because you have a sister who loves you.”

“So, before you, she is the only girl who would treat me like this–” Li Muyang looked at Cui Xiaoxin’s crystal-clear eyes and said: “although I don’t want to see you clash with Miss Zhao because of a trash student like me, but what you did–I really appreciate it. I have walked out of the classroom alone several times. When I heard those rapid footsteps behind me, I really hoped that it was coming because of me– ”

Cui Xiaoxin was once again touched by Li Muyang’s words; she felt that this guy has the talent for acting in a melodrama– if he put on a mask.

“Do you know why I turned around and came back?” Cui Xiaoxin asked casually as she played with a silver spoon with her beautiful fingers.

“I don’t know.” Li Muyang shook his head.

“Because I have never seen a boy praise someone as poorly as you.” Cui Xiaoxin said bluntly.”

Li Muyang’s face turned red, he stammered again while trying to explain: “I don’t have much experience–This sort of thing, isn’t it very difficult? ”

“Indeed it isn’t easy.” Cui Xiaoxin said. “However, boys always like to challenge their weakness—If you challenge your weakness many times, then you would be able to pull it off naturally-practice makes perfect.”

“——————” “——————”

“So, tell me your story.” Seeing Li Muyang dumbfounded expression, Cui Xiaoxin eyes smiled and said:” tell me the story of you struck by lightning, I am very curious about it. After all, not everyone in the Kingdom is able to experience such a thing. If you’re not pressed for time.”

“————-”

008 – Assassin Crow!

“You were stuck by lightning when you were born?” Cui Xiaoxin’s eyes widened and cried out in surprise.

Because this matter was too unbelievable, even Cui Xiaoxin, who is calm and knowledgeable, also cried out with shock and doubt.

The gaze of everyone within the cafe all shifted over, and soon their expression turned bizarre.

“That guy is doing almost anything to please the girl—–”

“Struck by lightning and he is still alive? Does he think we’re idiots?”

“It’s not impossible, how else can you explain his pitch-blackness—–”

————

Cui Xiaoxin also noticed that her voice was too loud, and will bring unnecessary trouble to Li Muyang. She said apologetically: “Li Muyang, I didn’t mean to, I just feel—-this is hard for people to accept.”

“I understand that. “Li Muyang nodded, with a face full of bitterness he said: “It’s not easy for you to accept it, it’s been tens of years since I was struck and I still can’t accept the reality? ”

“Is this the truth?”

“It is true.” Li Muyang nodded affirmatively.

Cui Xiaoxin believed him, she is able to read from the eyes of Li Muyang–there is pain and sincerity.

That's understandable, anyone who was struck by lightning would not think it is something pleasant.

"Is that why your health was always not that good? "

"Well, I was told that when I was born, I was covered in blood, I nearly didn't survive–later, my parents invited a Jianghu herbalist, the taoist monk who teaches my sister 'art of breaking air'. The old monk forced me to drink every variety of herbs, I have been drinking them for more than ten years to maintain my body in this condition —But there are many complications, I can't drink stimulating beverages, because my heart is very weak. I can't eat pungent food, can't do vigorous exercise, can't learn martial arts or learn the kingdom's most popular 'Five Fowls'.

Li Muyang looked at Cui Xiaoxin with a look of helplessness and said: "When the old monk was leaving he said my brain has suffered a strong impact, which is why I'm always tired and sleepy. This problem can't be treated by humans, you can only leave your fate to the heaven—-It's not that I don't want to study, but when I open a book, I would suddenly feel extremely sleepy. I've tried various approaches, tying my hair onto a beam, performing acupuncture treatment on my lap, smearing refreshing oil and hot chili on my temple—–but all of them were no use. I was defeated by sleepiness, the rest of my story you already know. I gave up."

Cui Xiaoxin was full of sympathy for Li Muyang as she said: "But there is only one month left until the university entrance examinations. If you don't prepare

—-what about your future? You can’t sleep for the rest of your life?”

“I’ve thought about it. I think about it everyday. But, what can I do? ”

“From now on, I’ll help you with your lessons. “Cui Xiaoxin bit the bullet and said: “Right here.”

Li Muyang waved his hand and refused: “Cui Xiaoxin, I really appreciate your kindness. But I can’t drag you down during this time ——Li Shinian also frequently helps me with my lessons before, she wanted to help me improve my grades. But she also failed.”

“I do not believe that. “Said Cui Xiaoxin with a face full of determination. She is a stubborn girl, if she commits to something she will not give up easily. “I don’t believe there’s anything in this world that can’t be overcome. I don’t believe there’s any field in this world that humans can’t conquer. Starting from today, I will help you study here. We will start from the basics—-I will teach you whatever you wish to learn, If there’s anything you don’t understand, you can also ask me. Although time is short, it’s always better doing something and not give up straight away.”

“But I’m afraid that——”

“No buts.”Cui Xiaoxin interrupted Li Muyang and said: “Don’t worry about it affecting my studies. I’ve prepared enough already, I certainly will be admitted into West Wind University.”

“———” The girl confidence was extremely dazzling.

“Li Muyang, what’s your answer?”

“I’m counting on you.” Li Muyang said with a deep voice.

The young man and the maiden looked at each other and smiled. Li Muyang feels a strong flow of warmth in his heart.

This sort of warmth felt good.

“Miss, the fruit platter that you order.” A staff wearing uniform carried over their plate of fruits.

Li Muyang took a glance at his eyes and noticed it was a handsome young guy. He was a different person from the waiter that brought them coffee. He said with a smile: “Thank you.”

He observed Cui Xiaoxin using the kingdom’s noble etiquette and imitated her skillfully. This made Cui Xiaoxin feel like there is a dazzling light in front of her. Just like a noble imperial knight is sitting in front of her.

“Did you order some fruits? “Cui Xiaoxin asked.

“No.” Li Muyang shook his head. “I thought you ordered it?”

“I didn’t.”

Cui Xiaoxin’s little face suddenly turned pale, she opened her mouth wanting

to say something—-

Her reaction was already very fast, but still it was a step too late.

A cruel smile surfaced on the face of the fruit tray-wielding young waiter. A sharp fruit knife that he's holding in his hands plunged towards Cui Xiaoxin's neck.

This was one of the most vulnerable parts of the body, as long as it pierced her aorta, then this beautiful girl, who exuded a cherry fragrance, would pass away.

She was the purpose of their trip to Jiangnan.

"Danger."

Li Muyang felt a dangerous atmosphere.

Just like walking into the desolate hills, and a scary beast is staring at you from afar.

His heart began to beat even faster, every strand of hair on his body stood up.

Li Muyang was sitting across from Cui Xiaoxin, so when he saw the knife in the waiter's hand, his initial reaction was to dive over.

There wasn't any better option, nor did he have any other choice.

Escape? That would have been a good suggestion. However, that idea did not appear in his mind.

He opened his mouth to yell, but no sound came out.

His heart beat even harder; he even feared it would jump out of his chest.

Li Muyang was also afraid; afraid he’s going to die.

However, he still stretched out his arm and plunged towards the killer.

He wanted to separate him, and use his body to shield Cui Xiaoxin.

Before the assassin made his move he had already calculated this situation.

Except for the kingdom’s daughter, there is only one young man with pitch-black skin sitting across from her.

As an assassin in the top twenty of the Kingdom, Crow has superb skills and sharp eyes.

He believed in his judgment, that ugly juvenile is just an ordinary man; he is more fragile than the average person. He only said a few words and sweat already formed on his forehead, even while standing his legs kept shaking.

°

He had witnessed Li Muyang persuading Cui Xiaoxin to stay. He analyses situations more carefully than anyone else.

“Acting recklessly.” Crow thought with disdain.

He had no intention to hurt Li Muyang. After all, he had only received payment for one person’s head. Being a professional assassin, there is no buy one get one free business.

In his prediction, he thought this idiot guy would have been paralysed in fear when seeing him making his move. He did not imagine that he would have been able to play the role of a hero saving the beauty at that moment.

Would the hero have a good ending? How is a beauty so easily saved?

Li Muyang had not even rushed over, Crow had already used the fruit tray in his left hand to slam Li Muyang’s face.

GuangDang——

The fruit tray banged into Li Muayng’s head and his full body charge was halted.

At the same time of Li Muyang being slammed in the face by the tray, Crow’s right hand did not stop moving.

The fruit knife in his hand let out a beautiful flower blade, and aimed towards Cui Xiaoxin’s throat.

He wanted to curve out a blossom flower on the snow-white and pink neck of

Cui Xiaoxin, when crimson red blood flows out, then the cherry blossom flower will bloom.

Cha——-

The fruit knife cleanly inserted into the flesh.

009 – Risking life and limb!

Slash!

The sound of the sharp blade cutting the flesh was crisp and melodic, just like the sound of wind turning a piece of paper.

Crow is an assassin, and a skilled one too. That's why he had never failed.

A foot-long fruit knife stabbed into the flesh, and continued to move forward without stopping until the handle was in the way.

The knife pierced through Li Muyang's palm.

[That motherfucker——–] Crow scolded in his heart: [How did I pierce through this charcoal's palm?]

He was annoyed with it. It was difficult for him to accept the result.

He had been hit with a fruit tray on the head; according to his estimation, that guy should be beaten down.

The target of his knife was Cui Xiaoxin's neck, because she's the only one worthy for assassin Crow to personally deal with. Ordinary people's blood would taint his hands and clothes.

He was a fussy assassin!

However, why did the fruit knife in his hand pierce into the trash young man? This wasn't the happiness he wanted.

Muscles ruptured, fresh blood flowed down the edges of the blade.

Only until he saw the crimson red blood dripping in front of his eyes, did Li Muyang confirmed he blocked the blade.

He opened his mouth smiled and proudly said: "I've blocked it—"

He didn't feel any pain; he was drowning in the joy of blocking the blade and saving Cui Xiaoxin by exchanging his own life.

He did not how he did that, just like how Crow did not know how the knife pierced into his palm.

He did not hesitate to plunge himself forward to grab the dagger that Crow had in his hand.

And then, the dagger came into his hands.

No, it's his palm.

Li Muyang did not know how critical this issue was; however, Crow knew.

As he had observed before, Li Muyang is just an ordinary teenager. He's a useless guy that sweated and panted rapidly when his emotions are slightly

excited.

However, he is Crow, the King of birds, and an assassin in the top twenty of the kingdom. According to his own defined positions, he should at least be in the top ten of the strongest men.

The move he used was a ‘cherry cut ‘, throw the knife out and it will spin like a cherry blossom petal, and then carve out a cherry blossom flower above the target’s body.

At those times, because his actions were too fast and too agile, the opposite party will not even feel any pain in their body. Until blood exudes from the wound, then the cherry blossom flower will bloom.

He had high confidence in his cherry blossom; he had even more confidence in the speed of his attack.

But how did the hand of a good-for-nothing juvenile get caught in the knife?

“I’m blocked it.”

Hearing Li Muyang’s words, Crow thought he was provoking him. This was the biggest disgrace in his assassin career.

“You can’t block it.”

As he spoke, he had already pulled out the fruit knife from Li Muyang’s palm.

Cha—

At the same time of the blade pulling out, a large volume of blood also spurted out.

At this moment, Li Muyang finally voiced out his pain.

In the middle of his palm, a hole can be seen. That hole was like a black hole releasing voices of agony from swallowing his whole body into the suffering of hell.

Because it was too painful, Li Muyang's body was twitching.

Slash–

Crow once again aimed his knife at Cui Xiaoxin's neck and pierced through it. He still used his favorite and most aesthetic 'cherry blossom cut '.

Cha—

Li Muyang once again plunged his body forward, and once again the blade in Crow's hand was caught in his palm.

Crow's heart skipped a beat, his pupils expanded and his face was full of horror as he stared at Li Muyang.

If the first time was luck, was a coincidence. Then what about the second time?

This time, Crow deliberately speeded up as a precaution against Li Muyang, but Li Muyang managed to destroy his cherry blossoms petal and used his palm to block Crow's dagger——although he was stupid to use his hand to block the sharp blade.

However, this is enough for Crow to suspect: this guy can't be a reclusive master, right? Or a disciple of a reclusive master?

He had heard that Jiangnan City of the Kingdom had been established for thousands of years, and has always been maintained as a lively, prosperous and flourishing place. Hidden dragons and crouching tigers — talented men still remained in concealment, rich in culture. Don't say—-he just accidently came across one of the talents?

[Li Muyang——] Cui Xiaoxin exclaimed. She grabbed the coffee cup in front of her and threw it towards Crow's face.

Crow brushed his sleeves, and the spilled coffee stains turned into a mass of hot air and disappeared. The coffee cup was returned back with immense force of air, changing its direction as it aimed towards Cui Xiaoxin.

From the assassination until now, the scene occurred at the speed of lighting a fire with a flint. Too fast for the customers to know what had happened.

Kacha—-

It wasn't until the coffee cup had smashed against the wall and shattered, that the guests screamed to escape.

[Someone's killing, someone's killing–]

[Phone the police, go ahead and call the city army—]

[Don’t kill me, I saw nothing, I didn’t see that you have a purple mark on your mouth–]

———

[Looking to die.] Crow was angered by Cui Xiaoxin’s counterattack.

His profile is inconspicuous—-well, I have to say, Li Muyang was pitch-black and very dazzling. He had felt insulted since his ‘cherry blossom’ move was intercepted twice by a trash-like guy; even his assassination target also began to make fierce resisting movements. This made it difficult for him to accept.

He’s an assassin, and also a performer.

He liked what he did, he wanted to kill his target without any pain, even at the moment of their last breath they won’t know they’re getting killed——He hoped they maintain a smile on their face. He demanded a high level of professionalism, but today it had completely destroyed his own sense of beauty.

He regretted that he did not look at the Almanac today, otherwise he would have chosen a more appropriate time. If he had a look at it, the Kingdom’s almanac must have read: avoid killing today.

Crow said in a low voice, his waiter uniform was agitated without any wind, and there was a metre long radiant light that shot out from the small fruit knife in his hands.

The fruit knife turned into a meter-long giant sword, and he slashed the sword, aiming at Cui Xiaoxin.

One hit split the mountain!

He wanted to split Cui Xiaoxin into two halves.

If that good-for-nothing juvenile dared to intercept again, he would also split the idiot boy into two halves.

This time, he looked forward to Li Muyang jumping out.

One slash killing two people, this would be like giving a free gift along with the death of a rich young lady.

Otherwise, no one will care whether a guy like that should live or die.

He is simply not worthy to die by his own sword.

“You can’t kill her.” Li Muyang growled.

His eyes were blood-red, his pupil was wrapped in red clouds once again.

His right hand once again produced scale-like object above, except it was much clearer and thicker than at that time at the sunset lake. At the sunset lake it was transparent, if not carefully observed then it can’t even be seen. But this time it became translucent, with grey pigments, and small clouds and electrical lines

can be seen dancing and galloping above the scales.

Li Muyang felt a surge of violent atmosphere inside his heart, just like somebody has stolen the things most precious to him.

He wanted to vent out his anger. He wanted to destroy.

Wanted to destroy this vile little man.

Li Muyang threw out his fist.

His fist aimed towards the meter-long sword.

Ooh —-

Blinking white light, the air of the sword diffused.

The whole café was strongly impacted by a violent turbulents. Customers' cups were sent flying, the four legs of the tables collapsed. Cups and beer on the bar shelf fell onto the ground broken, all kinds of fresh fruits in the basket were dumped to the ground, rolling and jumping around.

Bang——

Crow's body was flung towards the solid oak cabinets at the bar. He coughed and spewed out a mouthful of bright red blood.

"You fucking——" He pointed at Li Muyang who was in a violent state and shouted: "Are you one hundred percent sure you're empty handed when you received that blade?"

010 – Dreaming of dragons!

Noises of screaming and running, as well as the sounds of objects falling and breaking echoed throughout.

Li Muyang stood in the center of the storm and remained unaffected by the outside world.

His blood red eyes stared at Crow, staring at the culprit who pierced through his hand again and again, triggering his rampage.

Kuang dang–

He pushed away the table that was leaning on him because of a broken leg and step-by-step walked towards Crow who was lying on the floor.

Kacha —

Kacha —-

Kacha —-

Each of his footsteps was very forceful, the ground coffee beans or fruits that tumbled to the ground made kacha kacha noises.

Li Muyang is no longer controlled by his heart, a beast was hidden inside his body; the enraged beast drove him to do violent things.

“Li Muyang——” Cui Xiaoxin crawled up from the ground, and urgently cried Li Muyang’s name.

She was pushed down by the machine’s explosion, cuts were prominent on her face and hands. Those cuts did not affect her beauty, but instead she gave off a feeling of pity and beauty at the same time.

She just saw Li Muyang plunge towards the assassin who pretended to be a coffee shop waiter, then the assassin flew away, and her body was vigorously pushed against the wall by a force, then the walls fell down.

She felt as if her body was falling apart, but she continued to clench her teeth and stood up, then rushed over to Li Muyang.

She did not know what had happened, but she knew Li Muyang was doing something dangerous.

“Damn guy.” Crow’s body floated up from the ground.

He was not crawling, not was he standing. Without borrowing any external force, his body floated up in the air like a ghost.

At the beginning, he drifted horizontally, but once he reached mid-air, he stood up again.

He stood in mid-air, glaring at Li Muyang who was heading towards him in big steps, his voice was cold like hell as he said: “Acting recklessly——”

His right hand falsely moved around a few times in the air, a frame flashing with silver light appeared.

His mouth made some strange sounds, and then a murder of crows, emitting a dark atmosphere of death rushed towards Li Muyang.

The numbers of crows were vast, almost filling up the entire café space.

They were silent, but they showed the same fierce and greedy eyes as their owner.

Pu pa pa—-

They flapped their wings and charged towards Li Muyang, like a dark cloud about to surround Li Muyang, and then gnaw at him until no bones remainned.

“Evil animal.” A loud voice shouted.

Round red balls of light appeared above Li Muyang’s head, the entire café was illuminated with golden light. As the black crows came into contact with the golden light they turned into a cloud of black smoke and drifted away with the wind.

The golden light remained for a long time, until all the black crows in the room vanished into black smoke.

Red balls of light disappeared, the nether gate that had summoned the black crows also vanished.

All the crows were gone, the smoke also disappeared.

Assassin Crow disappeared, even Cui Xiaoxin who followed Li Muyang into the cafe also disappeared.

Li Muyang glanced around, he looked at the waitress hiding under the table in horror, waved a blood-stained hand and shouted: “——Take me to the hospital —-”

Before he had finished talking, he felt the sky spinning and ground twisting.

Everything turned into darkness as fell towards the ground in front of everyone.

———————

———————

“You little human, you betrayer———”

“Blood for blood, and a tooth for a tooth. Your plots and attempts, I, the king, will befall heavenly punishment on all——”

“Kill —— kill——”

———- ———

The dragon roared and the wild fires burned.

The whole world is a soaring tremendous figure, you won't see the whole thing, and can only see one part of the body. Gloomy and dark, solid and can't be broken, the scales revealed floating clouds and electric lines within, which blinked in the light like a mirror illuminating human screams and suffering. As well as the almost negligible struggle and the resistance.

It displays a stifling sense of dignity, mounting the clouds and riding the mist, destroying city, and breaking the country.

Every time it waved it's tail, a city will be destroyed.

Every time it extended it's claw, a wall will collapse.

When it opened it's mouth, the dragon's breath that can destroy the sky and ground will be unleashed, melting all scenery in front of the eyes.

Humans composing of flesh and blood, tall towering thorn trees that reached the clouds, towering walls made out of bricks, tiles and stone, all will be instantly turned into ashes——

Li Muyang is a spectator in this foreign world, a witness to the war.

He was high up, just like ——like the dragon here to slaughter and kill.

The dragon also noticed his presence, reversed his flying and head towards Li Muyang.

Dense dark clouds were tearing apart, wind as cold as ice was blowing.

You could almost feel the heat wave breathed out of his mouth. You can even hear the pulsation of the heart.

Li Muyang tried hard to open his eyes, hoping to see what the dragon looked like.

He saw. He saw the dragon’s eye.

The dragon’s eyes were similar to his eyes.

At the moment of his confusion, the dragon attacked straight on and then slammed his long tail onto his body.

He personally witnessed his body being cut open, and then his mind went blank.

Boom———

The whole world quietened down.

Apart from the burning spark in a far distance, the world was plunged into perpetual darkness.

As Li Muyang opened his eyes, the sun was shining brightly at the window,

colourful unknown birds were chirping and acacia were dancing on the top of a tree, happily jumping as if celebrating the awakening of Li Muyang.

Jiangnan city in June is scorching-hot and elegant, like a beautiful woman wearing a thick robe. Unventilated and airtight, but won't let you feel a sense of boredom.

Women in Jiangnan are pretty and natural. Without any decoration, still a pleasing scene.

Li Shinian was the representative of this attribute.

Li Shinian's hair was messy, her little face was dirty and her eyes had nearly turned into panda eyes. Her bloodshot eyes stared at Li Muyang without blinking.

So at the moment Li Muyang opened his eyes, it directly met with her large watery eyes.

"Brother——" Li Shinian exclaimed. "You're awake? Are you okay? Does it hurt anywhere? Wait a second, I'll call the doctor——-"

Li Muyang did not get a chance to speak, and she turned around and ran outside.

Li Muyang wanted to reach out and stop her, only to find that his right arm was tied solid and he couldn't move.

Fortunately his mouth was not injured, he hurriedly shouted: “Li Shinian–”

Li Shinian turned around and asked: “Brother, do you need anything? ”

“Wait. ” said Li Muyang. He smiled, only to find that his face is wrapped in gauze. Li Muyang was frightened and asked: “My face——is it okay? ”

“Brother——-” LiShinian’s face was gloomy, hesitating to speak.

Li Muyang paused, then said with a smile: “it’s alright. Anyway, I’m ugly, maybe disfigurement is another form of cosmetic surgery– ”

“Brother——” Li Shinian looked at Li Muyang, shook her head and said: “There’s nothing wrong with your face. Your forehead was swollen; doctors wrapped your whole head. It looks more beautiful this way. ”

“Then why did you look so sad? “Li Muyang asked with a puzzled expression.

“Because I suggested the hospital to find the best doctor in the kingdom for you to undergo cosmetic surgery. You always disliked your charcoal-black skin, so I thought you could undergo a full body whitening, anyway we also do not need to pay——If it’s like that, it’ll be a big surprise for you then when you woke up——” Li Shinian said hatefully: “But they all refused. ”

“———-” “———”

“Brother, don’t worry. “Li Shinian came over and gently stroked Li Muyang’s injured right hand, looked him into his eyes and said in a serious tone:”Wait until

I work and earn money, I'll invite the most famous doctor in the kingdom for your cosmetic surgery——"

"My face——do I really look that bad? "Li Muyang felt that even his breathing is becoming difficult.

"It's pretty good? "Li Shinian opened her mouth smiled, put her arm around Li Muyang's shoulder and said:"Anyway, I've gotten used to it. Even if the whole world thinks you're ugly, I would think the whole world is blind. "

"No wonder you're my good sister. "Li Muyang's face was full of happiness. He looked at Li Shinian with slight embarrassment and said: "I wanted to ask you a question, but you are not allowed to laugh. "

"Brother, don't worry. We've been together for many years, when have I ever laughed at you? "Li Shinian patted her chest loudly.

"You really won't laugh? "

"I really won't laugh. "

"Alright——-" Li Muyang turned slightly red, he avoided eye contact and asked in a weak voice "Have you ever felt that——I am like a dragon? "

"HA HA HA HA———"

011 – Classmate in danger!

“HA HA HA HA–”

Li Shinian laughed and laughed until she was out of breath.

She lied down on the bed, lifted her head, looked at Li Muyang and asked while out of breath: “Brother, what—- what caused you to have such a deep misunderstanding about yourself?”

Li Muyang’s pitch-black face was wrapped in white gauze, people could not see what colour his complexion was turning into. However, he avoided eye contact, his hand grabbed hold of Li Shinian’s hair as revenge, and he said without much confidence: “I just said, how could I be a dragon? I don’t look like one right?”

“Brother–” Li Shinian said coquettishly, and let Li Muyang pulled her hair. Blinking her eyes as she looked at Li Muyang with her innocent and clear eyes, she attentively asked: “What is going on? Why would you ask such a strange question?”

“Nothing.” Li Muyang smiled while shaking his head. “I had a dream, in the dream I saw a dragon. I wanted to see clearly what the dragon looked like, and then I realised it had the same eyes as me–So I just asked casually if I look like a dragon.”

Li Shinian was slightly worried. She heard that every dream had a real hidden meaning. For example dreaming of turning into a strong man or animal reflects your deep sense of inferiority and self-doubt.

So, Li Shinian held Li Muyang’s hand tightly, and comforted him: “Brother, in

my heart you're a dragon. Right now you're swimming in shallow water, because as a child you were always sick, so you weren't able to their exert your ability and intelligence—-wait until you've recovered, you can also, like a dragon, ride the wind and control rain, overturn the river and upturn the sea, and fly beyond the ninth heaven.

Li Muyang reached out and scratched Li Shinian's nose, spoiling her, he said to her: "Silly girl, are you trying to be a spiritual teacher? I do not even know my own situation? Your brother is now trash-like, and definitely will be good-for-nothing in the future, so will definitely rely on his younger sister to take care of him. "

"Brother, don't worry. Your little sister will take care of your meals and your living and help you find a wife. "Li Shinian wrapped her arm around Li Muyang's neck and smiled.

"I want two wives."

"No way."

"Why?"

" I will be annoyed seeing one, let alone two. Every minute I would want to poison them.

"—How about I won't have any wives?"

"No." Li Shinian refused. " If you don't get married, father and mother will be upset, if they're upset, then I will also be sad. So, I can only tolerate one. You can

only marry one wife, but you also must marry only one wife.

“__ __”

Li Muyang glanced at the weather outside and asked: “How long have I been sleeping for?”

Li Shinian expression turned sad and said: “Two days and two nights. ”

“What?” Li Muyang exclaimed. “Why did I sleep so much? Where’s Cui Xiaoxin? Did she come?”

Li Shinian eyes glimmered, gossip-fire burning. She whispered: “Who’s Cui Xiaoxin? And what is your relationship with her? ”

“Cui Xiaoxin is my classmate.” Li Muyang recalled the conflict at the café, and did not notice Li Shinian’s change of expression. At the cafe he sent the assassin flying with just one punch, he looked at his bandaged fist, how did send the assassin flying with just one hit?“

Although Li Muyang is unfamiliar with martial arts, he knew that the man in black is a master.

He was able to use a light sword and also a nether gate to summon a murder of crows. The entire scene was amazing and would frighten anyone.

Li Muyang noticed that recently his body doesn’t feel right. He always felt that there is a beast trying to break out.

He easily became violent and angry, and exhibited an inexplicable strength—-At the lake trip when he punched Zhang Chen flying, this is an obvious example of this change.

Later, he heard someone yell ‘evil animal’ and then balls of light as bright as the sun rose above his head.

When the crows vanished, the balls of light also disappeared. Cui Xiaoxin also disappeared.

“Who is Cui Xiaoxin exactly? Was she saved or kidnapped? Who was the person shouting ‘evil animal’?”

Li Muyang was extremely worried, he desperately wanted to know the answer to these questions.

“Of course I know she’s your classmates. I know she is a well-known beauty in our school, the best student in year 3, every test she takes first place—I, Li Shinian have been studying for years, this is the first person that could compete with me. Brother, I heard that you were brought over here from the cafe outside the school, and at that time it was during class. At that time, were you two–on a date?”

Li Muyang denied that and said: “How could I be dating? Look at my face, Am I worthy of her?”

Li Shinian shook her head then nodded and said: But I hear people say that good man won’t marry a good wife, lazy man will have a caring wife—-, you

don’t have to worry about being ugly, I’m just worried that Cui Xiaoxin is not blind. Do you want me to poke her in the eye?”

“——-““——”

Li Shinian shook her head and said: “”Forget it. Maybe she will become my sister-in-law, I should treat her with more respect.”

Seeing the anxious look on Li Muyang’s face, Li Shinian stopped deliberately teasing them again and said: I’ve not seen Cui Xiaoxin, But the private hospital and the luxury ward you’re staying in right now was arranged by someone else, if my guess is correct, then, that person is Cui Xiaoxin——–after all, our family doesn’t know any famous people in Jiangnan.”

“Can you do me a favour and go to the school to find out—-did she go to class? “Li Muyang held his sister’s hand and asked in a soft voice.

Li Shinian felt some bitter feelings in her heart, just like her own baby was being taken away, she pursed her lips and said viciously: “Oi, are you loath to part with her?”

Li Muyang shooked his head and said: “The situation was dangerous back then, I fear for her safety.”

“I understand.” Li Shinian looked at Li Muyang’s eyes and said: “I’ll go to school today and help you find out.”

“Thank you.” Li Muyang smiled.

“Don’t smile. ” said Li Shinian. “You laugh like a mummy in Africa, apart from your teeth you can’t even see other parts of your face——”

“_“”__”

Li Muyang knew, he knew he had angered Miss Li Shinian somehow.

———-

———-

Creak—

A luxury car with Poseidon’s Trident in front pulled up in front of the hospital. As a maiden wearing a white shirt and blue jeans was abut to open the door, a man sitting in front wearing a green-robe stopped her: “Miss, do you really want to put yourself at risk?”

“Risk?” The maiden frowned her eyebrows. “This is Cui’s family private hospital, what risks? I just want to visit a classmate–also my saviour.”

“Miss, we have already helped him to arrange the best hospital, the best room, and the best doctors in Jiangnan city–Also under your request, we also arranged for the most famous brain surgeon to examine his brain, to see the injury caused by being struck by lightning. He did save your life, this kindness Cui family will gradually repay him for—-but, Miss, I think you should not get involved.”

“Are you worried about another assassination? “The maiden’s eyebrow slightly frowned and whispered: “I have you guys around me. ”

“Miss, the real danger that we’re worried about—- is you coming here to visit a patient. “The green-robed man hesitated but finally revealed the worries in his heart.”

“Li Muyang? “The maiden frowned, she did not like others talking about her friends.

“Yes.” Green-robed man nodded. “That time at the cafe, the person who attacked Miss was the Kingdom’s top twenty killer Crow, this person’s accomplishments are unfathomable, he’s most adept at summoning different kinds of birds attack, he is known as the’ King of birds’ among the underground circle. However, your friend consecutively blocked his ‘cherry blossom’ cut twice, and on his third hit he sent Crow flying with one punch—–Miss, your classmate is similarly dangerous.”

Cui Xiaoxin burst out laughing and said: “If he heard these comments, he would definitely be extremely happy?”

“Miss–”

“Uncle Ning, I’ve thought about it. I also know. “The maiden interrupted the green-robed man’s discouragement and said:”But I can’t forget, at the moment when the assassin was wielding a sharp knife trying to attack, he courageously plunged over and used his palm to grabbed hold of the long knife again and again—-”

Ka Pa—-

Cui Xiaoxin pushed the car door and got off, looked up at the classical building hiding behind the cherry blossom trees.

The cold and dark-red cherry blossom trees grouped together made her think of that day when blood flowed out of Li Muyang’s palm.

012 – Genius idiot!

Cui Xiaoxing stood by the door, hesitating. As she prepared to pull the handle, the door was opened from the inside of the room.

A beautiful girl with ear-length hair kept her head straight, she saw someone stood there with eyes widened and stared at her without blinking with her beautiful eyes.

Cui Xiaoxin also looked at Li Shinian, she knew Li Muyang had a little sister, but she never thought Li Muyang would have such a beautiful little sister—-

“Are they related?” Cui Xiaoxin thought to herself.

Then, she suddenly discarded the idea out of her brain. Li Muyang saved her life, how can she insult him?

“Cui Xiaoxin? “Li Shinian broke the silence between them.

“Li Shinian? “She doesn’t know the reason but hearing Li Shinian shouting her name, Cui Xiaoxin felt a slight happiness inside. She feels this is a sort of recognition, although she had never used to care if someone recognised her or not.

“That’s me.” Li Shinian nodded, smiled and said, “I knew it was you.”

“I came to see Li Muyang.” Cui Xiaoxin felt that Li Shinian’s expression in her eyes was a little weird, but she had already envisaged this scene on her way here. She had even expected to face more complex scenes than it is now. She

expected to see Li Muyang's mother and father, as well as some important relatives and they would look at her with judging eyes or expressions of admiration

A beautiful girl coming to visit a classmate alone, that itself would easily lead to a misunderstanding. There is no doubt that if their classmates knew, then most likely a scandal between the two of them will spread quickly throughout Renaissance High School.

Li Shinian was the only one in the room. Without a doubt, she avoided a lot of trouble.

"Oh, Li Muyang——is my older brother," Li Shinian said with a smile. She affectionately held Cui Xiaoxin's arm and said: "Xiaoxin sister, please come in."

Cui Xiaoxin was not accustomed to this kind of intimacy, she never affectionately held another girl's hand before.

However, Li Shinian is really a cute girl. Her pure smile, and her enthusiasm, it seem blasphemous to reject her——

Cui Xiaoxin without hesitation, allowed Li Shinian to drag her to the side of Li Muyang's bed.

"Brother, the Xiaoxin sister who you keep mentioning is here." Li Shinian said while looking at Li Muyang and blinking her eyes. With a face of being wronged she said: "As soon as you opened your eyes you asked about Xiaoxin sister, and you forced me to ask around at school–look, look, Xiaoxin sister is fine is she not? Is she injured anywhere? Is she missing a strand of hair?"

“I just—”

“It’s fine, you don’t have to explain. Your explanation will be just something used to cover up.” Li Shinian did not even give Li Muyang a chance to speak and said: “You two go talk for a bit. I’ll go get something to eat. I’m hungry.”

Li Shinian tightly held Cui Xiaoxings hand, smiled and said: “Xiaoxin sister, I’ll hand over my brother to you?”

Cui Xiaoxin showed an expression of suspicion, but still nodded and said: “Okay.”

She can tell, there was ambiguity within the words Li Shinian said. But if she did not answer, others may say she’s overthinking it?

Li Shinian secretly made a cheering gesture at her brother, and then said goodbye to Cui Xiaoxin before she left.

Li Muyang smiled embarrassingly and said to Cui Xiaoxin: “Her personality is like that, don’t worry about it.”

“She’s very cute.” Cui Xiaoxin said seriously.

Li Muyang nodded, looked into Cui Xiaoxin’s eyes and asked, “Are you alright? ”Cui Xiaoxin’s skin was pale and delicate, and her facial features were perfect without any flaws. She wore light-blue jeans with a pure white shirt tucked into the jeans. She did not use a belt, but her waist was still soft and slender, like a young willow tree brushing away by the wind. She gave off a feeling of simplicity and purity.

In Li Muyang's memory, Cui Xiaoxin was injured during the attack at the cafe —-but right now there wasn't any visible injuries; it feels like what happened the other day was just a clear and painful nightmare.

"I'm sorry." Cui Xiaoxin lowered her eyelids, her long eyelashes concealed the bottom of her eyes, like an attractive fan. "To save me, you risked your life, while I escaped——-"

"You were rescued, right?" Li Muyang said with a smile. "The man who shouted 'evil animal' was one of your people, and also the red balls of light that incinerated the crows were summoned by your people. You only left when you confirmed the assassin was gone, right?"

Cui Xiaoxin blinked and asked: "How do you know all this?"

"I think——" Li Muyang opened his mouth and smiled, showing two rows of dazzling white teeth. As if he's endorsed by the toothpaste companies. "All these matters should be your doing."

"Thank you." Cui Xiaoxin was deeply touched and said:"Thank you for trusting me so much."

"We're friends, right?" Li Muyang said with a smile. "Just like how you believe I can improve with my studies, I believe in your character, I trust you didn't intend to leave me alone in that dangerous battlefield——"

"My family carried me out." Cui Xiaoxin carefully explained. She felt that she owes Li Muyang an explanation, which is one of the reasons she insisted on

coming. “When I left I was already unconscious, so I couldn’t oppose them.”

“I understand.” Li Muyang casually waved his hand and said: “I can imagine the situation.”

“Then——” Cui Xiaoxin thought to herself that it was time to say goodbye.

No matter how heroic and valiant Li Muyang was that day at the cafe, he’s still only an ordinary person after all.

Now that he was aware of her whereabouts, and since the attack at the cafe failed, Cui Xiaoxin was afraid they would use other methods, and there would be more hostile environment to deal with.

Once again, she did not want Li Muyang to get involved, because there is no guarantee that Li Muyang would be as lucky next time.

“Our agreement, is it still valid?” Li Muyang suddenly spoke.

“What?”

“You said that, starting today, you would tutor me——– at the Cafe that day. “Li Muyang looked at Cui Xiaoxin’s eyes and said with a smile.

“Oh.” Cui Xiaoxin brushed the hair in front of her forehead and said, “I just mentioned it casually, if you still want to–”

“Of course.” Li Muyang said with a smile: “I’d like to attend West Wind University. I heard there’s a famous lake at West Wind University, where you could see the most beautiful sunset in the world”

“Then please work hard with me.” Cui Xiaoxing pursed her lips and smiled.

——————

From this day, Cui Xiaoxin came to the hospital every day to visit Li Muyang and tutored him for four hours.

She is the top student in the school; there are no subjects that she found difficult.

She slowly explained each lesson of each subject, and then she let Li Muyang see the model answers for each question. If there was anything that Li Muyang doesn’t understand, she tried to use an easier to understand explanation until Li Muyang thoroughly grasped the topic.

Maybe it’s because of the combination of a woman and man working together or because a beautiful girl has a refreshing effect, Li Muyang was sleeping much less these days, and his reaction is also much faster. A lot of very difficult issues he was able to quickly understand when Cui Xiaoxin had only explained once.

Cui Xiaoxin was astonished, she deliberately found several difficult questions to test him, but Li Muyang was still able to answer quickly. Sometimes the method he used to solve the questions was not the one she taught him.

This made Cui Xiaoxin puzzled. Li Muyang had never heard about these

methods before which is also the reason for him getting zero or the last place in tests.

But now only she had told him of the solutions, how did he find other ways to answer it?

Deducing other solutions from one method?

Could it be that he's a hidden genius?

Cui Xiaoxin stared at the charcoal-black face of Li Muyang, and realised he's becoming more and more pleasing to the eyes. Although Li Muyang' skin is pitch-black, but he had pretty and defined facial features. His most special features were his eyes ,which looked intelligent and seem to devour the souls of others.

"Li Muyang——" Cui Xiaoxin called."

"What?" "Li Muyang looked up.

"Did you really knew nothing before?"

"Yes, I think so." Li Muyang said while nodding. "But recently I don't know what is going on, there are always some strange things emitting from the outside, as if I had already experienced all these incidents—-same with the questions, this was obviously the first time I listened to your explanations, but somehow I found many ways to solve the problem."

Cui Xiaoxin widened her eyes, looked at Li Muyang and said: "You mean—-for

every question you can find many methods to solve it?”

“Yes.” Li Muyang nodded. And then scratched his head, and embarrassingly said: “Some of them, there is only one way of solving. Others are false solutions, because if you continue to solve it this way, you will find completely different answers. This is a pitfall, it’s easy to waste too much time on this.”

Cui Xiaoxin did not believe him, she immediately wrote a question regarding theoretical four-dimensional space on a piece of scrap paper and pushed the paper in front of Li Muyang and said: “You solve this question. Use all the solutions you know.”

Li Muyang nodded and immediately started to answer them at the desk.

Five minutes later, Li Muyang was still answering.

Ten minutes later, Li Muyang was still answering.

—Half an hour has gone by, one hour has gone by———

During the process of answering, Li Muyang has changed his pencil and asked for twelve pieces of papers.

After more than an hour, he handed over ten manuscripts to Cui Xiaoxin and apologetically said: “I only know these——”

Cui Xiaoxin quickly received the manuscript, her expression became more and more serious. Finally, she gathered all the papers, looked at Li Muyang and said:

“You used eleven different solutions?”

“Yes.” “Li Muyang nodded. “There is another one. But this solution will only solve the beginning; you will get stuck in the calculations afterwards, and won’t perfectly express string theory———”

“But——” Cui Xiaoxin bit her lips, looked at Li Muyang with a complex expression and said with much difficulty: “I only know two solutions.”

“_ _ _ _“

013 – Kingdom’s bright moon!

If it didn’t happen right in front of her eyes, Cui Xiaoxin would have found it difficult to believe.

A good-for-nothing youth has turned into a genius in just a few days?

If all his behaviour in the past was all real, then his ability to learn is incredibly frightening. Even geniuses with photographic memory will only remember what they see and nothing more. They will find it difficult to deduce solutions from one method and comprehend new things by deduction alone.

If everything he did before was merely a facade, was to conceal, then, what is his motive?

Li Muyang’s pitch-black skin was like the dark abyss that withheld secrets deep inside, luring people in who can’t resist to investigate deeper.

Cui Xiaoxin felt frustration deep inside, she looked at Li Muyang with her beautiful little face, eyes relaxed and asked with suspicion: “The solutions were figured out by you? Or did you see it somewhere?”

“I figured it out myself.” Li Muyang said aloud.

He was deep in thought for a moment, then shook his head and said: “It seems I’ve seen it somewhere. But where? Even I find it strange—-how did I solve such an obscure topic? Not only that but I also found so many different methods to

solve it?”

“The question I gave you belongs to a puzzle problem. I know the most famous mathematics in the Kingdom Master Li Keyan knows seven different solutions, one of my elders have been studying this for years and knows nine solutions. Among the eleven solutions you showed me there are a number of them that I have not heard of, even I cannot determine if it is wrong or right—-those solutions seem to originate from other countries, maybe the distant Xi Si Kingdom? Li Muyang, have you been to other countries? Or have you read some secret academic books that weren’t passed on?”

“No.” Li Muyang shook his head again and said: “I haven’t been to any other countries; I have not seen those secret books. You’re aware of my previous situation, if I were that good, how——why would I be scolded ‘trash’ for so many years?” Li Muyang showed a bitter smile. “Even a man with little pride would not be willing to be pointed at the nose and called ‘pig’?”

“This is what I find the most strange.” Cui Xiaoxin said: “I heard someone became a state scholar overnight, perhaps you were suddenly enlightened——if you can maintain this learning speed, even if there’s little time, perhaps, you will also be admitted to a very good school.”

The expression in Li Muyang eyes emitted a radiant light, his face was full of hope as he looked at Cui Xiaoxin and asked, “Really? I can enter a good University?”

“Of course.” Cui Xiaoxin said. There were some other words she did not say out loud: You don’t know how impressive you are right now? If there was mathematic madman knew what he had been researching for a lifetime was easily solved by a high school student, it was most likely that he would cut off his own ear?

Li Muyang was filled with excitement as he said: “If there really is hope for me, then I will work even harder, and then I could attend West Wind University with you, so we can watch the sunset together at Weiming Lake.”

This was a request, and also a promise.

Seeing the expression in Li Muyang’eyes, Cui Xiaoxin pondered for a moment, nodded and said: “Lets meet at Weiming lake.”

“Great.” Li Muyang was unable to control his excitement. In his whole life this was the first time he could see light, hope that could melt the human body and the heart. “It’s still early, we could study for a little longer. Give me a few more questions again to test me, it would be best if you focus on the exam topics.”

Cui Xiaoxin understand Li Muyang’s mentality, she instantly dropped her guard. “In my spare time I like to look at the examinations over the past decade, I’ll select the questions that appears the most frequently for you to answer——”

“Quickly, quickly, as much as possible——” At this moment, school loser Li Muyang’s was very eager to learn.

Cui Xiaoxin glanced at Li Muyang, pushing away the hair in front of her forehead, and began writing down questions once again.

Delicate and elegant words appeared on the papers, giving off a refreshing feeling.

Because of frequent interactions, Cui Xiaoxin and Li Muyang became closer. In addition to Li Shinian attacking with initiative, the two quickly became close sisters.

Cui Xiaoxin also have met Li Muyang's parents who seemed to be very nice people. Also, Li Muyang's mother is a very beautiful lady, even in Jiangnan where beauties are as plentiful as the clouds in the sky; she's still very eye-catching.

If Li Muyang was to inherit the good genes from his parents, he will also be a handsome man that appears once in ten thousands of people—-

Never mind, friends are all about sincerity, and one should not judge by appearance.

Li Shinian came back from school and looked at Li Muyang and Cui Xiaoxin sitting together discussing with an ambiguous smile.

She walked and stood next to Cui Xiaoxin and said sweetly: "Xiaoxin sister, you have had a busy day today, why don't you stop and rest for a while? Are you hungry? Let's get something to eat? "

Cui Xiaoxin looked at the dark sky outside, placed down her pencil and said: "It's getting late. My family is waiting for me to come home for dinner."

Cui Xiaoxing looked at Li Muyang and said: "When I came, I asked the doctor. The doctor says your condition is much better, so you will be discharged tomorrow—-would you like to stay for a few more days to monitor your condition?"

“Monitor what? They’ve been monitoring me these past few days? “Li Muyang felt there’s too little time, he wanted to chase the stars and catch the moon. “There is only one month until the University entrance examinations, I can’t waste even a moment. Besides, in the hospital I only study, it will be better if I get discharge from the hospital earlier and find a quiet place to study. That way I can avoid the unpleasant smell of medicines, and also you have to come here everyday to help me study, it’s really inconvenient. I want to discharge from hospital tomorrow. ”

Cui Xiaoxin thought for a moment and said: “then I’ll pick you up tomorrow and we’ll go to school together. ”

“Good. “Li Muyang answered happily.

Cui Xiaoxin walked a few steps out of the hospital, and a black car silently pulled up beside her.

A man wearing a black suit jumped out and opened the car door. Cui Xiaoxin got into the back seat of the car and rested her eyes.

She had been busy tutoring all day, constantly lecturing, explaining, recalling her memory, guessing and selecting the exam questions from the last ten years of entrance examination in the Kingdom. She also had to handle all questions Li Muyang threw all her, one after another. Some questions Li Muyang asked were childish; it was just basic textbook knowledge. But some of his questions were incredibly difficult, to the extent that it was even beyond their level of study.

Cui Xiaoxin was seriously a little tired.

During their study, Cui Xiaoxin once again noticed Li Muyang's incredible learning abilities.

The previous him was like a small hole in a dam that was being destroyed by ants, slowly releasing small volumes of water to the outside. Soon, the little hole grew bigger and bigger as the surge of water increased, the amount of released water also increased. From a small hole into a spring and from a spring into a big floodgate. The speed of it's release increases rapidly and the surrounding areas that caved in continue to build up. When the destruction of the banks of the lake occurs and a monstrous surge of tidal wave follows, who in the world would be able to stop him?

"Uncle Ning ——" Cui Xiaoxin opened her eyes and asked: "Do you think–There is such a thing as a genius in this world? "

"There is. Lady is a genius. "

Cui Xiaoxin froze for a moment, and said with a chuckle: "But, even I was humiliated today. "

"What?" The man in black suit exclaimed. "This is impossible. We are fully aware of your intelligence, Within the kingdom's Tiandu City, you can be considered as a leader of the young generation. Tiandu's San Mingyue, Lu clan's Lu Qiji, Song clan's Song Chenxi, and there's our young Miss from the Cui family —-how could it be possible that there's someone who could humiliate you? This, old Ning find it totally unbelievable."

"However, this is what really happened." Cui Xiaoxin looked at the cherry trees outside, cherry blossom trees hugged together forming a large colourful wall, which looked like a fantasy of the starry sky under the shining light.

“After the University entrance examinations, Miss has to return to Tiandu.” The black suit man said in a deep voice: “When that time comes, it will truly be a showdown of the bright moon.”

Cui Xiaoxing pursed her lips as she suddenly remembered her promise with the black-faced youth.

“Let us meet in Weiming lake.”

014 – Hurry, test me!

Fishes swimming, colourful birds chirping. Morning dew dripping, and flowers blooming.

Li Muyang woke up early in the morning today; he got up at six o'clock in the morning but still felt energetic. Before, he and his sister were dragged out of the bed at seven or eight o'clock every day, and they would not even have time to eat breakfast. He had to grab a bun and stuff it into a bag and head to school in a daze. This scene was worlds apart from before.

After his final body examination, the doctor removed the gauze from his face.

Li Muyang pressed his hair which was as messy as a bird's nest, looked at the doctor who was carefully examining his head injury and asked: Dr Chen, are my wounds alright?"

"No problems." Dr Chen shook his head and said: "There have been no problems for a while."

"These past days I have troubled you." Li Muyang said with a face full of appreciation. Although staying in hospital requires money, Dr Chen has meticulously taken care of Li Muyang. Li Muyang is a kind person, and also a person who lacked love. Even if someone helped him a little, he would be extremely grateful.

"No trouble at all." Dr Li stretched out his hand and tidied Li Muyang's hair to one side and asked: "I remember there was a wound on your head, right?"

"There should be." Li Muyang answered while nodding his head. His head was

injured by a fruit tray, and he lost a lot of blood during that time.

“Where’s the mouth of the wound?” Dr Li asked.

“What?”

“The wound has disappeared.” Dr Chen stated with a serious expression.

“—Dr Chen, the wound is gone, does it not indicate it has healed?” Li Muyang swallowed his saliva several times to forcibly suppress the discomfort in his heart. There would be this kind of doctor in the world? Who would curse their own patients to not recover? The wound disappeared, of course it’s because it had healed. Or did it ran off on it’s own?

“Recovery is one thing, the wound on your head was originally not serious, just that Miss Cui repeatedly requested us to examine it, which is why you stayed for a long time–However, the wound should not have disappeared, it should have left a scar.” Dr. Chen said with face full of suspicion: “Right now even a hint of scarring can’t be seen, even I have forgotten where the site of injury was—-this rate of recovery is too shocking.”

“So that’s it.” Li Muyang smiled and said: “Maybe my body constitution is good, and also Dr Chen gave me good medicines, so I recovered a little faster.”

Dr Chen could only accept this explanation and said: “You can be discharged today. As for your other paperwork, someone will handle it, so you don’t have to worry.”

Li Muyang knew that Cui Xiaoxin wanted to thank Li Muyang for saving her by

helping him with the cost of his treatment, thus he won't argue over this matter. "Then Dr. Chen, see you again."

"Dr. Chen waved his hand and said: "Don't say 'see you again'. It isn't a good thing to stay in a hospital again."

After sending Dr. Chen off, Li Muyang took a shower and changed into his clean clothes that he prepared earlier.

His right hand was still wrapped in bandage, the doctor said the wound is too deep and is classified as a 'hole piercing wound'. Every seven days he has to come back to change his medications.

Seeing himself in the mirror, Li Muyang felt a slight unfamiliarity.

The previous him was as dark as charcoal, just like a genuine one hundred percent pure inkstone.

Many times when he went shopping with Li Shinian, she would suddenly stood still, and then take out foundation from her cosmetic bag to apply to his face ——

Right now Li Muyang felt he had become a bit paler, no, more like a dull yellow. A deep tan colour, as if he had been under the sun for a prolonged period of time.

His skin was just as good as before, like a piece of metal that's been exposed to the shining rays of the sun, displaying brilliant lights and vibrant colours.

He was extremely pleased with his changes, he even thought about putting on a medicinal gauze mask every night when he returned home. Maybe after days and months the black pigment in his body will be fully absorbed?

He once again looked at his arm, apart from the changes in the tone of his skin, there were no other visible differences.

However, all those extraordinary feats, how did he manage to do it?

Whether it's sending Zhang Chen or sending the assassin dressed in black flying with just one punch, it was strength that he did not possess previously.

Moreover, he kept having strange thoughts, thoughts that were intermittent as though separated by centuries, and also the methods and solutions that stunned Cui Xiaoxin, where did it all come from?

Li Muyang can put his personal pride and honour as stake, that he had never learned those things before.

" Could it mean, I am the youth that is selected by the goddess of destiny to be a dragon slayer?"

Even while think of this possibility, Li Muyang's felt a little excitement in his heart.

It was eight o'clock, Cui Xiaoxin and Li Shinian came together to Li Muyang's hospital room.

Li Muyang saw the two of them holding hands as they walked in; he asked in surprise: “You two came together?”

“We arranged it yesterday.” Li Shinian showed a disdaining expression of ‘you’re an idiot’. “We arranged last night to come and collect you from the hospital.”

Li Muyang smiled bitterly and said: “I just asked out of curiosity, can you not be so proud of yourself? I’ve packed all my stuff, are we heading directly to school?”

“Of course.” Li Shinian nodded and said: “It’s nearly the examinations period, you can’t be absent from lessons anymore. If somehow the heavens was not looking, and you would guess correct all the multiple-choice questions? Think about it, if you were even struck by lightning, then the chances of that happening isn’t completely impossible.”

Cui Xiaoxin looked at Li Muyang with a strange expression, a look of wanting to speak but in the end she did not say anything.

Li Shinian thought Cui Xiaoxin was blaming her for attacking her brother’s confidence. She waved her hand and said: “Xiaoxin sister don’t worry, my brother and I speak like this all the time– his ability to resist attacks is really strong. Do you want to try?”

“—_—-”

Seeing that Cui Xiaoxin was reluctant to try, Li Shinian looked at Li Muyang

waved her hand and said: “Let’s go, Let’s head to school.”

Afterwards, she pulled Cui Xiaoxin’s arm affectionately and walked out.

Li Muyang felt helpless, and could only carry his schoolbag, his washed clothes and a couple of fruits that he didn’t eat, and follow after them.

“Hey, I’m still recovering. My head is injured and my hand is bandaged, can you guys help me out and relieve my burden?” Li Muyang shouted.

Li Shinian turned around, took a banana from the bag of fruit Li Muyang held in his hand and said: ” You’re my most favourite brother, of course I will relieve some of your burden–I’ll eat a banana.”

Cui Xiaoxin also followed her and took an apple from the bag, waved it at Li Muyang and said: “I’ll help too.”

“——-““——”

The distance between the hospital and Renaissance High School was not far; the three of them arrived quickly while laughing and talking.

Right now it was the beginning of school time, Li Muyang together with the two beauties Li Shinian and Cui Xiaoxin appearing within the crown is indeed eye-catching. After all, the three of them were famous among the school. And the differences in their images were so drastic; it is impossible to not attract on-lookers.

“My god, isn’t that guy the charcoal of our school? Who are the two girls next to him?”

“Ah, My goddess–why is Cui Xiaoxin walking together with that trash?”

“Li Shinian would not fall in love, right? My heart is broken——”

————-

All the students pointed at the three of them-Li Muyang, Li Shinian and Cui Xiaoxin. The admirers of Cui Xiaoxin and Li Shinian were all heartbroken.

“Are you stupid?” Someone smart within the crown began to explain. ” Li Shinian is Li Muyang’s sister, blood sister, how could the two of them be dating?”

“Ah? Then Li Shinian is not that trash’s girlfriend, that’s great–”

“Of course not.” Li Muyang’s girlfriend is Cui Xiaoxin alone–that’s what Li Muyang’s sister personally said. I heard they were often hanging out together, I’m just telling you only, don’t tell anyone else—”

“_”

Li Shinian took a glance at the surging crowd, suddenly felt guilty and said: “Brother, Xiaoxin sister, it’s nearly time for class, I won’t walk you to the classroom–”

She waved at the two of them, and then quickly disappeared into the crowd.

Li Muyang looked at her as she leaves, with a face full of smiles he said to Cui Xiaoxin: “Don’t mind her, her temper is always like this.”

“I don’t mind.” Cui Xiaoxin said smilingly. “I understand her temperament.”

” My god, did you guys see, goddess is smiling–”

“Are the rumors true? Cui Xiaoxin and Li Muyang are going out?

“That’s possible, I heard that when Li Muyang was sent out of the classroom by Miss Zhao, Cui Xiaoxin chased after him–”

————

When Li Muyang and Cui Xiaoxin arrived at the classroom side by side, it immediately attracted the attention of the whole class.

Seeing the two of them walking together, talking and laughing, everyone was dumbstruck.

Zhang Chen was fooling around with a group of friends when the classroom suddenly turned quiet; he could not resist turning around to look.

“Li Muyang, you dare to come back? I thought you were afraid of embarrassing yourself at the university entrance examinations so you left school

already. Anyway, your exam results will be the same whether you attend or not.”

Li Muyang placed the fruit bag and his school bag on his desk, and step-by-step walked towards Zhang Chen.

“What are you doing?” Zhang Chen eyes showed an expression of fear. After the incident at the lake, he began to be afraid of Li Muyang’s fist.

“Test me.” Li Muyang said each word slowly.

“What?” Zhang Chen face was astonished as he looked at Li Muyang.

“Test me—” said Li Muyang. He casually grabbed a textbook and threw it at Zhang Chen: “Quickly test me.”

“＿＿＿”

015 – Cheating in the test!

“This guy is an idiot.”

This was what everyone thought.

Regarding Li Muyang’s school grades, the brutal answer has already been demonstrated through countless tests and exams.

He was first in the class, first in the whole year; of course this was all counted from the last place.

He did not pass in any subjects, even in foreign language, which had the most multiple-choice questions, he did not pass. Apparently, even the god of fate isn’t willing to stand on his side because he’s afraid his bad luck might affect him.

However, such a guy even threw a textbook and said ‘test me, quickly test me,’ If he’s not an idiot then what is?

Otherwise, normal people would not do such a thing?

Zhang Chen also had the same thought. He initially widened his eyes and stared at Li Muyang, shocked that he would do such a stupid thing. Then he laughed loudly, swaying back and forth as he laughed.

Zhang Chen’s friends around him also laughed, the whole class also laughed along.

Cui XIaoxing also laughed, but her laugh was lighter, with a more profound meaning.

Zhang Chen pointed at Li Muyang and said: “Li Muyang, I heard you were sick during the past few days, was your brain damaged from the fever? If your brain is fine, why would you suggest such a crazy thing? Test your knowledge? What should I test you? What do you know? It was fine before, why suggest such a thing to humiliate yourself with?”

“Chen bro, since this guy Li Muyang wants you to test him, then you should test him well. We’re all classmates, why would you not give him face?”

“That’s right, as classmates we should help each other, so we can all improve together. Chen bro ask Li Muyang some simple questions, maybe he would be able to correctly guess it?”

———-

Zhang Chen’s underlings all started to jeer.

Li Muyang also sneered coldly within, thinking that he would soon use his vast knowledge and wonderful answers to blind their dog eyes.

Zhang Chen lifted the book, looked at Li Muyang suspiciously and asked: “You really want me to test you?”

“Go on.” Li Muyang said to him seriously, and showed a carefree expression, as if he was sitting on a river bank fishing, with light winds and calm clouds.

Although it looked like that Li Muyang had casually threw any book, but this was the book that he felt he had the deepest understanding with- “History of the West Wind Kingdom.” These past few days, Cui Xiaoxin had thoroughly went through it once with him, she also repeatedly explained and confirmed a number of important points.

Li Muyang felt he was not stupid anymore!

Zhang Chen opened the book, flipped through the pages and asked aloud: “The name of the first Emperor appeared in what page and what paragraph?”

Li Muyang expression was slightly stiff, then he said in protest: “Does this even count as a question?”

“Of course. You said so, you told me to casually ask any questions.” “Zhang Chen’s smiled wretchedly and continued to ask: “Known as the ‘holy saint’ Song Annan was born in what year and what day? Died in what year and what day?

“Those types of questions won’t come up in the exams at all, alright?”“

“Who knows? What if this year’s teacher writes these questions? You’re not the teacher, how do you know this question won’t be asked?” “Zhang Chen said with a look of disdain: “The kingdoms’s general Feiyang killed how many people when he participated in the ‘battle of the clear lake’? What’s the name of those people? ”

Li Muyang’s black face was angered to the point of twitching, his body was shivering, he pointed and Zhang Chen and scolded: “You are deliberately making

things difficult, you have no learning attitude at all–Among all the classmates, how could there be someone who is as cheap and shallow as you are? I'm ashamed for you."

Zhang Chen felt proud, looked to his left, and said with a huge laughter: "Everyone look, he forced me to ask him but when I really asked him questions, he was unable to answer any of them ——-"

Everyone began to laugh endlessly.

Zhang Chen threw the textbook onto the desk, looked at Li Muyang and said:" Li Muyang, as a human, it's best to be content with what they have. Everyone should do the things they are good at, you like to sleep and you excel at sleeping then you should just sleep. Entrance examinations are only a couple of days away, but you suddenly jump up and display an image of 'I love learning.' Everyone will be uncomfortable. Am I right? "

"You——" Li Muyang's black face turned purple, purple face turned red. "You are pushing me too far. "

The smile on Zhang Chen's face froze, he tilt his head over, his eyes kept staring at Li Muyang and said: "Li Muyang, I'm bullying you, so what? Do you think you still have hope of being rescued? There is only one month left, one month later, we will all attend our desired universities, what about you? You must be going back and bake cake with your mother? But that's pretty good—- life should also very easy for the owner of a little cake shop, right?

"Zhang Chen, I definitely will do better than you——"

“Nonsense. “Zhang Chen rudely interrupted Li Muyang and said: “Just relax and enjoy it, these moments are the last time you can be together with us as students. After a month, you are nothing–”

Zhao Mingzhu came in holding a stack of papers, seeing the conflict in the classroom between Li Muyang and Zhang Chen, she shouted: “What’s happening? What happened this time? Zhang Chen, Li Muyang, what are you two doing?”

Zhang Chen turned and faced Zhao Mingzhu, and said with a smiling face to explain: “Miss Zhao, Li Muyang told me to test him, after I asked he couldn’t even answer one question. He is now currently ashamed and angry, making trouble for me.”

Zhao Mingzhu’s mouth twitched and said sternly: ” Zhang Chen, why don’t take a look how many days till the University entrance examination? You should make use of the time to learn, but you’re wasting time on silly things. Do you want to attend West Wind University?”

“Miss Zhao, I’m wrong.” Zhang Chen apologised quickly and said to Li Muyang: “I originally thought that since we’re classmates, Li Muyang’s test results aren’t that good but we still can’t write him off as hopeless; if he has the heart to work harder then it is my duty as class president to help take care of the weaker students inside the class —-”

“Well, some people just can’t hold up the pig intestines. It’s a waste of time talking to him, even glancing at him is wasting your sight.” Zhao Mingzhu said bluntly.” Because of him, Cui Xiaoxin had chased after Li Muyang during time and even stopped attending class for a few days. She didn’t want to have any more conflict at this time with this person who was given preferential treatment by her. If it affected Cui Xiaoxin’s mood and impacted her university entrance

examinations, then that would affect her own rate of promotion and the rich rewards she ould receive.

However, although she didn't mention Li Muyang's name this time, everyone in the class knows whom she's directing it to.

"Wasn't there someone who wants to test themselves? I have a test paper here, I came up with the questions last night–This paper is very simple, there are many questions that had appeared in previous exams before." Zhao Mingzhu placed the papers in her hand onto the desk, stared coldly at Li Muyang and said: "Although this is the last mock test of the semester, I hope some people strive for a good result and do not grab hold of the last place in class, refusing to hand it over to others. Give others a chance, okay?"

Li Muyang was so ashamed he could die.

After hearing what Zhao Mingzhu said, he also felt that he had held that position for far too long. He had won the cup every time; no one else was qualified to compete with him.

The bell rang, the papers also circulated through the class.

Li Muyang composed his emotions, and then began to seriously answer.

The blocks of words that made him fall asleep previously now felt extremely close and familiar.

"Strange, this question I can solve by myself."

“Strange, this question is so familiar.”

“Strange, this question I’ve seen it somewhere before–.”

———-

Two hours of examination time. Li Muyang had only used one hour and ten minutes to complete the test.

Except for two questions he couldn’t answer no matter how much he thought, the paper was all answered.

After Li Muyang had finished completing the test paper, he began to look over it seriously.

Many of these questions he felt was extremely simple, as if the answer was already imprinted in his mind.

But some questions he was not sure on. He felt like he’s seen it before, but was not one hundred percent sure of the answer.

The two completely foreign questions left him with a critical awareness in his heart-with just a month to go until the University entrance examinations, no matter how hard he tried, no matter how much potential he had in learning, there was a limit to how many questions he could answer.

If the university entrance exams are full of such questions, then was there no

hope whatsoever?

Li Muyang decided, for the coming days he would double his efforts yet again.

More than double!

Zhao Mingzhu sat on the platform, on the surface she appeared to be correcting students' homework, but in reality her eyes were scanning the class like a radar. She had many years of experience in teaching; she knew every students' movement like the back of her hand. If someone dared to make any little movements during her exams, that's equal to seeking suicide.

When her eyes drifted to student that she's most unwilling to lay eyes on, she could not help but pause for a moment.

That student was not answering questions like the others, but had an expression as if in deep thought.

"Putting on an act." Zhao Mingzhu thought to herself in disdain. From the first day they met and after breaking a board eraser, a strong enmity was formed between them. She had also completely abandoned this student, the same as many the other teachers.

Thinking back to when Zhang Chen was testing him, Zhao Mingzhu decided to give him a little ' surprise '.

"Li Muyang–" Zhao Mingzhu said aloud, "You finished answering your test paper?"

“I’ve finished.” Li Muyang lifted his head and said.

“—_—-”

Zhao Mingzhu was furious.

She thought Li Muyang would panic like before, and then with a red face, hand over a blank paper that was stained with his drool or some other substance.

Then she would harshly scold him, and write a big cross on his paper in front of the whole class.

He didn’t think Li Muyang would not play his usual cards, and instead said he ‘ finished ‘ in a normal tone.

“You’ve really finished?”

“Actually I’m not—” Li Muyang said in an embarrassed tone: “There’s two questions I can’t solve.”

Zhao Mingzhu scoffed at this. Perhaps what you mean is you only answered two questions, right?

“Bring the test papers up and let me have a look.” “Said Zhao Mingzhu.

Li Muyang placed his pen aside, and under the surprised expression of the

students he handed over his papers.

Zhao Mingzhu took the papers and the smile on her face instantly froze.

He really was finished; the test paper was filled with words.

“Let’s look at the answers first. “She thought in her mind.

“This question is correct, well, he must have guessed it——”

“This question is also correct, well, Li Muyang’s luck is pretty good–”

———

After reading all the answers Zhao Mingzhu’s face became ashen.

Pa—

She slammed the table and shouted: “Li Muyang, you dare to cheat? ”

016 – Killing words!

Cheat!

Anyone who had an understanding of Li Muyang previous grades would have the same thought when they take a look at this paper.

The Li Muyang before, apart from guessing the multiple-choice questions, the other parts were almost blank. However, this time the paper he handed in was near completed, but what's worse is that all his answers were correct.

You must know, before Zhao Mingzhu had mentioned this type of question is not difficult, and has been covered in class, but in her heart she's very clear that this mock test is quite challenging. She had even set a few common traps of university entrance examination questions in it.

Li Muyang even perfectly answered the trap questions. The answers that he wrote were even more accurate than her ideal answer.

If this is not cheating, then what is? The ignorant and incompetent Li Muyang has more profound knowledge than his veteran teacher who has more than twenty years of experience?

It was still exam time; most of the students were sti racing against time to answer the questions on their desks. Except from the moment Li Muyang handed in his paper and they looked up to let out a snorting sound from their nostril, all their time has been focused on their own test paper. Right now, they don't even have the time to mock Li Muyang.

This time the questions were difficult. There were a number of questions,

other than the two Li Muyang gave up on, they wouldn't be able to completely answer in the given time easily.

Even the first in the class Cui XIaoxin had only just finished answering the last question, placing down her pen on the table and checking through the papers.

After hearing the growl of Zhao Mingzhu, everyone lifted their head and looked at the platform in astonishment.

Crash–

Zhao Mingzhu pushed the chair out of the way with her butt, grabbed Li Muyang's papers and stood up. She stared viciously at Li Muyang and shouted: "Li Muyang, explain to me, what is going on? "

Hearing the questioning of Zhao Mingzhu, the eyes of everyone shifted towards Li Muyang's face.

Their faces were gloatin. All of us knows your grade——-no, the whole Renaissance High school is aware of your grades. Cheating at this time-just what is the point?

Moreover, twenty points and thirty points -what's the difference between these two scores.

Cui Xiaoxin was the only one that was leisurely checking her papers, and did not take a glance at this hilarious scene. She had already expected to see this scene.

Li Muyang had already returned to his seat, he looked up at Zhao Mingzhu and said: “Miss Zhao, I don’t know what you’re talking about.”

“Don’t you understand? “Zhao Mingzhu sneered aloud. “How can you not know? You answered all the questions correctly, give me an explanation of what’s going on here? ”

“All correct?” A happy smile appeared on the Li Muyang’s face, the large rock in his heart was released. There were several questions that he felt he had seen before when he was answering, but it was a very distant blurred memory, he wasn’t sure if he answered correctly—-now that Zhao Mingzhu teacher said it’s all correct, then that proved it was possible for him to achieve a very good result.

“Li Muyang——” Zhao Mingzhu grabbed the blackboard eraser, wanting to slam the board on the platform. But then she remembered the previous incident of breaking the eraser, she was forced to refrain from barbaric acts like this. She really did not want her name to be associated with Li Muyang. “I asked you to give me an explanation; do you think by avoiding the question I’ll let you go? ”

“Miss—“The smile on Li Muyang’s face gradually faded away and said: “I just answered the questions correctly, why do I need to explain it to you? Explain what? Because I tried really hard so I got it right? ”

“Pa–”

Zhao Mingzhu slammed her hand on the desk and shouted in a harsh voice: “Li Muyang, do you think we’re all stupid? The questions were chosen by me, I am more aware of the difficulty than anyone else—-you handed in your paper an hour early, and also 95% of the questions were correct, the answers to all the

questions were right.”

Zhao Mingzhu scanned the class with one eye, and mockingly asked: “Can you all believe it? Anyways, I can’t believe it.”

Hua—-

The audience was in an uproar!

“Impossible? Li Muyang has answered more than 95% of the questions? I did not relax even for a moment, but I have not answered half of it——”

“All correct? Who is he fooling? With his results how can that happen?”

“This guy is stupid, even if he cheats then he should deliberately answer some few questions wrong, no combat experience at all——”

—————

Cui Xiaoxin finally looked up at the platform, her delicate eyebrows slightly twisted up, just like the cool breeze blowing outside the window.

She looked at Li Muyang’s expression, then lowered her head once again and carried on with her own things.

“Miss Zhao—-” Li Muyang sat on his chair, sitting straight with his dark and lean body. At this moment, the students who have ignored his appearance or

had a fixed perception of him, found that Li Muyang seemed to grown a little, his body seemed to be stronger, even his skin colour isn't as shiny black as before.

He became a spirited dignified youth, and is no longer the deformed monster that they liked to humiliate.

A withered sapling suddenly started to sprout, giving people a bright feeling.

At this moment, Li Muyang had a very serious expression, like saying this it is an important matter. For a student, being wrongly accused for cheating in exam by a teacher is in fact a huge matter.

"Your student answered the questions correctly, compared to before—-he has made a lot of progress, as his teacher, shouldn't you feel happy for him?

"If it's from working hard to learn, step by step making such progress and achievements, I will be happy for him. However, if this student achieved this performance through cheating, I'm disappointed in his attitude towards learning and also his character—-in my opinion, such a student is truly hopeless. I'll feel ashamed for having such students. "

Zhao Mingzhu had decided, had decided to kick him out. Drive him out because of this cheating incident. She doesn't want to let him stay in the classroom, she doesn't want the black sheep to affect the learning of the other students. There's only a month's time till the university entrance examinations, she and her students have to make full use of this short period of time and can no longer be agitated or waste a single second on this trash.

Get out!

After making such a decision, Zhao Mingzhu calmed down, waved her hand and said: “Li Muyang, you don’t need to say anything. Pack your stuff and go wait at the school attendance office. In a while there will be results. Currently it is still exam time, don’t bother other students’ answering their questions. ”

“Miss Zhao——” Li Muyang’s eyes turned slightly red, even his voice became hoarse. It was anger, he was wronged – the coldness of being wronged but he could not say anything.

From he was young till now, apart from his parents and sister, no one was close to him, no one cherished him, no one would suddenly rush up to him and put their arm on his shoulder and say: ” Buddy after school let’s go to the games room.”

He was always alone, just like an isolated person. The whole world was standing opposite of him, pointing and saying at a distance: Look, it’s a monster.

He’s not a monster, he’s just a child, a young man.

He was also eager to have friends, eager to be recognised. He desired for someone who would pass him notes in class, hoped that after school someone would draped over his shoulder and eat mung bean ice with him——even the students passing notes deliberately avoided him, as if the handwriting on the note would disappear if he touched it.

He didn’t do anything wrong, why are all these people so cruel to him? This isn’t fair to him.

“Miss Zhao——” Li Muyang stubbornly upturned his face, not letting the collection of tears in his eyes to flow down. Otherwise, those guys seeing Li Muyang cry would say: ‘Look the charcoal in our class is crying——‘

Li Muyang never had cried, even when he was forced to the ground and they rode him like a goat he still did not cry.

This was the only moments that he was able to defend his own dignity.

“Miss Zhao, even if you suspected me cheating, should you not investigate first, and then make a conclusion? “Li Muyang faced Zhao Mingzhu and said each word slowly: “Do you have any idea, your words—— what it means to me? ”

Li Muyang’s voice choked with emotion, he’s worried that he can’t continue his sentence, he’s worried that he can’t persist: “Miss Zhao, what you’re doing is the same as killing me.”

017 – I don’t accept!

Before, Li Muyang’s life was just like his skin colour, pitch-black and without any colour.

And it is because of this reason, that when Cui Xiaoxin initiated to help him with his schoolwork in the cafe nearby, his lungs were filled with gratitude. At the moment when the assassin attacked Cui Xiaoxin, he did not even think but plunged forward, wanting to sacrifice his own life for her.

It was because of this, that when his grades had improved a little, he saw a trace of bright light in his life, in his heart he cared more than anyone else, and valued it more than anything else.

Just like a flower blooming in the desert, you would carefully look after it and hope it would bear fruit. But in the end somebody came over and trampled the flower to death, the light in your heart that gives you hope was extinguished, and once again you would enter a world of darkness.

His heart was filled with despair, so much grief.

Seeing Li Muyang’s expression on his face, everyone was stunned.

They were able to feel the grievance as well as the hostility in Li Muyang’s heart that was difficult to suppress, they were able to clearly see the bulging blood vessels on his neck and that tightly clenched fist holding a pen.

Kacha—

The pen broke under his grip, the black ink inside leaked through his black palm.

Just as he had said, even if you suspected me of cheating, then you have to prove your deduction, rather than directly placing a big ‘cheat’ hat on the student’s head.

This slander is just like using a knife to engrave the word ‘bastard ‘ on the table, even if a cut had healed, many years later ugly scars would still remain in people’s hearts.

Hearing the questioning of Li Muyang, Zhao Mingzhu’s face darkened.

“Li Muyang, do you still need proof? Your previous grades-Are you not aware of them yourself? I’m not aware? Students in the class not aware? In a few days time you were able to answer so well in the test, do you think you’re a genius? “Zhao Mingzhu language was still harsh, but her tone of voice has weakened a lot. “Good, you want proof right? OK, I’ll give you proof. ”

She scanned the student’s around Li Muyang, the one sharing a table with Li Muyang is called Yang Jun, Zhang’s Chen good friend, and also a member of the school’s basketball team. His academic achievement can only be regarded as average; he is unlikely to produce such perfect answers.

Then, her eyes shifted forward, laid her eyes on the girl sitting behind Li Muyang and said: “Chen Yuanyuan, bring your paper here for me to look at.”

Chen Yuanyuan held the glasses on her nose, looked up at Zhao Mingzhu and said: “Miss Zhao, I haven’t finished—-there’s one-third of the questions I have not yet answered.”

Zhao Mingzhu frowned; Chen Yuanyuan was a good student in her mind, and also the student near Li Muyang that has the best grades. If she still had one-third of the questions unanswered, then it was naturally impossible for Li Muyang to copy her.

“Zheng Fang, have you finish answering the questions? ”

“Miss, I haven’t finished. “The petite girl answered in a weak voice. Afraid that Zhao Mingzhu will blame her.

“Chen Lei—”

“Miss, I’m done.”

“Bring it up for me to look at.”

Chen Lei brought the papers up; Zhao Mingzhu flipped the pages with a face of excitement, as if she had found evidence of Li Muyang cheating.

As she continues to look her face turned green. She clenched Chen Lei’s papers, threw it away and scolded: “Lei Chen, do you have a pig’s brain? The first main question and the third question I’ve went over countless times before, it is clear that these are give away questions, and yet you still give me a wrong answer, do you have any memory at all? Do you want to go to university? Take it back and do it again. ”

Chen Lei picked up the papers from the floor. His face was bright-red as he ran

back to his seat.

Zhao Mingzhu scanned the audience and asked: “Is there anyone who finish their test? It doesn’t matter if you haven’t answered two or three questions—”

No one replied.

“Not one single person?” Zhao Mingzhu’s face became increasingly ugly.

Li Muyang stood up.

He pushed the chair back, step-by-step walked towards the platform.

“Li Muyang, what do you want? “Zhao Mingzhu said aloud in a harsh voice.

“Don’t bother. “Li Muyang said in a low voice.

He walked up to the platform, and stood next to Zhao Mingzhu shoulder to shoulder.

He grabbed an unwritten test paper on the table, took Zhao Mingzhu’s pencil that she used to grade paper and began to answer.

Zhao Mingzhu eyes moved around, the muscles on her face twitched.

This guy doesn’t know how high the sky is and how thick the earth is, he dared to answer on the spot?

Just as Zhao Mingzhu had thought, Li Muyang stood by her side; his body slightly bent over, and wrote genuine answers on a blank piece of paper.

Sha Sha Sha—

He moved his pen up and down, rarely lifting his wrist.

One question after another was overcome, blank parts of the papers was filled up little at a time.

The classroom was in complete silence.

No one spoke, no one answered, no one even made a sneering expression on their face.

Everyone looked up at the platform at Li Muyang who was focused on answering, they were about to witness a miracle, and will also witness Li Muyang's innocence.

The bell rang, no one left, and the class continued.

When Li Muyang finished answering the last question, only thirty minutes of the allocated time were used. Because these questions he had answered once so he did not need to think again.

He once again handed in his papers to Zhao Mingzhu and said: "Take a look again. "

Zhao Mingzhu automatically took the papers, but looked at Li Muyang with a puzzled expression.

This was the trash-student in the eyes of everyone, did a complete transformation just happened?

Doesn't matter if the answers on the paper are right or wrong, he had the courage to stand up and fight back, strode to the platform and answered in front of the class—-he was no longer the previously timid, cowardly, and confused student that did not care about anything and almost had no presence whatsoever.

"Of course, you may say that because I've copied it once, then I've already remembered all the answers—–" Li Muyang's stared sharply at Zhao Mingzhu, and said in a voice of bitterness: "In order to avoid such accusations, a lot of problems I have used a different method to solve it. Miss Zhao please carefully look at the two papers and see the difference between them. "

Wow—-

The classroom became chaotic again.

"What? He said a lot of questions he used a different method to solve it?"

"Impossible? Did Li Muyang eat a magical pellet?–otherwise how did he become so amazing?"

"This guy wouldn't have dressed as the pig to eat the tiger all along? He intentionally did badly in exams just to paralyse us, and waited until the time of

university entrance examinations to amaze us——”

——————

Zhao Mingzhu ignored the discussions within the class; her line of sight was set on the paper.

Her eyes shifted through one question after another, and one answer after an answer appeared in front of her eyes, matching with her ideal answers.

Li Muyang did not lie. Many questions he used a different method. It was unclear which methods were better, but the answer matched with her model answer.

Still the paper in front was the same as the one before, there were two questions left blank. The part that he can’t answer.

Such performance, such ability, even the first in the class Cui Xiaoxin may not be able to achieve.

It was clear, Li Muyang did not cheat, the paper in front and the paper before were all completed by Li Muyang himself.

Zhao Mingzhu grabbed the papers, as if she was holding a burning red-hot coal in her hand.

Her expression underwent many changes, but finally revealed a smiling face after many struggles, patted Li Muyang on the shoulder and said, “Not bad, Li Muyang did not cheat, this paper is indeed completed with your own answers

——your progress is obvious, keep it up. ”

Zhao Mingzhu looked at the watch on her wrist and said: “Li Muyang, you can go. Other students have to continue with their test. ”

“Miss Zhao–“Li Muyang stood in front of Zhao Mingzhu unwilling to leave.

“What?” Zhao Mingzhu suddenly lifted her head, her eyes flashing fiercely. She had already proved his innocence; does this guy want to push it?

“You have taught for many years, and have never apologised to the students, right?” Li Muyang asked.

The air seemed as if it had froze, every student felt a chill down the back of their neck.

They all though Li Muyang had gone crazy, he dared to ask the famous traditional witch of the school to apologise to him.

“What are you trying to say?” Zhao Mingzhu clenched her hands. Li Muyang’s test paper was crushed into a hard paper ball.

“If there’s nothing—-,” Li Muyang looked straight at Zhao Mingzhu’s eyes and slowly said: “Then you can start from me.”

“Li Muyang–”

“Don’t tell me that Miss Zhao you feel that the things you did, the words you said, and the harm you did to a student is not enough to exchange for an apology? If that’s the case, I’ll report this to the school today, I will complain to the education board about my teacher for slandering and insulting me——”

Zhao Mingzhu gaze was fixed on Li Muyang as she said: “Li Muyang, are you sure about this? ”

“Yes, Miss. I’m sure.”

“Fine, I’ll apologise to you, I said something wrong, I shouldn’t accuse you of cheating before investigating the situation—-Li Muyang, I’m sorry.” Zhao Mingzhu said with a hoarse voice.

This is something she never had done before.

It was also something she never thought she would do.

“I did not cheat.” Li Muyang said to the students in the class.

“＿＿“”＿＿＿”

Li Muyang turned around, looked at Zhao Mingzhu and said: “I do not accept it.”

“What?”

“I said——Miss Zhao’s apology, I do not accept it.” Li Muyang repeated himself.

He stepped down from the platform and walked towards his seat.

He stuffed the books and his drinking cup on his table into his school bag and walked outside the classroom carrying the bulging bag.

This time, his back was straight, like the cold trees of the proud valleys.

018 – Suspected Puppy love!

Li Muyang left.

He proved to all the students in the class that he did not cheat, Zhao Mingzhu also apologised to him before he left.

“I don’t accept it.”

This was his counterattack, his roar of unwillingness to back down.

He wanted an apology, because only an apology indicated that she was wrong.

However, he was unable to accept this apology——he carried hopes and dreams, wanting to put up a good performance in front of his own teacher and the students who often mocked him. He wanted to tell them that he can also put in effort, that he is not a natural waste, He also wanted to learn, he could also learn like others—

In the end, the result he received was this kind of treatment?

Accused of cheating!

Just as he had said, this was the same as killing him.

How many innocent and simple boys, after hearing one word from their teacher led them to take the wrong path in their life?

Li Muyang had left a long time ago, but the classroom was still dead-quiet.

From Zhao Mingzhu's face, water can be squeezed out; she stared at the direction where Li Muyang left and stayed silent for a long time.

This student's behavior was like a violent slap to her, but at the same time it also gave her an important lesson in her life. A never forgotten lesson in a blood-drenched life.

When she looked at the door, the eyes of all the students in the classroom were focused on her.

Their feelings were very complex, some sympathised with Li Muyang, while others were on Zhao Mingzhu's side—-Miss Zhao had apologised, why is Li Muyang unwilling to forgive her?

They felt they had learnt something, but when they seriously thought about it, the idea is like a cunning fish entering the boundless mind, making it difficult to trace by everyone.

Years later, when they recalled the past, when this scene appeared in their mind again, that's the time when they will truly understand what they witnessed during their ordinary days.

It will be a gorgeous transformation, as if the inner heart has been reborn.

When Zhao Mingzhu turned around to look at classroom, all students panicked and lowered their head pretending to answer.

However, the fluctuation in their moods was not able to subside.

Zhao Mingzhu opens her mouth wanting to say something, but the words only reached her lips as if they were blocked by something.

“Answer well. “Zhao Mingzhu told the students.

Cui Xiaoxin tidied her pens into her pencil case, carried her papers and walked towards the platform.

Zhao Mingzhu face was filled with a smile as she looked at Cui XIaoxin. She said with a smile: “Have you reviewed it? You can’t be careless. ”

“I’ve checked it over. “Cui Xiaoxin answered, turned and walked towards the outside of the classroom.

Her body was thin; under the bright sunshine her snow-white skin looked almost transparent.

“Cui Xiaoxin—” Zhao Mingzhu urgently shouted. “You forgot to write your name. ”

Cui Xiaoxin did not turn around and said: “Miss Zhao, write the name of whoever you felt answered those papers. ”

“—-”

————

The time was perfect, the sun shone fiercely.

Li Muyang and Cui Xiaoxin walked side by side under the shade of a tree on the campus, cicadas noises came and go, just like the accompaniment to the pace of both of them.

“You should not have come out.” Li Muyang said aloud, breaking the silence between them. “University entrance examinations are approaching, everyone is entering the final sprinting stage—-”

“I’ve said before, I’m all ready.” Cui Xiaoxing said in a clear voice.

“Always good to learn more, during this time the teacher definitely will constantly repeat the key points for the exams, and if you’re not there, then you will missed those questions? If it’s because of my situation that affects your exam—-”

“Impossible.” Cui Xiaoxng bluntly interrupted Li Muyang and said: “I will definitely attend West Wind University.”

Li Muyang opened his mouth and smiled. He was genuinely happy for his friend and said: “You’re so confident, it seems you are ready.”

“I don’t like cramming for exams, because there’s too much uncertainty, this makes me feel very insecure—-,” said Cui Xiaoxin. She paused for a moment and turned to face Li Muyang who was walking next to her, “However, you’re an exception.”

“Huh? ”

“Li Muyang, you must know your progress is incredible. When I was tutoring you I was also astonished. Today, Miss Zhao’s suspicion was expected—–but I still don’t like the way she acts. And her words were really mean.”

Li Muyang sighed and said: “Perhaps because of my appearance, I was never liked by anyone. Originally I wanted perform well and changed the way Miss Zhao look at me. She would pat me on the shoulder in front of the whole class and say Li Muyang ‘well done’—-the students in the class will smile at me, and then say “Li Muyang, I didn’t know you were so capable.” I just wanted to let them know, I’m just like them, I’m not an idiot, and also not the sleeping pig—-”

Cui Xiaoxin stayed silent and didn’t say a word.

She understood Li Muyang’s feelings at that moment.

After all, he is only a child, and also a ‘poor’ child. He envied other students who had beautiful clothes and fun toys. He finally waited for this day, carrying his new toys to show off in front of the other students, wanting to tell them that he also have toys. If all the other people accused him that his toys were stolen, the child must be hurt, right?

After a long time of silence, Cui Xiaoxin asked aloud: “Then, what are you going to do?”

“I’m about to head home and study.” Li Muyang said. “I’ve thought about it, even in the classroom, there is no way to learn more things. Today, Miss Zhao suspected me of cheating, then next time wouldn’t teacher Chen and teacher Jiang have the same suspicion? In that case, it’s better to stay at home and study until the exams and then I’ll go back to school.”

“Good. I’ll accompany you.”Cui Xiaoxin said aloud.

“What?”

“I admit, your ability to learn amazing. However, how to learn and what to learn, you still need someone to help and direct you—-your foundation is too weak, wanting to build up the knowledge of all the topics we’ve learnt is impossible. With one month’s time I can only teach you what you should learn and what can be put to one side for the time being. It’s only through this way that you will be able to focus on the most important things with the limited amount of time.”

“Classmate Cui Xiaoxin——”

“Don’t be too moved.” Cui Xiaoxin said. Her feet stood on the rays of light on the ground, her white canvas shoes looked as if were infected with countless twinkling stars. “I’m doing this for a reason.”

“What?”

“It’s just that hopefully next time when I invite you to a movie, you won’t be so cruel and refuse. The corner of Cui Xiaoxin’s mouth raised slightly, showing a charming and radiant smile.

“＿＿”

Li Yan, Li Muyang’s came to the school to ask for leave for Li Muyang. For

whatever reason, the school easily approved

Li Muyang stayed at home and revised. Cui Xiaoxin came every day to the Li family's courtyard for a one-to-one tutoring.

Li Shinian was the happiest, as soon as she came back from school she would stand next to their table with a plate of fruit or potato seeds and eat non-stop.

She was discontented with Li Muyang for choosing another girl over his sister, because in the past she had drained her mind to help and tutor Li Muyang, wanting to help her brother to improve his grades. But each time when she talked until her mouth was dry she would hear a snoring sound from Li Muyang.

The things she failed to do, Cui Xiaoxin easily did it. It made her doubt her own charms, several times she had looked at her face and body in the bathroom mirror——her breasts were not small.

Every time Li Muyangs's mother, Luo Qi returned back from the bakery, she brought back all kinds of pastries for Cui Xiaoxin. Seeing what Cui Xiaoxin likes to eat, she would bring more of that the next time.

Luo Qi was cooking in the kitchen when her husband Li Yan walked in.

"You're back?" Luo Qi greeted her husband, and looked through the kitchen window at the two children studying, her eyes showed a strong intractable gentle smile.

"Yes." "Li Yan looked out of the window and said: "That girl again? This can't be love, right?"

“Puppy love is good.” Luo Qi sighed and said: “Good girl, tall and beautiful aside, what’s rare is that her temperament is good, she studies well, her personality is good, and has a good upbringing. She come here daily to help Muyang, but has never stayed in our house to eat a simple meal with us——such a good girl if we don’t get her early, I’m afraid that in the future she would have nothing to do with our Muyang?”

“But this kind of thing can’t be decided by us, Muyang is, after all——” Li Yan said aloud.

“Shut up.” Luo Qi stared back at her husband with mean eyes, just like a wolf protecting her cubs. “Li Muyang is my son in the past, and is also my son in the future. Before, they didn’t want him; in the future don’t think that they can take him away from me.”

019 – Old stories!

Disobedient children can be found everywhere, but a mother who doesn't love her child is rarely seen.

Li Yan understood his wife's feelings, he reached out, patted her on the shoulder and calmed her down: "You treat Muyang as your child, do you think I don't treat him as my son? Even after we had Li Shinian, did our affection towards him drifted away at all? At that time, we were worried that Muyang would feel isolated, so we treated him much better than before. Muyang and Shinian, in our hearts is there no difference between biological and adopted?"

"But you also know, Muyang has the blood of the Lu family running through his veins. During that time, they thought Muyang was struck by lightning and wouldn't have a chance of surviving. They were worried he would be deformed; thus they staged the drama of substituting the prince. In order to avoid the incident being known, they forced us two to leave Tiandu that night and move to Jiangnan. At that time you also was unwilling to swap the children, who would want to give their newly born daughter to someone else? But in the end, did we not have to comply? "

"Later, they found out that Li Muyang was still alive, they then focused their attention on him. When Muyang was five years old, a nameless monk came to visit unannounced; did the Lu family not invite him? If not, then how could he possibly find his way here? Who would know that in our family there is a child with chronic illness? If the unknown monk did not treat him with his remedies for so many years, it's uncertain if Muyang would be able to survive up to now – you're aware of his physical condition at that time, during those times we were terrified everyday, and were awakened by nightmares over and over again, fearing that Muyang's heart would suddenly stop beating. He was too fragile and too weak, it seemed he would leave us anytime."

“The nameless monk stayed in Jiangnan for six years, until Muyang’s body was stable and began to recover then he left. When the nameless monk left, was the Lu family’s sight was also cut off? It can’t be. I’m afraid the Lu family is still keeping an eye on the growth of Muyang, it’s just that right now Muyang”s physical condition is still worrying, and he hasn’t showed any outstanding achievements, that’s why didn’t they haven’t came to take him away.”

“Of course, there is no way to take him back now. If they brought Muyang back to the Lu family, what position would they give him? Distant relatives? Illegitimate child? Or –abandoned eldest grandson? Isn’t that hitting their own face? Lu’s family grandfather is a person with great reputation; it’s impossible for him to do such unwise things.”

Luo Qi understood her husband’s analysis was reasonable. She whispered: “Now that the Lu family are unable to collect him, Muyang will remain our son, what else do you have to worry about?”

Li Yan laughed bitterly, his resolute face showed a trace of suffering and said: “I say let everything happen naturally. Lu family is unwilling to collect him; Muyang will always be our son. Although the days with us are plain and ordinary, but there’s also ease and contentment. There wouldn’t be constant scheming and fighting like the nobles in Tiandu.”

“They are ruthless and cold-blooded.” Luo Qi said coldly. “What would they not do?”

Li Yan smiled at his wife; he knew that Luo Qi possessed pent-up hatred towards the Lu family.

“However, what if the Lu family wanted to take him back? Lu’s family master is

aging year by year, wouldn't he want to see his grandson before he dies? Lu Qingming is now already the provincial governor, historic government officer, His power within the Lu family is growing, would he not want to take back his own son? Most importantly there's Miss Gongsun–Miss did not understood what happened back then, that doesn't mean she won't understand later?"

"If it happens, if the Lu family wanted to take him back, that's the logical thing. At that time, do we have the strength to resist? Besides the fact that the Lu family is a powerful and rich family, they are also at the top of the list of the most influential within West Wind Kingdom. There's also Miss Gongsun. Miss Gongsun cherishes her child, after so many years she'll surely still can't get rid off her worries – if she comes to take him, would you let her or not?"

This time, Luo Qi was silent.

She was hostile to the Lu family, she felt that all the men in the Lu family were cold-hearted and cruel, and would resort to anything to achieve their goals. 她敵視陸家，覺得陸家的那些男人冷酷殘忍，為達目的不擇手段。

But she didn't hate Gongsun Yu, she knew if Gongsun Yu knew the truth she'll feel 10 times or 100 times the pain that she felt herself.

Moreover, she was Miss Gongsun's maid. Miss Gongsun also helped to reverse the verdict of her parent's injustice. Otherwise, she was afraid she would have fallen into the enemy's hands.

And because of this, she, who was an outstanding student of the Kingdom Academy of fine arts, was willing to serve Miss Gongsun Yu for a lifetime. Miss Gongsun Yu was the most gentle and kind woman she had ever seen, but—

“Lady has a cruel fate.” Luo Qi said in a low voice.

“Yes, lady has a cruel fate, our life is also bitter. However, none of us can be compared to Muyang’s sad fate– look at what kind of days he had lived since birth till the present day? From a young age, he was almost brought up inside a medicine pot. When he just started drinking milk, he needed to drink medicine. For more than 10 years, everyday he had to drink three big bowls–his appearance is not good, everywhere he went he would always be ridiculed. As a result of his illness, his intelligence is not even one-tenth of a normal child. Although his body slightly improved over the years, and his intelligence has slowly regained, but what’s most worrying is–”

Li Yan face showed a gently expression as he looked at Cui Xiaoxin and Li Shinian laughing at Li Muyang, and said: “For a big kid like him, this is the time when his self-esteem is the most sensitive. When he was still young being called ugly by others, he can treat it as nothing, or he may even don’t know what’s happening. But now can he shrug it off like before? If he likes a girl, will the girl like someone like Muyang?”

“What should we do?” Luo Qi clenched her fist, pain can be felt in her heart. “We need to find ways to help our child. Should we talk to him? Enlighten him?”

Li Yan shook his head and said: “Muyang suddenly taking school leave, it has made me wonder. When I got to the school to ask for leave for him, I deliberately asked a boy, I pulled one of the students by the classroom door and asked about Muyang—because the teacher suspected him of cheating, so he was reluctant to go to school again.”

“What?” “Luo Qi got irritated and shouted angrily: “Which teacher said that my son cheated? My son’s temperament would I not know? Every test he had done he’s ranked the last– she suspected him of cheating when he came last?”

That’s not the case. I heard that Muyang did well in the exam—”

“Then on that basis she said my son cheated? How much time and how hard Muyang tried, we as parents can see that. In his injured state, he still held on to his books and read and read all day long. One day he did well in exams then—no, I can’t let this matter slide, I’m going to school to find their teacher. My son was bullied, as parents we can’t stupidly let him get bullied, otherwise our child would feel wronged.”

Li Yan grabbed the emotional Luo Qi and said: “Don’t be impulsive. You going to the school to noisily complain won’t help the situation, now the most important thing is the child’s entrance examinations–do you see?”

“See what? “Luo Qi asked.

“Hope.”

“What?”

“Hope. Hope on Muyang’s face.” Li Yan said. “Look at Muyang’s eyes, was he so eager to learn before?”

Luo Qi carefully looked at his son, and noticed there’s a big smile on his face, his eyes sparkled, just like the stars often seen in the night sky.

“Muyang wants to attend University.” Luo Qi said.

“Muyang don’t just want to go to university, he wants to attend West Wind

University.” Li Yan said.

“How do you know?” Luo Qi face showed an astonished expression. “West Wind University is the best university of the kingdom, with Muyang’s grades– most likely it would be difficult to get into, right?”

“I overheard Shinian mentioning, she said brother will go to West Wind University first to get familiar with the surroundings, then a year later she will also attend there–” Li Yan used his chin to point at Cui Xiaoxin and said: “I heard that girl is also going to West Wind University.”

“How can this be good?” Luo Qi’s face was filled with worries. “If Miss Cui is able to attend, and Muyang failed, what would the impact be to him? He wanted to do his best in one thing, he can’t fail.”

Li Yan sighed and said: “There is nothing that can’t be achieved, this matter relies on Muyang’s own efforts. ”

Luo Qi eyes flashed, she pondered for a long time and said in a low voice: “What if, we go and beg the Lu family to help?”

Li Yan and said loudly: “Did you not want to have any contact with the Lu family? Just now you were worried that they would take away your son, now you want to take the initiative and send our son over?”

“As long as the child doesn’t suffer–” Luo Qi eyes reddened and said: “What is a little suffering to me?”

“__ __”

Cui Xiaoxin closed the book, and said to Li Muyang: “The history of the kingdom can temporarily stop for now, you’ve grasped this topic very well and you’re also most familiar with this subject. Starting tomorrow, we will revise international studies, this is your weakness, so we need to spend more time on it —-”

“No problem.” Li Muyang said, smiling: “I’ll listen to teacher Xiaoxin. ”

Cui Xiaoxin stood up and said: “It’s getting late, I’ll come again tomorrow. ”

Lis Shinian ran over, pulled Cui Xiaoxin’s arm, and said: “Xiaoxin sister, have dinner with us before you go?”

“No need. “Cui Xiaoxin refused and said with a smile:” My elders are waiting for me at home. I can’t let them worry.”

“Xiaoxin sister—”

Cui Xiaoxin just smiled, and did not agree to Li Shinian’s request. She had came to the Li family’s house to tutor Li Muyang everyday, but had never stayed there for a simple dinner.

Luo Qi and Li Yan also came to ask her to stay, but Cui Xiaoxin declined their good intentions, carried her bags and walked towards the door.

“Muyang-” Luo Qi grabbed his son by the ear, as he had not met her expectations, “Silly boy, what are you busy tidying? Go and accompany

classmate Cui home.”

“Oh-Oh-” Li Muyang finally reacts, left the books and chased after Cui Xiaoxin.

As he rushed to the courtyard door, he saw a luxurious car with a trident on the front stopping right in front of Cui Xiaoxin.

A man in a green robe quickly came out of the car, helped open the rear door, and guarded Cui Xiaoxin’s head while she went in.

The door closed, green-robed man glanced at the direction of where Li Muyang was standing, and the black luxurious car slowly headed into the darkness.

Li Muyang stood under the dim light created by the shadow of the trees, feeling a sense of loss.

020 – Buyout debt of gratitude!

The car drove through the executive boulevard, passed through the Su causeway, and over a bridge, then finally stopped in front of a mansion house with a white door that is hidden by trees and red flowers.

Ancient bronze doors opened on both sides, an old man wearing a grey uniform stood at the door to welcome them.

The car drove towards the yard; the old man came forward, helped open the door and said kindly: “Miss Cui, you’re back? The lady and young master are just waiting for you for dinner.”

Cui Xiaoxin expressed thanks to the elderly and said: “Yan elder, you’re too formal. Im a junior, I’ll manage by myself. ”

The old man laughed and said: “That’s not important, I’m used to it.”

The green-robed man got off the car, and assisted the elderly man in walking towards the backyard. Facing the elderly who’s been serving the Yan family for decades, Ning Xinhai didn’t dare to neglect him.

With the accompany of Elder Yan, Cui Xiaoxin walked towards the hall.

The living room lights shined brightly, an elegant lady wearing a purple dress was playing chess with a handsome young man wearing gold-rimmed glasses.

“Mum, I can’t let you out this time, you just said that your bishop can cross the river, your cannon can turn, now you’re saying that my queen is a traitor and

going to use my queen to defeat my general— mum, even if I'm your son, you can't bully me? "

The beautiful woman glanced at her son with one eye; she had the special atrributes that only young women possessed.

"You're my son, I gave birth to you for what? Naturally when I'm upset I can bully you and vent my anger. "

"Mum, who is bullying you? You say a name, and tomorrow I will bring people to break his legs—"The young man said as he pretended to be angry, his eyes revealed a smiling expression.

"Yan Balai." Said the woman.

The young man held his glasses and said with a wry smile: "Mum, can you change the target? That one to me is like a piece of iron board, I'm afraid if I kick it my foot will get hurt –"

"No changes. Him." The woman face was filled with anger as she condemned the man's atrocity. She said: "Three years ago, he promised to take us to the ancient battlefield of the dragon slayer, but stood me up. A year ago, he promised me to come back to Tiandu for the Spring Festival, and in the end he had to work, leaving us two celebrating Spring Festival by ourselves. Half a month ago promised to take me shopping in Westport, but then he said an officer is coming down for inspection work and he needs accompany him— Putting the incident of you breaking a finger aside, how many times in a month had he came home for dinner? How many times he said a few words to us? Such a person needs a good lesson right? Are you not a famous hedonistic son of rich parents in Jiangnan? Everyone says how great you are, how vicious you are when

bullying, as your mum I'm very happy, feel very proud –you help me get revenge, then mum owes you a favour, alright? ”

The handsome man was full of smiles as he said: “Us pleasure seeking young masters are also intelligent. Otherwise people will laugh that I have no sophistication and vision and lose face within our social circle. You think about it, the resentment the public has towards us is already strong, we have to keep a low profile, isn't that right? The person you mentioned I'll remember, when there's a chance I'll help you and ruthlessly stab him with a knife?”

“Hmph, I know you're the type to bite the hand that feeds you. You should think which woman gave birth to you.” The lady was enraged, pointing at the boy's forehead.

Giggles—

Cui Xiaoxin laughed charmingly, walked towards the woman and said: “Aunt, you're making things difficult for my cousin. To make him bully his own father, even if he had 100 times the courage he still wouldn't dare.”

“Oh, Xiaoxin is back. “The woman was delighted to see Cui Xiaoxin, she waved at her and said:” Come, come, let aunt take a look at you – where did our Xiaoxin go play today? Did you have fun? Did anyone bully you? If there's anyone who doesn't open their eyes and looking for trouble you can tell aunt, I will tell your cousin to bully him. Your cousin sits around doing nothing all day, you must give him something to do. ”

Cui Xiaoxin sat down in front of the woman, and let her grab her hand and said: “Aunt, I'm fine. I just went out for a walk.”

Yan Xiangma placed a cup of tea in front of Cui Xiaoxin He grinned, revealing two rows of teeth and smilingly asked: “I heard Cui Xiaoxin has been helping students with homework?”

The smile on Cui Xiaoxin’s face was delayed slightly, but she instantly rebounded and said: “Yes. University entrance examination is near, a student’s academic performance is not very good so I tried to give him a push.”

Cui Xinci affectionately looked at Cui Xiaoxin and said: “Our Xiaoxin is kind. Well, she’s tall, pretty, patient and has a good upbringing. In the future what boys are worthy of our Xiaoxin? Lucky that Tiandu is full of talents and heroes. When the time comes, the Cui family will naturally find someone who matches with you. When aunt remembers that you’ll go back to Tiandu in half a year, it’s as if a piece of my heart is being taken away. You’ve lived here with aunt for five years, I, your aunt, has always treated you as my own daughter, when you’re gone—”

“Mum, have you finished? Everyday you would act out a bitter play, even if you’re not bored of it, Xiaoxin would be tired of it. If you continue like that, the more eager Xiaoxin is to hurry back – Xiaoxin, isn’t that right? “Yan Xiangma was somewhat helpless as he looked at her best actress-level mum and spoke aloud.

“How could it be? “Cui Xiaoxin smiled, held her aunt’s hand and said: “I also will miss aunt. Living in Jiangnan has been lots of fun, if it wasn’t for university, I also don’t want to leave. ”

“Xiaoxin is considerate, not as heartless as those surnamed Yan. “Cui Xinci said with a pleased face. “Xiaoxin, let’s have dinner. ”

“Okay.” Cui Xioaixn followed and stood up.

“My mum knows that Xiaoxin likes to eat fish, so she specially asked someone to sent over buckets of rockfish from Taishan. These rockfish grows between the stones of springs, their meat is tender and does not stink. When placed on top of a stone in the scorching sun it will melt.” Yan Xiangma ladled the soup into bowls for his mum and Xiaoxin as he continued to explain: “Using this type of fish for soup, the whole fish just melts in the soup. Even a fish scale can’t be found. But when you drink the soup—it’s as if a small fish is swimming in the mouth, it is delicious. ”

“You only know how to flatter people.” Cui Xinci scolded her son.

“I only flatter you, mum.” Yan Xiangma said smilingly: “I only said that so Xiaoxin cousin knows your feelings. ”

“Well, feelings should be from your heart, it has no meaning if you say it out loud. “ Cui Xinci shook her head and said: “You and your father are the same; you have a complex way of thinking. Are you not tired?”

“Fine. No problem. I won’t speak then? I won’t speak?” Yan Xiangma repeatedly begged for mercy.

Cui Xinci and Cui Xiaoxin smiled at each other. Cui Xinci told Cui Xiaoxin to drink the soup: “Hot soup is delicious; when it’s cold it has a fishy smell. Xiaoxin quickly try it. If it’s too salty or tasteless tell aunt, I will take it to the kitchen and improve on it.”

Cui Xiaoxin tried a mouthful with a spoon; her mouth was filled with a concentrated flavour of freshness. She applauded and said: “It’s very tasty. The seasoning is balanced perfectly. It’s just right.”

“That’s good.” Cui Xinci lowered her head and drank the soup.

“Oh Xiaoxin –” Yan Xiangma looked at Cui Xiaoxin and said with a smile: “The classmate you’re tutoring is he the one who saved your life at the coffee shop?”

Cui Xiaoxin eyebrows twitched, looked up at Yan Xiangma and said: “Yes cousin, he’s a very nice person, but his grades isn’t that good, there are only ten days or so till the university entrance exams, I want to do something to help him. After all, if it weren’t for him, Ning Uncle wouldn’t have time to call rescue—”

“Hmph, that assassin Crow, sooner or later he’ll die without being buried.” A taint of undisguised evil tendency appeared on the face of Yan Xiangma. Because of his suitable performance, that evil tendency turned into anger against injustice. “There has already been action from Tiandu’s side, experts of the Cui family and Yan family are in pursuit of the whereabouts of Crows, Jiangnan city’s side had also launched a sky net-like search, all the experts of the mansion had also been sent out by father—-Xiaoxin you should feel reassured, Crow won’t dare to come again. Even if he’s here, Ning Uncle and others will wrap him like a zongzi [1], destroying him into pieces.”

[tl: [1] = Dumpling wrapped tightly in leaves.

https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Zongzi]

“Thanks for your trouble, cousin and uncle.” Cui Xiaoxin said thank you in a deep voice.

“Thanks? We’re family, you’re my sister.” Yan Xiangma said with a smile. “However, it would be better if cousin you kept a little distant from that

student–”

Cui Xiaoxin looked at Yan Xiangma with a calm expression and said: “What does cousin mean by that? ”

“Think about it, your classmate is an ordinary person, ordinary people and our world differ too much–that time Ning Uncle appeared at the right moment, that’s why Crow was intercepted in time. If there were a next time, would your classmate have such good luck again? I know you intended to help your classmate, but if anything happens, your classmates will get hurt or suffer a more serious injury–with your temperament, afraid you may feel guilty for the rest of your life if it happens?”

The expression in Cui Xiaoxin’ eyes became sharp, as she said: “Cousin are you warning me? ”

“I’m just advising you, how can that be a warning? I only said it in consideration for you and your classmate, don’t you think? If, cousin, you feel that I shouldn’t say such things, then I won’t. Cousin is smart, these matters you can clearly understand yourself.”

“I have thought about it.” Cui Xiaoxin said.

Cui Xinci looked at her son, then looked at Cui Xiaoxin and said aloud: “Xiaoxin, your classmate had helped you after all, our family will remember this favour–you say his grades is poor, then let your uncle help him clear the path, let Jiangnan University grant him a special arrangement. Although Jiangnan is not as good as West Wind University, it is still considered as a prestigious school in the kingdom. He can select for himself what he wants to specialise in, what do you think?”

Cui Xiaoxin emotions were stirred. The joint of her finger that held the spoon was suffused with white.

She understood her aunt’s meaning, to buy out Li Muyang’s kindness of saving her life.

However, can a debt of gratitude be bought out just like that?

021 – A croton seed!

“Do you like Cui Xiaoxin?”

An abrupt noise sounded. Li Muyang who was currently in deep thought, jumped up in fright.

Li Muyang was between laughter and tears as he saw his sister dressed in a pink Paul Frank Pyjamas making faces at him. He said, “Li Shinian, are you not too childish? ”

Li Shinian curled her lips and said with a dissatisfied face: “How come? Now you dislike me because I’m childish? After seeing the graceful and calm temperament of Xiaoxin sister, you begin to dislike me, a skinny and unsophisticated girl? Back then, when Xiaoxin sister did not pay any attention to you, did you think I was childish?”

“I didn’t mean it like that—”

“You did, you so did. You men only like the new and forget the old, do you think I don’t know–I heard that good-looking men are unfaithful. Li Muyang, unexpectedly, you are also a playboy. You can go out and chase after girls but will the girls even take a glance at you? ”

“—-”

Li Muyang knows, he had unintentionally hurt Li Shinian’s fragile self-esteem.

Otherwise, she would not have transformed into a poisonous snake baring its fangs and brandishing its claws in just one second.

“Wow, Shinian’s pyjamas are so beautiful, is it new? “Li Muyang began to display his ‘indirectly saving the country’ moves. Every time he used this trick in the past, Li Shinian would surrender, then the conversation will be drastically changed from criticising Li Muyang to praising Li Shinian.

“Li Muyang, I have already worn these pyjamas for a good few days. Yesterday night I came into your room wearing it and we chatted for half the day; does your eyes even take notice of me?” Li Shinian jumped onto the bed, grabbed a pillow and began to hit Li Muyang’s head.

“I surrender, I surrender.” Li Muyang tightly covered his head with his hands and admitted defeat. “Now that I think about it, yesterday night I indeed saw you coming in wearing this pyjamas. I originally thought that whatever clothes you wear will always look good on you, but the one you’re wearing is indeed especially kawaii.”

Li Shinian beat him with even more force. She gritted her teeth and said: “You idiot, what do you mean by kawaii? You dislike the fact that I have no chest or ass, right? You think my features and appearance are not mature enough but childish? I’ve never heard you compliment Xiaoxin sister ‘kawaii’? ”

“——” Li Muyang did not dare to continue speaking.

He had realised, once a woman was angry at you, even breathing in her sight was polluting the air.

After letting her vent her anger by covering his head in the duvet for a while, Li Muyang was able to raise his head. He smiled at her and said, “No more hitting? ”

“I won’t hit anymore. My hands are aching. “Li Shinian threw the pillow to one side and leant against the headboard along with Li Muyang. She casually grabbed a bag of potato chips and ate loudly, making ‘kacha kacha’ sounds.

“At night, eat less fried foods, you will get fat. “Li Muyang said.

Li Shinian glared and said: “Li Muyang, what do you mean? Now you dislike the fact that I’m fat?

“__”

Seeing Li Muyang’s speechless face, Li Shinian finally could not help but laugh loudly, she grabbed a potato chip, stuffed it into Li Muyang’s mouth and said: “Brother, sometimes I feel that you’re really adorably ugly and cute.”

“I’ve always thought you’re very cute. “Li Muyang mumbled with his mouth filled with chips.

“Of course. “Li Shinian flung back her freshly washed ear-length hair and said proudly. The lemon scent from her shampoo distributed throughout the air and the atmosphere turned sweet and sour, just like Li Shinian’s temperament. “Brother, you still haven’t answered my question. ”

“What question? ” Li Muyang played dumb.

“I asked if you like Xiaoxin sister—” Li Shinian said with a face of discontent: “Li Muyang, I’m telling you, you’re not getting away with it. I watched you as you grew up, before your butt even protrudes I already know you want to go to defecate—”

“I am your brother-” Li Muyang gloomily reminded her.

“Is what I said not the truth? ” Li Shinian rolled her eyes and asked rhetorically.

“__ __”

Li Shinian did not say anything wrong, she indeed did watch Li Muyang as he grew up.

Because of Li Muyang’s poor health, his body was extremely fragile. He was only able to open his eyes three years old, and only at seven years old was he able to walk steadily. Li Shinian was two years younger than Li Muyang, but when she was able to walk freely on the ground, Li Muyang was still like a baby lying in bed or crawling on the floor—At times when Li Muyang wanted to go to the toilet he would make ‘Ah Ah’ sounds and Li Shinian was the first person to know he had health problems that needed to be solved.

So, what she said right now about how she knew Li Muyang needed to go to the toilet before his butt even protrudes—was a shameful fact for Li Muyang that he could not face.

From a small age till now, most of the time he had to rely on his two years younger sister to take care of him.

“Hurry, hurry and say it.” Li Shinian once again stuffed slices of potato chips into Li Muyang’s mouth. She always liked to stuff lots and lots of chips into his mouth, not caring at all if his mouth was not able to contain anymore.

“I think she’s a good girl. ”

“And? ”

“And—-there’s no ‘and’? She has been helping me with my schoolwork, I am very grateful to her.”

“There are no other feelings? ”

“Li Shinian-we are still students, the vocation of a student is to study well, just what are you thinking? Your mind is not pure. ”

Li Shinian showed a look of disdain, stared at her brother Li Muyang and said: “Li Muyang, are you not too childish? You take a look at yourself in the mirror, first let’s not talk about the face of yours that’s older than your age by ten years. Nursery children already knows how to look for girlfriends and boyfriends, but yet you tell me that the vocation of a student is to learn? You do that again I’ll tell mum that you’re gay.”

“__”

“Are you going to tell me or not? ”

“I have a little feeling towards her. “Li Muyang’s face was dyed in red, as he said these words embarrassingly. Li Shinian was the closest person to him, and

also his sister. In the past, he told her anything that was on his mind. But this time there's a feeling that's not the same as before, a kind of emotion that he had never encountered before, a feeling he would he would never touch upon.

"That means you like her? "

"If you say it is, then it is. "

"It's not if I say it is then it is, you tell me if it is or not. If you don't like her, how can I help you with Xiaoxin sister and make her be your girlfriend? "Li Shinian said with a look of frustration.

Li Muyang's eyes lit up and said, "Really? You're able to help me court Xiaoxin? "

"Can't. "Li Shinian answer was brutally blunt.

"__-"

"Brother–" Li Shinian took a handful of chips and stuffed them into Li Muyang's mouth again, Li Muyang shook his head in refusal.

"Eat this for me." Without any explanation, she simply loaded Li Muyang's mouth with chips.

"Why—Kacha Kacha—force me to eat this? "Li Muyang said with pain as he continued crunching the potato chips in his mouth. "It's you who told me that eating fried foods at night will make me gain weight easily. "

“Yes.” Li Muyang nodded seriously. ” That’s what the TV also says. ”

“I’m accompany you out of kindness by eating a little bit while you’re eating.” Li Shinian displayed a face of doing this act completely because of their deep bond between brother and sister. “Even if I really grow fat, if there’s someone who will grow fat along with me, the guilt in my heart will lessen. ”

“__”

“Brother, I just want to talk to you about Xiaoxin sister. ” Li Shinina placed the potato chips on the bedside table and leant her head against Li Muyang’s shoulder. She said: “In your opinion, what kind of person is Xiaoxin sister?”

“Did I not say already? She’s a very good person. ”

“Yes. She’s a very good person, but unfortunately, she’s too good. ” Li Shinian said with a sigh.

“———” Li Muyang understood what Li Shinian meant. Cui Xiaoxin was a very nice person, but unfortunately she’s too good.

“First, let’s not talk about her appearance and temperament, but her conversation style and manner alone. She occasionally displays manners and characteristics associated with the aristocracy. From this, we can largely guess what kind of person she is–she and us are not people of the same world. Furthermore when I was talking to her, I found out that she’s not from Jiangnan, but someone from the Capital. After the university entrance examinations have finished, she’ll need to return to Tiandu, and return to the place where she really

belongs to.”

“Brother, I know you like Xiaoxin sister, because I am able to see it. During this time, it is the period that you’re the happiest and also the period where you smiled the most in tens years. In the past I had drained my mind to help you with your school work, every time you were always drowsy, but Xiaoxin sister was able to raise your grades rapidly—”

“Shinian, actually things are not what you think–”

“Brother, I know. “Shinian interrupted Li Muyang and said,” I know you don’t want to hurt me; you don’t want to say that I’m inferior to Xiaoxin sister. The truth is I really don’t care about this, Xiaoxin sister was able to help you, I can see that your grades has improved drastically. I’m just happy for you and there is no jealousy at all towards Xiaoxin sister. I have heard about the reason why you have left school. The few words that you said then has became the pet phrase of students in the school—”

“What?” “Li Muyang had a bewildered look on his face. “What did I say? ”

“I don’t accept.” Li Shinian’s eyes stared at his brother. She didn’t think that the guy being bullied constantly could have such a strong and stubborn side to him. Hearing the incident and his brother way of dealing with the situation, Li Shinian was moved to tears. Afterwards she sneaked into the teacher’s office during lunch break and threw a Croton seed[1] into Zhao Mingzhu’s tea cup.

[1] A strong purgative.

022 – The strangeness of the wound.

“Zhang Xiaojun classmate, let’s go to the bathroom together? I don’t accept. Li Ming, let’s have Jin Jiang cuisine [1] at lunch alright? I don’t accept. Chen Chong, help me bring some snacks back—-sorry, I don’t accept. What’s more funny was that Wang Pingshang was sleeping in class and the teacher asked him to answer the question, he said I don’t accept while lying on the table. The teacher was furious, grabbed his ear and kicked him out—HAHAHA, brother do you know how much influence you have within the school? It’s a pity that you don’t go to school now, otherwise many people will treat you like their idol.”

[tl: [1] A type of regional cuisine.]

Li Muyang had no idea that this uproar would have such an impact, he shook his head and said: “Wrong is wrong, right is right. When I was sleeping in class, the teacher kicked me out. Furthermore, I have never argued back. Because I knew that what I did was wrong, my attitude would affect other students, my actions were disrespectful to the teacher—”

“However, this time being accused of cheating is more than an event, the truth is that in my heart I feel very wronged. However, the matter has gone past now; right now all my focus is placed on ways to improve my grades. Right now I am able learn a few things, but my knowledge foundation is too weak. Xiaoxin tutored me starting from the first lesson, but it is far too exhausting for her. In addition, I’m afraid there’s limited time—”

“Brother, I want to ask you. “Li Shinian pulled Li Muyang’s arm and said: “Xiaoxin sister said that there’s many topics she didn’t teach, but you happened to know the answers–you did not learn it but you know the answer. What is going on? Could it be that previously you were secretly learning? ”

Li Muyang shook his head as he said: “I don’t know what happened. I’ve always felt that somehow there were many inexplicable things in my head. Sometimes I feel that I’ve been living a life already, a lot of things I’ve seen for the first time but I’m able to suddenly blurt out their background and history. Just like the textbook exercise, some stuff Xiaoxin had went over, but some of that knowledge is already present in my mind—although the thought process is quite difficult, since it is hidden deep inside, but I am eventually able dig it out. ”

“Don’t tell me that you’re possessed by an celestial? “Li Shinian said laughingly: “How can a celestial be so stupid? Possessing a charcoal’s body?”

“—-”

“Alright, alright, my brother is the most handsome amongst charcoals–” Li Shinian inspected Li Muyang’s face and said: “Actually your facial profile is good, this is because you inherited the good genes from mum and dad. You take a look at this beautiful girl me and you’ll know. Wait until your skin turns paler, then you’ll be a handsome brother. Or, next time, before you leave the house, I’ll help you apply a layer of powder? ”

“Can you apply it to the whole body? “Li Muyang displayed a wry smile. “First, let’s not say how many bottles of cream would be wasted, but covering the whole body will take hours, right? ”

“Just applying to the face is enough. Who’s going to cover your whole body? “Li Shinian said snappily. “Brother, don’t change the subject, let’s continue with our previous topic–”

“——” Li Muyang showed a face of being wrongly accused, just when did he

change the subject?

“Brother, originally I didn’t want to say to you, at least not at this time, but I feel it’s better to tell you early, so as to avoid you suffering a critical blow in the future—You’re aware of Xiaoxin sister’s grades, her goal is West Wind University. From my understanding of her, this is not anything difficult for her. But what about you? Are you able to go to West Wind? Are you able to follow her to Tiandu? Even if you’re in Tiadu, even if you’re admitted to West Wind University—with our family background, our history, do you have any hope? “

“I know that. “Li Muyang said in a deep voice.

“What?” Li Shinian’s big eyes glanced over.

“You can say that I understand. “Li Muyang grinned and spoke aloud: “Just now when I saw her off, I saw someone came to collect her – the car she sat in, it most likely will cost ten years of income from mother’s bakery? ”

“Brother—-”

“I’m fine. “Li Muyang reached out, placed his arm around his sister’s shoulder and said: “Think about it, would the previous me have a chance to be friends with Cui Xiaoxin? ”

Li Shinian shook her head.

“Yes, I have no chance to even talk to her let alone be friends, but now I can. Furthermore, she is able to come to help me with my lessons every day – compared to before, a lot has changed, right? ”

“Well. “Li Shinian nodded seriously and said: ” Brother, you will become more and more intelligent, you will also become more and more handsome. At that time Xiaoxin sister will maybe fall in love with you.”

Li Muyang nodded with a serious face and said: “That’s for sure. At that time I will be the most handsome man in the world.”

The brother and sister looked at each other and laughed. Li Shinian laughed with an ache in her heart and Li Muyang laughed with sorrow.

In truth, these words were not funny at all.

Li Shinian leaped up from the bed, looked at her brother Li Muyang and said: “Brother, it’s late, I’m heading back to my room to sleep. You should rest early. Tomorrow, Xiaoxin sister is coming to tutor you. You can’t fall asleep then.”

“Alright. Good night.” Li Muyang said with a smile.

Li Shinian waved her hand, and then turned around, leaving Li Muyang’s room.

Li Muyang rolled around in bed for a long time, unable to sleep. His mood also became more and more restless.

He got up, poured a large tank of water, and soaked his body in hot water. It wasn’t until then that his mood felt somewhat better.

Sleeping in class, going home for a bath, these were the two things that Li

Muyang did the most.

Because his right hand was wrapped in gauze from being pierced through, there's no way for him to place his right arm into the water. This has caused some inconvenience to him.

Li Muyang stared at his arm; the fist that originally didn't have the strength to truss a chicken was able to send Zhang Chen flying, it was also able to send assassin Crow flying. It must be said, at that time Crow was wielding a knife that gave off a silver light that expanded rapidly, like a huge sword of light—

His fist met against the sword, should the sharp blade not have severed his fist instead? How could his fist send Crow flying with just one blow?

Li Muyang watched his fist in a daze for a while. A strong curiosity urged him, he was ready to peel out of the gauze and see what has become of his injury now.

The layers of gauze unraveled layer by layer. The bruised blood inside has become increasingly prominent.

When he removed the gauze, the wounded palm was present in front of his eyes.

He submerged his hand into the hot water to wash it clean, then placed it under the light to inspect.

In perfect condition!

He remembered it clearly; his palm was pierced through with a knife by an assassin.

However, right now why wasn't there any traces of injury left?

No cuts, no scars, not even just a little redness can be seen at all.

"What's going on? "Li Muyang exclaimed aloud.

He leapt out of the tub, grabbed a mirror and thoroughly examined properly.

At that time, the assassin definitely struck the top of his head with a fruit tray. Li Muyang forehead was smashed until fresh blood splattered everywhere, but right now not a trace of injury could be seen on his head.

What the hell was going on?

It wasn't until now, that Li Muyang began to finally realise that his body had undergone a number of strange, unpredictable changes.

"I want to transform. " Li Muyang said to himself ––—-

Li Muyang got up at five o'clock in the morning. Ever since his injury, he had gotten rid of the bad habit of sleeping in till late in the morning every day.

Probably because he had slept too much previously, right now he need only a

few hours of sleep each day and he would be full of energy.

He simply freshened up a little and followed his sister's "Breaking body technique " that she practiced every day in his room, walking in these stances a few time around his room. He then took a book and sat in front of the window in silence.

At seven o'clock, his parents woke up. Father wore an unlined garment, and began exercising in the yard. Mother was busily preparing breakfast for the family in the kitchen.

At half past seven, in his sister Li Shinian's room there were finally sounds of movement.

Li Muyang smiled, this was when the life of his family truly began.

Although these are all trivial little things, but Li Muyang felt content and happy.

During his illness, when the sleepiness possessed him, he rarely had such a state of mind and mood to look at everything happening around him.

At this moment, he finally realised that he possessed so much.

Cui Xiaoxin still every day came to tutor Li Muyang with his school work, she still chatted and laughed happily with Li Shinian after she returned from home from school while eating fruits with her after. It was like nothing had happened at all.

After that night chatting with Li Shinian, Li Muyang realised that the gap between him and Cui Xiaoxin was far too large.

He now directed all his time and energy on his studies, he needed to grasp as much knowledge as possible in the limited time he has.

During studying, he would occasionally raise his head and his eyes would meet with Cui Xiaoxin's. He smiled slightly and he was able to feel her slight smiling expression in return. At those times, a thought he could not control surfaced from his heart: a boy and girl walking side by side at West Wind University's Weiming Lake accompanying each other. The setting sun was as red as blood, stretching their snuggling shadow infinitely, as if it they had been extended to the very edges of the world.

He only hid himself deeper.

Today, Cui Xiaoxin didn't come. It was decided a day earlier, that some elders in her family were going to Yongqing Temple and they needed her company.

Li Muyang stayed at home doing a paper. He suddenly remembered that Cui Xiaoxin mentioned there's a reference book that is important, and urged him to find it and take a look.

Li Muyang immediately headed out, walking toward the Hubu Lane's bookstore.

The bookstore was simple and unadorned; at closer inspection, it seemed to have existed for many years. An old man in a black coat sat in front, smoking

under the sun.

“Shop owner, do you have the book ‘ Zi Yu? ”

“Go inside and find it yourself.” The old man replied without looking up.

Li Muyang entered into the bookstore, and then searched the shelves row by row.

“You find that reading is useful? “A voice suddenly sounded from behind him.

Li Muyang turned around and saw an elegant and smart-looking man standing behind him.

“Are you talking to me? “Li Muyang glanced around and asked in an unsure fashion.

“Of course. ” The young master said with a smiling face: “In your opinion, is reading useful? ”

“Useful. ” Li Muyang answered, although he was unsure of the reason why this strange person asked him such a strange question.

“[There are golden houses and graceful ladies within books[2]] You can get a job through reading, you can broaden your view. Reading and studying is greatly useful.” The young man said in a profoundly mysterious manner. “But sometimes reading will only bring disaster to the person. What do you think? ”

[2] Be diligent in studying and success will follow.

023 – Xiangma and Muyang

He who comes is surely ill-intentioned!

It was not that Li Muyang had the ability to see right through the heart. But deep down in his heart he felt that, for such a handsome and dashing man there was not a reason for him to take the initiative to come forward and a have little conversation with him, right?

There must be an ulterior motive.

You see, Li Muyang student was a modest and insecure cute little boy.

Li Muyang eyes widened as they stared at each other. The man was dressed in a black silk gown, holding a paper fan, and revealed a very friendly smile on his face.

Li Muyang began to like him in that short while, and said: “I don’t think so. ”

Yan Xiangma’s face showed little expression, then with a ‘poof ‘, the paper fan closed. He began tapping the fan lightly against his palm. His eyes was full of interest as he looked at Li Muyang and said: “Reading broadens your horizons, your heart also expands, the things you want increase, and the heart also becomes more greedy–if it’s like this then, isn’t this a dangerous things to do?”

“Reading can also be for understanding the way, learning benevolent behaviour and cultivating your righteousness. “Li Muyang refuted his argument. “In the land of the wild, why does killing never stop? Why is the frontier desert

still at war? Because those barbarians and herdsmen read too little, there is no way for them to understand the way and learn benevolent behaviour. If they were all reading, where would they find time to kill?”

Yan Xiangma shook his head, seemed to be lost in thought as he looked at Li Muyang and said: “That’s wrong. ”

“What’s wrong? ”

“I have ordered someone to find out, and everyone says you’re an idiotl. “Yan Xiangma shook his head and said: “But I don’t think you’re stupid. Instead, you’re smarter than a lot of people I’ve seen. ”

“I am an idiot. “Li Muyang said: “In every test I’ve done, I was last place in the whole school. ”

“No, no, no, there must be some other reason for this. “Yan Xiangma denied the argument that Li Muyang is a fool. “But smart people are good, I like interacting with smart people, they know and understand the meaning behind words and situations, don’t you think? ”

Li Muyang knows that this man was finally getting to the main reason of his conversation. He casually flipped through the book of ‘Strengthening Soldiers Theory’ in his hand and said: “That would depends on the words and on the situation.”

“Oh, I forgot to introduce myself–” Yan Xiangma ‘ snapped ‘ open his folding fan and said to Li Muyang: “Yan Xiangma, Cui Xiaoxin’s older cousin.”

Li Muyang immediately became enthusiastic, closing the books in his hands, bowed and shouted: “Cousin, that was you? Go go go, follow me to my house for tea, my house is in front of the alley, walk a few steps and you’ll arrive–” 李

As he spoke, he grabbed Yan Xiangma sleeve, ready to haul him home.

“Wait wait wait—” Yan Xiangma flung Li Muyang’s pulling hand and said angrily: “What are you doing? Who’s familiar with you? ”

“Cousin, do you not know, me and Cui Xiaoxin are classmates, and also very good friends. Cui Xiaoxin’ older cousin is also naturally my cousin. Since cousin you have already came to our doorstep, if I don’t invite you for a cup of tea, then Xiaoxin will be angry if she knew. My parents will also blame me for not knowing etiquette– cousin, come with me. The days are hot, in my house there’s well water chilled watermelon to quench your thirst.”

As he talked, Li Muyang once again reached out and pulled Yan Xiangma by the wrist.

” Presumptuous. “Yan Xiangma hurriedly said: ” I’m telling you, don’t grab my hands or feet, I hate people pulling my clothes—-let go of me, I said let go of me-”

Li family. Li Muyang and Yan Xiangma sat under the vines in the yard while eating watermelon.

Watermelon that had been chilled in cold water from the well for a good couple of hours. From the inside to the outside, a refreshing chill can be felt. In this dry-hot summer, a sensation that every hair had stood up can be felt after

eating.

Yan Xiangma ate three large slice of watermelon in one bite, Li Muyang brought over the fourth slice when he finally gestured with his hand. From his pocket he pulled out his handkerchief, wiped his mouth, and said: “I won’t eat anymore, if I continue then my stomach will be filled to the point of bursting. ”

Li Muyang had also ate three slices of watermelon, but he did not have the habit of carrying a handkerchief. He had no other choice but to fetch a bucket of water to wash his hands.

Li Muyang did not brew tea; eating chilled watermelon and immediately drinking hot tea afterwards was not good for your health.

He sat opposite on the bench opposite of Yan Xiangma, smiled and said: “Cousin why are you at Hubu lane? Is there something you need to take care of?”

“No, I came for you. “Yan Xiangma’s face was full of content. Li Muyang’s watermelon made him extremely satisfied; he had never eaten such a sweet watermelon before.

“Cousin, how can I help you?” Li Muyang asked.

From behind, Yan Xiangma retrieved a box and passed it along. Li Muyang did not receive it and asked: “What is this? ”

Yan Xiangma placed the box on top of the stone table and gently pushed it towards the direction of where Li Muyang is sitting. He said: “Open it and take a

look. ”

Li Muyang was unwilling to reach out to touch the delicate box built in a classical fashion. He smiled and shook his head and said: “I can’t receive any reward without achievements or contributions. Cousin and I have only met for the first time; I don’t understand why cousin would give me such a gift? ”

“My mother had asked me to thank you for risking your life to save Xiaoxin cousin. ” Yan Xiangma said with a smiling face. Li Muyang did not touch the jewellery he offered, he did not even open it to take a glance and let out a surprise expression. He glanced carefully around the Li’s house; although it did not look poor, but it definitely was not rich. Their family opened a small bakery which was only enough earn their family’s basic living expenses. Children who grew up in this family, could it be that they’re different from other ordinary people that desire money?

“At the time of my cousin being attacked in the cafe, thankfully Li Muyang student was there to save her. If it wasn’t for you stopping the killer temporarily, I fear that the family servants probably couldn’t call for help in time —we do not have the habit of oweing people. So please, do accept this gift. ”

Li Muyang shook his head and said: “Since cousin you have said it like that, then I must not take this gift even more. ”

Yan Xiangma gently waved the fan and said: “Oh, really? What is the reason? Let me hear it. ”

“Xiaoxin classmate is your cousin, but also my classmate and friend. When we appeared in the café together, it was because I was being bullied and Xiaoxin upheld justice and righteousness. Under her anger, she followed me and left the

school. ”

“And then, at the time at the café the things we discussed were related to tutoring me. University entrance examinations are approaching, at such a critical time Xiaoxin is still willing to put aside her revision and help me with my studies; I will remember this kindness for a lifetime-”

“At the time of the attack by the assassin, it all happened suddenly, I also had no time to prepare. However, no matter whether as the classmate of Xiaoxin or as his friend, or as the only male companion around her at that time, I had the duty to rush forward to protect her. Therefore, I cannot accept this gift; I just did what I had to do. ”

Yan Xiangma all along held a smiling expression on his face that was similar to the gentle winds and light clouds. He stared at Li Muyang’s eyes without blinking.

His remarks, and the expression in his eyes did not shift about at all. There was also no trace of fear and guilt. If the person was not a big crafty evil guy, then it proves that the words he said is indeed from his heart.

“Hearing what you have just said, I also think that this gift is indeed too common. Unbearably tacky. “Yan Xingma shook his head and sighed.

“Cousin, you can’t say it like that. “Li Muyang was anxious to stop him and said: “From a glance I can tell cousin you were born into an elite family; you guys have family rules and a family pride. You send gifts to thank me alredy indicates that you know how to repay a favour. But in my position, I must not accept this gift.”

“Well. If you don’t want to accept it, then don’t accept it. “Yan Xiangma took the box back into his arms. “In that case, we’ll continue to talk about the matter after. ”

“Cousin, please go ahead. ”

“I just saw you at the bookstore buying books, how are revision these days? “Yan Xiangma asked with a smiling face. He only just smiled but his smile was very nice. It was truly easy to make people have a favourable impression of him.

“Efforts are being made. “Li Muyang answered seriously:”As long as I grasp more knowledge, then there’s more hope. ”

“You didn’t answer my question. “Yan Xiangma said. “I’ll change to a more direct method of asking–Do you think you have the potential of being admitted to an elite school? ”

“I’ll try my best. Regarding whether I can be admitted to an elite school, I can only leave it for the heaven to decide. ”

“There’s too little insurance. It is too unsafe. Listening to your tone, I dare say you don’t have much confidence in your grades. I inquired about your grade; there is still somewhat a distance between you and the famous universities. “Yan Xiangma looked at Li Muyang with a look of sincerity and said:” How about this? I’ll promise you the admission into a famous university, are you willing to accept this?”

LI Muyangs’s long eyelashes blinked and said: “is this for real? ”

“Of course. Go and find out, when have I, Yan Xiangma ever lied before? ”

“What price do I need to pay for this? ”

“You won’t need to pay anything. ”

“Then I first must thank cousin. “Li Muyang said happily: “You can guarantee that I’ll be admitted into West Wind University? ”

Yan Xiangma’s facial expression finally sunk down. For the first time, a kind of cold and fierce expression was displayed in front of Li Muyang.

“No. “Yan Xiangma said coldly. “First, it’s impossible for you to attend West Wind University. For your own safety, I would advise you to not go to Tiandu. Tiadu’s rice is expensive, I’m afraid you can’t feed yourself there. Second, I can help you get admitted into Jiangnan University, I can let you select the subjects yourself yourself —-Jiangnan University is one of the best institution of the kingdom, I also graduated from Jiangnan. You won’t look down on it, right? ”

“But-” Yan Xiangma eyes were shining as stared at Li Muyang and said: “Since you’re already guaranteed to be admitted into Jiangnan University, then cousin won’t need to waste time and effort to tutor you, right?”

024 – Muyang subdues the horse!

[tl: The horse in the title is referring to is Yan Xiangma (Ma means horse in chinese)]

Because the story of the Cowherd and the Weaving maid[1] was circulated throughout Shenzhou [2], every noble family that had raised a beautiful unmarried woman would be extremely vigilant towards the Cowherds outside.

[tl: [1] https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/The_Weaver_Girl_and_the_Cowherd

[2] Old name for China]

Li Muyang was the cowherd that the Cui and Yan family were currently vigilant against.

Don't just assume that because Li Muyang had a dark face he was stupid. In fact, he was not dumb in the least.

He never had the opportunity to talk with classmate Cui Xiaoxin in these three years. But from Cui Xiaoxin's appearance, speech, temperament and actions he was able to clearly understand in his heart just how outstanding she was. It was very early on that the rumours about how Cui Xiaoxin had an extraordinary and mysterious background began to appear. But at that time, Li Muyang was still deeply in a drowsy state. It he was not sleeping, then he was preparing to sleep. Just where did he have the heart to concern himself with these senseless matters?

If he dared to be shameless enough to speak to Cui Xiaoxin, then disregarding just how much the teacher and students would laugh in the class, it was most

likely that there would be an even more marvellous and comedic version of the tale of the toad trying to eat the swan's meat being retold in the school.

After encountering the assassination in the cafe, he had guessed that Cui Xiaoxin did not have a normal background. If she was the child of a normal family, just how was it possible for her to meet with such a dangerous situation?

Assassins are very expensive are they not? Who would ever invite a assassin to their home to slaughter a pig just so they could celebrate Chinese New year?

Later, when he accompanied Cui Xiaoxin back to her home, he saw such a black luxurious car driving her about. The man wearing the green robe had used the etiquette of a noble knight —— for someone able to possess a high class martial artist as their personal knight, the only people able to do so were the powerful families that had remained standing for thousands of years at the capital of the Kingdom.

Li Muyang could not help but admit this fact. Cui Xiaoxin had an extraordinary background; they were people from two different worlds.

Therefore, he was not surprised that Yan Xiangma had seeked him out of his own initiative today to his doorstep.

It was even so that in his own predictions, the reaction of the opposing party would be even more intense.

If not, then how else would they make a 'cowherd' like him receive a memorable lesson and retreat?

“But I want to go to West Wind University.” There was honesty on Li Muyang’s face as he looked at Yan Xiangman. “I have already made a promise with Xiaoxin, that we will go to the Weiming lake to look at the sunset together.”

“Made a promise?”Yan Xiangman was taken aback for a moment, then began laughing uproariously. With his fan pointing at Li Muyang, he said: “Li Muyang, I only discovered just now, that not only are you not stupid, you are especially funny —- you promised Xiaoxin to go to see the sunset at Weiming Lake together? Are you making a joke with me?”

“I’m not.” Li Muyan shook his head. “We really promised each other. If you don’t believe me, then you can go ask Xiaoxin. The reason that I am so bitterly revising, and that I am not willing to waste even a second or minute, is because I want to go to West Wind university – a man must uphold his words. I already said I will go to West Wind university, how can I not keep my promise?”

“Do you feel you are able to pass the exams?” Yan Xiangma’s nose twitched, narrowing his eyes as he laughed.

“I don’t know.” Li Muyang shook his hand. “But I must try. How can I give up before the very last moment?”

“Li Muyang.” With a ‘pak’, Yan Xiangma snapped his fan shut. His patience was nearly expended, he really did not want to waste too much of his time on such a little character. The reason he was still using such a manner to speak to him right now, was because Li Muyang had once rescued his cousin after all. Both the Yan and Cui families were not bastards who would not pay back their debts. There was also another important reason – Li Muyang had treated him to ice chilled watermelon. This was the best tasting watermelon he had eaten recently. “Right now, I just praised you, saying that you were very smart. But very evidently, you still do not understand the answers to some questions, or perhaps you are

unwilling to comprehend them. Do you know what kind of person you are?”

“I know.” Li Muyang nodded his head. “I am riddled with illnesses, with an ugly appearance and my grades are very bad. Previously, I was a high school student that was a good for nothing.”

“Honest and accurate.” Yan Xiangma nodded his head: “Then what kind of person do you think Xiaoxin is?”

Li Muyang thought for a while, then replied: “She is my friend?”

“Friend?” A smile cracked open in Yan Xiangma’s face. “You guys are friends? You don’t even have a shred of romantic feeling for her?”

“I do.” Li Muyang said. “I like Cui Xiaoxin. This is the truth I only discovered several days ago.”

“In other words—-” Yan Xiangma’s tone suddenly became sharp and harsh. “Are you fit for her?”

“__”

“What is it?Have I hurt your pride?” Seeing that Li Muyang had his lips close without a reply, the corners of Yan Xiangma’s mouth lightly twitched. “But, this is a truth that no one can deny. You do not know Cui Xiaoxin’s background, and I cannot tell you. But I, am Yan Xiangma, my father is Yan Balai, the city lord of Jiangnan city. He is the highest official in the entire city — even if Xiaoxin is my little sister, do you think our families will agree to let her marry a high school student that is ill, ugly, poor grades and is a good for nothing?”

“They won’t.” Li Muyang gave a very sure reply.

“Therefore, let everything return back to what it was. You are still you, Xiaoxin is still Xiaoxin ———– accept this box, then idly drift about waiting for the notification of enrollment from Jiangnan University. Tomorrow, when Xiaoxin comes to tutor you, then tell her that you are not able to learn anymore, and want to give up. Is that not the wisest choice?”

“It is.” Li Muyang said.

“Then can we be said to have reached an agreement?”

“I don’t understand one thing.” Li Muyang said.

“What part do you not understand?”

“I have never said I wanted to pursue Cui Xiaoxin.” Li Muyang said in a low voice. “I only like her, I only feel that I like her a little bit. But, I did not say I would pursue her right now ——I only want to continue being her friend, even an exceedingly normal friend. I will do my best, exerting all the strength in my body to succeed. If I am able to enroll into West Wind University, then naturally this is my fortune. If not, then I am also able to accept such a fate.”

“I will make myself become exceptional, I will make myself become so exceptional that I will be fit for Xiaoxin one day and make her sit up and take notice. I will make her be fond of me for a little bit. I know better than anyone, that I am not fit ——I am not fit for her. But, this is not a reason for me to break off my friendship with Xiaoxin. If I am able to give her happiness, then I will beg

her to accept my feelings. If I am not able to do so, then I will forever feel that I am not fit for her in front of her, therefore ——I will also sincerely hope that she is able to suit someone great. I think, that before Xiaoxin needs to find a husband, she first needs some friends, is that not so?”

“Xiaoxin is a stubborn girl. She will expend her full efforts on what she reckons is right, including tutoring me. She feels that I still have hope, that I can still struggle and fight once again. Therefore I will also do my utmost to struggle along with her ——in these tens of years, I have never ever wanted to do something so acutely. At this time, how can I tell Xiaoxin that I want to give up?”

Yan Xiangma remained silent for a long time, looking at Li Muyang. “I was nearly persuaded by you —-but, if you really want to insist on not budging, then you will lose everything. You will not be able to go to West Wind University, nor will you be able to go to Jiangnan university. You will possess nothing. At that time, do you feel that there is any possibility left between Xiaoxin and you?”

“If I tell Xiaoxin right now that I want to give up, then just what kind of possibility will there be between us?”

“At least then, you will have Jiangnan University.”

“But, I want to go to West Wind University.”

“Look at this, there’s no way of discussing if things are like so.” Yan Xiangma said with a smile.

Yan Xiangma swished his fan, and a sharp needle appeared in the metal frame.

There was a black light emitting from this needle, as if it had been immersed in poison.

“This fan is known as the ‘Beating dragon spine’ fan. It cuts steel like mud, chopping apart someone’s muscles and bones. The old man in my family tells me that it can even break the spine of a dragon.” As Yan Xiangma spoke, this fan that was pitch black like black iron began swirling around his fingers, whistling lightly through the air. A white light began began flickering in all directions.

Cha——

The fan met with the Lapis Lazuli table, and a corner of the table was cleanly sliced apart, falling to the ground.

Cha——

It met with the table once again, and another piece of stone was cut apart from the Lapis Lazuli table.

Cha——

Yan Xiangma held the fan in the centre of his palm, looking at Yan Xiangma with a smile: “Look, I can switch to another method when negotiating things with you. But, I am a civilised person, I am a famous and well known noble ——— therefore I cannot use such a ruffian like method. Therefore, why don’t you consider again?”

“Extremely amazing.” There was a light emitting from Li Muyang’s eyes as he stared at the Beating dragon spine fan in Yan Xiangma’s hands. “It cuts steel like mud, and cuts apart stone like tofu. Your fan is really too amazing.”

Yan Xiangma was the second expert he had ever seen. He was a similarly powerful existence like the assassin Crow he had met last time.

But without knowing why, when he saw someone performing extraordinary abilities, there was a sensation of his blood boiling within his body. It was like that he was being summoned by some sort of emotion.

Yan Xiangma was very satisfied with Li Muyang's reaction. "Your arms and legs are so skinny. If I hit you one time on your body, most likely your skeleton will completely be scattered apart. I, Yan Xiangma, definitely cannot do such an act. Therefore, Muyang you must know what's best yourself. Being friendly and peaceful, just how great is that?"

Li Muyang held a corner of the table with his right hand. His face was somewhat red, and his eyes was enveloped in a red light. A slightly brown fish scale suddenly appeared on the back of his hands, with roiling clouds and mist and the clap of thunder inside the scale.

He suddenly fiercely exerted strength from his dantian, and a cracking sound could be heard. He had forcibly torn apart a large piece from the Lapis Lazuli table.

He shook his head, then said towards the Yan Xiangma with his eyes and mouths wide open: "You are still slightly more amazing the me. Look, the stone that I tore apart with my hands is not as neat as the one you sliced apart using your fan."

"__ __"

025 – Hedonistic Young master

Yan Xiangma’s expression was somewhat stunned, his mouth hanging open and his eyes glazing over. There were ten thousand grass mud horses[1] galloping wildly within his heart.

[tl: [1] This sounds in Chinese like [Fuck your mother], people in Chinese say "grass mud horse" instead to prevent censor when typing online.]

This was not right at all. The development of the situation should not have continued like so. As a young master of a well known and wealth family, after he came to obviously threaten in a benign manner, this little fellow with dark black skin should have promised never to interact with the girl of Cui family again by saying yes to everything. He would also demonstrate the style of a noble young master by benevolently and tolerantly pat him on the shoulder. From then on, they would have no dealings with each other. Both the appearance and the name of this person would not appear in his own life again ——

What did he mean by breaking the stone with his finger?

He was unwilling? Was this a strike of retaliation against him?

“I am not a normal person you can stamp all over. If you really want to force me to do something I am unwilling to do, then you will definitely have to pay a price for your own actions.”

Yan Xiangma very naturally filled in such a speech for Li Muyang in his heart.

The skeleton of Yan Xiangma's fan lightly tapped on the stone to check the hardness of the table. Looking at the large corner of the lapis lazuli table gouged out by him, he said out loud: "I thought I had already asked someone to investigate you thoroughly. It seems we still do not completely understand you."

"You've already understood very clearly." Said Li Muyang. "But we will change everyday, is that not right?"

"How were you able to do it?" Yan Xiangma asked while looking at Li Muyang.

"I wanted to do it, and just did it."

"Such an answer cannot convince me."

Li Muyang's eyes narrowed as he began laughing: "I did not think to convince you. I only spoke out the truth; in truth even I do not have a clear answer."

Yan Xiangma opened his fan with a 'pak' sound, saying: "My fan is called the 'Beating Dragon Spine.' It was crafted by great master Mo Langyong of the Mogan mountain from a divine meteor. I've practiced martial arts ever since I was small, and have a famous master. Right now I have already entered the middle stages of the High Mountain stage – therefore, I am able to use this 'Beating Dragon Spine' fan to easily cut apart this Lapis Lazuli table. What about you? You are only a person without the strength to truss a chicken, riddled with illnesses. Just how were you able to do it?"

"What's the meaning of you pursuing this matter of how I was able to do it? The fact that I am able to do such a feat, should be the thing you are most concerned about, is that not right?"

Yan Xiangma considered Li Muyang for a while, then spoke: “Do you still have any watermelon?”

“Yes.” Li Muyang nodded his head.

“Then give me two pieces.” Yan Xiangma said. “The weather is too hot, I am thirsty again.”

Okay.” Li Muyang said with a smile.

After finishing the two ice cold pieces of watermelon, Yan Xiangma stood up satisfactory. Looking at Li Muyan: “I seriously and sincerely advise you, that you should consider my proposal. Don’t do an idiotic thing, is that alright?”

“Thank you for cousin’s sincerity. But I have already made my decision.” Li Muyan replied with a smile.

Yan Xiangma shook his head with a sigh, saying: “Don’t think you can protect yourself just because you know some shallow martial arts. There are some people that you cannot afford to provoke.”

“I have never thought to provoke anyone.” There was a bashful smiling expression on Li Muyang’s face: “I will also pray that no one comes to provoke me.”

“Not knowing how to appreciate kindness.” Yan Xiangma shook his head, waving his fan as he headed outside. “I tell you, I am a famous indulgent young

master of Jiang Nan city. There is nothing I do not dare do.”

Li Muyan saw him off, then returned to the courtyard. He stared dumbly at the cracked and broken Lapis Lazuli table.

He pieced a piece of the table that had been cut apart by Yan Xiangma’s ‘Beating dragon spine’ fan and used his finger tips to rub against it for a while.

Then he picked up the stone that he had broken apart forcibly using his own strength, lightly caressing it with his fingers ——

“Aiya——” Li Muyang let out a small exclamation. There was a small cut on his fingertip with fresh blood dripping out from the wound. But by the time a red drop of blood has dripped out, the wound had already healed.

“Cutting it with the fan is more neat.” LI Muyan said with a highly envious tone.

Yan Xiangma sat in the rear courtyard of a garden. In the octagonal pavilion of the rear courtyard, there was also a lapis lazuli table.

Yan Xiangma placed his ‘Beating dragon spine’ fan to one side, then placed his palm against one corner of the table.

“En——” Yan Xiangma let out a low grunt, fiercely exerting force. But the hardness of the Lapis Lazuli table was incomparable. There were no signs of any abnormality whatsoever.

Yan Xiangma deeply breathed from his dantian, and a vast qi enveloped

throughout his whole body.

The hand that he was gripping the table with flickered with red light, as if there was a flame that was currently fiercely burning.

Flame Fist!

This was the inherited technique of the Cui family. It was also the lifeline that had protected the Cui family for thousands of years without falling in West Wind kingdom.

Yan Xiangma's shoulder lightly quivered, then he tore a large half from the surface of the Lapis Lazuli table.

This Lapis Lazuli stone seemed to be lit on fire by the flames on his fist, as if a stone could also burn.

The dim golden patterns on the Lapis Lazuli stone rapidly changed, and ultimately the stone near his palm was cremated into ashes. A wind blew over, causing the smoke to drift and disperse.

Ka-cha——

The leftover half of the stone table fell to the ground, shattering into pieces and power.

"The speed of Xiangma's improvement is divine. The Flame fist has already entered into the middle stages of the High Mountain stage. In another half a year, it is most likely that it will be able to enter into the higher stages? At that

time, you will be the number one in the martial realm of the younger generation in Jiang Nan city.” A man wearing a green robe stood at the entrance to the garden, looking at Yan Xiangma with a grin as he said these words.

“Master Ning.” Yan Xiangma respectfully paid his respects towards Ning Xinghan. There was not a shred of the rumoured arrogance of a wealthy young master present. “Master, you did not follow mother and cousin Xiaoxin to the Yongqing temple?”

“There’s uncle Yan accompanying them. What do I need to be worried about?” Ning Xinhai replied with a smile, being extremely respectful towards the uncle Yan that he referred to. “Young Miss Xiaoxin felt I have overworked myself protecting her for all these days, so she made me rest today at home.”

“That’s right.” Yan Xiangma smilingly said. “Because of the attack of Crow, it has indeed tired out Master Ning in these days. You need to be able to protect cousin in a flash, so you cannot rest easy at all. Cousin is considerate, to allow for Master to rest for a day.”

“Young miss Xiaoxin is wise and kind, and also considerate. It is our fortune to the people following beside her.” Ning Xinhai looked at the stones that were burnt black on the floor. “You were perfectly alright, why have you come to the rear courtyard to break stones?”

“Because he was able to do so.” Yan Xiangma said in a serious tone.

“What? Who was able to do so?”

“Li Muyang, the person that you all refer to as trash——” Yan Xiangma looked at Ning Xianghai, then said: “Master you have already met him several times before. You must know what kind of person he is right?”

“I can’t see through him.” Ning Xianghai shook his head. “The last time Crow attacked, I was outside cafe. I wanted to rescue her, but I was not in time ——but the attack was blocked successfully by the seemingly normal Li Muyang. He used his own flesh and blood to stop the attack of Crow.”

“But he is still alive.” Yan Xiangma’s eyes flickered with a light. He said in a considering tone: “Crow is an assassin that is ranked in the top twenty of the kingdom. He used his human body to block Crow ——but he is still alive. Don’t you feel that is strange Master?”

“I also find that peculiar.” Ning Xinhai was in deep thought, saying: “At that time, it was an extremely tense situation. He managed to block Crow’s attacks time and time again —— I’ve heard miss Xiaoxin mention, that he used his palm to block Crow’s knife twice. EVerytime Crow wanted to stab miss, but the result was that he stabbed the knife into his hands.

“Crow has turned killing to an art. The killing technique that he favours using at close distances is the Cherry blossom — Master, can I ask you a question? If it were you, would you be able to block Crow’s Cherry blossom cut?”

Ning Xinhai thought for a while, then said: “I am able to block it. However —- I cannot be sure that I am able to block it every time. The Cherry Blossom cut is like rain, the speed of the blade is enough to cut wind and snow. The reason it is known as the Cherry Blossom cut, is because it is extremely magnificent and can rapidly change and fluctuate like lightning. I am not able to predict his movements accurately every time.”

“But, He was able to block.” Yan Xiangma said in a cold tone. He pointed at the Lapis Lazuli table on the floor.”Like he was able to use a single palm to slice apart this stone.”

“But Xiangma, aren’t you also able to do this?”

“It’s not the same.” Yan Xiangma shook his head: “I’ve used the ‘Kindling of the raging inferno’ passed down through the family, I used qi —-but he did not. He only stood there dumbly, then lightly drew his hand across—–at that time I sat opposite him. He did not have too great a change on his expression, then he managed to cut apart the Lapis Lazuli table. Master, do you not feel that is terrifying?”

“It’s extremely terrifying.” NIng Xingha frowned. “It seems like this Li Muyang is more complicated than I imagined. This classmate is a dangerous person. But you know the personality of the young lady. If she believes her actions are right, no one can force her to do anyhing ——But I have also hiddenly investigated. I am not able to sense the slightest flow of qi in the body of LI Muyang, it seems he is not a cultivationist.”

“That’s right. Originally, I thought he was a normal person that wanted to be the toad tha ate swan meat. Therefore I did not regard him as important. I even wanted to use a somewhat gentle method to solve this problem. But from the current situation right now, most likely the matter has already exceeded our understanding. If we allow this fellow who has intentionally hidden his strength and has other motivations sticking to Xiaoxin’s side like a fly, this is a very challenging issue for us. There are two months before Xiaoxin needs to return Tiandu and the circumstances over there is complicated. The Kingdom will most likely fall into a new round of confrontation and conflict———

“Xiangma’s meaning is?” NIng Xinhai looked serenely at the handsome youth in front of him and ask.

“I’ve warned him. As the most famous hedonistic young master of Jiang Nan City, there is nothing I do not dare do. Do you think, he will understand?”

026 – You're ugly!

The alley was serene and dark, as if many secrets were hidden on the surface of every piece of the smooth polished stones.

Behind the vermilion painted door, there was a somewhat run-down looking yard.

In the middle of the yard is a grindstone, with a metal bucket on top of the millstone.

The ice was burning under the hot sun, letting out large amounts of cold air.

A man wearing black sat there meditating; smoke curled from his body and his forehead dripped with sweat. He looked as if he was in a sauna.

His hands moved around in the air, his ten fingers rapidly produced dozens of complicated and bizarre knots and seals.

Whoosh –

White light blazed brightly!

On the granite floor, there was suddenly a dark, deep black hole that had appeared.

The black hole emitted a grim atmosphere. Even catching a glimpse would instantly make the body tremble, like going through the passage of death in the

hell realm of Asura.

First there was a short silence, and then the sound of friction and rustling could be heard.

A crow appeared from the inside of the black hole, and flapped towards the man in black.

More crows flew out and headed towards the man in black.

They closely wrapped around the man in black, using their mouth to devour the dark aura emitting from his body.

Kaw Kaw Kaw–

With countless crows, there were countless mouths. Countless mouths constantly opened and closed. If one saw this scene, chills will definitely travel down your spine.

When the crows were away, the black smoke disappeared. The man in black finally revealed his true face.

He poured the ice and the ice water in the ice bucket onto his head, his body let out ‘Zi-La La’ noises. As if his body was a burning stove, and those ice cubes and ice water all being incinerated by the blazing flame on the stove.

It wasn’t until now, that the qi of light from Crow’s body was finally and truly cleanly expelled from his body.

Since ancient times, it was difficult for light and darkness to be together in harmony. Crow was following a dark and sinister path; the birds that he raised were also created by refining some tainted objects. At the time of his injury the move that the Cui family's bodyguard used wa the 'Buddha is born everywhere '. This was genuine Buddhist kung fu, which belonged to the high level techniques of exorcism in Buddhism.

After the light air entered into his body, Crow was wounded and fled.

Hiding himself into an alley, he killed a widowed old woman living here for many years. Ever since then, this yard has became the place he used for healing.

Crow was a specialist in his arts and occupation. From the very beginning, Crow was very confident in his own skills.

He was a proud man, a proud assassin.

However, the foolproof plan failed. This felt the same as being blatantly slapped across the face for him———

He could imagine, when the message of his failure reached the ears of the bloodthirsty killers of the Assassin Association, just how would they mock and sneer at him.

"Inexcusable." Crow slammed his palm, and the heavy stone that weighed more than thousand of kilograms broke into several pieces. 「

During his time of recovery, Crow had recalled what had happened carefully.

When he noticed that the bright moon of Cui family walked out of the school, he was one step ahead and decided to ambush her at a coffee shop. Sure enough, his gamble was right. Cui Xiaoxin indeed walked towards the cafe with her friend.

Just as he had thought, Cui family's bodyguard did not follow inside. But the guards stayed in front of the cafe, vigilantly inspecting the faces of each guests as they entered and leave.

When the Cui family's bodyguard did not enter, he knew that his assassination had a 99% chance of success. The reason why there may be a 1% failure was that within one second Cui Xiaoxin will transform into a star cultivator.

However, is this possible?

Cui Xiaoxin did not transform, she also was really not a star cultivator.

The princess has to maintain her gracefulness, so she could not transform as she pleases. But that trash youth beside her had transformed.

Otherwise, why could he receive and block accurately every time he attacked with his falling cherry blossom?

Why was he sent flying with one punch when he was using his 'splitting mountain' technique, an extremely powerful move,?

If this is not transformation then what is?

So, ultimately, the main culprit of his defeat was the charcoal youth.

“I want to kill him. “Crow thought to himself.

With his right hand he pulled out a coin from his pocket, and then placed the coin onto the palm of his left hand.

“This is the reward. ” Crow said to himself. He would not do something unprofitable.

Puchi Puchi—

A black bird flapped its wings as it entered into the yard.。

Crow reached out and the black bird landed onto his hand.

From the blackbird’s leg, he removed the bamboo tube, and then pulled out a piece of paper from the bamboo tube.

The paper isn’t big, with very little content.

Crow quickly finished reading.

He held the note with his two fingers and gently rubbed, the note was ignited.

“Li Muyang.” Crow said the name in an evil voice, his eyes saturated with the desire to commit murder. “Truly, you are a lamb to be slaughtered. ”

“The little bird said in the early morning, why do you have explosives on your back? I’m going to blow the school up, teachers don’t know, as soon as I’ve pulled string I’ll run—-“Li Shinian sang this song as she pushed open the door, seeing the yard in a mess she jumped up in fright, and shouted:” Li Muyang Li Muyang—– ”

Li Muyang walked out from the inside and asked: “What’s the matter? ”

“What happened to our table in the yard? “Li Shinian pointed at the lapis lazuli table that was missing several corners and asked: “Why would a fine table turn into this state? ”

“I don’t know. “Li Muyang went outside, pretending to look around, and said: ” How can this be? Could it be that the table was struck by lightning? ”

“How is this possible? “Li Shinian said grumpily:” Why would the table suddenly be struck by lightning? ”

“Good people can be struck by lightning, let alone a table. “Li Muyang argued.

Li Shinian rolled her eyes, stared at Li Muyang for a while, and said: “Do you really not know? ”

Li Muyang opened his mouth, smiled and said, “Okay, okay, I’ll be honest with you, I broke it with my hands–I was lying on the table writing, I also don’t know what happened–”

“You think I’m an idiot. “Li Shinian interrupted Li Muyang explanation: ” I’d rather believe it was struck by lightning. ”

“__ __”

Of course, Li Shinian would not place a table in her eyes. She glanced around and said: “Xiaoxin sister didn’t come today? ” 當

“No. “Li Muyang said with a smile, unwilling to tell his sister that Yan Xiangma came, or otherwise it would cause this little girl to worry for no reason.

She was already in second year of high school, right now her studies were also very intense. Although her grades are good, but Li Muyang still didn’t want her to bear the responsibility that the people of her age should not carry. “Xiaoxin yesterday said she’s not coming, she and the elders of her family are going to burn incense in the temple. ”

Li Sinian’s dark eyes rolled and said: “We should also go and pray for you–”

“I don’t believe that. “Li Muyang refused. “If burning incense can make people be admitted into University, then in the future would there not be people failing exams? ”

“Not to ask for that –” Li Shinian rolled her eyes and said: “No matter what you do, yo uwill still fail. Even Buddha can’t help you. ”

“Then what do you want to wish for? ”

“That Xiaoxin sister fails. Then you two can fail together, you two sufferers will empathise with each other, and then go back to school to repeat — by that time the three of us will be in the same school, same class, study together and try our best. And then a year later the three of us at the same time will achieve top marks in the examinations, hand in hand stride towards West Wind University, becoming a legend in Jiangnan City. What do you say? ”

Li Muyang walked over and pinched Li Shinian’s pink and delicate little face, his face looked at her with concern and said, “Li Shinian, you’re not really ill, right? ”

“You’re ill. “Li Shinian knocked away his brother’s hands and said:”Today I seriously thought about it, I want to bring you and Xiaoxin sister together, unless you can go to West Wind University or Xiaoxin sister fails with you—”

“If it is like so, can we be together? ”

“No. “Li Shinian shook her head. “But, at least you have a chance to compete with other people then. Right? ”「

“__”

The words were cruel, but Li Muyang knew what Li Shinian said was the truth.

If he can’t excel in the exam itself, then he and Cui Xiaoxin will be separated, he won’t even have a chance to compete with other people–

” I also do not have to pursue Cui Xiaoxin. “Li Muyang said in a reluctant tone,

admitting this fact. “I’m still young, what happens in the future no one knows. Maybe I can find a better one?”

“Brother—-”

“What?”

“You’re ugly. ”

“I know that. Do you have to put it so bluntly? ”

“But not every girl is as blind as Xiaoxin sister. ”

“—_—”

Cui Xiaoxin placed down her chopsticks, wiped her mouth with a napkin and said: “Aunt, Uncle, Cousin, you continue eating. I’m going out. ”

Yan Bolai placed down the newspaper in his hand, looked at Cui Xiaoxin and asked: “Xiaoxin you’re full so quickly? University entrance examinations are near, you must pay attention to your diet.”

“I’m full already. Thank you uncle for caring. “Cui Xiaoxin bowed.

“Xiaoxin, where are you going? “Aunt asked aloud: “Going to help your classmate with their school work? It’s nearly examinations; you can’t help others and impact your own grades. Although we don’t need this, but outside people

will surely comment on whether the grades are good or bad–you also know, when you go back to Tiandu, just how many pairs of eyes would staring at you. ”

“Aunt, don’t worry, I’ve already fully prepared. “Cui Xiaoxin’s expression was gentle but firm. She looked at her aunt and said: ” Whether it’s the exams or Tiandu. ”

Yan Xiangma said smilingly: “You don’t have to worry, do you not believe in our Xiaoxin? Xiaoxin[1] Xiaoxin, she’s more careful than anyone else. ”

After Cui Xiaoxin had left, Yan Bolai sharp eyes looked at Yan Xiangma and asked, “What classmate is so blessed, that he can be personally tutored by Xiaoxin [1]?”

[1] Xiaoxin also means "careful".

027 – The gift of an embroidered pouch!

Yan Bolai has thick eyebrows and big eyes; his face was long and slim. When he used one of his fierce expressions to stare at you, it would make you feel a shortness of breath as if you were being suffocated by having heavy boulders pressed right against your chest.

Even as his son, Yan Xiangma found it equally difficult to endure this sort of imposiveness that was like thunder.

He kept his head low and played with the spoon in his hand, avoiding his father's eye contact. He said: "He's the guy who sacrificed his life to save Xiaoxin during the attack in the café. The hospital he stayed in was also organised by our family. I asked someone to investigate, that guy is called Li Muyang. He's Xiaoxin's classmate. Xiaoxin is kind, she feels that she owes him, so she wanted to help him with his homework."

"A hero saving the beauty? "Yan Bolai face turned even more dark and said:" Have you thoroughly investigated his background yet?"

"His identity is clean and pure. His family had lived in Jiangnan city for more than ten years. It is impossible that some family had set it up. More than ten years ago, Xiaoxin also has not yet arrived at Jiangnan city. Moreover, the Cui family did not plan to send her to Jiangnan city. "Yan Xiangma said aloud.

"One cannot be careless." The expression in Yan Bolai's eyes became gentler. He looked at Yan Xiangma as he said: " The Cui family has a girl that is currently growing up. They are afraid that some people with ulterior motives will deliberately get close to her. If this matter isn't handled properly, it can also become a big disaster. Recently, Tiandu is also not peaceful; Cui family wants to

form an alliance with the Song family. And Xiaoxin and the guy known as ‘fine jade of the song family’ Song Tingyun are childhood friends, so both family have the intention to make them a pair —- This time with Xiaoxin’s return to the capital, it is very likely that this matter will be put on the agenda. During this period of time, there absolutely must not be any other disturbances. ”

“Xiaoxin and Song Tinyun are engaged?” Cui Xinci face was filled with surprise as she said: ” How come such a big matter happened and I didn’t even receive a bit of notification? ”

“It is still in the midst of discussion. In the end whether it can be negotiated or not, will depend upon the approval of the two master of the families. The grandfather of the Song family who was once renowned is already past his hundreds. Recently, his old illness is flaring up, his body condition is also said to be very poor. Whether he can survive this winter is still unknown and up in the air. Under such conditions, the Song family needs a strong aid to help them through the loss of their esteemed grandfather. The Song family will regard this marriage with more importance. ”

“Song Tinyun has the title ‘Fine jade of the Song family’; his appearance and temperament are impeccable. And among the younger generation, he was the first person to enter into the Unoccupied Cloud realm, and therefore one ost the most highly regarded young people of the Kingdom. If Xiaoxin and him were to get married, …… ” Cui Xinci said with a smile, she was happy that her niece would find a good match and home. “However, shouldn’t we discuss such things with Xiaoxin first, right? Xiaoxin is gentle on the outside but firm inside, and has a stubborn personality. If she has someone she likes, even brother or sister-in-law can’t force her.”

Yan Bolai looked at his beloved wife, a rare smile surfaced on his face and said:

“This is Cui family’s business, I, an outsider, can’t make a decision about this situation. How about you go and ask them? ”

“If you can’t decide, then how can I? A daughter that has been married away is water that has been poured away [1]. After all, you are the Lord of Jiangnan City; they will always have to care about your face. ”

[tl: [1] Not important, doesn’t belong to them anymore.]

Yan Bolai knows his wife’s outspoken personality. He laughed, shaking his head, and said: “Xiaoxin’s situation will need to be properly handled; even a little flame has to be promptly extinguished. If we wait until the fire has finished burning, I’m afraid there will be nothing we can do then. ”

“Father, rest-assured, I will handle it well.” Yan Bolai then respectfully replied.

Yan Bolai nodded and said: “You continue eating, I have to go to work.”

With that, he pushed the wooden chair aide, stood up and walked towards the outside.

Yan Xiangma saw his father off; then, he came back and sat with his mother who was brewing tea in the living room.

Seeing Yan Xiangma had come back, Cui Xinci asked aloud: “Xiangma, the thing I told you, have you done it yet? ”

“Mum, I also wanted to talk to you about this matter. “Yan Xiangma showed a

wry smile and said: ” That guy declined. ”

“Declined? “Cui Xinci was shocked and said: “That box of pearls is invaluable, it is enough for them to life a life of luxury for the rest of their lives. And the admission into Jiangnan University—he is just a poor and ugly trash student, yet he is still not satisfied? Just what does he want? ”

“Mum, he is not a trash—“

“What? If he’s not trash, then he can open his mouth wide and demand an exorbitant price?” Cui Xinci was extremely angry. She treated people sincerely, and the conditions she offered were also generous, but she never had thought she would encounters someone who dared to try rip her off. Is this not the same as lighting a lamp in the toilet, seeking death?

Yan Xiangma curled his lips and said: “Mum, if I say he declined it for true love, would you believe it? ”

“True love? “Cui Xinci’s mouth chewed the unfamiliar words. From a young age, no one had anyone mentioned the words ‘ true love ‘ in front of her.

“True love. “Yan Xiangma nodded seriously and said: “Really, I was touched by him. How about we allow cousin to marry him, I believe he will treat cousin sincerely–“

Pak ——-

Cui Xinci slapped the top of her son’s head and said angrily: “At this time, you still have the mood and energy to tell jokes? Originally I allowed you to

personally settle this matter, so we could still maintain a good relationship with that child. After all, he saved our Xiaoxin. The Cui family owes him. If he needs money, we'll give him money. If he wants a future we can build him a future—but if he wants Xiaoxin, the answer is absolutely not."

"Did you not hear your father's words just now? He is a child from an ordinary family, is he able to compete with the Cui family? Compete with the Song family? Is this not the same as seeking death? This is not helping him, but bringing trouble to him. Xiangma, you better find a way to resolve this matter, if your father was to do the job himself, the consequences will be too severe for him to bear."

"Mum—-" Yan Xiangma stroked his head that was hit by his mother, and said with suspicion: "He's just a poor boy, do we really need to care about him that much? "

"A child from an ordinary family is still a child. "Cui Xinci sighed. "Children of this age doesn't know how high the sky is and how thick is the ground, they want to reach out and pick the moon–this is not brave, but stupid. Go, use a gentle method to handle this. I don't want him to resent us, and I also don't want Xiaoxin to be sad and hurt. "

"Mum, that Li Muyang—" Yan Xiangma was somewhat hesitant to speak.

"Li Muyang what? "

"He's really dark. "Yan Xiangma said with a smile. "If he is together with cousin, they will be like a charcoal briquette falling into the snow. "

Pak—-

Yan Xiangma head suffered another slap—

Li Muyang did not know he had became the topic of conversation during Yan family's breakfast. He also does not know that he is even involved in a huge marriage conversation of a noble clan in Tiandu.

He was just purely happy that Cui Xiaoxin was coming. Just solely because of just a simple look into each other eyes, he would smile sweetly.

This is an area that he had never set foot in, a heart-pounding kind of feeling that he would never experience when he's with his sister Li Shinian.

Love is sweet, so sweet that it was sorrowful.

Li Muyang's current mood was very sweet and sorrowful.

By the time Cui Xiaoxin came, Li Muyang had already eaten breakfast, and finished two second year high school papers.

Seeing that Cui had arrived, Li Muyang quickly rushed out and welcomed her. He smiled and said: "Did you eat breakfast? Would you like something to drink? "

You see, the thoughts of men with no dating experience was so jumpy.

“A cup of tea would be nice. “Cui Xiaoxin nodded as she spoke.

“You sit down. ” Li Muyang invited Cui Xiaoxin to sit down, and then ran to make tea.

Cui Xiaoxin pointed at the Lapis table that they use to study and asked: “Why did the table turn like this?”

“Oh, my dad was practicing martial arts yesterday and accidentally knocked into the table–and so it became like this. “Li Muyang had predicted that Cui Xiaoxin might ask, so he had already prepared an answer in advance. You see, has he not become more and more clever?

“Oh. “Cui Xiaoxin nodded and said:” Uncle Li practices sword in the sword? ”

“Why do you ask? ”

“If not, why is this section of the table so neat? ”

“__ __”

It is a good thing that Cui Xiaoxin was not a nosy person, so she did not focus too much on the table. She checked the two papers that Li Muyang did this

morning and said: “The questions you were able to answer are generally correct. Then, let’s talk about the questions that you did not answer – such as this question, which part do you think you don’t understand? ” ”

“The solution to the problem I don’t know at all, I don’t know how to tackle it at all. ”

“That is because you didn’t listen well in class. This problem appears to be a hopeless tangle; the numbers also seems to be not linked. However, there is a formula that could help, you only need to put them into the formula, it is very easy to get the answer–”

As she explained, Cui Xiaoxin had already written a mathematical formula with a pen on a blank paper.

When together with Cui Xiaoxin, time always passes by very quickly.

When the sky was dark, Li Muyang’s parents came home from work. Li Shinian also came home from school, carrying her bags.

And as always, Cui Xiaoxin once again got up to leave.

Li Muyang was unable to persuade her to stay. He stood up to send her off.

“Are you coming tomorrow? “Li Muyang asked aloud.

“Yes. “Cui Xiaoxin brushed the hair on her forehead, revealing the crystal clear

earring on her left ear. “Until the night before the examinations. ”

“Thank you.” Said Li Muyang with a face filled with gratitude. He knew that since Yan Xiangma had come to his door, it indicated that Cui Xiaoxin was also under a lot of pressure at home. However, she had never mentioned a word to him, but still continued to come and tutor him.

This is a girl who’s really easy to adore.

Cui Xiaoxin thought for a moment, and then took out an embroidered pouch.

“For you.” Cui Xiaoxin smiled and handed over the pouch.

“What is this? “Li Muyang asked.

“I asked for two. “Cui Xiaoxin’s face turned crimson-red, under the dim light, her gentleness is just like a camellia plant swaying in the wind. “They say it can help us get good grades by bringing us good fortune. ”

028 – Love is hard to express!

Apart from Li Shinian, this was the first time Li Muyang had received a gift from the opposite sex.

Li Muyang also did not have any friends of the same gender.

The embroidered pouch gave off a delicate fragrance. It was unknown whether this was from the spices that was stuffed inside or because it was tainted with Cui Xiaoxin's scent.

Li Muyang held it in front of his nose and sniffed at it avariciously, as if he was in possession of a priceless treasure.

"Li Muyang, do you know you look like someone with anthomania?" Li Shinian pressed her lips together and said with a look of disdain.

"Being crazy for flowers is not something to be ashamed about." Li Muyang grinned: " in the past, some people called me an idiot, being an anthomaniac as opposed to being an idiot, isn't this much better? "

"My brother, my dear brother, do you have any pride at all?" Li Shinian angrily rolled about on the bed and said: "Is it not just an embroidered pouch? Do you have to be that excited? Take a look at my room, look at all the gifts I've received hidden in my closet –If I were like you, then I should've passed out already? "

Li Shinian was pretty and smart, and also especially loyal; she's the big sister of her year. It made no difference whether it was male or female; she still got along

with them. No matter where she went, there were always people screaming in front and people gathering behind. When it's her birthday, it was like a grand festival. The presents that she received on that day had to be carried back with a car.

So, at those times, Li Muyang was like a dutiful porter, like a hardworking ant carrying the gifts, little by little, to Li Shinian's room.

Li Shinian's room is much larger than Li Muyang's; their parents' explanation was that girls need a larger room to store their clothes. But Li Muyang already knew the truth, Li Shinian has too many gifts, so she needed a larger room to store them.

"This is because I have so little opportunity to receive a gift, so I'm extremely happy." Li Muyang cheerfully smiled, Li Shinian's attack did not affect his good mood: "Shinian, you have more experience. Tell me, in what situations will you give a guy a present? "

Li Shinian got up from the bed, pulled Li Muyang by his collar over to the bed, looked at him with a sweet smile and said: "Li Muyang, what did you just say? I did not hear it clearly."

"I said you have more experience, in what kind of situation—" Li Muyang could not continue his sentence. He realised he had made a serious mistake.

"Say it. Why don't you go on?"

"Hahaha, you know I didn't mean it that."

“Hohoho, but I heard very clearly the meaning of the words you said—”

“Dear sister, I sincerely just wanted to consult you —”

The smile on Li Shinian’s face disappeared, she ferociously stared at Li Muyang and said: “I’m your little sister, shouldn’t you have more experience in this kind of thing? Why do you want to ask me?”

“I—” Li Muyang was almost in tears, then he urgently explained: “I just think that since you’re smart, there’s nothing you can’t solve.”

“That’s correct.” Li Shinian nodded.

“Ah? ”

“Ah what? Ask.” Li Shinian released Li Muyang’s collar, used her little hand to smooth out the crease in his collar. Li Muyang had become more skilled at using his ‘indirectly saving the country ‘ move, now he is able to use it without any flaws

“I said, under what circumstances would you give a boy a present?”

“At holiday times, on his birthday, when he achieves some success, when he’s sad that he’s being bullied, when I travel and misses him, when I think he’s adorably ugly, and when I see something that’s adorably ugly that I want to buy it for him.” Li Shinian smiled as she looked at Li Muyang and said: “In all those situations, I will give him a present. ”

“Then does that mean you like him?” Li Muyang anxiously asked.

Li Shinian’s reply did not mention most crucial points. Today was not a holiday or his birthday and he is not sad nor had he been bullied. So, there were only two reasons for Cui Xiaoxin’s gift: one, to celebrate the fact that his scores had risen rapidly? Second, she thinks he’s adorably ugly?

Both of these answers made his heart feel empty and desolate.

“I like him.” Li Shinian gave an incomparable firm answer.

“Really?” Li Muyang’s emotions became excited once again, and said: “Because you like him that’s why you just give him a present, right?”

“Correct.” Li Shinian nodded. As her ear-length hair swung left and right, it was indeed very cute.

“I knew it.” Li Muyang happily held Li Shinian’s hand and said:” I knew it. Xiaoxin also have some feelings towards me, otherwise why would she gave me an embroidered pouch? I’ve heard that you don’t just casually give out this kind of thing.”

“Yes, Yes.” Li Shinian said agreeingly: “If girls don’t like them, then they won’t give boys present.

Li Muyang suddenly remembered something, he stared at Li Shinian and asked:

“Shinian, who’s the guy you like? It’s not—your first love, right?”

“First love? “Li Shinian smiled sweetly and said: “Maybe.”

“What’s his name? Do I know him? ”

“Of course you know him.” Li Shinian pulled Li Muyang’s arm and said: ” It’s you, my stupid brother.”

“—-”

Every day, Cui Xiaoxin came to tutor Li Muyang, rain or shine. Li Muyang also was full of joy every day as he looked forward to seeing Cui Xiaoxin; he enjoyed the moments being with Cui Xiaoxin.

The relationship between Li Shinian and Cui Xiaoxin became even better. When Li Muyang was answering his paper, they would sit in Li Shinian’s room chatting for half the day. Of course, it was Li Shinian talking, and Cui Xiaoxin listening. Cui Xiaoxin did not say much.

Li Muyang’s mother, Luo Qi became increasingly fond of Cui Xiaoxin. Everyday she left work early and brought home boxes and boxes of cakes that Cui Xiaoxin likes to eat. She repeatedly urged Cui Xiaoxin to stay for dinner, and even wanted Cui Xiaoxin to stay over at their house—although she was rejected over and over again, but all those buckets of cold water is unable to extinguish her passion.

With the help of Cui Xiaoxin, Li Muyang systematically reviewed the knowledge over the years all over again. Although he was able to grasp some topics, but there were some he just could not understand no matter what. Time was

running out, by the time he had finished the last set of paper that Cui Xiaoxin had prepared, it was already the day before the university entrance examination.

Cui Xiaoxin had honoured her promise to tutor Li Muyang until the day before the University entrance exam.

Tomorrow, Li Muyang will join hundreds and thousands of candidates in using their pens as bows, their knowledge as arrows, and doing everything they can to shoot towards the ideal university in their mind.

Those who hit the target, will receive top marks, and be welcomed with flowers and applause.

Those who miss may lose their eligibility to compete or even lose their lives.

Amongst tens of thousands, who was the hero?

Cui Xiaoxin once again rejected Luo Qi's dinner invitation and left. Li Muyang no longer needed his mother to remind him to accompany her back.

"Li Muyang." Cui Xiaoxin stood under the tree in front of the door, looked at Li Muyang and said: "I worked hard, you also worked hard. I don't know what you're results would be, but I have a hunch you will surprise everyone–those who bullied you, people who laughed at you, those people who have doubts or belittle you, they will definitely regret their previous selfishness and narrow-mindedness,"

"I did not work so hard for them." Li Muyang looked at Cui Xiaoxin and said with a smile: "I'm doing this for you."

“Li Muyang—” Cui Xiaoxin’s thin lips slightly moved, but she also did not know what to say. What should she say? Say we are people of different worlds? Say that we’ll probably be separated in two different lands and it will be difficult to see each other again? Say we don’t have any possibility?

“Because we have agreed to watch the sunset together at West Wind University’s Weiming Lake, right?”

Cui Xiaoxin’s eyes lit up, her mouth slightly raised, and said: “Yes. So, Li Muyang classmate, please do your best.”

Cui Xiaoxin waved at Li Muyang and walked away at a brisk pace.

“If it is like so, then is should be easier for you, right?” Li Muyang whispered as he watched her shadow from behind. Under the light, his upright silhouette looked somewhat weak and lonely.

By the time Li Muyang returned home, Luo Qi had already prepared dinner.

“Muyang, Xiaoxin went back?” Luo Qi came out from the kitchen with a bowl of soup and asked with a smile.

“En.. Went back.” Li Muyang replied…….

“Tidy up the books, wash your hands and get ready for dinner.” Luo Qi said with a smile: “Tell the slacker upstairs to come down, I asked her to help wash

the vegetables, yet she went upstairs saying she had homework –”

“Alright.” Li Muyang said with a smile. Li Shinian excelled in every way, but just like girls of a similar age, she also doesn’t like doing housework. Whenever she’s asked to wash dishes or wash vegetables, she found all kinds of excuse to evade it.

As Li Muyang was heading upstairs, Luo Qi suddenly shouted aloud: “Muyang —”

“Mum, what else can I do?” Li Muyang turned around, looked at Luo Qi and asked.

“You’re going to enroll into West Wind University, right?” Luo Qi asked aloud. Her face was full of smiles, but within her eyes was something that was extremely unfamiliar to Li Muyang.

“Yes.” Li Muyang nodded. “Mum, you also think there’s no hope for me, is that right? ”

“Of course not.” Luo Qi said in a firm voice: “My son worked so hard; as your mum, I can see that. Why would I not have a little hope? You want to go to West Wind University, then go to West Wind University. Mum supports you no matter what. ”

Li Muyang grinned and said: “Mum, thank you.”

“Silly boy, saying thanks to Mum?”

“Then I’ll tell Li Shinian to come and eat.” Li Muyang said smilingly.

Li Muyang turned around to leave. Only until then, did the smile on Luo Qi’s face froze. Her face turned tragically pale, and her eyes stayed abnormally still.

029 – Please let me speak!

On the horizon, a marble white colour is revealed in the dawn sky. A few stars stayed stubbornly still in their original position, refusing to depart.

The cool wind blew across, morning dew rippling and there was a myriad of living things growing. As if the whole world was trying to win the favour of Li Muyang who had just woken up.

Li Muyang stood in front of the window stretching his muscles and bones, and then came out of his room practicing the ‘art of breaking body’. Li Muyang realised that one has to have a good body to be able to have good grades. If he was like how he was before, constantly in a dazed state, then he won’t achieve anything–other than sleeping.

In the early historical period, a great man once said: health is the foundation of our body.

After running until he was soaked with sweat, he then went into the bathroom for a shower, and changed into the new clothes that his mother had prepared for him.

Glancing into the mirror he noticed that he is much paler than he was in the past. Before he was as pitch-black as ink, but now he’s emitting a bright glossy bronze colour.

“Is this not the kingdom’s idol: Gu Tianyue? “Li Muyang said to the mirror.

He blinked his eyes, opened his mouth and smiled.

The smile quickly disappeared, then he scolded himself: “Shameless.”

It was still early, but Li Muyang had no plans to flip open his books and revise.

He opened his pencil case to check, to see if there were any leaking pens or any that were unable to write. Then he checked his examination identification that his father had brought back from the school a few days ago, checking to see if there are any errors or omissions. Although on the day that his identification was brought home, his mother had already repeatedly checked over this document.

After tidying up properly, he sat at the table looking at the flowers and potted plants in the yard. He watched the starry sky, the rolling black clouds, and the white clouds concealing the sky.

The dawn sky turned into a marble white colour, and the white turning into a yellow colour, then the round-red sun with a shy expression slowly emerges from the eastern sky.

If this was a month ago, Li Muyang had completely nothing to worry about.

Sitting exams or not, what does it have to do with him?

He would have slept until he woke up naturally as usual, then grab two buns, run to the examination site and then escape after a while or he would just take a nap there.

Other people would answer their exam papers, he would hand in his exam papers; others went home and he also went home.

There's no hope, so there wouldn't be any expectations whatsoever.

With less than a month's time, he only just started preparing for the University entrance exam. He will fight against students who had been studying for years, to battle, to compete for the scarce opportunity for promotion.

Looking back, he also does not recognise his current self.

When the crying of chickens and barking of dogs were heard, the yard also began to be noisy and lively.

Mother got up to wash and father got up to practice. Li Shinian also surprisingly woke up, standing by the window and reading ancient poems.

"Li Muyang–" Li Shinian cried aloud in her room.

"Shinian, don't call your brother, let him sleep a little longer. "Mother Luo Qi said in a low voice.

"Mum, I'm up already." Li Muyang's stretched his head out of the window and said smilingly: "I got up a while ago."

"Mum, I know brother is awake. Examination is today; he can't sleep at ease. "Li Shinian proudly said: "Li Muyang, are you ready?"

"What needs to be prepared is prepared. "Li Muyang said with a smile: "Now I

can only leave it to fate.”

“Haha, you will do well. ”

“Why?”

“Because I made a wish for you before going to bed last night. “Li Shinian showed a proud face. “My wish always comes true. I said to make you stand up and now you’re standing up. I said you’ll turn smart, and you have gotten smarter. I said to not let you grow prettier than me and you’ve grown into a charcoal—-“

“——” Li Muyang often suspected that his sister is not biological, otherwise why did she always verbally attack him?

“Oh, brother—” Li Shinian suddenly exclaimed aloud.

“What’s wrong? “Li Muyang asked in a surprised tone.

“Brother, why are you paler? “Li Shinian’s windowsill was at an angle to Li Muyang’s windowsill, standing in her position she is able to see Li Muyang bathing in the rising sun. His lashes were long, facial features are deep, his silhouette is defined, and his skin is as delicate as celadon. His back is straight, and his smile is warm and confident.

He was no longer timid, no longer with a wretched appearance, and also does not look as thin as before that seemed like he would be blown easily away by the wind.

His body gave off a layer of gentle light, just like a celestial being walking out from a myriad of light.

“__”

“You’ve really turned paler.” Li Shinian danced happily and said: “If you don’t believe me then ask mum and dad—Did you secretly use my face cream? ”

“__”

Luo Qi had prepared breakfast; for the purpose of following the old proverb so her son has good luck for the examinations, she especially cooked two eggs and a deep-fried dough stick for Li Muyang.

Seeing the eggs and deep-fried dough stick in Li Muyang’s bowl, Li Shinian looked at mother Luo Qi with a mischievous expression and said: “Mum, you prepared two eggs and deep fried dough stick so that brother gets 100 percent in the exam? ”

“Yes. “Luo Qi smiled and nodded. “You also have a portion.”

“But today brother has three subjects to sit. “Li Shinian showed a worried expression and said:”Do you want him to get a combined score of 100 from the three subjects? So, you need to cook six eggs for him and three pieces of fried dough sticks, then he can get 100 percent for every subject–”

“Oh? That much? “Luo Qi said with in a distressed tone: “Then I’ll go and prepare–”

Li Muyang's mouth was stuffed full of eggs and his cheeks were bulging. After hearing Li Shinian's words, his face turned green, he grabbed his mother by the arm and said: "Mum, you can't listen to Shinian's nonsense. If you give me six eggs and three dough stick, I won't need to go to school anymore and will just die at home from eating too much—"

Luo Qi used a chopstick to hit Li Shinian's hand, and said angrily: "This girl, you're bullying your brother again."

"It's just a joke." Li Shinian stuck her tongue out at Li Muyang, and said: "Just to brighten up the atmosphere, so brother is not so tense."

"Whenever you speak, I'm nervous." Li Muyang finally swallowed the eggs with much difficulty and snappily said: "Don't talk. Even people would be scared to death by you."

"Petty." Li Shinian muttered to herself.

After eating breakfast, Li Muyang said goodbye to his parents and carried his bags, getting ready to head to the exam venue.

Li Yan wanted to walk Li Muyang there, but he refused. Since he had already knew the route to the examination venue, there's no need for an adult to escort him.

Li Muyang felt completely refreshed, his footsteps were light, and did not show a trace of nervousness for the important exams ahead.

“Maybe I am too prepared. “Li Muyang said to himself.

He pondered for a while, thinking that the entrance examinations that everyone dreaded was nothing special.

He carried his bag and walked into the yard, then a man wearing a black robe suddenly fell from the sky.

“It seems I came at the right time.” The black-robed man laughed darkly, while his eyes stared intently at Li Muyang—

Kwun Tong tea house.

Rich aristocrat’s son Yan Xiangma sat near the window on the second floor drinking tea, Jiangnan city’s most famous Longjing tea from the Shifeng mountain peak. By his side was a female singer wearing a green embroidered dress playing the Chinese lute while singing. The thick and soft language of the instrument nearly melted his heart and liver.

He liked this kind of melody; this was the characteristic style of an educated hedonistic young master.

Those who had nothing to do all day long and would bring their servants to bully innocent women can only be regarded as rogues. Although he also wanted to be one of those rogues, but was worried that his father will break his leg—even if his father does not hit him then his mother definitely will.

“Young master, we have already found out, this is the route that one must pass to get to the university entrance examination—in young master’s position, you just needs to glance outside every now and then, and we will know if he pass

by or not. “A middle-aged man dressed in a black mandarin vest bow back stood next to him with a face filled with flattery.

“Young master is a master, born to enjoy his life. There is a beauty in my eyes, good music in my ears, and gourmet food and fragrant tea in my hands; you dare tell to me to glance outside every now and then, causing me to be distracted. If I do two things at once, would beauty still be beauty? Is this good song still a good song? Would the gourmet food and fragrant tea taste the same? Vulgar.”

“Yes yes yes. I am wrong.” The middle-aged man apologised profusely. “Young master please continue appreciating beauty, listening to good music, and leave everything else for us to handle. I already told people to be on guard downstairs, I’ll stay with young master upstairs and keep an eye on the outside—-as long as that Li Muyang comes, then I’ll rush up to him, stuff him into a sack and carry him away.”

“You are somewhat clever.” Yan Xiangma closed his eyes and tapped his fingers gently to the beat.” Even though if that guy attended the examinations there isn’t a 100% chance he can’t be admitted to West Wind University, but nevertheless we have to be more safe. Besides, so what if he manages to get accepted? If he does manage to get accepted, I’ll tell someone to knock him out, so he can’t go to West Wind University, can’t go to the Kingdom’s capital Tiandu. At that time I’ll give him a Jiangnan University admission notice, would he accept or not?”

“Accept. Of course he’ll accept it. “The middle-aged man laughed and said: “Jiangnan University is a prestigious school, Back in the days I tried to get in for three years but still wasn’t accepted. ”

Yan Xiangma’s expression changed drastically, and said: “Even if you had 30 years, you would have still failed. A prestigious school like Jiangnan University, is

it for idiots like you to enrol?”

The middle-aged man suddenly remembered the young master education background, quickly changed his tone and said: “Yes, let alone 30 years, 300 years I also can’t go—enrolling for Jiangnan University is the same as asking for humiliation. It is something that’s impossible foe me. ”

“En. Be quiet.” Yan Xiangma waved his hand and said: “Don’t spoil the mood.”

“Yes, Yes, Yes–”

“I told you to shut up.

“Yes——” The middle-aged man clenched his mouth and didn’t dare to speak again.

Half an hour later, Yan Xiangma looked up at the sky outside, and asked with a puzzled expression: “Why isn’t that boy here yet? ”

“Young master, can I talk now?” The middle-aged man asked cautiously.

Yan Xiangma was outraged, pointed at his henchman and scolded without restraint: “Then are you shitting right now if you’re not talking? ”

30 – Maintaining Style!

Yan Xiangma was a perfectionist.

His looks were perfect, he was born perfect, and his personality, education and martial arts skills were all perfect—-anyone who dares to say he's not perfect are stuffed into a sack and thrown into the forest to feed the wild boars and beasts.

However, he did not understand, no matter how much he pondered, just how did he find such a servant to handle his business?

The intelligence he has, is it not an insult to his master?

Did someone not say something similar before? You will hang out with the same kind of people as yourself. If others think that the master has the same intelligence as the servant, then how can Yan Xiangma face them?

"Li Dalu, how many times have I told you? "The more Yan Xiangma thought, the more convinced he was that this was a serious problem. He prepared to have a serious conversation with his reliable henchman.

"Young master, what have you told me–that many times? "

"I say when you're running errands your eyes should widen a little more."

"Young master, my eyes are already wide open." Li Dalu exerted much effort to

open his eyes wide and said: ” Young master, look–”

Pu chi—

The female singer was amused by the master and servant conversation, and suddenly stopped singing; she bowed quickly as an apology and said: “Sir, I’m sorry, I didn’t mean it, I couldn’t hold back—”

“Okay, you’re excused. “Yan Xiangma did not have the mood to listen to songs anymore. He dropped the green bean cake in his hand into the dish, and wiped his hands with a towel. Then picked up the…. on table and whipped Li Dalu on the head as he scolded loudly: “You idiot, who wants to see you acting cute, could you be serious for a moment? ”

“Yes, Yes, Yes, young master, don’t hit me anymore, I’ll turn stupid if you continue -” Li Dalu covered his head with his hands, begging for mercy.

Yan Xiangma stopped and glanced outside at the street: “Did you not say Li Muyang will definitely pass this road? Why hasn’t he walked past yet? Even the examination room is about to close.”

“Yes, I was also wondering. “Li Dalu said agreeingly.

Yan Xiangma was enraged again. He shouted: “I proposed the question, so you have to find a way to solve the problem– are you waiting for me to analyse the situation for you?”

“I don’t dare to. “Li Dalu hurriedly apologised and said: “How about I send someone over to Li Muyang’s house to check? As you know, the kid usually is not eager to learn, every day he’s late for class. He surely must have overslept today, or maybe he ate something wrong—“

Yan Xiangma flipped his hand fan and pondered for a moment: “We should go to his house and remind him.”

“Remind?” Li Dalu did not understand, and asked: “young master, are we not going to kidnap the boy so he can’t attend the exam? ”

“Yes.” Yan Xiangma answered as he nodded.

“Since there are problems on his side, then does that not mean we won’t have to do anything?”

Yan Xiangma once again pondered for a moment, then hit Li Dalu on the head with his fan and scolded: “Such a simple matter, do I need you to tell me? ”

“Young master–” Scared of being hit again, Li Dalu stood far away and whispered: “Are we going to kidnap him or not? ”

“Kidnap. “Yan Xiangma said aloud. “If we don’t, does that not mean all the preparations we did this morning is wasted? ”

“Young master is right.” Said Li Dalu. “I’ll bring some brothers and surround their house.”

“Go. “Yan Xiangma gestured with his hand, and said: “Be more elegant, have some style.”

“Young master, kidnapping also have to have style? ”

“Nonsense. Did you watch the legend of <<Chor Lau-heung>>? Lu Xiaofeng is a thief, but look at how he steals? Before he commits a crime he leaves a note to the owner saying: ‘I’ve heard you have you have a white jade beauty, brilliantly carved and with an extremely beautiful form. I can not help but yearn to possess it. Today I will tread on the moonlight, simple and elegant, my heart does not dare let me return in futility.’ If all thieves reached this sort of state, then you’ll even be willing to be stolen from.”

“Young master, we also have to write a note and deliver it over? ”

Yan Xiangma once again wanted to hit his head, but Li Dalu ran too far away.

“You idiot. Are you going to send a note over, telling them that we’re going to kidnap your son so they can prepare—then wait for them to call the police and arrest you? ”

“—-“

Black clothes and black hat, the man was wrapped in black.

His body emitted a black aura, looking as if he’s a moving large chimney.

Crow!

Assassin Crow!

Li Muyang did not know his name, but he recognised the man's face.

During the attack on Cui Xiaoxin at the café, this guy was the culprit who was disguised as a waiter.

The last time he got away, but he never had thought that this time the target is himself.

Li Muyang was extremely nervous; he stared at him without blinking.

"Muyang, who is that?" Luo Qi asked aloud.

She initially thought that he's a friend of Li Muyang, but then she recalled that Li Muyang has no friends at all. Luo Qi came racing forward like a mother hen protecting her chick, using her own body to shield Li Muyang, and shouted: "Who the hell are you? What do you want?"

Li Yan was washing dishes in the kitchen, but once he heard noises outside, he jumped out from the kitchen window.

Then from the corner, he conveniently pulls out the pike that he normally uses for practice, and ran in front of his wife and son.

“Who are you? Why are you here? “Li Yan asked in a low voice. “We are ordinary people, we have no rancor towards you; I think you’ve got the wrong person? ”

“I have not got the wrong person. “Crow stared at Li Muyang with no expression and said: “Someone paid me to kill him.”

“Who?” Li Muyang was startled, then hurriedly explained:” I am just a weak student that doesn’t have the strength to even tie up a chicken, why would anyone pay to kill me? ”

“I did.” Crow answered. “I gave myself a gold coin, so I can kill you.”

“——” Li Muyang felt that this person is shameless. How could he do something like this? According to him, if I gave myself a gold coin a day, then I could make me praise myself as a handsome youth—What about the rules of the king? Is there is no law?

“I’m afraid I’m going let you down. “Li Yan secretly built up qi, the pike he’s holding was buzzing. Looking as if it’s alive, trembling incessantly in Li Yan’s hands.

“Heavenly Emperor Spear? You’re from the Lu family of Tiandu?”

“I’m not from the Lu family. “Li Yan denied. “I’m just the father of the child. If you want to hurt him then you have to step over my body first.”

“Brother—-” Li Shinian came downstairs carrying her bags, shocked at the scene in the courtyard. She urgently shouted: “Brother, are you alright? ”

She used her body to shield in front of Li Muyang, stared fiercely at assassin Crow with her little face and said: “Who are you? I’ll warn you, I’ve already called the police, you better hurry and leave–”

“Now the whole family is here, right?” Crow asked aloud as he looked at Li Muyang’s family.

Then he shook his head and said, “Unfortunately no one had paid for the lives of the other people, otherwise I could have killed them all.”

“—–”

Li Muyang’s eyes were flashing with red light, and his voice was cold without any emotion as he said: “You’d better leave right away, last time I stopped you, this time I can also stop you—“

“That’s impossible. I wasted so much energy to seek you out, and I also especially arranged to send you a surprise on the day of your examination–how can I leave at a time like this?” Crow shook his head in refusal.

“My classmate will be here soon to come pick me up for school. If you don’t leave, then just like last time, you will be seriously injured–they have been looking for you all along.” Although Li Muyang was not unsure about the inside details, but Cui Xiaoxin’s attack must have alarmed the sensitive nerves of countless people. They certainly will not let such an assassin go and carry on with evil assassinations in Jiangnan city.

Crow’s expression changed slightly, Li Muyang had poked at his sensitive spot.

He indeed does fear the bodyguards around the Kingdom's bright moon; that Ning Xinhai's strength is unfathomable. Crow also does not have the confidence to escape from his hands.

If what Li Muyang said is true, that his classmate was on her way here, then he indeed does not have much time.

Crow grinned and said: "in that case, time is tight—rest assured, I move extremely quick; I won't take much time."

As he spoke, his figure had already disappeared, a black mist rushed towards the direction of where Li Muyang was standing.

Li Shinian moved.

Who would have thought that the first to fight back was the cute delicate-looking little sister Li Shinian.

She threw the bag on her back at the black shadow.

Then, she punched out.

Pa Pa Pa—

Numerous shadows of fists flashing in the sky.

The shadows of fists behind pushes the shadows of fists in front, then a long row of fists shadows joined together, turning into a surge of unrivalled strength and advancing towards the black shadow.

Breaking fist!

The first move of the ‘art of breaking body’, which uses the force of the fist, and the force of nature. Shadow of fists stacking together, using force to break force.

Bang——

The black fog was dispelled, blossoming into small black clouds then scattering around.

Crow’s body flew back to his original position; his face was full of shock as he looked at Li Shinian who was panting heavily.

“Breaking fist? You know the ‘art of breaking body’ broken fist? “Crow’s voice was hoarse, and his eyes stared intently at Li Shinian as he asked: “Who is Ziyang Taoist to you? ”

“He’s my Shifu.” Li Shinian answered in a clear voice. She figured that since the bad guy knows her shifu, then that proves her shifu is a very powerful character. It would be best if she could scare him away with her shifu’s name.

“Turns out you’re a disciple of Ziyang Taoist, forgive me for being disrespectful.” Crow said coldly: “but you just learned some superficial knowledge, you wouldn’t be able to stop me from killing? Little girl, I advise you to leave now, otherwise Ziyang Taoist will lose his beloved disciple.”

“I won’t let you hurt my brother.” Li Shinian did not budge at all, and said firmly: “if you dare to kill him, I’m going have to kill you. ”

“Little girl, have you ever killed anyone?” Crow laughed. “Killing is an art, you can’t do it just by saying it–did you notice that your voice is trembling?”

“There will always be a first time.” Said Li Shinian. “Killing him has no significance to you, but many people will applaud if you’re dead–do you want to be laughed at by those people who were hostile to you?”

“Are you threatening me?”

“We can make a deal.”

031 – Human Shaped Cushion!

The courtyard is deep and hidden; the tall walls of the private courtyard that Li Yan and Luo Qi had bought when they just came to Jiangnan city has now became a natural barrier isolating them from the rest of the world.

For many people, it is still a quiet and peaceful morning, but for the Li family it is a nightmare.

The attack of an assassin was something they had never even considered before.

Who would have imagined, a good-for-nothing youth could have attracted the attack of a high-level assassin such as Crow —and even to the extent of using an absurd reason that his right hand gave a gold coin to his left hand as payment?

At the time of danger, Li Shinian was always the first one to rush in front of Li Muyang.

In her mind, Li Muyang was frail and weak, just like when he was young and needed protection and care,

“A deal?” Crow looked at the calm little girl across, he felt a truly fantastic feeling.” Little girl, do you know what you are doing? You want to make a deal with an assassin? If assassins are able to casually negotiate a transaction–then can they even claim to be an assassin? ”

“I’ll give you the ‘Art of Breaking Body’. ” Li Shinian said in a clear voice.

Just now, when she punched out, she noticed that the assassin's face was filled with astonishment.

She remembered his expression, so she could conclude that the martial arts her shifu taught her is likely to be powerful.

Li Shinian was a clever person, and in addition to this, she's also fairly composed.

If other girls were to encounter this kind of situation, they would have already hid behind their parents crying incessantly or even collapsing to the floor.

However, Li Shinian took the place of her brother and parents in negotiating with an assassin.

"Shinian–" Li Yan urgently shouted. He knew that the yellow-robed Taoist doted on her; he also knew that when he left, he gave a yellow-coloured book to Li Shinian and repeatedly told her to take care of it, and not to lose it or let other people know.

Right now his daughter is going to use it to exchange, is that not going against the wish of the man who gave her the book?

However, his daughter is going to use the secret book to exchange for his son's life. He could not say words to stop her no matter what.

Li Shinian stared at assassin Crow without blinking, then explained to her father: "Father, I remember shifu's words, but this is a critical moment, I can't worry about that now—I will explain it to shifu. If there is punishment, I will take

full responsibility.”

Seeing the silent and unimpressed expression on Crow’s face, Li Shinian then tried again and said: “The person you want to kill is my brother, but look at his condition—his body is weak and pitch-black. He was struck by lightning when he was born, even until now he‘s still in a lethargic state, unable to do anything–Is a trash like him really worth the effort to kill yourself? If others know of this, would that not attract the laughter of everyone? ”

“Rich and powerful, generals of the kingdom, women and children, rich young ladies– as long as someone is willing to pay, there is no one we won’t kill. Whether he’s a trash or not—” Crow glanced at Li Muyang, then a cold smile emerged on his lips as he said: “Little girl, I’m afraid you don’t know even what kind of a monster you’re protecting, right? ”

Of course Li Shinian doesn’t know what kind of monster Li Muyang is, since she was already certain that he’s a weak man who can’t protect himself.

“No one actually paid for my brother’s life, right? ”

“He spoiled my good work, I have to kill him.”

“Let my brother go, and I’ll give you the ‘Art of Breaking Body’. As for the matter of your own right hand giving your left hand a gold coin, no one will know–”

Crow is tempted by the ‘Art of Breaking Body’. The ‘Art of Breaking Body’ is a secret book of Taoism, a very high level of Taoism. Apart from the senior Taoists and the seven wandering Taoist spiritual masters, no one is qualified to give it

away.

Ziyang Taoist is one of the seven spiritual masters. Many years ago it has been said that his powers had reached the Withering Glory stage, able to decide life and death with just one thought. Crow does not dare to mess with Ziyang Taoist, but he still had the nerve to bully one of his disciples.

The person he's going to kill is Li Muyang, and not his disciple Li Shinian.

"After killing you, I can also get a hold of the 'Art of Breaking Body'." Crow sneered aloud.

"Kill me, and you get nothing." said Li Shinian. "The 'Art of Breaking Body' is in my mind."

"Are you kidding me? "Crow face turned gloomy. He could tell that this little girl is very intelligent, and also slippery. Kids are this precocious these days? They even can negotiate business so skillfully? Nowadays, they are able to negotiate transactions with assassinations. Don't tell me that they teach this in school? In that case, the business of the assassination school that he graduated from is bound to be affected strongly.

The Kingdom's economy is in a slump; every profession is competing intensely against each other. The assassination business was also the same.

Crow is worried about his alma mater; written on the school gate back in his years was the ancient teaching: ' Today I am proud of the school, tomorrow the school is ashamed of me'. He had always kept this in mind, and he wholeheartedly aimed to be famous in order for the school to be ashamed of his

excellent assassination achievements.

“I hope the school stay strong, it must not close down easily.” He silently prayed.

“I hope you will respond as soon as possible, otherwise, if you wait until Xiaoxin sister arrives, you will most likely get nothing. I’ll give you the ‘Art of the Breaking Body’ and pretend you did not come today, how about it?”

Crow stared coldly at Li Muyang and said: “Li Muyang, do you really need a girl to stand up for you?”

Li Muyang patted his sister’s shoulder and said in a hoarse voice: “Shinian, let me–”

“Brother—” Li Shinian screamed: “Don’t try to be brave. Do you not know the condition of your body? He is deliberately luring you out, and then he’ll kill you in one strike. Don’t listen to him, and stand behind me. If he dares to lays his fingers on you, I will fight him with all my might—“

“Shinian—-”

“Be quiet.”

“__”

“What a cowardly incompetent man.” Crow’s mouth twitched.

“Son, don’t listen to what others say. “Li Yan grunted aloud. The man who usually says a few words came rushing forward with his spear.

As one of the oldest member of the family and the only adult male in the family, he has the responsibility and obligation to stand in front and shelter his wife and children from the wind and rain at this critical moment.

One thrust and the spear was out, secretly stirring wind and thunder.

Crow stood still and sneered: “Lu family’s ‘Heavenly Emperor Spear’ is famous for its power, it had defeated countless number of enemies, and was named as the number one spear of West Wind ——unfortunately, you’ve only just learnt a little. ”

Cha–

Crow stretched out his hand from his black robe.

As if the pike has eyes, it arrived into Crow’s hand by itself.

“You can’t even attract the wind and thunder, and yet you want to hurt me with ‘Heavenly Emperor Spear’? Even a seven-year-old of the Lu family is a hundred times stronger than you, right? “Crow grabbed hold of the pike, and said tauntingly. “It seems that you are just a lackey of the Lu family–”

Crow pondered seriously for a moment, and then said: “Interesting, interesting I just casually found a normal family for veangence, yet they happened to be related to the Kingdom’s Lu family–”

Li Yan face turned purple as he desperately tried to gather qi to resist and

trying to forcibly retrieve the pike from Crow's hand.

Unfortunately, just as Crow had said, he only learnt limited knowledge of the 'Heavenly Emperor Spear'. He can't even defeat a child of the Lu family—as a servant, how would he get an opportunity to understand the exquisite techniques of the genuine 'Heavenly Emperor Spear'?

He learnt this superficial knowledge when he was the driver for Miss Gongsun Yu, from watching Lu Qingming of the Lu family practicing in the yard, and remembering it and thinking it through by himself.

"You want to snatch the pike back? "Crow smiled, then suddenly the hand holding the pike jerked forward, and both Li Yan and the pike were floating in mid-air.

"Let go of my father." Li Muyang was enraged, yelling and rushing over to assassin Crow.

"You finally look like a man—-here you go. "

Assassin Crow clicked his fingers and Li Yan's body was heavily flung towards Li Muyang.

"Brother be careful-" Li Shinian reminded him as she ran over.

She was aware of Crow's strengths. Do not underestimate his power, if not handled properly, then Li Muyang's weak bones will be crushed into pieces.

Li Muyang couldn’t hear, his body jumped high up and held Li Yan’s heavy body in his arms.

Both of their bodies were rolling and flipping in the air, and then they were flung towards the wall.

“Muyang—” Li Yan was worried.

He was aware of his son’s poor health. If his body was behind, then he would have to suffer the impact of his own heavy body crushing him against the wall. He feared for his son’s life.

Even while in mid-air, Li Yan tried to swap positions.

He grabbed Li Muyang’s body, trying to drag him to the front, letting his own body to pound against the wall instead, trying to act as a human cushion for his son.

But he could not pull him.

Li Muyang tightly held his father’s body from behind, as if he’s holding onto the most precious thing in the world.

“Muyang—” Li Yan once again exerted force.

Bang–

Li Muyang's body smashed against the thick bluestone walls, and Li Yan's body heavily struck against Li Muyang's chest.

Dust scattered everywhere, and vegetation on the wall also fell down.

At the area on the wall where Li Muyang fell onto, there was an enormous human-shaped dent.

Kacha Kacha–

Fine cracks upon cracks appeared on the bluestone wall.

"Muyang—" Luo Qi cried out in sorrow as she rushed over to Li Muyang.

"Brother-" Li Shinian also changed the direction of her attack, wanting to see the condition of Li Muyang.

Li Yan's eyes turned blood-red and were brimming with tears.

He stayed in the same posture as when he fell to the floor. He didn't dare to move or turn around.

He feared that if he turned around, he would see that his son had been pressed into a patty.

032 – Cut through it with one slice!

Kacha Kacha———-

The sound from the rupturing of the cracks on the bluestone wall lingered on, as if the wall were about to be pushed over.

This is simply borrowing strength to fight strength, using the force of the body to push down the walls. If Crow were to attack using his own body, even one blow is enough to cause the walls to collapse.

“Muyang, how are you—-Li Yan, are you a dead person? Hurry move away and check on your son—”

“Brother, you alright—-Li Muyang, quickly say something———-”

“Dad———-” A familiar voice sounded from behind.

Li Muyang patted his father’s shoulder and said: “Please move aside.”

Li Yan’s face was filled with joy. He instantly turned around and asked: “Muyang, are you all right? ——Are you hurt anywhere?”

“I’m fine.” Li Muyang shook his head, rubbed his sore shoulder and back, and said: ” I’ve just grazed the skin.”

“How could you only scrape your skin a little?” Li Shinian’s eyes blinked and blinked. Even though she had been practicing the ‘Art of Breaking body’ since a young age, the impact she suffered would have still caused her to break a bone or two.

However, the condition of Li Muyang's body is extremely bad, he can't even carry something slightly heavy, yet he forcibly held onto father and withstood the strength of Crow——-

Dents were knocked into the walls, and cracks were found on rocks, but he is not injured at all?

"Don't tell me his bones are harder than the stones?" Li Shinian thought to herself.

Of course, she knew that's impossible. Li Muyang had not trained his bones or muscles, how could he have this sort of ability?

"Muyang, quickly let me see———" Luo Qi hurriedly pulled Li Muyang over, and checked around his body. She's worry about Li Muyang's body, worried that he's just acting brave by saying he's fine.

"Mum, I'm really fine." Li Muyang explained.

"Look." Crow said with a cold smile: "Take a good look, look at what kind of monster he is. Stones were cracked yet he remains uninjured, do you still think he is just a frail and useless junk? "

Li Yan picked up the spear from the ground, and silently rushed towards Crow once again.

He did not care what his son is, he only cared that someone wants to hurt his

son.

He ran like a mountain with his spear buzzing loudly.

The pointed part of the spear flashed with silver lightning, but then disappeared almost instantly.

He really can’t attract wind and thunder.

“That move was not so bad——” Crow said with a cold smile: “Unfortunately it is not strong enough.”

As he spoke, the hand that had been hiding in the black robe all along stretched out again.

Just like the last time, the sharp pointy part of the spear once again landed on his palm.

The spear stopped buzzing, as if the strength that was contained within the spear sank into the vast ocean.

He reached out for the spear, and then suddenly threw it from a distance.

Li Yan wanted to reach for the disposed spear, but he was one step too slow.

The spear severely struck against his chest, and his body once again was sent flying.

Smash——-

Li Yan fell onto a row of potted plants at the corner of the yard, knocking over countless number of saplings.

“Ou-”

He merely felt a sweet taste in his throat and then his mouth spurted out large volume of blood.

“Li Yan——-” The hair clip on Luo Qi’s head fell off, she continued to run towards her husband with dishevelled hair.

Li Muyang and Li Shinian were also both greatly worried; they ran over to Li Yan together.

“I’m fine——” Li Yan still wanting to bear the pain and stand up. “I’ll block him once again, and you guys use this opportunity to run away——Shinian, take mum and brother and escape.”

“Dad——” Li Shinian’s eyes were brimming with tears as she said: “I’m not leaving, I’ll block him——”

“Hurry and leave.” Li Yan growled.

“Dad——”

“Want to escape?” Crow laughed loudly as he said: ” I’m sorry, but none of you can leave today.”

His black robe blew up without any wind, and his body once again turned into a large cloud of black fog. Black mists saturated the air and quickly enveloped the whole courtyard.

What’s more strange is that the black mist became more dense and did not disperse, as if it is a confining barrier wrapping up the whole courtyard, blocking the wind and the penetration of rain, and not allowing the slightest amount of leakage.

Not only that, within the black mist was the sound of birds flapping their wings.

‘Pili Pala’ noises could be heard.

It is difficult to see with the naked eye, but the surge of birds flocking towards Li Muyang and his family can be clearly heard with the ears.

Li Shinian had never experienced this sort of battle; she also has no combat experience at all.

Just now when Crow dashed towards them, she knew she had to throw her fist at the target to expel him.

But now, in addition to the assassin himself coming towards them, there is also a huge flock of mysterious black birds that appeared out of nowhere.

Moreover, her eyes were confused by the dense fog; unable to see anything, she does not know how to respond.

“Asshole.”

Li Shinian, once again punched out.

Pak—

Dark fog scattered; however, this time the attack is not from Crow himself. Instead it’s the crows that were flocking over.

Li Shinian’s age is not old; the purpose of her learning ‘Art of Breaking Body’ was to improve the physical fitness of her body.

Although it cannot be said that it was just three days of fishing and two days of drying her nets, but compared to the efforts and suffering experienced by those who cultivate and practice Daoism, it really is not worth mentioning.。

The first punch was full of strength, but then it was already somewhat difficult to follow up with the second punch.

When she wanted to punch out for the third time, she discovered that her arm was as light as feather. It turns out that the previous two punches had used up all the energy in her body.

“Hu——-” A breeze of black wind blew across. Li Shinian felt a shortness of breath, her head felt dizzy, and then a blackness of vision as she was thrown to

the ground.

“Shinian——Mum——” Li Muyang yelled in a miserable voice.

Li Muyang stood with his parents; it is difficult for him to see in the dark, but he is able to hear the sound of something close to him falling to the ground.

The first sound was Li Shinian’s voice, because it was the location of where Li Shinian was standing. The second sound was by Li Muyang’s side, the place where mother Luo Qi was standing.

“Dad——” Li Muyang once again shouted aloud.

“Muyang, the mist is toxic——” Without finishing his words, Li Yan also fell to the ground. 「

“Dad——” Li Muyang rushed towards the location of Li Shinian, he was worried that that the assassin will hurt his sister within the pitch-black darkness.

“What’s this?” Crow exclaimed aloud. He was surprised to find that within his ‘ puzzling obstruction of darkness’, someone was unexpectedly able to persist and did not collapse to the ground. Furthermore, that person is just an ordinary man ——of course, he already knows that he is not ordinary at all.

“You manage to remain unharmed? “Crow said with regret: “Looks like I have to waste some more time ”

His sister had collapsed to the ground, and he was unsure if his parents were alive or not.

They are Li Muyang's closest relatives, they are his life, his everything.

Without them, he would not have lived until now.

He would have died, or discarded as waste into the garbage bin, becoming a tramp or a vagrant.

But now someone wants to take away their lives.

Although the assassin said his target is only one person, but who knows what would happen? Who knows if he will accidentally kill other people?

If the moral quality of an assassin could be trusted, then why does the Kingdom have still have executions occurring?

"Damn you." Li Muyang's eyes stared intently at the location of Crow. He is now fully infuriated. "You deserve to die."

Swish—-

A black shadow came rushing at Li Muyang. Li Muyang simply felt an overwhelming surge of earth-shattering energy coming at him and a sweet taste in his chest, and then he was thrown flying.

Clang—–

His body fell on top of the steps in front of the gate, only a ‘Ka Pa’ snapping sound was heard, and it seemed like his entire back was broken.

Li Muyang clenched his teeth, and used both his hands to support him to climb back up from the ground, and then once again dashed towards the black mist.

He couldn’t see the location of assassin Crow, but he could feel where he is.

He hoped that he could possess that kind of ability once again; he wished that he were able to send him flying with just one blow.

Clang—

Li Muyang’s body flew upside down once again, this time crashing directly into the inside of the living room.

“If you still want to hide your strength, then I have no choice but to help you fulfill your wish of dying. “Crow’s voice echoed from inside of the black fog.

His heart was full of doubts, he clearly seemed to be a normal teenager. Even if Crow deliberately emitted Qi to test him, he didn’t have any responses or tried to fight back.

If he is as they say, a sickly and weak ordinary teenager.

Then, what about that day at the café?

This asshole was able to send him flying with simply one punch, what was that about?

If Crow had not been wounded by him, how would Crow had to experience the Cui family's martial arts master's move 'Budda is born everywhere'?

Crow held out his right hand, his palm holding onto a dagger with a simple design and its handle carved with a spitting snake.

The dagger is glistening and shining, as if the snake's body is being stretched out infinitely.

Crow's body disappeared from its original position, and then a cloud of black fog blasted in front of Li Muyang, and a light sword slashed at Li Muyang's neck.

Sakura cut!

One strike, a severed head.

The corner of Li Muyang's mouth was dripping with blood and blood was even flowing incessantly out from his nose.

His eyes were saturated with red lights and the scales on the back of his hand gleamed, and then a physical object like substance seemed to seep out on the back of his hand.

At the boundary of life and death, he did not feel any fear at all.

There is only anger in his eyes, as well as a killing intent that's difficult to sustain.

His long-scaly fingers clenched into a fist, his bronze-coloured fists became huge and glowed brightly.

Bang——

Li Muyang explosively threw out his fist.

Aiming at the long green snake, at the sharp blade that could cut through iron as if it were mud, and the invincible cherry blossom cut.

Ka—-

The green light sword slashed the top of Li Muyang's fist, but the fist did not separate from his arm. Instead the explosive light of the green-coloured light sword was extinguished in a flash, and then the head of the snake was loudly split open.

The blade was unable to withstand that immense surge of powerful qi, turning into countless number of green fragments.

Each broken fragment is a bright mirror, reflecting the fear and astonished expression on Crow's face.

Countless numbers of mirrors distributed all over the place, Crow's fear also followed and scattered everywhere.

033 – Flesh eating blood crows!

Crow’s body floated in the air like a bird with broken wings.

He waved his black robe about, trying to maintain his balance, but it was too late.

Crash—-

Crow’s body heavily pounded against the ground, and his back pressed into the solid bluestone walls.

Although he had already used his ‘wave breaking thousand sails’ technique to push forward his own body and to avoid taking a direct hit—- but Li Muyang’s punch was too abrupt and too heavy, it was not something that the force of his wave could contend against.

The pain he felt was as if his back was being torn apart. His bones also seemed to snap into two.

Crow’s strength was much superior to Li Muyang’s, so much that before Li Muyang’s entered his berserk state, he only needed to reach out and extend his fingers to press him to death. However, Li Muyang’s body was strong, his skin and flesh solid and tough. Also his ability to repair himself was something that cultivators could not match up to.

He experienced a shortness of breath, his right hand that held onto the sword twitched, and his gut overturned as if it’s about to jump out of his chest.

He felt a sweet taste in his throat, and then he forcibly restrained himself from vomiting out qi and blood

However, the more he endured the more uncomfortable it was; the urge to vomit became increasingly intense.

Pfffff—-

With his mouth wide open, he spurted out large mouthfuls of blood in front of Li Muyang.

Then he hurriedly lifted his head, and noticed that he was surrounded by a dense black fog. Since it is difficult to see anything at all, it reassured him that Li Muyang wouldn’t see his pitiful state.

It then came to mind that Li Muyang may have possibly heard the sound of him vomiting blood, and his heart could not help but became somewhat worried once again.

Even the assassination of an ordinary person did not go smoothly. Just when will the assassination school be genuinely ashamed of him and use his success stories as teaching materials for the younger generation and as an object of worship?

Crows have always felt that he is a model assassin of the school; he possesses a majestic dream and a goal beneath his skin.

“Kill him.” Crow thought in his mind: “Kill him and what happened today would not exist. His injuries, vomiting blood—-including the matter of his right hand

giving a cold coin to his left hand. All will be like snow in the sun, instantly melting into a puddle of ice water making and becoming difficult to distinguish it with what it was before.”

“You finally show your true self now?” Said Crow as he glared at Li Muyang who was gasping for air in the fog. He was able to see Li Muyang’s location, he was able to see Li Muyang’s facial expression-it was a ferocious expression of violence. It’s difficult for him to imagine, how such an expression could appear on the face of this boy—-just as it was is difficult for him to believe that this boy managed to block his cherry blossoms cut over and over again that time at the cafe. “Your current state is your true face? Who are you really?”

Seeing that Li Muyang red pupils was wrapped in fresh blood, Crow could not help but ask a question that had puzzled him for a long time: “You’re a monster? ”

“You deserve to die.” Li Muyang walked towards Crow one step at a time.

Crow suddenly felt a sense of oppression.

He felt the danger.

An assassin’s instinct is very sensitive; from Li Muyang’s body he felt a dangerous atmosphere.

Just now Li Muyang had exploded his ‘snake spirit sword’ into pieces with just his fist. Although it is said that the snake spirit sword can’t be compared to the list of the Hundred Weapons, but within the land of the West Wind, it enjoyed the reputation of being a prestigious weapon. He stole the snake spirit sword

from a sword master when he assassinated him, but he didn't think that today it would be destroyed in the hands of a nameless boy.

This was utterly hateful!

Crow reached out and wiped the bloodstain on his lips, and then stood up by holding onto the wall.

"You think you can kill me like that?" Crow sneered. "Extremely foolish."

Crow stretched out both his hands, then vast amount of black smoke emanated from his body.

His left hand formed a complicated 'triple arch of a ram's horn' seal, and his right hand frequently waved about in the air.

A door flashing with red light appeared out of nowhere in the courtyard. The border of the door was burning with red flames, as if it had just been pulled out from hell itself.

Large quantities of black crows came flapping toward the direction of Li Muyang; they were silent and fierce.

"I'll let you have a taste of the power of flesh-eating blood crows." Crow said with a proud face. "They will suck every last drop of your blood, devour each and every piece of your flesh. Even your bones, they won't leave any behind——wait until after the blood crows leave, you will disappear from this world. As if you had never existed."

Crow did not intend to use such a powerful killing move, because it would deplete his qi and energy. Moreover, these dark things cannot be frequently summoned because each time they must be fed fully.

If they rushed out but didn't receive any food, they will treat the person who called them as their target and food. The assistants who were helping him seconds ago would into some maniac killers that he can't even ward off – this was a situation that no owners would want to see.

Crow is the owner of the blood crows. When Crow began to train them, he indeed had to feed them with his own blood.

Last time he also summoned them in the café, the purpose was so Li Muyang and that maiden of the Cui family can serve as food for these crows.

But suddenly the 'Buddha is born everywhere' move appeared out of nowhere. This move can be classified as a light technique of Buddhism, it is the natural enemy of such filthy things. If these blood crows were not incinerated by 'Buddha is born everywhere', then it is likely that few people in the coffee shop could have survived.

The flesh-eating blood crows extend their sharp claws, open their sharp beaks, and rushed towards Li Muyang's location, as if they are hiding the sky and covering the earth.

Some flocked towards to where Li Shinian and Li Muyang's parents were on the ground, in that place they could see their prey.

It seemed that Li Muyang did not hear Crow's words, his eyes was covered with redness as he marched forward in big strides.

When he saw the black crows wanting to block his path, Li Muyang once again violently punched out.

Bang—-

Numerous crows were sent into flying and scattered everywhere. The countless number of crows resembled countless black marbles being shot out and then hitting the walls and the door, then tumbling to the ground.

Seeing that some blood crows were about to bite his younger sister, Li Muyang's eyes were about to crack and he forcefully punched out.

Crash—

The blood crows that came into contact with Li Muyang's overbearingly powerful fist exploded into pieces.

Black-coloured blood splattered in the sky, as if black raindrops had fell into the little courtyard.

Li Muyang squatted down, lifted up his sister's body from the ground, and then walked towards where mother and father were lying.

He lay them down together, and then he stood straight up with his back in front of them.

As long as he’s here, nobody can hurt them.

As long as he’s alive, nobody can hurt them.

Just like how they protected him just now.

The flesh-eating blood crows that scattered with his punch, instantly gathered together again. They prefered to flock together to attack.

Under Crow’s control, they opened wide their eyes wide, revealing their blood-red eyes as they rushed towards Li Muyang.

No matter what, they were about to tear Li Muyang into pieces, and then devour him into their stomach.

Bang—

Li Muyang threw out his fist with explosive force.

Blood crows were dispelled, but then gathered again.

Bang——

Li Muyang once again violently threw out his fist.

The death and injuries of blood crows rose drastically; however, even more blood crows are still being summoned from the nether gate.

The number of crows became increasingly more, almost filling up the whole courtyard.

This is the reason for Crow to set up his puzzling obstruction of darkness in the courtyard right before his assassination. If there isn't such a barrier concealing them from the outside world, then most likely what happened here would have already spread across half of Jiangnan city.

Bang—-

Bang—-

Bang—-

Li Muyang's punched out one after another, as if he would never knew what fatigue is.

Countless blood crows had been exploded or killed by his fist, around his feet were large volumes of black-coloured blood, and on the ground vast quantities of bird carcasses accumulated.

Li Muyang became a professional bird-killing machine!

Li Muyang's performance was remarkable, too remarkable that it made him feel frightened.

However, it is because of this fear that the savage nature of Crow was

stimulated.

He must destroy Li Muyang, the better Li Muyang's performance is, the more he wants to use the most brutal method to destroy this powerful guy.

The sense of achievement in killing an ordinary person and killing a genius differs vastly.

"Carry on killing, use extra effort in killing——-" Crow thought to himself: "I have an endless number of flesh-eating blood crows, as long as I can keep the nether gate open, then I can continue to summon a steady flow of blood crows to serve me——-Wait until you've drained all your strength, that is precisely my time to kill you in one strike."

"Human is not like the high mountains or the wide river, how would they not be tired?"

Crow awaited his opportunity. A chance that he thinks will soon appear.

Li Muyang is impatient!

He can't stand the killing.

These stupid birds, these filthy things, dare to challenge him——even though he can kill them easily, but Li Muyang still feel insulted.

Not like that!

Fighting should not be like this !

They should use a fiercer and stronger method; he wanted to rapidly settle this dissatisfying battle.

His vicious tendency rose dramatically. The scales on the back of Li Muyang's hand changed into a snowy white colour, and then it looked as if sparkling and translucent diamonds were embedded within his flesh.

While Li Muyang once again attack with his fist, breaking up apart flocks of blood crows, his blood-red eyes glared at the location of Crow.

Crow has a bad feeling.

He rapidly changed his handprint seal; all of the blood crows in the sky flapped towards his body and crowded him.

Crow and the flesh-eating blood crows merged together, becoming a gigantic monster that also emitted toxic air.

The monster headed towards Li Muyang; it walked silently, but it was extremely disturbing.

"These tiny flying insects." Li Muyang bit his lips, the corner of his lips was dripping with blood. His voice was hoarse and changed greatly but also showed a dignified dominance. "Go to hell."

Li Muyang clenched his right hand into a tight fist and then punched out

forcefully.

The blood crows felt danger, fluttered its wings trying to escape.

Crow also felt danger, changed his body size to enter into the nether gate.

Unfortunately, there is a strong suction restricting their body movements, making them unable to budge at all.

Bang—-

Lightning flashes across, a sudden clap of thunder sounded, and the giant black monster resembled a fragile wall collapsing to the ground.

034 – Already dead!

One punch breaking the blue dome of heaven!

White light flashed across the courtyard, the world filled with darkness suddenly subverted into a daylight picture.

The puzzling obstruction of darkness cracked; black mist dispelled.

A cool breeze blew across, and bright rays of sunshine illuminated the courtyard.

Li Muyang could see the cracks on the corner of the bluestone wall, the bloodstains on the door panel, the destruction in the garden, and also his father, mother and sister who were lying on the ground.

He could hear the traffic noises outside, and also someone yelling loudly ‘bing tang hu lu [1]’—-

[tl: [1] Candied sweets on a skewer.]

As if he had just returned from hell, he could see colours in front of his eyes and his ears could hear life once again.

Those who were fortunate enough to escape from death would feel especially blessed.

The blood crows that exploded with Li Muyang’s punch felt the danger,

flapped their wings toward the nether gate to escape.

Many blood crows were one step too slow because when Crow's body heavily fell to the ground, the nether gate had already disappeared.

Crow was seriously injured; the energy and qi in his body can no longer support the existence of the nether gate.

Those crows that struggled to escape panicked, flew rapidly around in circles in the yard, and then drilled into Crow who was lying down on the ground—-

Only a familiar dark atmosphere could be felt.

They don't like the daytime or the light. If the crows did not manage to escape, they will soon be incinerated under the scorching sun.

They do not want to become a roasted crow with charred skin and tender meat!

Crow's body once again knocked against the stone walls of the courtyard. He lay on the ground vomiting mouthfuls and mouthfuls of blood.

His lungs were severely injured; right now he does not even have the strength to stand back up.

Flesh-eating blood crows flocked towards him; his expression was full of panic, his pupil was wide, and he tried to raise his hand to expel them.

Unfortunately, his arm does not have any more strength left.

“Li Muyang, save me——Li Muyang, help me, help me send them off——” Crow loudly begged Li Muyang for help.

Li Muyang stared at him with his blood-red eyes while breathing heavily.

A blood crow rushed towards Crow and then tore a piece of flesh off Crow’s face.

“Ah——” Crow exclaimed in pain and shouted: “Li Muyang, kill me. Hurry, kill me.”

Li Muyang stood there motionless, as if he did not hear the painful cry of Crow.

Seeing their comrades widening their beaks, other blood crows became even more frantic.

They pounced onto Crow’s face, chest, arms, legs and other parts of his body and extended their claws, their beak wide open, and tore off pieces of flesh to eat.

“Ah, Ah, Ah——” Crow was in so much pain he did not want to live. He rolled around constantly on the ground trying to send off the blood crows.

However, when he rolled over, his back was exposed. These blood crows are experienced; they merely used their claws to scratch a few times and the clothes on his back were torn apart. And then they used their slender beak to pull off the

skin and flesh on his back.

“Li Muyang, kill me———please, I beg you, kill me”

Crow’s words showed remorse for the first time!

It was truly a contradicting feeling; before when his injuries had completely healed, he immediately could not wait to get his revenge on Li Muyang. But at this moment, he hoped that he had never come here. He wished that he did not jump into the small courtyard and had never seeked Li Muyang for revenge.

“You deserve to die.” Li Muyang said without mercy.

He hated this assassin; therefore, naturally he would not save him nor kill him.

He even hoped that the flesh-eating blood crows would rip his flesh to pieces, drain all the blood within him. And not even leave a piece of his bone, just like how he had threatened he would do to them before.

Let him enjoy the same torture that he had promised.

“Li Muyang, who the hell are you? What monster are you really?” Crow yelled in a stern voice. If this issue was not made clear, then he would not die peacefully.

Li Muyang smiled coldly, and walked step-by-step towards Crow.

The blood crows were frightened of Li Muyang; when they saw him coming they quickly flapped their wings and flew away.

Li Muyang looked down at Crow who was lying on the ground, and asked aloud: “Do you really want to know?”

“Tell me.” Crow looked at Li Muyang with pleading eyes and said: “Li Muyang, quickly tell me. Otherwise I will die with regret.”

An unnamed teenager defeated an assassin that’s on the list of the top assassins. This sort of result—-no, this sort of disgrace was difficult for him to bear.

“I’m——”

“What are you?” Crow asked.

“I’m not going to tell you.” Li Muyang’s showed a callous smile and his face covered with blood as he said: “The more you want to know, the more I don’t want to tell you. I want you to die with regrets; I’m going to let you die without being at peace——”

“Li Muyang——” Crow opened his eyes wide, his pupils oozing out blood. 「

He didn’t think this teenager could be so cruel, didn’t think his heart was so malicious.

Could it be that this guy is also from the same school as him? It is precisely a

cold-hearted place like the assassin school that a person who possessed such a nature would become one of the movers and shakers. Only by possessing this kind of nature would the school be ashamed of him, the' King of assassins '.

Li Muyang turned around and walked towards the location of his parents and sister.

He wanted to check on their condition, look at their bodies to see if they are severely injured.

This is the problem that he is most concerned about.

Just as Li Muyang turned and walked away, the blood crows that were flying around in the yard once again dashed over to Crow.

Seeing that one of the blood crows was about to peck at his eyes, Crow urgently reached out his hands to block them.

As a result countless blood crows landed on his arm, the skin and flesh on his arm were torn apart and devoured within seconds.

Crow extend out his arm that is dripping with blood to drive away the blood crows, but then the blood crows flew over to eat his face, his chin—-

"Cha——"

A blood crow saw that he was off guard and pecked off one of his eyeballs.

“Ah——Ah——”

Crow’s struggle was increasingly lacking in strength and his ability to defend was increasingly weak.

Crow was submerged by the blood crows within seconds.

When the blood crows flapped their wings and scattered, assassin Crow had disappeared from the world without any traces.

Just as he had said so himself– even his bones were not left behind.

As if he had never came here.

Pa—-

The courtyard gate was opened by a hook.

A man’s voice that sounded simple and honest whispered: “Young master, the door had been pried open. My brothers used to be famous thieves of Jiangnan city; there isn’t a door that they couldn’t pick in the entire Jiangnan city ——”

“They can even pick the lock in my house?” The young master asked aloud.

“Of course—-” The honest voice paused for a moment then said: “No, it is impossible. What sort of people are young master’s family? For rich and influential families, not only high-ranking military officers are guarding outside

but there's also starry sky-level experts. A trash-like him wants to enter young master's house? They will be found from 3,000 miles away and be slapped to death——"

"Just how big is Jiangnan city? Li Dalu, can you use your brain before you speak? Flattery also needs intelligence." The young master said in a dissatisfied tone.

"Yes Yes Yes. Young master is right. I'll try harder next time. I'll work hard to improve. I will make sure that young master is satisfy with my flattery—- young master, please go ahead."

During their conversation, the gate was pushed open by someone.

Yan Xiangma waved his fan as he entered through the gate. Just as his left foot had stepped in, he saw Li Muyang standing opposite of him with blood-red eyes.

"Li Muyang?"

Yan Xiangma turned around, hit Li Dalu's head with his fan and shouted: "You trash, did you not say your brothers could pick locks without being noticed? Look at the courtyard—-"

Yan Xiangma words came to a halt; he smelled a strong bloody taste.

"Close the door." Said Yan Xiangma.

"Yes, young master——"

Li Dalu and a group of brothers followed Yan Xiangma closely behind, entered through the door, and were about to shut the door.

“Get out.” Said Yan Xiangma.

“Yes, young master—-young master, who are you telling to get out? ”

“All of you get out.” Yan Xiangma said.

“Young master, let us follow you, this courtyard is somewhat strange—-” Li Dalu perceived danger, he took the lead and walked in front of Yan Xiangma in one big stride, his face staring warily at Li Muyang.

“Get out of here.” Yan Xiangma repeated again.

“Yes yes yes, we’ll all get out—-” Li Dalu bow down as he retreats. He pulled open the door and left the courtyard awkwardly with the group of younger brothers.

Yan Xiangma looked at Li Muyang, and Li Muyang stared back at Yan Xiangma.

“Originally, I wanted to kidnap you.” Said Yan Xiangma.

Li Muyand didn’t answer him, and only glared fiercely at Yan Xiangma.

His viciousness mindset could hardly be extinguished and the boiling of his blood could not settle.

He did not know the purpose of Yan Xiangma coming to his house, he was not even sure of the relationship between the assassin and Yan Xiangma—– if the assassin was sent by Yan Xiangma, then Li Muyan was prepared to fight with the whole group of people till the end.

“Can you not see me? ” Yan Xiangma put away his Beating Dragon Spine and said: “What are you doing? ”

“What are you doing here?” Li Muyang asked in a cold voice.

“I just said, I’m going to kidnap you—-” Yan Xiangma said bluntly.

“Just as I had suspected.” Li Muyang displayed a cold gaze as he slowly walked towards Yan Xiangma.

“Hey, Li Muyang, you don’t want to mess with me, if you have something to say then say it, you don’t need to be violent—-” Seeing Li Muyang’s blood-red eyes, Yan Xiangma felt guilty and said: “You don’t want to kidnap me, do you? ”

“You deserve to die—–” Said Li Muyang. “All of you should die—–”

All the bad guys who wanted to harm his family deserved to die!

“Why do we deserve to die? I just want to kidnap you for a moment? How would that deserve to die?” Yan Xiangma felt wronged. “Oh, you mean that there are others who came to kidnap you?”

His line of sight shifted towards the bloodstain and the corpses of blood crows behind Li Muyang. He revealed a shock expression and cried out in surprise: “Crow was here? ”

“He came.” Li Muyang glared intently at Yan Xiangma’s eyes, wanting to find out his relationship with Crow.

“Where is he? “Yan Xiangma flipped opened his fan, and was on the alert. He then displayed a posture that seemed like he’s about to fight as if his life depends on it. The importance of fighting against a skilled assassin like Crow can’t be emphasized. “You can wear out iron shoes after fruitless searching, and yet by sheer luck you may find what you’re after without even looking for it. He dares to attack people related to the Yan family’s, he will have to pay a heavy price—-Crow, don’t hide like a turtle; come out for your death.”

“He’s already dead.” Li Muyang said.

“——-”

035 – Can’t believe it!

Li Muyang’s face was stern and his back was straight.

His eyes were blood-red. It showed a fierceness that seemed like he would attack anyone at any second.

His clothes were stained with blood, and on his face was meat scraps and bloodstain left from when the blood crows were blown into pieces by his fist.

This is the ferocious Li Muyang, and also the Li Muyang that Yan Xiangma had never seen before.

Of course, Yan Xiangma had only met Li Muyang a few times.

Although the first time he saw Li Muyang, his impression of him was that he’s not pleasant but he’s definitely not hateful.

He was somewhat excessively affectionate, yet he possessed a smiling face that no one would be sick of.

Even when Li Muyang used just his fingers to snap off a piece of the lapis lazuli – this was the same as slapping him ruthlessly in the face, but seeing that he treated him to some chilled watermelon, he could be forgiven.

Even when his mother asked if he had took care of Li Muyang’s matter, he had intentionally covered up the truth and concealed the fact that Li Muyang possessed powerful strength—-although the main reason for him to do so was to maintain his reputation.

However, in his view, Li Muyang was not a bad person.

And not what he imagined him to be, a pretty boy that just wants to get close to his cousin Xiaoxin for accomplishing his own secret goal.

Li Muyang is not qualified to be a pretty boy.

It isn't that such a thing had not happened before but just that he had carefully handled everything cleanly.

He knew Li Muyang is deliberately hiding his strength, but he didn't expect Li Muyang to possess such remarkable power.

In the divine continent, the training of cultivators is divided into seven main realms: the Empty Valley, the High mountain, the Free Clouds, Withered Glory, Starry Sky, Astral Projection, and Dragon slayer. In each realm there are three different stages of strength: high, middle and low.

According to this classification of strength, Crow is at least in the higher stages of the Free clouds. This is much higher than Yan Xiangma's level of strength – the middle stages of the high mountain. If he was to face Crow alone, then most likely he will only escape from him. Even when against Xiaoxin cousin's guard, the 'Heart Buddha' Ning Xinhai, Crow is still able to defend himself. If Ning Xinhai was not careful when fighting against him, then Crow may have taken advantage of this and gotten the upperhand.

However, the Li Muyang in front of him, whom he happens to have met only once—-is a bad student in the eyes of teachers, a trash in the eyes of other

students, yet he was able to slaughter Crow by himself?

Yan Xiangma face stiffened with dismay, he looked warily at Li Muyang who did not say a word and asked: “You killed him? ”

“Yes.” Li Muyang answered. “I killed him. Because he was going to kill me.”

Li Muyang does not care that Crow wanted to kill him; after all, this disaster started because of him.

What he cares about most was that Crow almost killed his closest family, his father, mother and his cute little sister Li Shinian.

He is a trash, just as others have said; deep down in his heart he also somewhat acknowledges this assertion.

However, his family’s life was much more important than his own.

They were the inverted dragon’s scales [1] that he would protect no matter how great the price he had to pay.

[tl: [1] The weak part of a dragon, and also the part that no one can touch no matter what lest they face the dragon’s wrath.]

He can die because his life is not worth anything.

However, his parents can’t die, his sister can’t die.

Therefore, he did not regret killing Crow at all. He feels fortunate to be able to do so.

“You did it by yourself? ”

“By myself.” Li Muyang said.

“How did you do it? “Yan Xiangma’s heart unfolded on a magnificent scale, and looked at Li Muyang with an even more shocked expression. This is difficult for him to believe, the ordinary-looking high school student in front of him was able to kill Crow, one of the top twenty assassin of the kingdom.

Could it be that Crow did not use his Sakura Cut?

Could it be that Crow did not use his terrifying puzzling obstruction of darkness?

Did he not summon his pets, the blood crows—-wait it seems like he did summon them, the large quantities of corpse of blood crows on the ground is the best proof of this.

Li Muyang felt that this man talked a lot of rubbish. He strained his brain to think of a way to reply, then said: “He was devoured by his own crows.”

“Blood crows devouring their owner?” Yan Xiangma was astonished and said: “The blood crows will only devour their owner because they did not receive meat to eat and blood to drink after being summoned, and also when their owner is in

a extremely weak state and doesn't have the ability to defend themselves. Evil creatures like the blood crows hurt the enemy by a thousand, but they will also hurt their owners by eight hundred.. Crow was devoured by them, then that proves he did not even have the ability to defend himself at that time—-he was defeated by your hands?"

Li Muyang did not answer.

Were these words not useless?

Besides the person standing before you, who else is able to do such a thing?

Yan Xiangma also knew he was asking a stupid question. He gently waved his fan to blow away the strong bloody taste in the air. He then glanced at Li Muyang and said: "Crow is one of the top assassin in the kingdom, and also a major criminal that's wanted by the province —-Even if we had to set up traps all around Jiangnan city we must arrest him. Since he had died in your hands, you have helped Jiangnan province a lot——Cui family, Yan family and also cousin Xiaoxin all owe you a favor."

"What are you trying to say?" Li Muyang watched Yan Xiangma and asked impatiently.

He walked over to the area where his parents and sister was lying down, reached out and checked their pulse one by one.

Li Muyang had never learnt medicine before; he was actually treated as a subject for the old Taoist to teach his sister Li Shinian medicine.

However, some things can be self-taught, he knows roughly what the normal human pulse is, and he is able to determine if a person is healthy or not.

Fortunately his parent and sister had only temporarily lost consciousness and they were not under any life-threatening danger.

Seeing the concern in Li Muyang's eyes, the tension in Yan Xiangma's heart relaxed a lot.

He could see that the care and concern he had for his own family was genuine.

"You're not going to the exams?" Yan Xiangma said.

Li Muyang's face stiffened, his expression became even more distressed.

For many students, this is an extremely important day.

For Li Muyang, today is a day that will determine his future.

He and Cui Xiaoxin had made a promise to go to see the sunrise together at the West Wind university's Weiming Lake.

However, a long time had already passed, but he still hasn't even left for the exam—- most likely the first exam has already begun, right?

What should he do now?

Give up?

All the effort he invested, his promise with Cui Xiaoxin, the beautiful life that he looked forward to in the future would all disappear at this moment.

However, if he now rushed to the exam venue, then what about his family? What should he do with his father, mother and little sister Li Shinian who are still unconscious?

He cannot abandon their safety for the purpose of his own future life. If that is the case, is he still a dutiful son, a loving brother?

“You should go.” Yan Xiangma can see Li Muyang’s hesitation and said in a low voice.

Li Muyang looked at him with an incisive stare but did not reply to his words.

“Do you trust me?” Yan Xiangma’s face revealed a slight smile after much difficulty, and then amiably asked aloud.

“I don’t trust you.” Li Muyang said bluntly.

036 – My heart is too soft!

If unexpected things happen, there must be a demon behind it. If a person acted unexpectedly, there must be a dagger behind them.

Li Muyang naturally did not believe in Yan Xiangma. Likewise, Yan Xiangma did not believe Li Muyang could kill Crow alone.

Li Muyang knew that Yan Xiangma does not really like him. For a toad to think of eating a swan's meat – what would the swan's family think?

Therefore, when Yan Xiangma asked him whether to believe or not, without hesitation he replied "I don't believe you."

Yan Xiangma is feeling embarrassed and angry. As the eldest son of the Yan family, he has never been so shamefully rejected before?

Yan Xiangma pressed his lips together, his face full of mockery as he say : "You are just like a dog biting a good man because it does not realise his kind intentions.I saw you are indecisive so I suggested ways to help you out, for you to complete your examinations … since you are not willing to accept my favours, then just forget what i said."

He glanced around and noticed there were Luo Qi, Li Yan and Li Shinian lying behind him. Then he said: "Then you stay beside them and protect them well. About the test today…it does not really matter whether you take it or not as it won't make a difference, isn't that right?"

Li Muyang fell silent for a while, then scanned and evaluated Yan Xiangma's face from left to right. He finally opened his mouth to ask: "Are you really willing

…..to help me to look after my family?”

“Now I am not willing. “Yan Xiangma proudly said. I am not a servant from your family, Why should I look after your family for you?

Li Muyang became silent for a moment once more, then looked at Yan Xiangma intensively and said: “I’d really like to participate in this examination, you don’t know what it represents to me……..”

‘…..” Yan Xiangma leisurely fanned himself. Beg me, beg me. Maybe I would say yes if you beg me….

“You just said that the Cui and Yan families owed me a favor right?” Li Muyang said in a hoarse voice.

Yan Xiangma had a bad premonition, but he could not deny what he had just said, so he unashamedly said: “I did say that previously.”

“ Then, is it possible…for you to repay this favor now? Li Muyang looked at Yan Xiangma with sincerity, and said: “Based on the fact that I have aided the Cui and the Yan family, could you help me to look after my family? I only need you to do this for a brief moment, I shall come straight back once my examination is over.”

“Li Muyang…..”Yan Xiangma wanted to get angry but did not understand the reason behind this emotion. Was this not the way that I originally wanted to negotiate with him?

“You don’t agree ?”

“It is not that I don’t agree…” Yan Xiangma said “It is just…”

“So the effort and contribution of killing Crow can’t even exchange for such a small request ?”

“…..Fine then. “ Yan Xiangma said it with a bitter voice.

Li Muyang carried Li Shinian back to the living room, and carried mother Luo Qi, back in too.

When he went back out to help father Li Yan, he had already opened his eyes as he regained consciousness. His body was badly wounded, he could not regain his energy in such a short time.

“Muyang, are you ok? Li Yan asked swiftly

°

“Dad, I am ok…” Li Muyang’s lips wanted to form a grim, but when he laughed with his face covered in blood, he was like an Asura from hell.

“ Your mother, and Shinian…are they ok?”

“Dad, don’t worry, they are fine—–” Li Muyang pointed to the bodies lying not far from here, his mother Luo Qi and his sister Shinian then said:” They are temporarily unconscious because of the poisonous smoke, they will regain consciousness soon.”

“That is great.” Li Yan could only relax at that moment. His eyes were red as he

looked at Li Muyang and said: I am useless, I caused your all sufferings."

"Dad, we are okay. As long as the whole family is safe, then all is well."

"En. As long as everyone is safe." Li Yan patted Li Muyang' shoulder, then it suddenly dawned on him. He rushed to ask "Muyang, it is your high school examinations today…go quickly, you must not be late."

"Dad, I'm prepared to——"

"It has most likely already started right now. Don't say anymore, quickly go run."

"But how about you all…"

"I've already awoken, nothing will happen. "Li Yan knows how crucial this examination was to his son, and he had already witness his son studying diligently days and nights for the last month. He continued on: "Muyang, don't delay now. Otherwise, when your mother awakes, it would really upset her. You know how much she cares about you doing this examination."

"Dad, I"ve already asked….."Li Muyang glanced at Yan Xiangma who was standing in the living room, browsing the surroundings, then said :"I have already asked cousin Xiangma to help to look after you all, he is the cousin of Xiaoxin. I will come straight back after the test."

"Everything is fine, go." Li Yan kept rushing him.

When Li Muyang was about to leave, Yan Xiangma coldly glanced at him, and

said: “If I was you, I would go to wash myself first and changed to a clean clothes first, otherwise, with the look on you now, it will be impossible for you to enter the examination hall——”

Li Muyang agreed with this statement in his heart. If he goes to the school in the state he was in right now without washing and changing, people would think that he had not come to sit the test, but rather come and cause troubles.

Li Muyang dashed upstairs, rushing into the bathroom to wash his face. He also changed into a clean set of clothes, then ran to pick up the school bag from where he had dropped it in the yard, then rushed away towards the outside.

Li Dalu and the other who were standing at the main road saw Li Muyang carrying a school bag running towards them. Their first reaction was to block him.

They remembered their mission today, was to prevent this guy breaking through and going to sit the examination…they were ready and prepared already. They would cover him with a rucksack and take him away.

‘Let him go.” When the gang was about to take action, Yan Xiangma flipped his fan as he walked over, giving a new order.

“Young master…” Li Dalu looked bamboozled as he stared at his young master.

“He will not pass anyway.” Yan Xiangma did not like Li Dalu’s doubtful look, and hence replied in such a blunt manner.

“Yes yes yes, young master is able to devise a strategy in the blink of an eye and from thousands of miles away…….” Li Dalu waved hand to tell people to let

Li Muyang pass.

Li Muyang looked at Yan Xiangma gratefully, grabbed the school bag and ran towards the school.

Yan Xiangma was looking Li Muyang's back and sighed slightly, then said: "The more diligent you are now, the more regretful you will be afterward…The most important thing in life is that you must not fail in the areas you work the hardest in."

"Yes yes yes, young master is right…"

Snap—-

Li Dalu's head suffered from the metal hand fan

Yan Xiangma brought a group of little brothers with him back to the courtyard, then said: " Clean up the courtyard. I hate dirtiness, and I wish for no traces to remain behind."

"Yes, young master." Li Dalu raised his hand, the brothers he brought back wearing black clothing began tidying up. The corpse of Crow had been buried, the blood stains had been scraped off. Even the blood stains on the wall had been cleaned thoroughly.

" About the things that happened today, it all happened because of us. Do you all understand?" Yan Xiangma scanned around, and said with a cold voice. "If anyone of you spread a word about this, then you can ask your family to pick up your dead body from the forest."

“Young master, you mean to say…we will take credit for this ourselves?” Li Dalu’s eyes lit up, grinning as he asked this question.

“Credit?” What do we want the credit for?”Yan Xiangma had a harsh expresssion as he scolded him. “But, this credit cannot be placed on Li Muyang’s head.”

“That’s right, we cannot let him get such a great benefit…..Crow is an important wanted criminal. The reward from the city lord’s office are three thousand gold coins.”

“Moron.” “Yan Xiangma stared at him like staring at scrap metal that could not become steel no matter what. Then he said: “Do you think I want the credit because of the money? Why don’t you use your pig brain to think it thoroughly, if this credit is given to Li Muyang, what will other people think? What kind of person is Li Muyang, I am afraid there will be lots people asking the same question ? Besides, what about the assassin organisation, and the mastermind behind Crow…Do you think they will let Li Muyang to get away? If they know Li Muyang killed Crow, his family will encounter greater danger.”

“Understood”. Li Dalu looked as if he was fully enlightened. “But, young master, did we not want to kidnap him? Why are we trying to protect him right now then?”

Yan Xiangma hesitated a little while, gently sighed then said: “Because my heart is too soft.”

“__ __”

Yan Xiangma returned to the living room, saw Li Shinian and Luo Qi still lying unconscious.

Li Dalu stood behind Yan Xiangma, and saw the direction in why Yan Xiangma was placing his attention. His thoughts moving like lightning, he sycophantically said: “Young master, this young lady is really beautiful, if you fancy her…”

Pak—-

Li Dalu’s head was struck once again.

Li Dalu realised he said the wrong thing, and quickly changed his words: “Naturally, our young master is handsome and radiant. He ertainly will not be attracted to such common and vulgar beauty…”

Pak——-

Li Dalu’s head was struck yet again.

Li Dalu was nearly about to cry. He said: “Young master, is this young lady beautiful or not?Can you please tell me clearly?”

“Sshh…” Yan Xiangma made a hand gesture, and said “ Don’t disturb this beautiful lady.”

“——-”

Li Yan was sitting at a corner, angrily stared at those two fools gibbering rubbish.

He was holding a fist really tight with one hand, while holding a cup with the other that he had just picked up from the table. He kept staring at those two fools to see if they were up to anything, if so the cup in his hand would fly across the room to smash their brains out.

——

——

When Li Muyang arrived the examination hall, the gate was already closed with guards outside.

Countless students' parents patiently waiting outside. They even breathed gently, in case they might disturb the examination progress.

Li Muyang showed his entrance pass to the the guards on the two side of the gate: "I am a candidate, I am late because of personal reasons, please let me in."

"The test is already in progress, no one is allowed once the gate is closed. You had better go home." The guard disdainfully looked at Li Muyang and said: "How can you be late for such important test, students like you cannot get any good results even if you enter. You will disturb others answering the questions if you go in —Just go home, if you come back earlier for the next exam, you might still have a chance."

"Being absent for such an important subject's examination, even if you get full marks on the other subjects, it is most likely that you won't be able to attend a

good school ? If I was you, I would give up right now…” The other guard said in a voice rejoicing in his predicament..

“Why do you say that?” A sharp voice came from behind Li Muyang.

037 – Detoxifying concoction!

One problem after another!

As he’s about to leave the house he encountered Crow, and after getting rid of Crow he came across Xiangma. After much difficulty he finally arrived at the door of the entrance exam, but then two guards stopped him and won’t let him through——

Li Muyang feels his life was full of difficulties; in his previous life did he anger the gods? There were many twists and turns along the way and he was almost killed.

Just as Li Muyang was about to beg the two guards to let him in, he heard a voice shouting from behind: “What did you say? ”

Li Muyang turned around and saw Zhao Mingzhu wearing all black and with serious expression as she walked rapidly towards his direction.

Zhao Mingzhu angrily stomped in front of Li Muyang, looked at him with a biting cold glare and said: “Li Muyang, do you even have a little sense of time? What day is it today? Today is the day of the exams, it is the day when thousands of horses and men cross over the bridge by themselves, a dividing line that will determine your future life——you’re late on the first day of the exam, what are you thinking? Have you ever thought about taking responsibility for your own future?”

“Miss Zhao——” Li Muyang’s fist clenched tight, and his face revealed a distressed expression. He can’t explain what he had experienced to others, but this does not mean that there is no resentment in his heart.

As long as there is a chance, he does not wish to miss it. Just as he's aware that he doesn't have to sleep constantly every day, just as he discovered that he is capable of studying, he worked harder than anyone else and desperately put in more effort than anyone else. He gets up at five o'clock in the morning to study, and looks through exam paper till 12 o'clock at night. Apart from his three meals a day and his short time of sleep, he devoted all his time into studying.

However, in the eyes of Zhao Mingzhu, was he just a bad student who doesn't care about his own life?

When you had tried your best, when you had exerted your mind and achieved some success, but people just merely glance at you contemptuously and say 'that's nothing'—that feeling is much more difficult to bear than being poured a bucket of cold water in the winter.

Freezing coldness that penetrates to the bone!

"Li Muyang——" Zhao Mingzhu pushed up the glasses on her nose, and her eyes looked pensively at the student in front of her. Since he had last packed his bags and left, this is the first time Zhao Mingzhu saw him. She does not understand this student, there's a discrepancy between him now and what she knew of him before. "I know you want to prove yourself, I also know you work extremely hard——your mother had came to school looking for me, she told me how much time you spend on studying every day. I admit it, because of your laziness and your habit of sleeping in class I was prejudiced against you. But this time, make sure you do a good job—-make us drop our eyes in astonishment, make each person that knows you look at you with a new level of respect."

"Miss Zhao——" Li Muyang relaxed his fist, eased his muscles and looked at

Zhao Mingzhu with a surprise and grateful expression. He had no idea that he would see Zhao Mingzhu at this place and time, and he even more did not expect that Zhao Mingzhu would come over and say this to him.

His heart felt soft and his body was filled with warmth, this feeling of being recognised—-is indeed happy.

Zhao Mingzhu turned around to face the two guards and said: “Open the door for this candidate.”

“No, we have rules, after this time we cannot let people in—–”

Zhao Mingzhu pulled out a black identification from her pocket and said to the two guards: “I’m a member of Jiangnan City’s Executive Committee of the University Entrance Examination, I will complain to the Committee that the two of you are deliberately making things difficult for this student, which will affect the student’s mood for the exam and also destroy this student’s future—–”

“We have not done such a thing?”

“Do you still deny that? I just heard you making cutting remarks about this student, you ridicule him that he won’t be accepted into a good school, and you advised him to give up as soon as possible—–”

The two guards looked at each other, the tall and thin guard was quick-witted and hurriedly ran over to unlock the door and said smilingly: “Let the child go and sit his exam, we can slowly clear up the misunderstanding we have on this side, but the exams doesn’t not wait for anyone, we don’t dare to waste this student’s valuable time—–”

Zhao Mingzhu took a glance at Li Muyang and then gestured him to hurry inside.

Li Muyang bowed at Zhao Mingzhu and said: “Miss Zhao, thank you.”

Zhao Mingzhu waved, but did not say anything else.

“This student is one of your students?” The tall and thin guard said to please her: “One glance and you know he’s a good student. He must be able to pass the exams with outstanding results.”

Zhao Mingzhu raised her head and looked at the distant running silhouette of Li Muyang and said: “Every student who’s hard-working and unwilling to give up, are all good students.”

When Li Muyang arrived at the examination room, many students are already half way through their exam paper.

The invigilator looked at him with his eyebrows twitched and an unsatisfied expression, but still pulled out an exam paper from the platform and handed it to Li Muyang.

Li Muyang smiled at the invigilator, and then walked towards his exam table in light steps.

Li Muyang flipped open the paper, but did not immediately answer.

He opened his pencil case and tidied his papers and pens while calming himself

down.

If it wasn't for what he had experienced, then most likely he won't even have looked forward to the exams at all.

At this moment what kind of attitude should he have to deal with this exam?

Even if he had come in, he's merely going to hold onto the exam paper and then taking a long nap and nothing more.

However, the Li Muyang today is not the same as the previous Li Muyang.

Even though he went through so many things, even though he only has half of the examination time of others, but he is much stronger than before——

He is no longer the same Li Muyang.

Li Muyang removed the pencil cap and wrote down his name seriously in the name column: Li Muyang.

————

——————-

As Li Shinian woke up, the first thing she saw was a man's eye looking at her as if she were the flames herself.

Li Shinian jumped up and screamed aloud at the strange man: “Who are you? Where is this place? ”

“Young lady, you’re awake? This is your house, I’m Yan Xiangma.” Yan Xiangma said smilingly. He waved his hand and said: “Hurry and prepare the detoxifying decoction for the young lady. You have been poisoned, even if you’re awake now, but most likely inside your body there are still toxic residues—-and you will need a detoxifying decoction to completely eliminate all the toxins in your body. ”

“Yes.” Li Dalu answered instantly and then personally went into the kitchen and brought out a bowl of the decoction.

Li Dalu carried the herbal soup over to Li Shinian, looked at her and said: “Young lady, please drink the soup.”

Yan Xiangma gently coughed twice.

And Li Dalu quickly turned around and asked: “Young master, you’re not feeling well? Could it be that you’re also poisoned by the smoke of the puzzling darkness? ”

As he spoke, he carried the soup over and said: “Young master, you drink this bowl of decoction first, otherwise—-your body will be severely poisoned.”

Yan Xiangma had already decided secretly in his mind, later he will stuff this idiot into a sack and feed him to the beasts in the forest.

Yan Xiangma glanced ferociously at Li Dalu, then put away his fan into his

sleeve and removed the bowl of decoction from the tray and said: “Miss, it’s difficult for you to move freely so let me feed you the soup——”

“Go away.” Li Yan and Li Shinian yelled at the same time.

Li Yan shouted to Li Shinian: “Shinian, don’t drink their decoction.”

Li Shinian saw from a distance that father Li Yan was leaning back and urgently asked: “Dad, are you all right? Are you hurt? Where’s mum—-is mum alright? “

“I’m fine, mum is fine too—-don’t drink his soup.” Li Yan once again told her aloud. “This person is of a dubious background.”

“Dad, I know.” Li Shinian’s stared warily at Yan Xiangma with an adorable face that says ‘I know you’re a bad guy, you don’t need to hide it’.

“I have repeatedly explained, I am Jiangnan’s city’s lord Yan Bolai’s son Yan Xiangma, Cui Xiaoxin’s cousin, and also Li Muyang’s——good brother. Li Muyang had entrusted me to take care of you at this critical moment; I have his utmost trust. Otherwise, how would he trust me and leave you guys in my care before heading over to the exam?” Yan Xiangma looked at Li Shinian as he earnestly explained.

“Hmmm——” Li Shinian hummed coldly, reached out her hand and clenched into a fist. Fortunately, her strength is recovering little at a time. She without delay used the transporting qi move that her shifu had taught her to settle her qi and speed up the recovery process. If the hooligans dared to attack, then she will throw out her fist——

“You guys have been poisoned by Crow’s puzzling obstruction and must use decoction to completely remove the toxins in your body, or otherwise there will be repercussions——I am truly doing this for your health and don’t have any bad intentions at all. You have to believe me, don’t worry and drink the decoction—-I swear on my integrity there is absolutely no poison or other drugs added. I, Yan Xiangma is a one of the five good youths of Jiangnan City, I absolutely would not do such a despicable thing——”

“Your integrity? I don’t even know you, how do I know if you have integrity? ”

“Young lady has such intelligence at such a young age, this is something that I admire greatly—-” Yan Xiangma picked up the bowl of decoction and said: “Since young lady you don’t believe in my character, then in that case let Xiagma be an example.”

As he spoke, he raised his head and drank the whole bowl of dark decoction into his stomach.

Yan Xiangma showed the emptied bowl to Li Yan and Li Shinian and said: “Please take a look, I have drank all the decoction and I, Xiangma does not—-”

Gudu—-

A loud and clear noise sounded from Yan Xiangma’s stomach.

Yan Xiangma turned around to face Li Dalu and said: “What you boiled is detoxifying decoction, right?”

“Young master, it is indeed detoxifying decoction.”

“My stomach feels—-somewhat uncomfortable?”

Li Dalu grinned and said: “Young master no need to panic, that is the effect of the decoction—-it is right now detoxifying young master’s body. ”

“Detox?”

“Yes.” Li Dalu replied with a smile: “It’s a powerful detoxification. You only have to empty out all the faeces in your body ——young master, what’s going on with you? Your face doesn’t look too good.”

“Where’s the toilet?” Yan Xiangma asked while gritting his teeth.

“＿＿＿”

038 – Strange Constellation!

Chen Jin was a senior invigilator; so seeing students arriving late in the middle of the exam is not uncommon for him. For the majority of these students, their family is wealthy and their background is deep, but they're ignorant and incompetent. They could be classified into the category of people that just are their whole life, waiting to die.

They are asked or forced by their family to enter the examination hall, and then they would pick up an exam paper and endure till the end of each exam.

To those students, exams are a torment, and seeing such students is also a torment for Chen Jin.

They don't understand and they can't answer questions, so why waste time by coming here into the examination hall?

Could it be that they fantasise that all of a sudden they would gain a sea of wisdom or that the teacher who writes the questions have a mental lapse and write simple and childish questions so people with their IQ can easily answer it?

In the eyes of Chen Jin, Li Muyang belongs to the type of student that has given up and stopped bothering, yet had no choice but to come.

Just as he thought, after taking the papers and walking back to his seat he sat there in a daze.

"Hmm, he began to play with his pencil case—-just like those former students __"

“He’s removing the pen cap—-hehe——it would be best if there is cheat notes hidden in his pencil cap, in that case I won’t let you off easily—”

“Ah, he’s beginning to answer——”

————

Very soon though the mocking smile on Chen Jin’s face slowly disappeared.

Because he noticed something very strange, since Li Muyang had sat down and started answering, his arm has not stopped moving.

He did not look around like the other candidates, nor did he pretend to answer by falsely moving about his pen and constantly glancing around for an opportunity to copy someone else.

When he occasionally raised his head, it was just to stretch his muscles and bones.

Even if his steel tip pauses, he looks as if he’s in deep thought.

He really is answering questions, and is also answering smoothly.

Chen Jin is full of curiosity about this student, could it be that he had misunderstood him?

He was prepared to go and investigate himself, to see whether he had

misunderstood him before.

In order to not seem so obvious, Chen Jin first started to inspect from the right-hand side of the classroom. Seeing that the invigilator had walked down from the stage, all students lowered their head even more and exerted many efforts to display a righteous face saying ‘I did not copy someone else.’

Chen Jin moved from the right to the left, and then his footstep stopped slightly just behind Li Muyang.

“Hmm, the words are well-written, the questions are also nearly done—-”

This was the first reaction that Chen Jin has towards Li Muyang.

But very soon he noticed a strange thing.

Li Muyang’s answers had no errors at all, each of the questions that he answered was correct.

At the very least, the questions that he had carefully checked possessed no errors at all. Every question is answered perfectly.

It was not just memorising the model answer, but there is real insight and also the answers were arranged and summarised up properly.

Chen Jin was astonished, to be able to do that, the way he dealt with each question is similar to dismembering an ox as skillfully as a butcher. This is something that only the best students in the school can do.

“How could he be late?” Chen Jin thought to himself, his impression towards Li Muyang improved drastically and he did not doubt him anymore. “Why would a good student be late? I hope there is enough time for him.”

“Uh—-what is it?” Chen Jin saw that Li Muyang had stopped writing.

He followed his pen and looked across, this was a multiple-choice question. The topic is not too difficult, just somewhat uncommon. And also the four answers given are all very similar so it was confusing.

“Such a question, why can’t you answer it? “Chen Jin felt this was a pity in his heart. “Think, think about it, and you should be able to find the rule—-”

“Eh, this kid has given up—-he jumped to the next question and started answering. What an impatient guy, but his approach is correct. After all, he arrived extremely late; compared to other students, too much time have already been wasted—-”

Chen Jin sighed slightly and then walked towards the stage.

He walked a few steps, but then he could not help but walk back.

Chen Jin stood beside Li Muyang, stretched out a finger pointing at the multiple-choice question that he had skipped and then gently coughed twice.

Li Muyang raised his head to take a look and Chen Jin looked at him with no expression at all.

Li Muyang pondered for a moment and then suddenly understood. He looked over the question again and was pleasantly surprised as he wrote out the second answer.

Chen Jin stepped away to leave, scolding himself in his mind over his improper actions: “Damn my Virgo constellation.”

Luckily Li Muyang did not encounter too many problems.

When he finally finished answering the final big question, the bell indicating the end of the exam just rang.

He didn’t have any time to check over his answers.

However, Cui Xiaoxin had already spoke to him about this, as long as he is able to answer the question, then almost everything is a standard answer—-because the time he spent studying wasn’t much, so either he doesn’t know it or if he knows it the answers will be correct. Those leading questions were not a problem for him.

Li Muyang once again checked the name and other identification information, and sat in the same place until the invigilators collected the papers.

When Chen Jin was at Li Muyang’s side, he looked at him with a pensive glance, collected the papers and moved on to the next person.

Just as Li Muyang walked out of the classroom, all candidates from each exam

hall gathered in the courtyard of the examination venue.

“Li Muyang——” Cui Xiaoxin who was wearing a long white dress and a dragonfly hair clip on the top of her long hair stood behind him and asked in a sweet voice: “How did you find the exam? ”

“I thought it was okay, I answered all the questions.” Li Muyang nodded at Cui Xiaoxin and said: “I came late, so I had no time to check over. I hope I didn’t get too many of the questions wrong.”

“You arrived late?” Cui Xiaoxin is exceptionally intelligent, she instantly detected the flaws in Li Muyang’s words and asked: “Did something happened? ”

“Nothing.” Li Muyang shook his head. He didn’t want to tell Cui Xiaoxin that assassin Crow changed his target and came to his house to seek revenge, if it’s like that then she would worry about him. Anyway, since the issue is now resolved, why make someone else worry?

Cui Xiaoxin saw the concern within Li Muyang’s eyes; she knew what he was worried about. But Li Muyang won’t tell her so she doesn’t want to ask too much details: “If there is anything you need, don’t hesitate to ask me——”

“I will not hesitate to ask you.” Li Muyang smiled as he nodded.

“Well. Then, please continue to do your best.” Cui Xiaoxin held out her fist in front of Li Muyang and made a cheering gesture.

“You too.” Li Muyang said with a smile. “I know you’re awesome—-there wouldn’t be any questions that you find difficult—-so, we shall meet at Weiming

Lake.”

“We certainly will.” Cui Xiaoxin said in a firm voice.

After a 20-minute break, the second exam began.

Li Muyang and Cui Xiaoxin did not sit the exam in the same hall. After they encouraged each other, they once again separated to fight for their future.

——————

——————

The two exams had finished; Li Muyang did not take notice of anyone else and directly ran towards the direction of his house in big strides.

Cui Xiaoxin passed forward her papers; originally she wanted to have lunch with Li Muyang at somewhere close to the exam hall. Many students did not go home at noon; instead they stayed somewhere close to the exam hall to eat something good.

She sat in the corner of the exam venue under a tree reading a novel, seeing Li Muyang coming out from the examination room, she was about to call his name, but noticed that Li Muyang’s eyes were fixed straight ahead and had ran into the far distance already.

Cui Xiaoxin looked puzzled, closed the book and walked towards the outside.

Ning Xinhai appeared behind Cui Xiaoxin and said politely: “Miss, the car is in front, are we going back?”

“Let’s go back.” Cui Xiaoxin said aloud.

“Yes, Miss.” Ning Xinhai answered.

The car had droved far away already, but Cui Xiaoxin was still thinking about the concern she saw in Li Muyang’s eyes, which also seemed like he’s hiding something.

“Uncle Ning—-” Cui Xiaoxin suddenly said aloud: “Go to HuBu Lane.”

“Yes, Miss.” Ning Xinhai face was expressionless as he commanded the driver to turn around.

Li Muyang pulled open the gate and ran directly into the living room, seeing the pale complexion and weak body of Yan Xiangma sitting there moaning incessantly, he jumped up and said: “There was another assassin attack?”

If an assassin did not attack, then how did Yan Xiangma, who was still healthy and active when he left and who could use a fan to cut the lapis tabletop into pieces, become like this?

“More frightening than being attacked by an assassin—-” Yan Xiangma answered in an extremely weak voice. “I drank a bowl of decoction.”

Li Muyang walked to the front of Li Shinian, reached out his hand and checked

her pulse, and asked: “How do you feel?”

“I feel a lot better.” Li Shinian smiled happily as she looked at Yan Xiangma and said: “This idiot drank a bowl of laxative——”

“I have explained several times, it is not a laxative, it’s a cure——” Yan Xiangma was almost driven mad. He looked at Li Muyang and said: “You come and judge this– they have been poisoned by the smoke of the puzzling obstruction. Out of kindness I told people to make a decoction for their detoxification. As a result they suspected that I have other intentions and that I might have poisoned the decoction——Am I, Yan Xiangma that sort of person? In order to prove to them that I have not added anything, I drank the whole bowl of decoction—-”

After checking his parent’s condition, Li Muyang was completely at ease, and a rare happy smile surfaced on his face.

Even when he’s sitting his test, he was constantly worried about the safety of his parents and sister. Now the test was over and his family is healthy, to him there is nothing happier than this.

Li Muyang went over to Yan Xiangma’s side, after hearing him explain in a hoarse voice and without any strength, he asked: “And then you’ve been poisoned?”

“I’ve said already, this is not a poison, it is laxative—- to detoxify the body. Detoxification –do you understand it or not?” Yan Xiangma originally thought Li Muyang would understand what he meant, and did not expect Li Muyang to suspect him of poisoning the decoction.

Yan Xiangma now just wants to cry but no tears flowed down. If he had known about this earlier, there was no need to seek pain for himself and set up such a strenuous and unrewarding rotten show?

039 – The heart of a wolf and the lungs of a dog!

“I believe in you.” Li Muyang said.

Although Yan Xiangma’s words and actions were exaggerated but there was sophistication in his heart.

This was Li Muyang’s perception of him.

Moreover, through the last interaction Li Muyang had with him, he felt that this person is not a bad person. At least for now it seems he’s not that bad—-otherwise, their first meeting would not have ended in such a friendly way.

With his identity as the young master of the city’s lord, what high-level master can’t he hire? What kind of things can’t he do?

Li Muyang did show off his move and broke the lapis lazuli, but that was absolutely not to scare off Yan Xiangma. Li Muyang does not know what a real high-level master is, but it is clear that he himself could not be compared to the guy around Cui Xiaoxin who can emit rays of sunlight.

This was the reason for Li Muyang to believe in Yan Xiangma and entrusted him to take care of his family. If Li Muyang had a bad impression of him, he wouldn’t leave his family in his hands. He rather not sit the exam and not attend West Wind University then do such a thing.

“What?” Yan Xiangma stumbled, looked at him and asked: “What do you

mean? You believe me? Believe me that this is not a laxative?”

“I believe you won’t hurt my family.” Li Muyang said with a smile. He opened his mouth and smiled, his smile possessed typical characteristics of youths: clean and full of energy. Compared to his red eyes and vicious tendency before, the difference is like the sky and the earth. “Otherwise, I would not have requested you to take care of them——”

“You did not request, you required my help——” Yan Xiangma said snappily. He felt that he did poorly in his previous negotiations, he was obviously occupying the winning position, then why in the end was he coerced into helping?” But what I said is the truth, it is indeed a laxative——no, it really is a cure, it’s a detoxification. It contains extracts of sungrass in it.”

Li Muyang nodded and said: “I know. Is there still more of the decoction?”

“There is. There’s a large pot of it, apart from the big bowl that young master drank, the rest is still simmering on the stove.” Li Dalu added.

“——” Yan Xiangma glared at Li Dalu with infinite resentment,

“Thank you.” Li Muyang expressed his thanks to Li Dalu and then went into the kitchen and poured two bowls of decoction into the rice bowls, one bowl for father and another for Li Shinian.

Li Shinian desperately shook her head while yelling: “I won’t drink it. It’s dark and it’s bitter, also——it causes diarrhoea.”

“You have to drink it.” Li Muyang looked at her with incomparable tenderness

and said in a gentle voice: “There is poison smoke inside your body, you must be get rid of it. Otherwise it will be bad for your health—-even if it’s not life threatening, who knows what bad effects it can have on the your internal organs?”

Li Shinian still continued shaking her head, she was most afraid of bitterness.

Therefore, Li Muyang pinched her nose and forced the bowl of decoction into her mouth.

After drinking the medicine, Li Shinian covered her mouth while crying out loud and said angrily: “Li Muyang, you’re annoying, it’s bitter, it’s so bitter—-“

Li Muyang placed the empty bowl aside and said: “If I were you, I’d immediately go back to your room.”

Li Shinian was exceptionally intelligent, after taking a glimpse of Yan Xiangma, she immediately got up and ran back to her room.

Li Muyang shook his head while laughing; this sister really made him hurt to the bones.

Yan Xiangma watched the shadow of Li Shinian running away in a daze, then finally cleared his mind after a while and walked over to Li Muyang and asked: “Li Muyang, Shinian is your sister?”

“Yes.” Li Muyang nodded. Seeing Yan Xiangma with a face full of expectation, he looked at him warily and said: “Why did you ask? ”

“You two are not siblings related by blood, right?” Yan Xiangma said.

Hearing Yan Xiangma words, Li Yan who was drinking the decoction almost choked to death.

His face stared indignantly at Yan Xiangma and angrily shouted: “Yan Xiangma, what are you talking about? Li Muyang and Li Shinian were born of the same mother, they are siblings related by blood, you don’t know anything so don’t talk rubbish——”

Yan Xiangma chuckled and said to Li Yan as apology: “I didn’t mean to say such a thing, it’s just that——Li Muyang and Li Shinian looks so different.”

He carefully looked inspected at Li Muyang and said: “I can’t help but think if they both went out together——”

“Wherever they go, they are still brother and sister.” Li Yan bluntly interrupted Yan Xiangma.

Li Muyang glanced at Yan Xiangma telling him to stop continuing with this topic. He knows that his father doesn’t like to hear others suspecting that him and Li Shinian are not siblings. When they went shopping when they were small, seeing such a delicate little girl was his sister, other people began wondering if Li Shinian was adopted. Whenever this happened father’s mood became especially bad, in contrast mother is gentler, she’d smile at people and explain that her eldest son was ill when he was young so his body condition is not too good.

Li Yan has the body of a cultivator, although his level is not high but his years of hard training means that the physical condition of his body is better than ordinary people. Li Shinian has been training ‘art of breaking body’ with her shifu from a very small age. Although she doesn’t look strong, but she has perseverance and she’s also intelligent, which can be considered as a small foundation.

Luo Qi’s body was the most weak, and thus she’s the last to regain consciousness.

The first thing she did when she opened her eyes was to look for Li Muyang’s figure. Seeing Li Muyang standing by her side, she was on the verge of tears and held Li Muyang tightly while asking: “Muyang, are you alright? Are you hurt anywhere? Where’s the bad guy—-where did he go? Where’s your dad and sister? Are they fine?”

“Mum, they’re fine.” Li Muyang hugged his mother tightly and said smilingly: “Dad and sister are both fine, our family is fine.”

“Great. That’s great—–” Luo Qi’s eyes were brimming with tears as she hugged Li Muyang tightly, unwilling to let go.

Only those who have experienced separation between loved ones in life and death can be able to appreciate how precious life is.

After Li Muyang calmed down his mother’s emotions and after she drank a bowl of detoxifying decoction, at last the whole family is all arranged properly.

Li Muyang came close to Yan Xiangma and said with a face filled with

gratitude: “Yan young master, thank you for helping me take care of my family, your kindness -I will keep it in mind. If there’s a chance in the future, I will definitely return this favour——“

“Too polite. Too polite.” Yan Xiangma said while smiling and waving: “We are both young people, you’re also my cousin Xiaoxin’s classmate, we are family. Don’t call me what ‘Yan young master’, that’s for outsiders to call me——just call me older cousin just like before.”

“Okay, older cousin——“

“Yes, that’s right. Yes, I’ll go upstairs to check on Li Shinian’s condition. After taking the medicine, I fear the stomach will make some noises for some time; I also have some Taoist pills with me—-”

Yan Xiangma has not finished talking but was already headed upstairs.

“Yan Xiangma, stop right there——” Li Muyang shouted loudly from behind.

“I just want to see——-“

“No.” Li Muyang arbitrarily obstructed Yan Xiangma.

“Then let me stand at the doorway to express my concern? ”

“No.”

“I just helped you——-”

“I said I would return the favour in the future.”

“Can I not take a little interest in the meantime?”

“No.”

“Li Muyang you have the heart of a wolf and the lungs of a dog [1]——–“

[tl: [1] Heartless and ungrateful.]

“Yan Xiangma, you’re greedy and lascivious———”

————

Cui Xiaoxin pushed open the door into the courtyard exactly at the time of Li Muyang and Yan Xiangma staring intently at each other with their big and small eyes, both refusing to step back.

Her long eyelashes blinked and her mouth raised slightly upwards, displaying a cute and attractive curve, and said: “Did we enter into the zoo? ”

“————”

040 – First signs of the extraordinary!

Because of the touch of worry she saw within Li Muyang's eyes, Cui Xiaoxin decided to head over to the Li family in the end.

Through their long time of hanging out together, she understands Li Muyang's character. Although he seems to be laughing all day, but in fact, he's attentive and has the courage to take on responsibility. He's always talking about how his sister took care of him when he was young, but Cui Xiaoxin could clearly feel it the love and care he spoiled on his sister.

She had agreed to help Li Muyang with his studying, but with her personality she actually prefers being in a quiet private teahouse or somewhere else. She does not like to come into contact with other people.

The reason for her to treat the Li family as an exception and willing to come over to the Li Family every day was because she liked the atmosphere in the Li family. She liked seeing Li Shinian using various mischievous ways to bully Li Muyang, she also liked seeing Li Muyang looking at her helplessly after being bullied by Li Shinian.

Li Muyang doesn't want to trouble others. Even if he had saved her life, he was still very grateful for Xiaoxin coming everyday to help him study

Perhaps, this can be considered as one of the little dim starlights in his life.

And because of this reason, Cui Xiaoxin is even more worried that something had happened to Li Muyang and he was not willing to tell her anything.

The entrance examination is not over yet. Tomorrow will be the exams of the

two most important subjects. She does not want Li Muyang to be disturbed by some ordinary affairs at this critical moment.

If she was able to help, she was very willing to reach out her hand to give her assistance.

Li Muyang is unaware what her identity was but she's very clear about herself.

The things she's capable of doing would most likely shock the entire Jiangnan city.

"Why did you come?"

Seeing Cui Xiaoxin standing in the doorway, Li Muyang and Yan Xiangma asked in unison.

Cui Xiaoxin once again blinked her eyes, pursed her lips chuckling, and asked: "Your minds are connected? "

Yan Xiangma fiercely glanced at Li Muyang then went over to Cui Xiaoxin and asked: "Cousin, why are you here? You did not go home for lunch?"

"Cousin can come, but I can't come?" Cui Xiaoxin looked at Yan Xiangma with suspicion, thinking to herself what if Li Muyang's worry was because of Yan Xiangma. While she's busy with the exams, he deliberately came to the Li family to cause trouble.

She just saw Yan Xiangma's group of guards outside, if Yan Xiangma purpose

of coming here is to seperate herself and Li Muyang, then she made the right decision in coming here today.

“How could that be?” Yan Xiangma face showed a gentle smile and said: “I can come, then of course cousin can also come. I know that cousin and Li Muyang are good friends; it’s a good thing for classmates to visit each other, right? When I was studying I also had some very good friends.”

Cui Xiaoxin looked shocked as she pensively watched Yan Xiangma and said: “So, cousin what is the reason for you to suddenly come here?”

Cui Xiaoxin is aware that her aunt knows her whereabouts like the back of her hand, and she’s even more clear of their attitude towards her coming to tutor Li Muyang.

Last time she went back, Xiangma cousin deliberately pointed out that she comes over here to tutor Li Muyang and aunt explicitly proposed to use some gifts to repay the kindness of Li Muyang saving her——-and then everyone would not be in contact with each other again after paying Li Muyang off.

Why would wealthy families wish to have anything to do with ordinary people?

Of course, they were more afraid that she has feelings for Li Muyang——this is indeed very absurd. Simply because she talks more to one of the boys in the school, they concluded that she likes him?

How can this be?

However, what is wrong with Yan Xiangma today? He said classmates should

visit each other—-from his expression it also doesn't seem like he's pretending.

"I came to see Li Muyang." Yan Xiangma said smilingly: "During cousin's attack last time, it was all thanks to Li Muyang student for saving your life——this kindness the Cui family and Yan family had always kept it in mind. Since these few days I have some spare time, so I came to see Li Muyang——ha ha ha, but I didn't expect us to get on so well, becoming fast friends at first sight."

Cui Xiaoxin was even more concerned, she watched Yan Xiangma's eyes and asked: "Cousin——did you eat the wrong medicine today? "

O><O!

Yan Xiangma's expression became like these symbols in a matter of seconds.

He widened his eyes looking at Cui Xiaoxin and said: "Cousin how do you know I ate the wrong medicine today? This matter has already spread so quickly?"

"Cousin———" Cui Xiaoxin frowned and said in a dissatisfied tone: "Just what are you talking about?"

"That I ate the wrong medicine." Yan Xiangma flustered, suppressing his anger and said: "Cousin, you still haven't told me how did you know that I ate the wrong medicine——Li Shinian haven't left the house, and the two elders are still at home. Li Muyang haven't left since he came back——how did cousin know that I drank the wrong medicine? "

He paused for a moment then gently and cautiously asked: "This matter—-does anyone else knows?"

“Cousin——-” Cui Xiaoxin was about to get angry. Even though she thought her cousin was not normal before, but today he’s particularly excessive.

Cui Xiaoxin did not understand what he was talking about at all. Could it be he’s intentionally changing the subject?

Li Muyang laughed until he could not stand up straight, then walked in front of Cui Xiaoxin and explained to her about Yan Xiangma drinking the wrong decoction.

Cui Xiaoxin also laughed incessantly and said: “Cousin, your body——is it alright?”

Yan Xiangma wished he could instantly find a crack on the ground and enter through it; he is extremely discontent with Li Muyang’s snitching behavior: “Li Muyang, this is too much, you asked me to help you take care of your family, and I also told people to make a decoction to help detoxify your family from the poisonous smoke——If it wasn’t to gain their trust, to let them know that they’re drinking antidote and not poison, would I need to force myself to personally taste it? ”

Li Muyang laughed even more happily, then reached out and held Yan Xiangma’s hand and said: “Yes, thank you Yan young master, your kindness I will never forget it.”

“Poisonous smoke obstruction? “Cui Xiaoxin trembled slightly and asked: “Crow came?”

Yan Xiangma was shocked, his eyes shifted around the courtyard. The small courtyard had been tidied and cleaned properly, the bloodstains on the wall and ground are also wiped away——-Besides the dent and cracks on the granite wall, there is not a single trace indicating that someone had came here.

Could it be that Xiaoxin cousin knows the truth that Crow had came here from just his words?

Yan Xiangma winked at Li Muyang, to let him know that he will handle this question. He then said while laughing: “Crow? Why would Crow be here?”

“You laughed.” Cui Xiaoxin said.

“Yes. I’m laughing. Haha, can I not laugh?”

“If you’re not trying to hide anything, then when I asked if Crow had came, your expression should have been serious and on the alert because recently all your energy have been placed into searching for the whereabouts of Crow——-Moreover, you said the detoxification decoction is to eliminate poisonous smoke. After the last time I was attacked by Crow, I deliberately asked Ning uncle to gather information about Crow. I know he’s an expert in summoning blood crows and using the puzzling obstruction of darkness.”

Cui Xiaoxin’s line of sight sweep back and forth in the courtyard, then looked at Li Muyang and said: “Crow came, he changed his target to you——because you saved me, so he wanted revenge. Is that right? ”

Yan Xiangma went blank for quite a while, then looked at Li Muyang and asked: “Do you really——do you want to marry such a smart woman? ”

“I——-” This question had caused Li Muyang’ face to turn bright red, he then pretended to be angry and said: “Yan Xiangma, what are you talking about? ——-When did I say that——”

“You mean you don’t want to?” Yan Xiangma took a quick glance at Li Muyang and said with disdain.

“I——You———” Li Muyang have never been in love before, Cui Xiaoxin is his first love.

He had kept this feeling to himself, just like a hen lying in the nest waiting for the chick to hatch one day.

Hearing Yan Xiangma publicly announcing his feelings made his face flushed, his ears red and not knowing where to place his bare hands.

“Cousin——-” Cui Xiaoxin was also slightly embarrassed, a touch of red appeared on her soft white neck. But she hides it very well and did not show much facial expression. “If you continue talking rubbish I’ll go back and tell aunt.”

“Okay, Okay, I’m wrong. I surrender.” Yan Xiangma was extremely afraid of his mother, he then continued: ” I didn’t intend to help.”

Cui Xiaoxin suspiciously glanced at Yan Xiangma, then looked at Li Muyang and said: “What about auntie and uncle? What about Shinian? Is anybody hurt? What about you? Where is Crow now?”

“Mum and dad are fine, Shinian is fine, and I’m fine——” Li Muyang looked at Cui Xiaoxin as he answered. “But they had just drank some detoxifying remedy,

so they are not able to come down and see any guests.”

“Where’s Crow?” Cui Xiaoxin looked at Li Muyang and asked.

“He——-” Li Muyang’s eyes shifted towards Yan Xiangma seeking for help.

“I killed him.” Yan Xiangma said bluntly.

“Huh? “Cui Xiaoxin’s pitch-black eyes revolved around Yan Xiangma’s face. ┌

“He was killed by me.” Yan Xiangma said. “You also know that all this time I’ve been searching for Crow’s whereabouts. After much difficulty, I managed to obtain information of where he’s hiding, but I did not dare to arouse his suspicion. Later, he walked right into Li Muyang’s house, so I came here with the guards and set up an inescapable net———Heh, he dared to bully my Xiaoxin little sister, I naturally can’t spare him. As you know, recently my martial arts skills improved drastically, after 300 rounds of battle with Crow, I jabbed him in the eye and blinded him, and then with one blow onto his chest——”

Cui Xiaoxin stayed silent for a long while, then bowed deeply at Li Muyang and said, “I’m sorry, I caused you so much trouble.”

“Not at all.” Li Muyang hurriedly reached out and supported her.

Cui Xiaoxin stood upright, looked at Yan Xiangma and said: ” Cousin, since you killed Crow, you should report to the City’s lord official residence and receive your reward——-”

Her eyes suddenly became incisive and her voice was soft but carried an unquestionable authority: “If someone dares to question your abilities, you might as well seal their mouth forever.”

041 – Friends!

“Women who can be known as one of the bright moons of the kingdom are no ordinary women.” Yan Xiangma sighed to himself.

Cui Xiaoxin had only entered through the door for just a few minutes but she already knows everything. Even if he wanted to help Li Muyang hide the truth, she’s able to see through everything with just one glance.

Cui Xiaoxin knew who killed Crow, just as she knows the reason for him in stealing the credit.

He wanted to protect Li Muyang, so he said Crow was killed by himself.

Cui Xiaoxin also wants to protect Li Muyang, so she also said that Crow was killed by Yan Xiangma.

He said it out of selflessness, but when his little sister cousin said it—-there’s somewhat an uncomfortable feeling in his heart?

However, since Cui Xiaoxin had used such a serious tone to bring up this matter, he had to agree.

Because Cui Xiaoxin is not only his cousin, but also a girl of the Cui family—-Yan family is the in-laws of the Cui family, and also their subordinates. Yan Xiangma status is not as important as Cui Xiaoxin.

Even if Cui Xiaoxin was to marry, she has to marry someone who can bring great power to the Cui family——-for example that jade tree of the Song family.

What about himself? As the son of the lord of Jiangnan City, it is indeed difficult for those wealthy noble families to pay attention to him.

If it weren't because his mother is a woman of the Cui family, would he be qualified to have the opportunity to live with Xiaoxin cousin and talk to her as her equal?

Yan Xiangma patted his chest and said: "Cousin, rest assured, when I handle matters I like to pay particular attention to the word 'reason'—-If it's my credit, no one can take it away. If it's not mines and I want to snatch it off other people, then other people cannot say anything either. In a while I'll go to the City's lord official residence to report that I destroyed assassin Crow, and collect the reward of three thousand gold coins—-Li Muyang this time it was thanks to your help. Later I'll send someone over to reward you with one thousand five hundred gold coins, us brothers shall share the reward equally. "

Li Muyang waved repeatedly and said: "No, no. That's your reward, it has nothing to do with me."

"What? Do you look down on me?" Yan Xiangma.

"Not at all—-I just don't think I should receive a reward for nothing——"

"It's alright." Yan Xiangma said impatiently: "If I give it to you then you should take it. Within our circle, if someone gives you gifts and you don't accept it that means you don't respect them———-Those who do not show respect for me, I will hit their faces. Us hedonistic young master can do anything."

Yan Xiangma lowered his voice and whispered: “Can I go upstairs to see Shinian?”

“No.”

“I’ll give you two thousand gold coins.”

“No.”

“Two-thousand five hundred.”

“No.”

“I’ll give you all of the three thousand, okay?”

“No.”

Yan Xiangma used his finger to point at Li Muyang on the chest and said: “Little brat, don’t you think we should work together to create a better future?”

“What do you mean?”

“You like my cousin, and I think Li Shinian is quite cute. You help me with your little sister, and I’ll help you with my sister, we exchange information and create chances for each other—-What do you think?”

Li Muyang rolled his eyes and said: “Go to your sister[1].”

Yan Xiangma pulled Cui Xiaoxin's sleeve and said: "Cousin, he told you to leave, we should go back——"

"Yan Xiangma——" Li Muyang wanted to rush over and beat him up. I said 'go to your sister', not to get rid of Xiaoxin. He would rush to insist that Xiaoxin should stay behind.

Cui Xiaoxin shook off Yan Xiangma's pulling, looked at Li Muyang and said: "I know you have gone through many things, you and your family also faced some great danger. But I hope these things won't affect your exams tomorrow——if there is anything we can do to help, please be sure to ask. Please don't be polite."

"Ah?" Li Muyang looked at Cui Xiaoxin, he noticed that this girl suddenly become somewhat unfamiliar. Just like the last time at the lake trip, she maintained a certain distance from everyone in the class.

"So, me and cousin will leave now." Cui Xiaoxin bowed slightly, doing a standard aristocratic etiquette. "Please take care. "

"Cui Xiaoxin——" Li Muyang shouted aloud.

He feels that Cui Xiaoxin has changed; she became distant.

However, this sort of distant is difficult to describe, because all along Cui Xiaoxin had never stayed too close to him—-but when he comes near her, she did not avoid him at all.

Cui Xiaoxin turned around, her expression was indifferent as she looked at Li Muyang and asked with her gently and soft voice: “Li Muyang classmate, what is it? ”

“I just want to ask you—-“ Li Muyang opened his mouth and smiled, revealing two rows of shiny white teeth. The side of his face gave off a faint yellow glow under the noon sun, his eyes squinted slightly and his long eyelashes resembled an elegant fan covering his eyes. Teenage years are precisely the great time to courageously find love. “We said we’ll watch the sunset at West Wind University, is that still the case? ”

The distress within Cui Xiaoxin’s eyes flashes for a fleeting moment, she then slightly brushes the handful of long hair in front her forehead and her face showed no expression at all as she said: “Li Muyang, this is something in the future——at least, wait until you’ve been admitted into West Wind University. So, please try your best.”

Cui Xiaoxin left.

Tomorrow, she won’t be coming over.

Li Muyang’s heart felt empty.

“Why—-Why did it suddenly turn into such a mess?” Li Muyang’s emotion was somewhat repressed, an unspeakable distress that teenagers have.

“Why did it become like this all of a sudden?” Inside the car, Yan Xiangma asked Cui Xiaoxin this question.

“The person Crow wanted to kill is Li Muyang, isn’t it?” Cui Xiaoxin asked aloud.

“Yes.” Yan Xiangma knew he couldn’t hide anything from his cousin so he frankly answered her instead. “The situation was extremely dangerous, by the time I came over Li Muyang’s parents and sister were already unconscious. Li Muyang’s body was drenched in blood, he stood in the courtyard with strong killing intent, just like a demon from hell——the ground was covered with blood crows’ body and Crow’s body had already vanished. According to Li Muyang, the blood crows devoured him.”

“The reason for blood crows to devour their owner is because there isn’t any other blood and flesh for them to consume———Li Muyang had already have beaten Crow before I arrived. What do you think of this? Don’t you think Li Muyang——his body is hiding a monster inside?”

“Have you found the person behind Crow?” Cui Xiaoxin crossed her fingers and rubbed gently; this is her habit when she’s lost in thought.

“Not yet.” Yan Xiangma shook his head. Cui Xiaoxin does not want to comment on Li Muyang’s physical condition, just as he expected. “Father had already passed on the message to Tiandu that you were attacked, but there still isn’t any response over there at Tiandu—-they just requested to keep you safe no matter what. An assassin, but also a dead assassin, what information can we find? ”

“So, do you think there’s something wrong with what I did? “Cui Xiaoxin asked aloud.

“I know you’re trying to protect Li Muyang, the person behind this had not been found yet, and who knows whether there will be a next wave of assassins

——Li Muyang spoiled their plan this time, they will naturally place the hatred on Li Muyang. He's just an ordinary—-actually he's not ordinary at all. This guy is very good at concealing, I can't see through him. ”

“He is not ordinary, but his heart is ordinary.” Cui Xiaoxin whispered.

“Yes. He's a good person——” Yan Xiangma sighed. “So, I just feel—-treating him like that, is it not too cruel?”

“Death is cruel.” Cui Xiaoxin said: “Sooner or later we have to separate. What is the difference between earlier and later?”

“Yes.” Yan Xiangma's glanced out of the window at the fiery-red cherry blossom that's blooming beautifully and said: “As long as little sister you had thought over this carefully.”

Cui Xiaoxin lowered her head and stayed silent for while, then said aloud: “Cousin, you had to come forward to bear the risk and responsibility. I hope that you won't be angry——”

Yan Xiangma gently patted Cui Xiaoxin's shoulder; he knew that this girl is also very upset.

“Isn't this what I should do?” Yan Xiangma's smile was gentle and possessed the intelligence to see through the truth. “If I were to bear the risk and responsibility for someone without any relation to me, then I will really mind——but am I your older cousin? We're family.”

They paused for a moment, Yan Xiangma looked at Cui Xiaoxin and couldn't

resist the urge to ask: “Li Muyang—-you—-really have no feelings towards him at all?”

“We’re friends, why did cousin suddenly ask such a question?”

“Oh———–” Yan Xiangma felt it’s a pity and said: “He has a good little sister.”

042 – Trying to cheat money again!

After Yan Xiangma personally tested the detoxification remedy, the effect is very obvious.

Father Li Yan, mother Luo Qi and little sister Li Shinian, respectively drank the remedy; their body also did not show any other after-effects.

On the night of the same day, Li Yan climbed out of bed and mended the surface of the walls; very quickly the dents and cracks on the bluestone walls were completely repaired.

Mother Luo Qi heated the pot to cook dinner and sister Shinian practiced causing trouble.

Yan Xiangma took the credit of killing Crow but his parents and family were not particularly suspicious. In their eyes, Li Muyang was always a sick boy who needed their care and protection.

Their life continued as usual, just like nothing had happened.

However, Li Muyang’s is very clear in his mind that something significant had happened.

He sensed that Cui Xiaoxin had distance herself, he also expected that some kind of farewell will eventually occur.

Li Muyang’s mood was extremely bad but he did not show it.

After dinner he rushed over to wash the dishes but Luo Qi did not agree no matter what he said; instead she urged him to quickly head upstairs to study.

Li Muyang reached out his hand to check father Li Yan's pulse, Luo Qi glanced over with a baffled expression and asked: "When did Muyang learn to read someone's pulse?"

Li Muyang was prepared and said with a smile: "I followed the Taoist master, but didn't have any opportunity to practice it before. "

Li Yan nodded and said: "He's an expert, if you were able to learn his medical knowledge, then it is a pretty good skill to make a living."

Luo Qi became annoyed and said angrily: "Li Yan, why did you say that? My son is going to West Wind University——he'll have a bright future, what medical skills does he need to make a living? "

Li Yan smile was simple and honest as he said: "Isn't being a doctor good? It's easy and comfortable and well-respected—-"

"As long as my son is willing. If he likes it, I naturally will let him learn it. If he doesn't then we can't force him. "

"Ok, Ok, Ok, you can take care of everything about our son." Li Yan was reluctant to have an argument with his wife because of Li Muyang's matter, since he never had won an argument before.

Li Shinian came rushing forward like a lackey, holding Li Yan's arm and saying: "Dad, you can handle all my matters. I'll do as you say, alright? "

Li Yan reached out and stroked his daughter's head while saying: "Well, then you go upstairs and go to bed."

"Dad, what time is it?" Li Shinian said with discontent. "I just supported you, did you not consider my feelings? "

"Did you not just say you will listen to what I tell you? Then sit with dad for a while before going to bed." Li Yan really loved his clever thoughtful little girl.

Suddenly, he thought of his eldest daughter who was taken away by the Lu family—-She should be equally as pretty and cute, right? She should also be—much happier than they are now?

"Dad, your pulse is normal, the toxins in your body should have been completely eliminated. Now the most important thing is to replenish the nutrients your body needs, then your physical state will be restored as soon as possible. "

After Li Muyang finished seeing his father, he then said to Li Sinian: "it's your turn."

"Brother——" Li Shinian blinked and said: "Can you go to my room to check my pulse?"「

"Why?" After you I still have to check mum's—-"

"Aiya, how could you be so stupid? I'm a girl——"

“However—”

Li Shinian’s room is warm and elegant, and not like other girls whose are pink or bright red, together all the decorations and furniture look very aesthetic.

Her room is very large, double the size of Li Muyang’s room.

Even though her room is large, every time they have anything to discuss she would run over to Li Muyang’s room. Li Muyang rarely came into her room; maybe because he felt that she’s growing up into a woman so she should have her own privacy?

“Brother, you mood is very bad, right?” Li Shinian sat down on a chair, flung away the slippers on her feet, then crossed her legs sitting like a monk meditating and asked bluntly.

“No, why would I?” Li Muyang replied smilingly.

“Liar.” Li Shinian said with disdain. “During dinner, you were distracted several times. When I’m talking to you, you ignored me, when I gave you coriander to eat you ate it— you never ate coriander before.”

“Maybe it’s because something happened today, and also it started because of me, so my mind—–”

“So you really can’t let go off Xiaoxin sister? ”

“——” Li Muyang knows that he can’t hide anything from this little girl.

“Brother, can’t you see? Xiaoxin sister is trying break off all relations with you ——”

Li Muyang’s stayed silent for a long while, then said with a smile: “I can see that, then what? ”

“Then——” Li Shinian sighed lightly, then stretched out her soft-white wrist for Li Muyang to check her pulse: “Check my pulse. As long as you live happily and still do your best. Isn’t it just a woman? If you don’t mind———”

“What?”

“I will be your temporary girlfriend for two days? ”

“You’re trying to cheat money off me again.” Li Muyang said flatly.

“————”

——————————

——————————

Li Muyang sat the following exams; the next two papers were not too difficult. Apart from two small questions that he couldn’t figure out the answer, other questions he could solve them without any problems.

Li Muyang felt particularly good about himself, because according to Cui Xiaoxin, the questions that he's able to answer will be correct——-As long as he can answer the whole paper then that means its close to perfection?

Li Muyang had not seen Cui Xiaoxin after that. He intentionally waited for her at the door of the exam hall after the exams have finished. Even though he waited until all the students have left, he still didn't see Cui Xiaoxin.

Li Muyang thought that maybe she had handed in her paper early and left.

The exams are all finished, the teacher asked all students to return to the classroom.

After Li Muyang arrived, his eyes swept across in a fifteen-degree angle several times but Cui Xiaoxin indeed didn't come.

The appearance of Li Muyang caused the whole class to look at him with surprise, they all pointed and widely discussed about Li Muyang.

Zhang Chen turned around looking at Li Muyang who was behind him and asked while chuckling: "Li Muyang, how did you find your exams?"

"I thought it was okay." Li Muyang said expressionlessly. He felt a sense of loss with Cui Xioaxin's departure.

"What do you mean? I heard that Cui Xiaoxin classmate has been helping you study all along, you should be able to go to the kingdom's West Wind University,

right?” After finished talking, Zhang Chen turned around and pulled a face at the surrounding people, attracting the loud laughter of everyone.

Entrance examinations have ended; everyone is relieved. There’s such a good show to watch, obviously they will not miss it.

Li Muyang pondered seriously for a moment and said: “Should be——but this kind of thing there’s no guarantee.”

“——-”

The whole audience was dead quiet.

Zhang Chen widened his eyes as he stared at Li Muyang and said: “Li Muyang, are you crazy? Do you know what I just asked? ”

“I’m not crazy.” Li Muyang looked at Zhang Chen with an incisive glare and said:” If you continue laughing at me, you should know what I’m going to do.”

Zhang Chen is actually really afraid of Li Muyang and his brute force, but if he was to turn back at this point then others will think he has stage fright. So instead, he argued: “You won’t be admitted to West Wind University, you also won’t be able to pursue Cui Xiaoxin——-Li Muyang, all your efforts will go to waste, you’re still a useless trash.”

Li Muyang grabbed Zhang Chen’s collar with one hand, then pulled him up in front of the whole class and walked towards the lily pond outside the classroom.

Plop—-

Li Muyang suddenly exerted strength and violently flung Zhang Chen into the pond.

“Li Muyang, you lunatic——-” Zhang Chen desperately flopped around in the pond, yelling loudly: “just you wait, I won’t let you get away with it this time ——”

Li Muyang’s eyes were blood red and his voice carried an uncontrollable vicious tendency as he said in an angry tone: “I’ll be admitted into West Wind University, and also——I will catch up to Cui Xiaoxin.”

043 – Lord of Jiangnan City!

As the lord of the prosperous Jiangnan city, Yan Bolai is extremely busy every day.

However, even with such a hectic schedule, he still decides to find his son Yan Xiangma and have a talk with him.

He stood by the corner glancing with admiration at the ‘tiger growling on the mountains’ painting by the Kingdom’s famous artist Qin Kuaiyu, then lifted the cup on the table taking a sip of the hot tea and said: “ancient people pay particular attention to the spirit of the dragons and tigers, dragons have been slaughtered to extinction, while the fierce tigers are still proudly growling on the mountain—- Qin Kuaiyu is deserved to be called a famous artist of the kingdom, with just a few brush strokes he is able to fully capture the majestic of the tiger king. Every time looking at this drawing will make people open their heart and mind and possess infinite courage.”

Yan Xiangma knows that the work his father was handling is temporarily finished, he walked towards where his father was and said smilingly: “Father is the tiger king in Jiangnan city, with just one growl you can silence the warlords of Jiangnan city and make the gangsters and thieves koutou.”

“Boot-licker” Yan Bolai’s expression was like the light clouds and soft wind. He had heard rampant flattery numerous times before, and the nonsense coming from his son’s mouth is also endless. “Crow was killed by you?”

“Yes father.” Yan Xiangma said with a smile: “That Crow was seeking his own death, he dared to attack Xiaoxin sister. Recently all the city’s military police were sent out to track down the whereabouts of Crow, I also want to share the worries and difficulties for father, and avenge little sister—-so I sent some of my

henchmen to search for Crow's whereabouts, and unexpectedly we found some traces. We then followed and set up an inescapable net and led the attack to kill him—-"

"Where was the attack? "

"Li Muyang's house."

"Xiaoxin's classmate? "

"Yes father."

Yan Bolai looked up deep in thought, his line of sight did not focus anywhere and said in a low voice: "Two of the attacks were connected to that Li Muyang. That Li Muyang's identity—-is it clean? "

"Father, I already asked someone to check, it's completely clean. He absolutely would not be a chess piece placed in Jiangnan city by the Song or Lu family——"

The expression in Yan Bolai's eye became stern as he said in a low voice: "Who told you that the assassin this time was sent by the Song or Lu family? "

"Father, this kind of thing do I need somebody to tell me? Apart from the Song and Lu family—-"

"Shut up, there is no evidence-don't mention this anymore in the future."

“I’m not talking nonsense, I just said it without thinking the matter through in front of you since in this room there’s only father and I right now—–”

“Even in front of me you must not carelessly speculate and accuse others. Remember that this is taboo. ”

“Yes.” Yan Xiangma bowed down slightly, accepting his father’s teachings.

Yan Bolai’s facial expression finally toned down a little, he looked at his son and said: “Crow is ranked in the top twenty assassins in the kingdom, his strength is not weak either. You’re simply in the middle stage of the high mountains—-yet with your ability you were able to kill Crow? ”

“It wasn’t just me, Li Dalu and others also helped. As you know, Li Dalu’s strength is not bad—–just that he’s a bit stupid. ”

“Since your people had tracked down the whereabouts of assassin Crow, then why did you not report it to the City’s lord official residence in a timely manner? And also why did you not consult me before jumping in and commanding the arrest of a criminal? “Yan Bolai looked pensively at Yan Xiangma and said,” What are you hiding? ”

Yan Xiangma’s expression looked slightly stiff, then his face momentarily resumed his normal self and said while smiling: “What would I have to hide? I have nothing to hide? I did not inform the lord’s official residence because there wasn’t enough time. You also know Crow’s ability, he can come and go without casting any shadow, and also his speed in killing is ultra-quick. After running into him I didn’t even had a chance to breath, let alone dividing my attention to send someone over to ask for help. Besides, Crow’s reward notice was announced by the Lord’s official residence, it was approved by father yourself. After killing Crow

I was naturally going to accept the reward, but with father's noble character and unquestionable integrity, you will certainly not allow me to receive that three thousand gold——"

"Did you know, if you take the credit then the person behind all of this will keep an eye on you in the future, you will also have to bear their endless revenge ——"

"Father, who am I? "

"——"

"I'm Yan Xiangma, the son of Yan Bolai the lord of Jiangnan City. My father is famous for his military glory and for protecting the region; I also naturally have to be indomitable and fearless. Those rogues who can only hide behind someone's back, would I pay any attention to them? If they have the ability then they should jump out and fight my sword and spear, watch if I don't crush those idiots—"「

"Nonsense." Yan Bolai slammed the table with his hand. "Do you think this is a joke? "

Yan Xiangma looked at his father with a serious expression and said: "I don't think this is a joke, but just that it is a responsibility that I should bear."

Yan Bolai stared at his son for a good while, then gestured with his hand and said: "Get out."

"Yes, father."

Yan Xiangma opened his mouth wanting to speak, but in the end no words came out, he turned and walked towards the outside.

Ka—-

A clink of a mechanism operating sounded from the room.

The enormous ‘tiger growling on the mountains’ painting divided into two in the middle, and a huge empty hole emerged from the middle of the wall. A man in a gray robe came out from the inside of the black hole.

He walked to the front of Yan Bolai and looked at Yan Bolai as he spoke: “Lord, in this matter young master is deeply involved, I fear there will be danger in the future ”

Yan Bolai pushed away the chair, stood up, and walked up and down the study with a somewhat distressed face, then said: “The Cui family still hasn’t given a verdict on this matter, yet he’s stirring up trouble in the middle, it indeed makes people furious. It seems that I failed to pay sufficient attention in disciplining him.”

“What should our next step be?”

Yan Bolai glanced out the window at the moon and pondered for a long time: “First, we definitely need to send someone to protect Xiangma. He has the ability to protect himself, but that’s still far from enough for something like this.”

“Yes. ”

“Second, we need to protect Xiaoxin. These days Xiaoxin not going out is also a good thing. The entrance examinations have ended, in a few days time the Cui family will come and Xiaoxin will need to return to Tiandu——The kingdoms’s capital is at turbulent times, the situation is unpredictable. We can only calmly wait and see.”

“Yes. ”

“Third, go and investigate that Li Muyang once again; if there is the need, then you might as well come out and personally test him——”

“Lord you suspect that Li Muyang is a chess piece of others?” The black-robe man asked in a deep voice: “Young master has already checked, I also have sent someone to investigate. All his information is normal, we’re unable to find any flaws.”

“Not being able to find any flaws might be the biggest flaw of them all. “Yan Bolai expression was grave and stern as he continued: “An expert who’s able to kill Crow, would he be the trash-like student that we know of?”

“Yes.” The black-robe man said in a deep voice.

Yan Bolai sighed lightly and said: “Xiangma loafing around all day long is not the right path, Xiaoxin is going back to the capital soon, let’s also send him to Tiandu and give him an errand to do.”

044 – Evil people smashing the shop!

Because Li Muyang lifted Zhang Chen and flung him into the lily pond, this adrenaline surging incident caused him to become the topic of Renaissance high school once again.

Everyday when Li Shinian came back from school, her small face would look extremely excited as she emphasised the subsequent effects of that disturbance.

“Brother—brother, did you know? Now there are a lot of boys in the school who adores you—–”

“Some people suspect that incident must be false because Zhang Chen is so much stronger than you—-Hey, as a result many people came out and reported what they witnessed, slapping the faces of those who doubted you—–”

“Brother, a girl in my class wrote a letter to you—–a love letter. You haven’t received a love letter before right? Here, feel it, a love letter is like this. Hua Juan is my good friend, would you consider her? ”

Li Muyang just stayed calm, no matter how energetic Li Shinian was when she told him, he only smiled indifferently. Occasionally he would think this little girl is amusing and would laugh along.

After Li Muyang had thrown Zhang Chen into the lily pond, he didn’t talk to anyone and just left the school directly. Because he knows that if he stayed there it will only lead to more conflict. He did not want to compromise, and even more, he did not want to apologise.

Of course, Zhang Chen also definitely won’t.

He heard that Zhang Chen's father is a very powerful person, but so what? Is he as strong as Crow?

Li Muyang has been reflecting himself over these past few days.

Before Li Muyang was often ridiculed or humiliated like this, and in many cases it was much worse than it was now. At those times Li Muyang stayed calm, as long as it doesn't affect his sleep he'd let them quickly bully him and then take a good nap afterwards. He had never been so furious before. Moreover, he would never get involved in a fight with his classmates just because of a few words.

Li Muyang knows that his own body underwent great changes.

For example he sent Zhan Chen flying with one punch, he forcefully sent Crow flying, and he easily broke off the lapis lazuli table——

He felt soaring hostility in his heart and also his blood boiling.

Li Muyang knows that a monster is living inside his body.

Just as Crow had asked him just before he died: 'what sort of monster are you really?'

"What sort of monster is inside his body?" Li Muyang has been pondering over this question for a long time. There were always intermittent images appearing in his sleep, he dreamt that his body was torn apart by a dragon, dreamt that the dragon's body was cut into several parts and he also dreamt of two balls of lights

intersecting in the sky, this is the enemy of his fate——

In addition, he possessed knowledge without learning them before and also knows a variety of unfamiliar methods for solving the questions——

The changes on Li Muyang was too many and too drastic; he feels he is not the same Li Muyang as before.

What's even more difficult to accept is that he does not know how to tell others about his changes; he can't find someone who can clear up his confusion.

Under the state of surprise and joy, he cautiously waited, waiting for his real body to emerge and also waiting for the invitation from the far away Tiandu.

"West Wind University——" Li Muyang murmured out that name. "Please."

Li Muyang has been practicing writing recently; before he seldom writes, so his writing is not that good. When he noticed that his writing is not that good, he didn't have the motivation to practice.

Human nature is like that!

However, during this period he noticed that his writing has improved greatly, the force of his brush strokes is significantly better. When he writes there's a feeling of watching a confident fine horse galloping in the mist.

Li Muyang see this was overjoyed.

He heard someone say this before: a person’s words are his second face—-Li Muyang’s first face is already not desirable, so he wants to find some sense of being in his second face.

Whenever he had nothing to do, he would practise. He also did not deliberately try to imitate the characters of famous writers, he just wrote casualy.

The more he writes the better it was, the more he writes the smoother it was. As if that style of writing originally belonged to him.

“As if it was something always there and something that is mines.” Li Muyang sighed lightly.

After writing for an hour, Li Muyang stood up in the courtyard stretching his body.

The last incident with Crow made him realised the importance of his body.

Therefore, as long as he is free he would practice his walking pace and steps following the ‘art of breaking body’. After a few laps, he can easily feel that any fatigue had vanished and the brain also became much more refreshed.

Just as Li Muyang was exercising, the courtyard doors were banged on loudly.

The sounds were hurried and brief. It seemed like it was something important.

Li Muyang urgently ran to the door; Auntie Zhao from next door stood by the

doorway. After seeing Li Muyang she quickly asked: “Li Muyang, is your father home? ”

“He’s not, Auntie Zhao what’s the matter? ”

“Muyang, hurry go look for your father and bring him to your store—something is happening at your bakery————” Zhao auntie was extremely anxious as she spoke, her feet stomping incessantly.

Li Muyang asked urgently: “What happened to the bakery? Is my mother all right? ”

“When I walked past, there was a group of hooligans causing trouble in your store, your mum is fine now, but I fear that later there would be losses—Hurry and get your father————–”

Li Muyang closed the courtyard door, ran towards the bakery in large strides.

“Quickly go and get your father back—-it’s useless for you to go there——” Auntie Zhao yelled loudly from behind. Among all the neighbours, who doesn’t know that Li Muyang is a sickly person?

Shinian bakery.

Luo Qi stood in front of the shelves of bread and said smilingly: “Big brother Tianyi It’s not that I don’t respect you, but our store is just a small bakery——-after a hard day of work we only earn a few coins—-we already paid at the start of the month, it’s only the middle of the month now, yet we have to pay already? If you collect so often, we really can’t afford it. Even if you come once a month,

we don’t earn any profits and instead had to pay out of our own pockets.”

The biggest bully of Water Willow Street, short and round-headed Zhang Tianyi smiled insincerely as he stared at Luo Qi and said: “Shop owner Luo, save your speech for someone else, saying it to us old neighbours definitely means nothing. The business of the bakery everyday, I Zhang Tianyi can see clearly, how many people come in and out of the store my little brothers help me remember——- you Luo boss is a capable person, your Shinian bakery is quite famous in Jiangnan city——And? And you’re not willing to pay management fees? ”

Zhang Tianyi glanced behind at the little brothers, smiled and said: “If you don’t want us to manage your business if someone runs into your shop and fight then——-”

Zhang Tianyi grabbed a drawer of freshly steamed pineapple bun from the shelf and suddenly dropped it to the ground.

Crash——-

The metal drawers smashed against the granite floor then bounced back up, the aroma of butter distributed everywhere as the pineapple buns rolled all over the place.

“Tianyi big brother, why force people into a dead end? It’s not that I’m unwilling to pay management fees, but I already paid at the start of the month ——-We can barely afford it if you collect once a month. But twice a month, we really can’t bear it———”

“So from what you said, you’re not willing to pay then? ” Zhang Tianyi asked

while smiling, his laughing face resembling a Buddha.

“Can you wait until next month———” Luo Qi said embarrassingly. “My two kids still have to go to school, there are also expenses in our house that needs to be paid, every month we depend on the little income from the bakery, it will be very difficult——-”

“Brother Tianyi, don’t waste time talking to her, we should just smash her bakery———”

“Those who are not willing to pay very little money will definitely lose a big sum of money——At that time you won’t even have a store, let’s see how you’ll feed your family———”

“Brother Tianye came to find you is following the will of the heavens——you dare to go against the heavens? ”

“Oh, brother baozi that’s some good flattery you are giving. Domineering power———”

—————

Zhang Tianyi looked at Luo Qi charming face, then another thought came across his mind. He said happily: “What’s your answer? If you don’t want to pay, then it’s not that there isn’t any other solution——-”

“What solution?” Luo Qi asked warily. She came from a wealthy household and has a clear understanding of the human nature. She does not believe that Zhang Tianyi would be that kind to remove her management fees.

“How about you accompany me for a drink? Us two can sit together, drink and talk, then maybe we will think of other solutions? Isn’t that right? You go and ask the widow at the opposite restaurant, when have I ever received management fees from her? ”

Pa—-

Zhang Tianyi suffered a slap across his face.

The smile on Luo Qi’s face vanished, her eyes glaring coldly at Zhang Tianyi as she said: “No way. ”

“Tut tut——-” Zhang Tianyi reached out and touched Luo Qi’s cheeks, then licked his palms and said while chuckling: “Fragrant. Very fragrant. There’s a faint smell of milk.”

Zhang Tianyue gestured his hand and shouted: “Brothers, smash the shop.”

Crash——-

A shelf is pulled down.

Bang——

A large hole was smashed into the cashier counter.

“Don’t destroy our store.” A girl from the inside of the bakery dashed forward to stop them, but fell into the arms of a fat guy and forcefully kissed her delicate white face.

“Stop it, you guys stop———” Luo Qi shrieked and leaped forward trying to snatch the girl from the big man’s arms.

Zhang Tianyi walked one step forward using his body to block the front, then smiled at Luo Qi and said: “Luo shop owner, what’s your answer? If you don’t accept, then this bakery will really become nothing———”

“No way, I rather die than to follow your demands———” Luo Qi shouted in a shrill voice.

“Look, look, you’re not as clever as the widow across the street———this is actually a small matter and can be resolved easily, why do you have to make it so complicated?” Zhang Tianyi said with incessant regret.

His glance swept across the miserable condition, then said with a smile: “My name is Zhang Tianyi, me coming here is the heaven’s will——if you don’t listen to the heaven, then the heaven will not allow you to continue make a living on this street. Other places I have no control, but this is Water Willow Street, what I say is the rule———”

He stretched his arms high up and then forcefully slammed down and shouted: “Smash, use all your strengths to smash this shop for me, I want nothing standing up in the store———”

045 – On your knees! On your knees!

Thud thud—-

Shelves inside the bakery were being torn down and ovens were smashed into pieces.

“Help—-help—–sister Qi help me—-” The sales girl was struggling desperately, trying to push away the big fat face and escape the clutches of the fat man.

However, her strength is too weak. No matter how hard she tried, the big fat stinking mouth was still around her face and neck.

The two pastry masters rushed out holding rolling pins, but before they had the time to counterattack the hooligans already took action and pounded them to the ground. They’re experts in making bread; however, in fights they were completely no match for these rogues.

“Xiaoting——” Luo Qi eyes were exhausted with anger; she dashed towards the girl. She’s a pitiful girl with no father or mother. No matter what, Luo Qi can’t let these rogues destroy her innocence.

Zhang Tianyi’s sturdy body merely moved forward one step and Luo Qi’s body was blocked from the side.

“Zhang Tianyi, I’ll fight you with all my strength.” Luo Qi reached out to grab Zhang Tianyi’s face but her wrist was caught by Zhang Tianyi’s hand.

“Fight?” Zhang Tianyi eyes narrowed into a thin gap as he laughed. “If we fight

here, you won't have any advantage. But if we fight on the bed, you will have two or three tenths chance of winning———"

"Zhang Tianyi—-"

"Yes, keep your bold and vigorous strength. I liked it like that——-"

Thud—-

The coffee shop's wooden door forcefully pushed open, Li Muyang stood at the doorway, panting heavily.

"Muayang———" Luo Qi is extremely sensitive to anything about Li Muyang's. Seeing him suddenly appearing at the door of the bakery, she was afraid he'll get hurt and yelled in a sharp voice: "Muyang run, go and get your father here ——————-"

"Oh, that's the little bastard in your family? Hey, let him see, young people should come into contact with the society earlier——" Zhang Tianyi's glance swept across Li Muyang through the corner of his eye, his mood increased even more.

"Zhang Tianyi, you beast——Muyang hurry run——"

"He can't escape." As Zhang Tianyi spoke, a few thugs already surrounded Li Muyang.

"Zhang Tianyi——-let my son go, leave my son alone, I'll give you money, I'll comply with your demands and pay the management fee, I'll give you as much money as you want———do you know who he is? If you dare to hurt him, I'll make you die without burial ground, I want all your family members buried

———” Luo Qi exclaimed hysterically, desperately with all her might she rushes over to Li Muyang, displaying an attitude of fighting to the last gasp.

“If you agree to my request earlier, then this wouldn’t happen, would it? Fine, you want to protect your son, right? It’s not impossible, you accompany me for a drink and both of us can have a good chat, then what problems can’t be solved? ”

Witnessing everything in front of him, Li Muyang’s dark eyes were wrapped in red clouds within seconds.

It was blood-red, like a pair of black ink pearl immersed in a pool of blood.

His expression was cold like frost; handfuls of ice water could be wrung out from his face.

His hand clenched into a fist producing rumbling noises; listening to those sounds it seems as if your bones are being crushed.

On the back of his right hand, the scales that faded away became increasingly dark, as if ink stones were embedded in his flesh.

Because the ink stones were too dark, it instead made his skin appear very white.

Li Muyang stood there gasping for breath and motionless, waiting for those scums to make a move first.

“Boy, you’re seeking your own death, you can’t blame other people———” The pockmarked face leader said while chuckling, then grabbed Li Muyang’s shoulders.

“You shouldn’t mess with me. “Li Muyang said in a hoarse voice. His voice sounded ice-cold and ancient, it’s hard to believe that voice came from the mouth of a teenager.

“Yo, this kid has some temper. ” The pockmarked face turned to the companions by his side and laughed loudly, then said: “So what if we mess with you? Do you think we can’t? ”

“Die.”

Bang—-

Li Muyang threw out his fist.

There was a sudden rumbling roar of thunder and lightning blazing across.

Countless white light flashed in the sky, as if a bolt of lightning abruptly exploded inside the bakery.

Huu——

The strong hurricane wind engulfed all the shelves and bread on the floor then swirled them up into the air and pounded them against the walls. The clattering noise lingers in their ears.

The four thugs wearing black who surrounded Li Muyang had to bear the brunt of the attack, and was the first to be blown away by the wild and powerful air.

Their bodies knocked against the wall and then sounds of bones rupturing could be heard from the inside of their body.

Thump——

The four bodies landed on the ground simultaneously, and then they spurted out large mouthfuls of blood.

What's worst is that the pockmarked face who was in front of Li Muyang, directly suffered Li Muyang's punch. His entire chest caved in.

His body floated around in the air and then mouthfuls of blood sprayed across the air. Blood splattered and his body was fast and nimble just like the wind as it fell back down.

Snap——

His body knocked against and the wooden partition breaking it into pieces and then flew straight into the baker's kitchen.

Then there was no further movements after that. Perhaps he couldn't bear the power of that punch and was directly beaten to death.

That fat guy who refused to let go of Xiaoting actually helped Xiaoting, because

just as the air was carrying everything away like a bomb had exploded, his body collided with the cashier counter.

His body heavily knocked against the mahogany counter, creaking sounds could be heard from the immense pressure on the old wooden counter.

While Xiaoting who was held in his arms, was protected by the human cushion and luckily her life was saved.

Luo Qi's body is light; under the force of the powerful air she was blew away, falling on top of the pastry kneading board causing her whole face and body to be covered with flour.

Contrary to what one might expect, Zhang Tianyi knows a few kung fu moves. Realising that the situation is bad, he immediately used his kung fu ' Iron horse crossing the river' that solidified his foundations.

He stamped his two feet on the ground and unexpectedly screeching noises echoed from the granite floor. His two feet were stuck in the stone, as if he and the granite floor had fused together.

Li Muyang was like a god descending into the world, by just reaching out his hands he can bring about such a tremendous storm.

The power of his punch, could shock the world.

Violent winds suddenly blew across in a flash and then the bakery resumed being its usual self.

No, it can’t be restored to normal.

Before Li Muyang’s arrival, Shinian bakery just looked like it had been robbed.

After Li Muyang arrived, it looks as if Shinian Bakery experienced a miniature hurricane.

Sha sha sha——-

A piece of bread paper flew across the air, then fluttering towards the ground.

All the people inside the bakery, were still alive.

Their line of sight passed through the bread paper floating in the air and then eventually landing on Li Muyang who was standing by the door.

Luo Qi looked up in the pile of flour, white flour constantly fell from her face and head.

Her face was filled with astonishment; she looked at Li Muyang with her eyes widened, not believing what she just saw.

“This——-is my son? ”

The men in black whom just vomited volumes of blood, their pupils were swollen, and for a split second they thought they were already dead.

They felt they have encountered the god of death.

Because apart from the god of death, no one had made them experience that suffocating feeling of despair from not being able to budge at all.

Although Zhang Tianyi withstood Li Muyang's violent storm attack, but the consequences of using his body to block is that the clothes on his body looked like it had been cut countless times with a knife.

After the strong breeze, his clothes were ragged and did not differ from the clothes of the beggars on the street.

Zhang Tianyi opened his arms, as if he's holding a large ball.

Although a gust of cold wind just breezed across, his forehead was still dripping with sweat. Beads of sweat constantly falling and sliding across his face and then onto his fat neck.

The muscles on his face twitching incessantly, looking as if a pig's head was cooking under high heat in a pot.

His short legs were constantly trembling; this time he really felt fear.

The sort of feeling of seeing the sickle of the reaper flashing beside your neck, causing fear to permeate through from the depths of the bone marrow.

"Pffff——"

He couldn’t withstand it any longer; a sweet feeling in his throat and then he bent over spurting out large mouthfuls of blood.

Li Muyang approached him one step at a time.

Clang—

Clang—

Clang—

————

Li Muyang is wearing flat shoes; as he walked on the floor he did not make too loud of a sound. But in Zhang Tianyi’s ear, each step he took sounded like thunder roaring beside his ears.

Li Muyang stood still in front of Zhang Tianyi, his blood-red eyes looked pensively at the vomiting Zhang Tianyi without any human emotions at all in his face at all.

“Big brother——big brother, let me off this time. I was wrong; I won’t dare to come here again. I promise you, I won’t charge the bakery any management fee ever again———” Zhang Tianyi looked at Li Muyang, begging for mercy.

He found himself falling into a pit with deep water that is difficult to even see the bottom.

He is afraid of the feeling of drowning, his body has been sinking all along and he's desperately flapping but still can't find a piece of duckweed for him to hold onto.

"I deserve it, I am willing to apologise to Luo shop owner——I also will pay for all the losses of the bakery——As long as you're willing to let me off this time, I will accept any demands. Name a price, as much as you want——"

"Big brother, say something———-I——I don't dare to do such a thing again, I'll never be on this street demanding protection fee. I am willing to pay protection money to you, starting today you are I, Zhang Tianyi's older brother, I will follow you, whatever you tell me do I will do it without any questions, even robbing or killing I won't refuse at all———"

"Down on your knees." Li Muyang said in a commanding voice.

"What? Big brother, don't do this——Luo shop owner, you say something for me. Your son is going to kill, he's going to kill, quickly stop him———"

Zhang Tianyi wanted to run, but his legs were quivering. He was unable to shift them at all.

Luo Qi's mouth was stuffed with flour, so her mouth was somewhat dry.

She opened her mouth to speak but words won't come out.

The Li Muyang right now made her feel extremely unfamiliar and flustered.

“Down on your knees.” Li Muyang repeated himself. His voice already carried a hint of anger.

“Big Brother—”

“Down on your knees.” Li Muyang’s roared loudly in fury, blood boiling in his pupils.

Thump—

Both of Zhang Tianyi’s legs and knees weakened, he then heavily fell on his knees in front of Li Muyang.

046 – Destroying the plan!

The scorching sun seared the earth.

It was right at noon, seeing crowds on the street is rare and seeing customers willing to go into the bakery were even more rare.

Under such hot and stuffy weather, in a sealed room like this, everyone was drenched with sweat from the intense heat.

Not only because of the problem with the weather but also Tianyi's problem.

Zhang Tianyi can be considered as a lord who rule Water Willow street by force, a ruthless character, many brothers are under his control. His way of carrying out tasks is widely known to be cruel. When his shadow envelopes Water Willow Street as well as when he treats Water Willow Street as the nucleus and scans the surrounding few markets, almost no one has dared to confront him.

Once there was a young hero Hao Nan, he gathered many hard men from Yu Hongxing Street to fight with Zhang Tianyi. But he unfortunately suffered a crushing defeat and ran far away into the countryside.

Zhang Tianyi is the King of Water Willow Street, he tells other to stand and others have to stand. He tells other people to kneel and others can only kneel. When he has allows people to have a business, then people can open their shop and make a living on this street. When he doesn't allow them to have a business, then they will be like how he is right now——kneeling in front of Li Muyang——begging for forgiveness to survive.

Before, only Zhang Tianyi forces people to get down on their knees. This time Zhang Tianyi is kneeling in front of other people, if such an incident was to spread out it will certainly shock Water willow street and rock the entire West side.

Zhang Tianyi is already not tall, when he knelt down, he became a little meatball.

He wanted to raise his head to look up at Li Muyang and say a few words but when his head only just lifted, Li Muyang deep voice thundered: “Impudent.”

Zhang Tianyi lowered his head and did not dare to be impudent anymore.

Li Muyang tower over Zhang Tianyi and glared at him, his eyes were still blood-red, resembling the rays of a double edge sword watching the top of Zhang Tianyi’s head.

As a result, Zhang Tianyi already felt his head was being pierced through creating two blood holes.

Li Muyang’s body emitted a cold chill, a kind of imposing force that makes people to not have the courage to attack and tremble in fear.

Zhang Tianyi’s body trembled incessantly when Li Muyang was angered, but when Li Muyang became silent, his trembling intensified still. Because he noticed that the silent Li Muyang is much more terrifying than when Li Muyang is talking.

“Before how many times did you collect in a month?” Li Muyang asked aloud.

“What?” Zhang Tianyi looked up and asked.

Pa—-

Li Muyang’s palm slapped across his face, Zhang Tianyi’s forehead forcefully knocked against the stone floor, his head was severely injured and blood was flowing out.

Zhang Tianyi knew he was wrong; he quickly climbed back up again from the ground.

He cautiously got back on his knees with his head down and shoulder hunched forward, not daring to move at all.

“I’m talking about the management fee.” Li Muyang said in a deep voice. “Before how many times did you collect in a month? ”

“Once a month.” Zhang Tianyi quickly answered. “According to the rules, we used to collect once a month at the beginning of the month, after collecting the fee I wouldn’t bother the business——I am wrong, big brother, I know I’m wrong. I don’t dare to do it again. This time I was an asshole, I deserve to die——”

Pa—-

Li Muyang once again slapped Zhang Tianyi’s forehead, knocking him over and his head once again banged against the granite floor. Because Li Muyang used too much force, Zhang Tianyi’s forehead was badly injured and became drenched in blood; it seemed as if his forehead was about to rot away.

“You only answer what I ask. If I don’t ask you, then don’t talk. Also don’t beg for forgiveness. Your life can’t be begged back, it can only rely on yourself now. ”

“Yes yes——”

“Why did it change? “Li Muyang’s once again asked loudly.

“Because—I’m greedy.” I lost too much money at the casino recently, so I want to find some businesses and receive the management fee to ease my living conditions.

“You have already collected from the other families?”

“Just collected from two families——”

“They already paid? ”

“They paid”

“Which two family? ”

“The widow’s family restaurant directly opposite from here and the tea house next door. ”

Li Muyang pondered for a while then said: “If I guessed correctly, there is a close relationship between you and these two families? You charge management

fees for your own businesses? ”

“No no——”

Li Muyang’s voice became increasingly cold as he said: “It seems that you do not want to save your own life. ”

Bang Bang Bang—-

Zhang Tianyi’s head forcefully pounded against the floor, repeatedly over and over again.

Zhang Tianyi was incredibly scared, he cried for mercy: “Big brother, I’m wrong, I confess, I was ordered to come to your store to collect a second management fee. They gave me ten gold coins, and they also said if I can receive a second management fee from your store for this month, they will give me one hundred gold coins——I keep thinking would there be such a good thing, but since I’m idle, I gathered some brothers and rushed over to your store. ”

“I know that your mother is responsible here, so I thought a woman can be easily bullied, if she obediently handed over the money, then in that case I not only will receive the one month management fee and also the one hundred gold coins——I had no idea that your mum’s temperament is so stubborn, she wasn’t willing to hand over the money, so I threatened to smash her store——”

“I’m afraid it’s not that simple, right?” Li Muyang understood his mother’s character. Luo Qi seems gentle on the outside but is strong in the inside and won’t easily compromise. However, she sizes up the situation and accommodates to the circumstances. If she knows her own family and relatives

were in significant danger, she would never care about the money——because the money she donates to the poor every month was not small at all. Even the shop's Xiaoting was brought back here from the street. In her eyes, life is much more important than money.

However, the situation was that bad, yet mother still wasn't willing to compromise, then that proves the matter isn't as Zhang Tianyi had explained.

"I—-I also have some other ulterior motives——I wasn't thinking clearly for a moment, keep having lustful thoughts, thinking—-think that—-" I wanted to sleep with your mother these words Zhang Tianyi could not say out loud no matter what.

If this were before, he would have proudly said to everyone that he slept with his mother. But right now, he is knelt in front of this teenager, seeing the power of this young man's fist with his own eyes, he did not have that sort of courage again.

To have no sense of shame is something that needs incredible strength to support it!

"I understand." Li Muyang's face showed an expression of even more difficult to accept it. His eyes glaring coldly at Zhang Tianyi and said: "I'm sorry, you didn't save your life. "

"Big brother, big brother——Luo shop owner, hurry save me, your son is going to kill, he really is going to kill—-"

"Muyang——" Luo Qi cried aloud.

Li Muyang turned around, the redness in his eyes color diminished in intensity and a warm gentle smile emerged on his face. His eyes showed kindness——Yes, this was what Luo Qi felt when she came into contact with his eyes.

He is not like her son anymore, but instead more like an elder who pitied her.

“Out of the way.” Li Muyang said softly.

Li Muyang punched out.

Pu——

The sound of flesh and skin being exploded could be heard, and then Zhang Tianyi’s body disappeared into the air.

His body, his flesh and his blood and bones all vanished. Just like they had never existed before.

At the corner of the street, in front of a baked sweet potato stall, an old man who was eating sweet potatoes heard the noises, the movements of his hand peeling the sweet potato came to a halt, then he could not help but cry out in a low voice: “The art of the peerless metallic body. That child was able to destroy the body and incinerate blood without leaving the slightest trace behind——”

He pondered for a moment and lightly shook his head.

“No, it’s not similar. It’s not the ‘The art of the peerless metallic body’. ‘The art

of the peerless metallic body.' is the most precious treasure of the Taoist arts. Taoist martial arts carry a taint of no desire and the Taoist doctrine of inaction. The punch right now was full of killing intent, it showed violent force and was reeking of blood, the smell was excessively strong—-its seems more like devil's power. Relying solely on brute force, yet he was able to achieve the powerful result of 'The art of the peerless metallic body'. What is this child background? "

"It seems that things are getting more and more interesting." The black robed-old man left a few coins on the table, then bent his back and walked in solitude on the empty street.

——-

——-

Just as Yan Bolai was working, the cherry tomato plant on the table suddenly swayed slightly, then a tiny fruit fell onto the table, rolling over onto the paper he was writing on.

Yan Bolai picked up the small fruit and glanced at it, then placed it back into the pot. He then pushed the eye of the copper beast on the pen container on top of his desk.

Hua——

The 'Tiger Growling on the Mountain' painting separated into two, in the middle of the wall revealing a dark hole.

A man wearing a black robe walked over and stood in front of Yan Bolai's desk and said respectfully: "I told someone to test him. That child has concealed

himself very deeply and has extraordinary power. One punch, and he unexpectedly was able to control the wind and clouds. In particular, his last punch was even more wonderful; when he destroyed that body it had the imposing energy of the Taoist ‘The art of the peerless metallic body.’”

Yan Bolai placed down the brush in his hand, held the cup and took one sip. He then asked: “How is he compared to Xiangma?”

“I’m afraid he’s probably slightly better than young master.” The man in black said in a deep voice.

When the servants say ‘probably slightly better’ they actually mean ‘ far superior’. Yan Bolai understood these situational words.

Yan Xiangma frowned slightly while asking: “Are you able to determine his origin? ”

“No.” The old man said with a face of regret: “I listened at close range, his moves are simple and straightforward, and didn’t show any techniques. Also I’m not able to determine which sect he is. He simply relies on brute force to hurt his enemy. ”

“That is strange.” The kingdom character Yan Bolai wrote revealed a faint smile, he then continued: “He only knows how to use brute force to attack, yet he was able to get such a good assessment from you? He’s even ‘slightly better’ than Yan Xiangma who’s in the middle stages of the high mountain ——-who is he? ”

“I don’t know. ”

“If he’s intentionally trying to hide his identity, then why would he go to the extent to kill when he encountered such a small setback? If he weren’t trying to hide his identity, then why would this kid hide his real power? Could it be that he only has supernatural strength and there’s nothing to worry about? ”

The man in black did not answer but the master already has an answer in his heart.

“He’s naturally born with incredible strength, but his intelligence is worrying.” Yan Bolai said sneeringly. “Xiangma just recently helped him conceal his identity, hiding him in a safe place. But we just threw out a few fish and he impatiently jumped out once again. Is this jump good or not? Xiangma’s painstaking effort may have been wasted. ”

“Master is right. Li Muyang suddenly showed his power like that, then that means even those people who were behind this and who originally thought young master killed Crow will direct their attention onto him again. They will think that young master did that just to be in the limelight, so he used his authority to snatch off Li Muyang’s credit and reward, at that time young master also specially sent over one thousand five hundred gold coins, that could count as clear evidence——Li Muyang is once again entangled in a situation of treacherous currents. ”

“The most important thing is that Xiangma is not involved in this anymore.” Yan Bolai sighed lightly. “This kid does not know what’s important and is not aware how dangerous it is, just because of loyalty he could go as far as stepping forward and make himself as a target. If those people were to make a move, they certainly will not leave him until he dies. Yan Xiangma is only at the lower realms of cultivators training, if he encountered an enemy how could he protect himself? ”

“Master can discern the intricacies behind this situation with a wave of your hand. That Li Muyang———”

“Now that he’s exposed to the blazing sun, what demons or monsters he’s hiding inside his body——maybe other people would be more interested than us? I alone can’t understand, so why not let other people also take a look together. ”

Chapter 47: Petty Uncle!

Inside the deep and serene courtyard, branches from the Jacaranda tree piled high up as if was hiding the sky and covering the earth. Bunches of flowers flourishing with excitement looked like they were a beautiful picture hand-painted by masters of the country.

A young maiden wearing a white dresses sat below the Jacaranda tree with a pot of green tea and an ancient scroll in her hands. Leisurely passing the beautiful holiday.

'History of Tiandu' written by the historian Mr Sima Jian described the sequence of events happening in the capital of the West Wind kingdom. It includes political changes, economic development, interesting stories and even some ancient traditions——for example the scissors of Wang Mazi, Li Xiaodong's blacksmith, three bowls of strong alcoholic drink, as well as the red braised pork of Pin Xiang Lou.

Because there's a wide range of topics and the content is considerably mixed, it had became well-known. Some people find it new and some find it unusual. While some people look at it as a gourmet food travel map and some even study it carefully to see if there are any hidden meanings.

Cui Xiaoxin simply does not care about all of these things, she purely just read for reading. To people who read, it is needless for them to look into the past and to ponder over the future, but to just enjoy the meaning of the words expressed or the story behind the words. This is the most relaxing thing for them.

"Xiaoxin, have some fruits." Wearing a white Chinese-style dress, aunt Cui Xinci carried a bowl of fruit over to the table.

Although she's originally a Northern woman, she fell in love with the style of clothing in the South. She especially liked this dress; when she wears it, she displays a unique charm and beauty.

"Thank you aunt." Cui Xiaoxin stood up to greet her.

"Sit down. Sit down." Cui Xinci said. "Xiaoxin, it's not that I want to say this to you, but in the courtyard there's only us two and no outsiders are here. Moreover, even if there are outsiders so what? In other words, we are both woman of the Cui family, the same blood flows within our body, we are a real family——why are you always so polite your auntie here? This way it looks like we're not close, I don't like it."

Cui Xiaoxin chuckled out loud and said: "Fine, in the future when aunt brings me food to eat and drink, I will act indifferent and won't rise to greet you. Instead I'll pick it up and eat, lift it and drink. I will order you about like an old servant."

"If you were like that, I will be delighted. Yan Xiangma treats me like this and do I still not regard him as my son? " Cui Xinci gracefully sat down at the seat opposite Cui Xiaoxin and said: "Xiaoxin, you're reading again?"

"'History of Tiandu'." Cui Xiaoxin placed down the book onto the table and said: "To understand the local conditions and customs of Tiandu. It's been several years since I left, so I feel somewhat unfamiliar to the city. But thinking carefully, even before in Tiandu what did I know about the city? I always thought that by living in the city, I can tour around all the time; however, the more it is within reach, the more you're unfamiliar with it and the more you're not even

willing to understand it. Thinking about it, I indeed know nothing about it at all. ”

Cui Xinci face was filled with distress as she said: “Xiaoxin, in a few days, you will return to Tiandu. Aunt really can’t bear it. If it’s possible, I really hope you can stay in Jiangnan, stay by aunt’s side. Tiandu is great and the Cui family household is also big, but life isn’t as comfortable and relaxing as it is over here. It is a like a giant whirlpool over there, everyday many people are engulfed into it, aunt is scared that you may also be swept in—-“

“Aunt—-” Cui Xiaoxin held Cui Xinci’s white and soft hand tightly and said: “I also want to stay in Jiangnan, I want to stay here with aunt, these past years in Jiangnan was the most happy and relaxing time of my life. But, you know Tiandu better than me and you understand the Cui family more than me——Would I be allowed to stay?”

“Ahh, being born in a wealthy family will always need to bear various responsibilities. This time aunt can’t come with you to the capital, I’m sure you can take good care of yourself. Yesterday uncle said that to let Xiangma come with you to the capital and ask brother to help arrange a job for him, he said he’s always loafing around in Jiangan. This is not the right path-for him—-your temper is good, you’re quiet and calm, and you don’t stir up trouble everywhere. But Xiangma makes people headaches, when he goes to Tiandu, who know how much trouble he will cause?”

Cui Xiaoxin patted aunt on the back of her hand and said: “Aunt, men should be determined. Uncle is just doing this to ensure his son becomes a dragon in the future. If you don’t let him out and polish up, and instead just stay around you receiving your care, then how can he accomplish anything? Did uncle not also become a general after fighting in the battlefield? And later he assumed the responsibility of being the lord of the kingdom’s Jiangnan city? ”

“Besides, cousin is not a stupid person. I really admire his courage. In Tiandu he has the care of both the Cui family and Yan family, and Jiangnan city is the prosperous area of the kingdom. As the son of the lord of Jiangnan city he has powerful backing. Is there anyone who can bully him? Think about it, it’s always cousin bullying other people, when was he ever bullied? ”

“My son is traveling a thousand miles. Of course, as a mother I will be worried. No matter what I do, I can’t stop worrying. ”

“If you are really that worried, then come back for the Spring Festival. You haven’t been back to Tiandu in a few years right? ”

“Yes. That would be good, this spring I will be back for the holidays, whether Yan Bolai agrees with it or not, I will go—-” Cui Xinci said firmly.

“Good. I’ll wait for aunt at Tiandu.” Cui Xiaoxin said with a smile.

“Yes, where did Xiangma go again? How come I haven’t seen him in the house at all today? ”

“I also haven’t seen him. He went out early in the morning, saying he’s going to visit a friend. ”

“Not to find that Li Muyang again? I find it strange, what’s so good about that Li Muyang. Before you were losing your mind over him, every day you went over

there regularly. Now you're back to normal but your cousin is not normal—-What does that kid even look like? I heard he's incomparably hideous? ”

The corner of Cui Xiaoxin's mouth rose slightly, revealing an attractive angle.

“Incomparably hideous is too exaggerated, it's just that he had a severe illness as a child, so his skin is a bit darker. He looks—-very normal. ”

“Really? That's still not good enough for our Xiaoxin.” Cui Xinci said with a faint smile: “I think that jade tree of the Song family is much better, when he was young he already received that name, after that I followed your uncle back to Jiangnan and I often heard news about him. He's actually even more outstanding. ”

The smile on Cui Xiaoxin's face slowly disappeared, she then said: “Aunt, about this matter—-I'm afraid no one cares about my wish? ”

“You're not willing? ”

“I also hope that someone would ask me this question, 'are you willing?'”

“Xiaoxin——” Cui Xinci held Cui Xiaoxin's hand firmly and said: “You also know about our family background. However, if you really don't agree with it, then be sure to speak up. No matter what, aunt will always support you. ”

“My persistence and aunt's support——can it really change fate? ”

“——-”

Perhaps Cui Xinci felt that the subject of conversation is too serious, she then smiled and said: “Let’s not talk about this, it’s still early. And you’re also going to university soon, there are still years of time. Our Xiaoxin is so excellent, you will definitely be able to find a good match. ”

Cui Xiaoxin smiled faintly without saying anything, but in fact will aunt herself not also feel guilty for saying this? Back in the days was she also not outstanding? Did the silver spear teenager that she liked not also entrust her with his heart? However, in the end, she eventually married the lord of Jiangnan city Yan Bolai?

In the end it is best to accept your fate. Just like her Cui Xinci; is she not also living happily and peacefully ?

Seeing Cui Xiaoxin’s smile, Cui Xinci knew she had seen through her mind. In front of this young lady, Cui Xinci suddenly became somewhat flustered.

“You continue reading, aunt will not disturb you anymore.” As Cui Xinci spoke, she got up and walked towards the front yard.

Cui Xiaoxin lifted her head, facing the sea of blue flowers and said with regret: “Tiandu don’t have jacaranda, but unfortunately I can’t bring you over there.”

“Miss if you like, I can just ask people to dig a few for you to take home.” Ning Xinhai came over from the corner. As if he had been waiting over there all along.

“I heard that the South’s mandarin orange isn’t as sweet anymore when moved to the North, transplanting the jacaranda plant over to the North, I fear

the flowers won’t bloom as beautifully over there, right? As people who love flowers, then why make it so difficult for them? ”

The cool breeze brushed past, leaving behind vast flower petals.

Cui Xiaoxin reached out her hand; a tiny flower petal fell into her palm.

Several of these little blue elves fell onto her hair and clothes, letting off a tranquil and calm fragrance as if they were reluctant to part with this pure young lady.

“For uncle NIng to suddenly come over at this time, did something happen? ”

“Miss haven’t been out these days, but you’ve instructed me to secretly protect that classmate Li. A few days ago it was still safe and sound. Since Crow’s attack, everyday Li Muyang’s stayed in and study, I hardly ever see him go out. ”

“Unexpectedly something happened today. A group of hooligans came to Li Muyang’s mother Luo Qi’s bakery demanding the management fee for this month. This sort of thing happens, so I didn’t pay too much attention to this incident initially. ”

“Later, Li Muyang came over, and he suddenly transformed into a violent state inside the bakery and started killing wildly. It wasn’t until then that I became aware that the situation wasn’t right——-I fear that someone deliberately set up this bait for Li Muyang? ”

Cui Xiaoxin expression turned gloomy, then muttered to herself as if she understood the truth behind this. She then said with a cold smile: “My uncle

really is petty.”

048 – Frighten baby

Hearing the young lady directly speak out the truth behind the scenes, Ning Xinhai immediately became on the alert. Any sign of disturbance in the surroundings, any mere rustling of leaves in the wind, as well as the sounds of birds and insects could not easily escape from his notice at this moment.

“Miss, be careful with what you say—-” Ning Xinhai quietly advised against speaking. If these words were heard by the Yan family — especially that old butler of the Yan family who looks thin and seemed as if he could be blown away easily by a gust of wind. But the truth is Ning Xinhai had no confidence to exchange over thirty moves with him before things become troublesome. And it will definitely affect the relationship between the Cui and Yan family.

“I’m just being honest, what’s the harm?” Cui Xiaoxin does not care at all; she said this with a smile: “Uncle dotes on his son, without any effort he can overthrow all my arrangements. He is suspicious of Li Muyang but he has no real evidence to prove the exact identity of Li Muyang. So he just exposes him and draws everyone eyes on him——with so much attention on him, Li Muyang must no longer be able to hide?”

“But did he think about my feelings? Li Muyang saved my life before. Last time Crow came to kill him, it was all because of me that he got involved—-he saved my life, yet he is abandoned on the roadside like weed, being trampled on and can suffer life-threatening dangers at any anytime. Is this fair to Li Muyang? ”

“Miss, you should have known better——” Ning Xinhai comforted her in a deep voice. “In the eyes of some people, there is no justice and fairness, only exchange of benefits. Discarding an unrelated person to save his son, this a normal thing for them—-they don’t even need to pretend to hesitate.”

“Yes. Just because we are surrounded by these kinds of people, so I am thankful——thankful that Li Muyang dashed over even in such a dangerous situation and used his weak body to block Crow’s sharp blade—-”

“Now Li Muyang is not weak anymore.” Ning Xinhai said without any concern: “Miss, all along you won’t let me delve into Li Muyang’s real identity. But you should know that the power he’s hiding is indeed astonishing—-He consecutively blocked Crow’s attack twice, the second time he even killed Crow with just his strength. This time Lord seriously intends to throw him into the exposure of the sunshine, but if he doesn’t have that kind of strength, if he’s unable to withstand a single blow— then it will be difficult for the Lord to succeed in his plan right?”

“Li Muyang has never asked about my identity.” Cui Xiaoxin said.

“But he does not know the identity of Miss.”

“Do you think Li Muyang is an idiot? He’s not. At least during this period, he made me realise that he’s not an idiot, but is instead very clever. I have a skilled master like you as my guard, and every day I travel in a luxury car when I visited him. I’m a relative of the Lord of the Jiangnan City and the son of the city’s lord is my cousin——do you think that’s not enough for him to be suspicious of my identity? But he has never asked me before. ”

“Because he did not ask about the identity of Miss, so you do not allow me to pursue his identity? ”

“I have to be fair towards him.” Cui Xiaoxin said. “He understands me and I understands him. What’s the benefit of knowing too much? It will only bring trouble to oneself.”

“Since things have come to this step, what are you planning to do Miss? ”

“The danger of the Cui family cannot be borne by someone else.” Cui Xiaoxin said in a deep voice.

“Miss——” Ning Xinhai quickly dissuade her: “Miss, you must not go against the lord of the city; as soon as you make a move, he will know what you have in mind. We will return to the capital soon, why make him unhappy? ”

“Yes. We’re going back, so we just throw all the risk and responsibility over to a guy that has nothing to do with it—-I can’t do something like that.”

“Miss——”

“Where’s Yan Xiangma? ”

“When I came back, I saw young master and his fleet of cars heading over in the direction of Li Muyang’s house. ”

Cui Xiaoxin pondered for a moment and said: “It seems that we don’t have to do anything. Uncle’s wisdom is like the sea, but there will naturally be someone that can contend against him. ”

“Miss you mean young master Xiangma? ”

“He is the best candidate.” Cui Xiaoxin sighed lightly. “This is unfair to him, but he is a man of the Yan family after all, and also a man of the Cui family—-he is my older cousin, it’s only right for him to protect me. If there is a chance, I will

definitely repay him back for this favour. But regarding Li Muyang—-why must we pull an outsider into our own business?”

“I understand. ” Ning Xinhai answered in a low voice.

“Make sure cousin is safe.” Cui Xiaoxin said. “The unrest of Tiandu is finally beginning to affect Jiangnan city. After some time, most likely we will also feel the harsh atmosphere, right? ”

“Yes. Miss. ”

Ning Xinhai left without any sound, just like when he had arrived.

Cui Xiaoxin walked up and down in the middle of bushes with deep furrows of concern between her eyebrows.

Uncle is adding fuel to the fire behind the scenes; perhaps he has his own intention.

What does he want?

Prosperous land, the role of the city’s lord, could this no longer satisfy his appetite?

This time Xiangma cousin is heading into the capital. Was there a hidden reason behind it?

———

———

Yan Xiangma has indeed gone to look for Li Muyang, because by finding Li Muyang he is able to catch a glimpse of Li Shinian.

He had never seen a girl like her; she looks cold and indifferent and ridicules him. When she looks into his eyes it's as if she's looking at a pile of shit. This is completely different to previous girls who after realising his status or seeing his handsome self rushed forth like moths flying into the flame.

What's most important is that she is cute and beautiful, her eyes are full of life and her every movement is youthful and energetic, seeing her will make you happy and all your troubles disappear.

Yan Xiangma is furious, he came to visit Li Muyang but Li family's door is tightly closed and no one is at home.

"Young master, why don't we come back tomorrow?" Li Dalu comforted Yan Xiangma by his side in a low voice.

"Come back tomorrow? Then I came over here today for nothing?" Yan Xiangma swayed his fan and said furiously.

"Then we wait at the door?"

"Wait? Who am I? I am the son of the lord of the city, the most famous young

master in Jiangnan city; you want me to wait? When have I ever waited for someone? ”

“Young master what should we do? ”

“Go find them, go and find them for me. ”

“Yes, master. I’ll ask around.” Li Dalu gestured his hand and all the brothers scattered about.

“Young master, you take a rest for a while in the car? ”

“No. What should I do if my clothes are wrinkled? ”

He had woken up early in the morning to get dressed and groom himself. He had worn the most expensive and most dashing clothes there was just to let Li Shinian see him at his best.

The outcome was hat Yan Xiangma is left disappointed.

Very quickly, his subordinates have scouted out information to report: an accident occurred at Li Muyang’s bakery so Li Muyang had hurried over to help.

After listening to this Yan Xiangma was extremely happy, since Li Muyang ran over to the bakery to help, then that means when Li Shinian comes back he can be alone with her——he has more time and space to show her his extraordinary looks and profound knowledge.

However, on second thoughts, this won’t work. If Li Shinian knows that their

store is shut because of an accident and he did nothing, how would she regard him?

At that time he won't even be comparable to dog shit?

Thus, Yan Xiangma waved and said: "A friend is in trouble, I naturally have to go and help. Let's go. "

However, Yan Xiangma's help was too late, because when he arrived the disaster has already been solved and the City's corps have already surrounded the bakery.

The corps wearing the kingdoms' uniform surrounded Li Muyang/ Their swords were already drawn from their sheaths, arrows already knocked on the bow string. Even a slightest mistake could turn this into a fierce fight.

Yan Xiangma was slightly terrified; this disaster is more serious than he thought it would be.

He rushed inside towards the bakery with his underlings, the soldiers tried to intercept but he whipped them on the head with his fan and yelled: "Open your eyes and see who is Yan Xiangma——"

Li Dalu arrogantly pulled out a token, after each soldier had clearly seen it he then proudly hid it away.

All the soldiers saluted and made way, while Yan Xiangma swaggered in with his henchmen.

“Li Muyang——-” Seeing Li Muyang’s eyes flashing with red, Yan Xiangma was slightly shocked. This is a sign of his transformation, if it is not properly controlled then most likely not one person will stay alive.

“What happened?” Yan Xiangma turned around and shouted loudly at the captain of the army.

The captain recognises Jiangnan city’s famous hedonistic young master, he respectfully dashed over and answered: “Young master, a murder occurred here; this kid injured and killed several people, we came to arrest him——-”

“Injured and killed? Which of your eyes witnessed it?”

“Young master, I received a report——”

“Report? Who reported? ”

“That person has left already———–”

“How do you handle a case? Are your eyes blind? Is there any justice in Jiangnan city? Are there any laws?” Yan Xiangma pointed at the captain’s nose and scolded loudly.

“Young master, I—What did I say wrong? ”

“As the witness of this case, I saw it with my own eyes—-these hooligans on the floor came rushing into the store trying to kill and demanded us to take out

our wallet——They obviously came for me, they wanted to kill me——”

“Young master, did you not——-just force your way through? ”

Pa——

Yan Xiangma once again drew out his fan and scolded: “Young master, I, had an upset stomach, so I went out a bit. I could have just walked away, but I couldn’t let a righteous and courageous man suffer and be wronged by you jerks, so I returned. ”

Yan Xiangma pointed at Li Muyang and said: “If it wasn’t for his brave struggle and for risking his life for me, I would already————”

Yan Xiangma’s eyes reddened, he patted his chest and said: “You do not know how dangerous it was, it nearly frightened a little baby like me to death——”

049 – Good for nothing son!

“But young master——”

Yan Xiangma drew out his fan, hitting the captain on his head and said: “But what? What? You’re trying to say that young master’s life is not worth anything right? ”

“Young master, I did not mean anything like that.”

“So you’re saying I’m lying?”

“I don’t dare to.”

“Since I’m not lying and you don’t think that my life is not worth anything, then why do you have such an attitude towards my savior? ”

“I——-I——”

“This hot blooded teenager protected the store and the customers safety without any regards to his life, risking his life to fight; he can be called as a hero, a role model of the kingdom. Should this kind of person not be reported to the lord so he can receive a reward, and become an example for the thousands of young people? Yet now you pointing your knives and arrows at him, forcing him to receive punishment for the crime of a murder——-Did a dog ate your conscience? Have your sense of justice been eaten by a dog? ”

“Young master, I——”

“Put away your weapons.” Yan Xiangma thundered.

Without any choice the captain waved his hand helplessly, and after a ‘ click ‘ sound each soldiers inserted their sword back into its sheath, lowered their bow and also sighed a breath of relief at the same time.

When they were facing Li Muyang, their eyes came into contact with his blood-red eyes. They had no psychological superiority at all but instead felt like they were being watched by some kind of beast, their lives in danger constantly.

They had a very clear feeling – if they obeyed their superior’s command and rushed forward to arrest the criminal, then most likely not one person would survive——the entire army would have been wiped out by this criminal.

Thinking about this, they were especially thankful that the lord’s son Yan Xiangma barged in and disrupted everything. Although his style of handling matters is quite stupid but this time it actually saved their life.

Yan Xiangma came close to Li Muyang and quietly asked: “Are you alright? ”

The redness in Li Muyang’s eyes began to fade, he shook his head and answered: “I’m fine.”

“That’s good. Don’t say anything and let me handle this.” Yan Xiangma said.

He walked in front of the soldiers, pointed at the men in black lying on the floor with severe injuries and said: “You take a close look at them, these asshole wanted to hurt me, I also heard they planned to kidnap me——this was a premeditated crime. I will report all this to the city’s lord, you better lock them

up in prison and interrogate them. See if they have other accomplices and why they tried to kidnap me – for my money or for my good looks ——”

“Young master, we did not want to kidnap you——” A man in black hurriedly shouted. They already know that this guy in flamboyant clothing has powerful backing behind him. If the soldiers followed his orders and placed them into prison, they would be subjected to torture in order to extract a confession. Then at that time a kidnapping charge will most likely be placed on their heads and their lives cannot be guaranteed to be safe any longer.

Before the man in black finished talking, Li Dalu already walked in front of him and accidentally stepped on his throat——It was unknown he had walked, just how could he step right onto someone’s neck?

As a result, the man in black looked like an emasculated donkey, desperately screaming but no sounds echoed out.

Yan Xiangma was pleased with Li Dalu’s performance. Even this dog stupid servant had times where he was clever. His years of education on him were not completely wasted.

“Look at their faces, each of them is evil and horrible; one glance and you can tell they’re bad guys——” Yan Xiangma pointed at the men in black while talking. “I’ll leave the rest to you, you won’t disappoint me, right? ”

“Young master——”

“A friendly tip: as the famous hedonistic young master of Jiangnan city, I can do anything. ”

“Yes, young master.” The captain of the corps stood upright. “I know what to do.”

“I like dealing with smart people. What is your name? ”

“Jia Qiang.”

“By standing on the same side as young master me, you will become greater in the future.”

“Thank you, young master. ”

Yan Xiangma waved his hand and said: “Quickly take those evil men away. Even seeing their vicious appearance makes me feel a bit scared——”

“Yes.” Jia Qiang gestured his hand and the soldiers pounced forward like wolves and tigers, carrying away the men in black on the floor.

Jia Qiang saluted at Yan Xiangma and said: “Young master, I will leave now. ”

“Go ahead, you know how to write the report right? If you need me to say anything, don’t be polite, eradicating these bullies and kidnappers is the duty of every citizen of Jiangnan city——”

“You are Jiangnan city’s biggest bully.” The captain Jia Qiang silently disagreed and cursed at him in his heart.

Of course, even if he had ten times the courage he would not dare to speak out these words.

“Thank you young master, if every citizen of Jiangnan city has this spirit of sacrifice and the sense of ownership like you, then it will be most likely that we will not have any security problem at all? ”

Jia Qiang waved his hand and rapidly left with his group of subordinates. If he carried on with such perfunctory words, he might even throw up on the spot.

When the soldiers were all gone, Li Muyang was finally able to relax and lower his guard.

Yan Xiangma patted Li Muyang on the shoulder and said: “Cousin don’t—— don’t look at me with those eyes, okay? It’s as if you’re looking at a bad guy. ”

The red clouds within Li Muyang’s eyes vanished, his face apologetically said: “I’m sorry, I’m too sensitive. ”

Li Muyang walked to the corner and supported his mother up from the flour and asked with care: “Mum, are you okay? ”

“I’m fine, Muyang——-” When Luo Qi looked at her son there’s still an unsure feeling. This young man in front of her, is he really my son? When did his son ————— become so powerful? “

Also, when his eyes were wrapped in redness as he injured others, Luo Qi felt

unfamiliar and scared.

This was completely different to the Li Muyang she knew; she had never seen such cold and ruthless eyes on his son.

“Mum——” Li Muyang’s voice was hoarse, he felt his mother’s hesitation and nervousness, and he also felt his mother’s resistance. When he reached out to help her, she subtly avoided him. This is the person closest to him, the person he loved the most in the family, but even she looked at him like that? Then how would others regard him?

Li Muyang felt extremely hurt.

Li Muyang wanted to explain, but he does not know how to explain himself.

Because even he does not know what had actually happened.

Could it be just as Crow had said-he really had became a monster?

“Muyang———” Luo Qi reached out, holding Li Muyang’s hand tightly and said in a firm voice: “No matter what, you are Li Muyang, you’re my son———”

“Mum, I’ll always be your son.” Li Muyang said with his eyes brimming with tears.

“Well, you obviously are my son, my good son. If it wasn’t to save me, then you wouldn’t——hurry over——” Luo Qi said comfortingly.

The pastry chefs inside the bakery were supported up; they just suffered some

outside injuries and are under no serious risk. Xiaoting also rushed over to Luo Qi's side and asked: "Sister Qi, are you alright? "

Her face watched Li Muyang with adoration and said: "Muyang is really impressive. Today it was all thanks to you, otherwise, I and Luo Qi sister——-"

She couldn't continue with what she wanted to say. If it weren't for Li Muyang, Zhang Tianyi would have ruined her innocence.

Li Muyang understands Xiaoting's meaning, he is also glad that he has this ability. If he were the same useless trash teenager, then seeing something like that he would be burning with rage but if he dashed forward he would only be instantly kicked away?

Under that situation, his mother will try to save him no matter what and possibly have to sacrifice even more.

Thinking of this possibility, the knot in Li Muyang's heart suddenly disappeared.

He doesn't care what kind of monster he had transfomed into anymore, he only hopes he has the power to protect his family from any danger.

Luo Qi walked in front of Yan Xiangma, bowed deeply and said gratefully: "Yan young master, this time it was all thanks to you for saving our family, giving us a new lease of life ——-"

"Auntie, don't say that. "Yan Xiangma hastily declined and said smilingly: "What new lease of life. I didn't do anything and did not see anything. When I

arrived Li Muyang had already handled everything——-”

“Yan young master, you saved Muyang.” Luo Qi said very seriously. “If it wasn’t for your help, Muyang would have been taken away by the corps. If he was found guilty, then that will be an even bigger disaster for our family——he is just a child, he is just a student who only just finished the university entrance examination. If something happened to him, not only it will ruin his future but his life also can’t be guaranteed. Isn’t this giving us a new lease of life? ”

Yan Xiangma pondered for a while then continued: “Auntie, if you say it like that, I can’t refute——but you don’t have to keep it in mind, leave this favour for Li Muyang and Li Shinian to remember. Later, let’s see if there’s an opportunity for them to return this favour. ”

Li Muyang stared at Yan Xiangma and asked with a confused expression: “Why did you come here? ”

“I came to your house to find you to——discuss some things. But your door was tightly shut. So I told Li Dalu to ask around, as a result we heard that your store had an accident. After hearing the news I was extremely worried about what actually happened to your bakery? So I came over here instantly.”

“Thank you.” Li Muyang said gratefully. “I troubled you again.”

Yan Xiangma waved his hand and said: “Don’t thank me so quickly, we still don’t know who should thank whom.”

Li Muyang’s expression looked slightly stiff as he asked: “What does that mean? ”

“Nothing. I just meant that since we’re brothers, you don’t have to carry the word ‘thank you’ on your lips all the time——since you’re all fine now, then I should head back. ”

Yan Xiangma waved his hand and said: “I won’t help clean up. See you soon. ”

When he finished talking, he walked towards the outside with his group of henchmen.

Li Muyang watched Yan Xiangma’s shadow as he walked away, rays of light flickering in his eyes.

“Muyang———” Luo Qi called aloud. She reached out to tidy Li Muyang’s rumpled clothes and said with distress: “You suffered so much, mum won’t allow you to get bullied ever again——”

“Mum——-” Li Muyang’s weak body leaned against his mother and hissed: “I should be saying this to you—–I will never let you get bullied in the future. Leave the responsibility to protect you to your good-for-nothing son.”

050 – Hiding from the Lady!

Fortune and misfortune are two buckets in the same well.

Li Muyang has become smart and also become powerful; it is a blessing.

However, besides the changes occurring within Li Muyang's, there were also many other things that had happened all of a sudden in their home. These matters have destroyed Li family's years of peaceful life in a short frame of time.

After hearing of the accident that happened in the bakery, Li Yan did not say a word and just took out his spear from the corner and headed out for revenge.

Luo Qi grabbed him and shouted: "Li Yan, where are you going? "

"To kill." Li Yan deep voice thundered.

The eyes of the habitually silent man turned blood-red and in his heart was an overwhelming sea of hatred. Before he and the thugs of this street never bothered each other. In order to guarantee his family's safety, he did not try to stand out in Water Willow Street and was willing to pay management fees along with the other shops to Zhang Tianyi every month.

However, today Zhang Tianyi has gone too far; he dared to hurt his wife and his son. He shall face the wrath of his weapon until he dies.

Li Yan is from Tiandu's Lu family; he was Miss Gongsun Yu's trusted aide. It is precisely because of this relationship that allowed him to marry the beautiful Luo Qi.

As the old saying goes: even people in front of the Prime Minister's door was a third grade government official. Li Yan's heart naturally has an air of arrogance as he was once part of the Lu family. Those rogues dared to approach and bully them; he could no longer tolerate it anymore.

"You don't have to go. " Luo Qi said aloud, trying to stop him. "Everything has been settled. "

"How was it settled? "Li Yan asked with a puzzled expression.

Luo Qi pondered for a moment then answered: "Because of Muyang's friend Yan Xiangma; he's the son of the city's lord. Young master Yan helped us settle this issue. "

Li Yan is suspicious and asked aloud: "Did you guys suffer any pain? "

"We're fine——" Luo Qi answered. "Li Yan, I want to discuss something with you. "

"What?"

"I want to take a trip to Tiandu. "Luo Qi said.

"——-Because of Muyang? "

"For Muyang." The image of Li Muyang's eyes wrapped in red clouds and punching someone to death once again appeared in Luo Qi's mind. She knew

very well that Li Muyang has changed. He became difficult to manage.

She does not know if the change is for better or worse, but the most important thing is that she knows she is unable to help Muyang.

They can't help, so they have to send him to a place where someone can help him. It is only by doing so that when something like this happens again or when Li Muyang is involved in an even more serious accident, could it be resolved in a timely manner.

There are things that parents enjoy and don't like; however, their preference will always change according to their children's joy and anger.

For the purpose of educating his son to become a person who is worthy of respect, ancient philosopher Mencius's mother had also moved houses three times. For his own son, Luo Qi is also willing to put aside her years of hatred and her insistence in not contacting them.

"You should know very clearly, back then they weren't willing to have this baby ——" Li Yan said with a bitter face: "Back then they swapped the children without anyone noticing, but now if we bring Muyang over, would they admit it? If they admit it, is that not the same as hitting their own face? How would they explain Li Muyang's origin to the people outside? And how would they explain the relationship between the Lu family and Li Muyang? "

Li Yan understood his wife's intention; after experiencing what happened today she is worried that she can't protect Li Muyang's safety.

"If they are not willing to admit Muyang is their family, then to Muyang——is

that not even more hurtful? In that case, we might as well not let him know——so instead, he can live a simple and happy life. ”

“You can be assured that starting tomorrow, I’ll will stay around you two. If someone dares to come up and bully you then I wouldn’t leave it at that. ”

“Li Yan———” Luo Qi wanted to speak but then hesitated.

“Believe me, I can do it.” Li Yan said with a dignified face. Since he had spoken such words, then when his wife and family is in danger he will definitely risk his life for them.

Luo Qi looked at her husband’s determined expression, while her mind is still in a mess, she doesn’t even know how to begin.

“Have you not already sent a letter to the Lu family?” Seeing that a worried frown was still on his wife’s face, Li Yan said comfortingly: “I’m sure they will give you an answer soon. ”

“Do you think———-” Luo Qi nervously held her husband’s hand tightly and said: “They would be willing to help, right? ”

Li Yan shook his head and said: “I do not know——I wish they would. Blood is thicker than water, they won’t——”

Li Yan did not continue. If the Lu family cares that blood is thicker than water, then back then they wouldn’t do such a cold and ruthless thing?

The couple looked at each other without saying anything and only sighed.

After Li Muyang came home, he headed to sister Li Shinian's room and chatted for a while with her and watched her do her homework. He then returned to his room, lying in bed lost in thought.

When Yan Xiangma returned home, his mother was drinking tea in the living room.

"Mum, is dad back? " Yan Xiangma asked.

"Your mum is sitting right here, but the first thing you ask when you come back is where your dad is?" Cui Xinci said. "Why? You don't look too good; don't tell me you're stirring up trouble again and needs your father to come forward to solve it? Which young master did you bully? Or which general's daughter did you hurt? "

"Mum—"

"Fine, go to the study to find him then. As soon as he came back he headed into the study and did not even say a few words to me. Well, I can't count on you men at all, only Xiaoxin is considerate, unfortunately she has to go back, I don't know how to live the rest of my days———"

Yan Xiangma came over and hugged his mother, then grabbed the tangerine on the table and said: "Mum, eat some fruit. "

"You brat, you want to block my mouth with fruit, right? "

Yan Xiangma stood at the door of his father's study, but then hesitated to push open the door.

Finally, he just gave up, and walked towards the West Wing.

Yan Xiangma gently knocked on the dark door; the door was then pulled open from the inside. Cui Xiaoxin stood at the door dressed in a white nightgown; without makeup she still looked beautiful and elegant. She glanced at Yan Xiangma and asked: "Cousin, it's so late——what is it? "

"I heard———-" Yan Xiangma showed a bitter smile then continued: "I'm going to Tiandu with you.

Cui Xiaoxin looked pensively at Yan Xiangma and asked: "Cousin you don't want to come? "

"On the contrary. "Yan Xiangma said with a firm expression: "I can't wait. "

————

————-

Tiandu. Lu Mansion.

A woman wearing a dark purple dress embroidered with large Begonia sat on a stool by the window. Her facial features are like a painting and she has an elegant demeanour, looking gentle like the spring water.

On the left hand side of the woman was a small table with a brown leather bag on top, the bag was just sent over by a waitress and contained some documents.

She had read each word contained in the documents very seriously, so much so that after reading she used her fingers to carefully touch each word. Even until now the astounded feeling she felt is still difficult to put into words.

After calming down her mood, she then carried the bags and walked toward the front yard.

Inside the yard are office buildings, rock gardens, ponds and pavilions; each step there is countless beautiful sceneries. But the woman just looked up at the path and was not even distracted in the slightest.

The woman came to a stop in front of a classical building; on the building are three elegant characters ‘Illustrious Virtue building’. The person who wrote these letters was Chu Xianda, the current monarch of the West Wind Kingdom.

At the entrance of the small building, there were men wearing ordinary green garments guarding outside but they displayed an imposing manner. Inside,were even more guards.

Seeing the woman coming over, the two men wearing green shirt bowed and greeted her at the same time.

“Welcome Madam.”

The woman smiled slightly at them, then asked with a smiling face: “Where is Qingming? ”

“The Governor’s is working in the study.” The bearded man Yue Feilong replied with a smile. “Do you want me to go in and report? ”

“No need to trouble you two generals. “The woman declined, her smile was gentle and charming, but gave an unquestionable toughness. “I’ll head inside myself. ”

Yue Feilong wanted to stop her but was pulled back by the lean man next to him.

“Why? I can’t go in? ” The woman was still smiling, but her smile showed a little hint of danger.

Li Pingan hoped to smooth things over and said: “Feilong is afraid the governor will be disturbed when he’s dealing with matters of the state. However, since the lady wants to see the Governor, then of course you can do so anytime; we don’t dare to stop you———”

The woman nodded and walked towards the building.

After the lady had walked away, Yue Feilong complained in a low voice: “Old Li, you forgot what the Governor said? He said he wants to focus on work, no one is allowed to come in. ”

“How would I not remember the Governor’s words? But old Li——you’re unclear of the situation, are you not aware of the Governor and the lady relationship? Husband and wife wants to have a little reunion; the Lady wanted to surprise the Governor, what are you doing getting between them? “Li Pingan said with a smile.

“Old Li, I think the Governor’s order is intended for the Lady———” Yue Feilong glanced around the surroundings and whispered. “He hoped that we would stop the lady from coming in. ”

“How is that possible? “Li Pingan is shocked. “Why would you have that suspicion? Could it be that the Governor——is having an affair? ”

“Li Pingan, you old military lump, if you continue to tarnish the Governor’s good name, I will draw out my sword and fight you with all might——Are you not aware of the Governor’s character? How would he be unfaithful to the Lady? I was just suspicious——-have you not noticed? Recently the Governor has been busy attending social events during the day and when he returns at night he immediately heads into the study ——I feel that the Governor is hiding from the Lady———————”

“Now that you mention it———yesterday the Governor had finished his matters earlier in the day, but he suddenly said he wanted to eat dim sum at Fu lai restaurant, then he brought us all to Fu lai restaurant and we spent an afternoon there——Before, when he returns, does he not hurry into the courtyard? ”

“I heard that after men reach a certain age, their capacity will decline——-Do you think the Governor is not capable in that aspect, so he’s avoiding the Lady on purpose? ”

Ack!

Yue Feilong drew out his sword and shouted in an angry voice: “Li Pingan, do you want me to sever your dog head with my sword?”

051 – Father and son dilemma!

Gongsun Yu pushed open the door to enter; in front of her was a hectic scene.

Several books were spread across the table, and under the table were a disarray of discarded papers.

A man was bent over at the desk, scribbling away rapidly; the beautiful calligraphy he wrote seemed to leap out of the page in a neat row. It was as if each and every character was a little spirit filled with life.

Gongsun Yu stood in the doorway for a moment, then realised her arrival did not disrupt her busy husband at what he was doing. She then deliberately asked aloud: “Qingming are you busy? ”

Lu Qingming’s wrist paused, took a glance at his wife and said: “Xiao Yu, what are you doing here? Go back and rest. I still have some work to finish; after I’m done I’ll come over. The Kingdom is in troubled times. The border areas are making every effort to handle everything, but we still can’t afford to slack off at all. Even if I, the newly appointed Governor, has returned to Tiandu, there is still no way I could set aside the matters of the provincial areas——there’s too many matters, you will have to bear with it. “

Not only did Gongsun Yu not leave, but she turned around, shut the door and said: “Qingming, I want to speak with you.”

“Fine. You can speak as much as you want with me. Go back first, then in a while I’ll come to the room to see you——”

“I want to say it now—-in your study.” Gongsun Yu’s eyes watched her

husband with a gentle expression; but her attitude was exceedingly stubborn and firm.

Lu Qingming placed down the writing brush in his hand and his handsome facial features revealed a smiling expression. The southwest wind ruffled his skin but did not blow away his warrior spirit. He pushed the chair, stood up, and smiled: “Okay. What do you want to say? ”

Gongsun Yu handed over the leather bag and said: “Take a look at this first.”

“What is it?” Lu Qingming received the bag and asked as he untied the string on the bag.

“Guilt and remorse.” Gongsun Yu said in a calm voice. But her eyes were slightly red, a sign of her extreme emotions.

Lu Qingming’s expression went slightly stiff, then instantly return back to his usual self, pretending not to see the strange expression on his wife’s face and said with a smile: “I’m curious, what is it that’s so serious? ”

Lu Qingming unfastened the bag and took out the pile of papers from the inside.

“Huh?” Lu Qingming glanced over at Gongsun Yu with a puzzled look and said: “Exam papers?

“The examination paper of the Kingdom this year.” Gongsun Yu said with a calm face.

“Interesting. Perhaps I need to sit this test?” As Lu Qingming spoke, he had already begun to read the several papers in his hand.

Lu Qingming’s has a wide accumulation of knowledge; without any difficulty he had already finished reading all the text.

He inserted the papers back into the leather bag and said: “He could have gotten a higher score if he carefully checked over some of the questions. He dropped points at the places where he shouldn’t have, but instead the difficult questions were answered very well——this student is gifted, he should be attending West Wind University, right? Or other famous universities in the Kingdom? ”

“You know who he is.” Gongsun Yu stared at Lu Qingming as she stated.. This was not a question, it was a statement.

“What does that mean? “Lu Qingming once again flipped through papers and inspected again, then said with a smile: “Li Muyang. A very strange name. Why would I know who he is? ”

“I know you know who he is.” Gongsun Yu stared at her husband without blinking and said: “You lied to me sixteen years ago and now you still want to lie to me? Lu Qingming, if you dare lie to me once more, I will never forgive you in my entire life. ”

Distress can be seen within Lu Qingming’s eyes and his expression displayed the colour of pain as he said: “Xiao Yu, what do you want me to do? ”

“I want him to come back.” Gongsun Yu said in a firm voice: “I want to bring him back. ”

“That is impossible.” Lu Qingming shook his head. “Sixteen years ago, we sent him away, and now can we no longer can take him back—-Xiao Yu, you should know very clearly. That is simply impossible. What reason can we use to take him back? How do we explain his existence? ”

“Lu Qingming, he is my son, he is our son——Back then you all thought he has a disability, he was a trash, and were afraid that he would not have survived or would become a deformed child and he will humiliate the Lu family. And that if he live for another day, then the Lu family will be the joke for another day——”

Gongsun Yu desperately clenched her fists, holding back her tears. She gritted her teeth and said: “But look at him now. He is not disabled, not a trash, and not a deformed child——instead, he’s much smarter than a lot of people and he works much harder than many people. He should get a better education; he should get everything he deserves. He should return to the Lu family, to his parents——I will explain everything to him, so that he does not hate us, so that he does not hate the Lu family. Then, we will use the rest of our lives to atone for the sins we committed.”

Gongsun Yu stared at Lu Qingming and said each word carefully: “Therefore, I want him to come back.”

“Xiao Yu——” The veins on Lu Qingming’s forehead bulging out and within his eyes was strong intractable agony. “These days I have been hiding from you, I was afraid you and I would argue, worried that you would bring up everything in front of me and ask me to give you a answer. I admit it I know who he is. I’m even more concerned about his existence than you—-This exam paper I have seen it already. I also know you will have surely seen it. ”

“I also want to collect him; just like you, I also want to take him back. I don’t need you to explain, I’ll personally explain everything to him, I would like to atone for my mistakes—-I don’t know if he will forgive me or not, I just want to stand in front of him and tell him everything. I want him to know what exactly happened that night. I want to let him know that he should have had a completely different life——”

“However, we can’t do that. As you said, back then we sent him away because we were afraid he wouldn’t survive or even if he survived he would become a deformed child, we were worried he’ll be laughed at, be criticised by our political enemies——if we take him back now, how do we explain his existence? How do we explain our relationships? How do we explain where did he go? The scandal that happened sixteen years ago, after sixteen years of fermentation and brewing, will possess an unbearable stench —-if we announce to the outside world now that Li Muyang is an abandoned child of the Lu family, then what will happen to the reputation of the Lu family in Tiandu? Furthermore, would the Lu family have any face to stand up in the Imperial court anymore?”

“Moreover, the situation in Tiandu now is complicated. Father is attacking for the position of the Left government minister. Lu family is in a vortex, countless people are watching us attentively, every single member of the Lu family is particularly cautious. If there’s any noise leaking out at this crucial moment——-Xiao Yu, if we bring him back at this time, then is that not the same as putting up a target on our bodies? ”

“This is the reason that you refuse? ” Gongsun Yu stared at her own husband with extreme disappointment: “Just like the reasons you abandoned him sixteen years ago, it is utterly absurd.”

“Xiao Yu, give me a little more time. Now we know he is living happily, and

there’s also a high possibility that he will be coming to Tiandu to study. When that time comes he will be right under our noses, we can properly look after him then. Wait until there’s an opportunity, we will bring him back and we can reunite——How does that sound? ”

“Lu Qingming———”

“Xiao Yu——”

“I don’t even want to wait another day. ”

“Xiao Yu——”

“I want him to attend West Wind University.” Gongsun Yu said aloud.

“Fine.” Lu Qingming immediately agreed: “I’ve read his papers, if there isn’t any accidents, then without a doubt he can attend to West Wind University.”

“I want to make sure he goes to West Wind University.” Gongsun Yu said.

“Fine.” Lu Qingming nodded and said: “I can guarantee that. He will definitely be admitted to West Wind University. If they do not allow Li Muyang to study in West Wind University, I will personally go to and tear down West Wind University’s entrance and use it as firewood.”

“Lu Qingming, I hope you won’t disappoint me this time.” Gongsun Yu’s eyes swept across her husband with a deep expression, then turned and walked towards the outside. ”

Lu Qingming's emotions were extremely agitated, walking up and down in the study.

"Guards." Lu Qingming shouted loudly.

Guard Li Pingan knocked on the door and entered, asking: "General, is there something you want me to do? "

Lu Qingming is a high-ranking general that fought on the battlefield; both Li Pingan and Yue Feilong were members of his army. Later he transferred to a civilian post and became a provincial Governor, but the people around him still likes to call him ' General '.

"Is the head of family in?" Lu Qingming asked aloud.

"About that——I'll go find out?" Li Pingan said in a low voice. But he thought to himself that whether or not the head of the family was present was something that he won't know and also wouldn't dare to know.

"No need." Lu Qingming waved his hand and said: "You may leave. "

"Yes. General." Just as Li Pingan left the room, he looked at Yue Feilong with a meaningful glance and said: "The lady is certainly not satisfied with General's performance; the lady is angry and General is frustrated———"

"Li Pingan———" Yue Feilong drew out his sword once again. "

Before the two of them even have the time to fight, Lu Qingming walked out carrying a document bag.

Just as the two of them were trying to catch up to him, they heard Lu Qingming's orders: "You don't need to come."

Lu Qingming arrived at the left side of the yard, seeing the old butler coming to greet him, he asked: "Where is father? "咩? "

"Master is at a meeting in the study." The butler said with a smile. "Young master, do you want to come back later? "

"I'll sit here and wait." Lu Qingming glanced at the butler as he answered him. "

Butler took a glimpse at Lu Qingming and said: "Young master, please go to the tearoom for a cup of tea. "

"Thank you."

Lu Qingming sat at the tearoom and waited for half an hour, the butler then came to ask him to come into the study.

Lu Qingming entered, seeing his father sitting inside like the towering high mountains, he said in a low voice: "Father, I want to bring Muyang back."

052 – Raising to fight a wolf!

The head of the Lu family, Lu Xingkong. His appearance was intimidating and he has the authority to overturn the imperial court. He was known as the ‘Sand Eagle’ within the political and government circles.

The Sand Eagle is a rare species found in the desert; they are greedy, violent, and aggressive. They feed on carrion, but from time to time they plunder fresh ingredients, altering their personal taste. Lone wolf, wild hare and even troops and convoy are his target of attack. Once you are locked on as their prey it would result in a situation of them not leaving you until you die.

They will swoop down and take you into the air unless you killed them.

Comparing someone within the political and government circle to an animal like the ‘Sand Eagle’ is absolutely not a compliment. Subordinates are afraid of you, superiors are vigilant against you, it could even be said that every step you take is extremely difficult and dangerous.

If this title came out of an ordinary person’s mouth, then most likely their dead bodies will soon be floating around the moat of Tiandu.

However, these words came from an old man of the Song family who is known as the ‘eye of the stars’. Even if Lu Xingkong is unreasonable and overbearing, he still can’t do anything about it.

The Kingdom’s left minister position was vacant, yet the Royal Chu family of West Wind has remained silent on this matter. Every family and clan were desperately fighting for this position; in terms of prestige and experience Lu Xingkong is the strongest competitor. Now the entire imperial court and the

ordinary people are all watching carefully to see if his path in competing for the position of left government minister is a success.

If he is successful, then the Lu clan will become a military general family to a government minister family in one step. His family which had a military background for thousands of years will become the head of the government officials; it is a qualitative jump in position.

If he is successful with the position of government minister, it will be an enormous honour for the family and a safeguard for the family for hundred of years. Otherwise, even if they were to continue with Lu Xingkong's position as the leader of the military officers in the country, just how far could he go? Suppose that all the elites in the family died fearlessly on the battlefield, then how could the Lu clan continue on? How could they maintain their riches and honour?

This was a hurdle to Lu Xingkong, but for the Lu family it is even more of a hurdle.

Therefore, the entire Lu family including Lu Xingkong are making every effort to help fight for the left government minister position. This was the reason that Lu Qingming, the provincial Governor was returning to the capital to help campaign for his father.

Lu Qingming is busy, but Lu Xingkong doesn't even have a moment to spare. Everyday he meets with people constantly, colleagues, old friends, and subordinates—-Now is the time to stand or pretend to stand. Each individual performance is under the watchful eyes of thousands of people, no one dares to relax and be careless.

“Father, I want to bring Muyang back.” Lu Qingming stood in front of his father and said in a firm voice. ”

Father’s workload is heavy, and the pressure he’s under is comparable to the mountains, but he is still full of energy, his complexion is red and his skin is delicate; he looks as if he is a thirty-years-old adult at the prime of his life.

Lu Qingming knows, the reason for this is his father’s cultivation training has already reached the high stages of the withering glory. HIs thoughts decide life or death, causing plants to wither or flourish, every year was withered glory.

Father right now was in a state of being reborn; it was also the moment when his energy and vindictiveness are at his peak.

The battle for the position of the left government minister was something he had vowed to obtain.

“Hmm?” Lu Xingkong lowered his head looking at the document in his hand, asking: “Who is Muyang? ”

“Father—–”

“Who is Muyang? “Lu Xingkong asked again. His voices sounded steady and calm, just like he really does not know the significance of this name.

But Lu Qingming is very certain he knows – he knew better than any one of them.

“Father, he’s my son, my son who I sent away sixteen years ago——-” Lu Qingming pushed the brown leather bag to the front of Lu Xingkong and said: “Father, we’ve made a mistake. ”

Lu Xingkong’s glance swept across the leather bag; he had no intention to open it at all.

He picked up the leather bag and tossed it into the fire stove by his side, which is used to boil water for tea and to burn various documents. The stove in Lu Xingkong’s study is constantly burning all year round.

Whoosh—-

The kraft papers caught fire and then swiftly turned into flames. The examination papers burst into blazing flames and the water on the stove echoed with whimpering noises.

After the leather bag had finished burning, the water on the stove is also boiling.

Lu Xingkong took the kettle, began to make tea and said: “We’ve already sent him away, how can we collect him back? ”

“Father, we can’t continue on with our mistakes.”

Pa—

Lu Xingkong slammed the top of the wooden table; the small table made from

thousand-year hardwood produced buzzing trembling sounds.

“Do you want to slap my old face?” Lu Xingkong thundered in a furious voice.

“———”

“On Xiao Yu’s side, you’ve also wasted a lot of breath, right? ” Lu Xingkong’s face softened slightly, then pointed across at the mat and said: “Sit down and have a cup of tea, soothe your throat. ”

Lu Qingming listened and sat down with his back straight as he looked at his father and said: “Given the circumstances back then——we thought he would not survived, we thought that even if he could survive, he would become a deformed child. Our Lu family only has one son in this generation, so we were worried that the existence of the sole eldest grandson of the Lu family would affect the confidence the outside word has in the Lu family———but now the situation is different than what we thought. He is not a waste; on the contrary, he achieved many things that are impossible for many children. ”

“I’ve seen his university entrance exam papers, I believe fathers have also read it. Almost not one question was difficult for him———From this it is evident how intelligent he is and what a hardworking youngster he is. Look at Tiandu, the younger generation of the officials’ families drink excessively, visits prostitutes and only talk about horse racing, how many of them genuinely practise martial arts and study properly? Our Lu family has a child like him; does father not feel proud? ”

“So———” Lu Xingkong placed a cup of tea in front of Lu Qingming and said: “Since he’s that outstanding, then why must he come back? ”

“Father?”

“If he stays in the Lu family, would he not be the same as those who drink excessively, visits prostitutes and only talk about horseracing, not caring about the affairs of the world and ultimately becoming an abandoned useless person? ”

“But he has grown up, he’s already sixteen years old, very soon he will be coming to Tiandu to study——-don’t tell me we are allowing him to drift around in the outside? ”

“In the outside it is drifting, then what is it at home? Captivity? ”

“Father, Xiao Yu she———-”

“The view of a woman.”

“———-”

“In the sense that sixteen years ago we were worried he will become a trash so we abandoned him, but sixteen years later we discovered that he is not a waste, so we want to bring him back. Do you even know of that child’s temperament? If it were you, what would you think? Will you accept our arrangement and return? ”

“Given the current situation, right now is the crucial time for the Lu family to fight for the government minister position. If we bring him back at this moment, how would we explain our relationship with him? There are too many resolute people in this world and too many smart people, even with only tiny traces, they

would still be able to infer the truth——-If the case that happened sixteen years ago had been known to the world, do you think I would still have the face to stand up in the imperial court? The West Wind Kingdom nation emphasises most on filial piety, what we're doing is seriously violating the spirit of the country. At that time, even without any political opponent attacks, we will have no choice but to suffer a crushing defeat and withdraw——Let alone the government minister position, even the military officer role will be difficult for us to protect. What path should the Lu family go from there? Have you ever thought about this? ”

“————”

Seeing his son looking down, Lu Xingkong sighed softly and said: “I also feel your pain; however, at the present time we still have to act in the interests of the present situation. Let that child called Muyang live happily outside. A Sheep in captivity is merely just a piece of white meat on the table, but a grazing sheep outside in the wild is capable of fighting with a fierce wolf. ”

“Yes father, I understand———” Lu Qingming replied in a clear and deep voice. “Xiao Yu hopes he can study at West Wind University.”

“Haha, fine———” Lu Xingkong smiled and nodded. “This is a small matter, you can decide it by yourself.”

“Yes, father.” Lu Qingming bowed to express his thank, then took his leave. “Father should also rest early.”

After Lu Qingming had left, the old butler pushed open the door and walked in.

“Sir, could it be that Ms Yu knows something?” The old butler asked respectfully.

“Xiao Yu is an intelligent kid, these sort of matters could only be concealed for a while. How could we hide it from her for a lifetime?” Lu Xingkong got up and walked towards the courtyard. The kingdom’s Tiandu sakura flowers are blooming beautifully; the branches are covered with sakura petals, emitting a faint scent that makes people feel happy and comfortable.

“How is the investigation of Crow? Do you know which family was behind it? ”

“Crow is dead, the line is also cut off.” Every wrinkle on the old butler’s face seemed like it is hiding wisdom. “But, going all the way to Jiangnan to attack a girl, this method of attack is a bit low———That powerful star cultivator from the Song family is about to die, the Song family already occupies the important right government minister position, so it impossible for them to be eyeing the left government minister position. In that case, this fierce battle is only between our Lu family and the Cui family——Cui family’s young lady was attacked by an assassin, therefore this basin of dirty water will naturally be poured towards our Lu family. ”

“Fortunately, Cui family’s young lady is fine; otherwise, if this became a huge matter, words would spread throughout Tiandu and our Lu Family’s reputation will somewhat suffer——-even if they don’t have any evidence, but gossip is a fearful thing. At other times, we could not care about this, but it is very obvious that this was a chess piece placed by someone for the purposes of fighting for the position of left government minister——-placing it down at this time will certainly have a substantial effect. ”

Lu Xingkong opened his mouth, laughed, and said: “Who would have thought that a stupid move made sixteen years ago would actually help our Lu family pull

out a nail after sixteen years. Tell me, are the heavens protecting the Lu family? ”

“Yes, the head of the family is a lucky person, the left government minister position will certainly be master’s.” Seeing his master cheerful mood, the old butler also laughed along.

“But we know very clearly that Crow is not a chess piece placed by us. Someone wants to pour dung over the Lu family’s head, then sever his head and toss it into a pool of manure——-” Lu Xingkong said with fierce and ruthless eyes. A general that remains undefeated after hundred battles, the first person of the army to come out from a mountain of corpse and sea of blood. Once he is enraged, it resembled the sound of thunder.

“Yes, Sir. I’ll send more informants to Jiangnan.” The old butler bowed and responded, and did not dare to show the slightest indiscipline.

“That child is really unfortunate.” Lu Xingkong looked at the delicate sakura flowers blooming in the courtyard, his face revealing a pondering expression.

“Did Qingming young master not say to let the child attend West Wind University? When he comes to Tiandu, the head of the family can always take care of him——-if he has the Lu family looking after him, then his future can’t be too bad?” The old butler said some reassuring words beside him.

“No, Make him go to Starry Sky Academy.” Lu Xingkong said with a grave and stern expression

“Master—” “

“Go arrange it.” Lu Xingkong said, his tone not allowing any objections.

053 – Dirty my eyes

Many people have had such dreams before: being born into a wealthy landowning family and becoming a hedonistic young master. You could do nothing all day long apart from bringing servants to bully innocent young woman on the streets.

It was unclear whether Gao Qiu did many good things in his previous life, but his dreams have came true one after another.

Being the youngest son of Tiandu's magistrate family, his status and background is superior when compared to the landowning families. Therefore, Gao Qiu never wasted his resources and innate skills ——Whenever he has time he would bring his bunch of servants to look for beautiful women who tempted his heart.

Tiandu is the capital of the kingdom; East Market Street is one of the major business and trading streets. Tides of people rushed back and forth, and endless streams of horse and carriages passed by, reflecting a bustling centre of prosperity.

Along with his servants, Gao Qiu marched up and down the streets, taking fruits and grabbing desserts from the stalls; whatever he took is stuffed into his mouth. Those that suited his appetite are devoured, those that don't match his likings are thrown against the boss's face which he then scolded them for their poor quality of goods. He also forced them to get out of his sight or he will beat them up every time he sees them again——

As a matter of fact, Gao Qiu had just took a bite of a pear but realising the pear was too tart to even swallow, he smashed the remaining half of the pear against the fruit shop owner's head and said in fury: "You dog thing, what pear are you

selling—-You call this a pear? This is dog shit. Hurry leave my sight, get out of Tiandu, get out of the capital, don't let me ever see your face again. If I see you once I will beat you up once——"

These were the words he said to each business that did not please him.

When Gao Qiu spoke, his sleeves are rolled up as if he is about to destroy their shop.

"Young master—young master———" His henchmen Gao Fugui next to him hurriedly discouraged him, whispering: "Master told you to not stir up trouble again, otherwise he will certainly break the legs of me and the servants—-Young master, will you kindly, for the sake of your pitiful brothers, forgive that old thing? "

"I'm causing trouble? I'm just enforcing justice on behalf of the heaven——you taste it, try it; are the pears he sell edible? Can you eat them? Such poor quality fruits yet he dares to sell them on the street, all of them should be arrested and locked up in Tiandu's prison——"

While Gao Qiu spoke, he forced the half-eaten pear into Gao Fugui's mouth.

Gao Fugui did not dare to resist, while taking a large bite of the pear he pointed in front at a graceful figure and said: "Young master, the target is here ——look ahead, it's the type of girls you like. "

Gao Qiu raised his head and took a glimpse, in front of him was indeed a graceful woman wearing a long pink dress.

His eyes lit up, tossed the pears to one side and shouted loudly: "Dog—-

brothers, get started.”

Three minutes later, Gao Qiu had already blocked the path of the delicate and pretty young woman.

“Beautiful woman, why become a thief?” Gao Qiu asked as he waved the fan in his hand, displaying the elegant appearance of a son of nobility. As if he is not a fatty with a belly full of intestinal fat.

He looked at the young lady with a face of regret, shook his head and sighed: “If you are short on money, you can always ask me. If you don’t tell me how would I know you are short of money? But stealing is bad—-a good girl becoming a thief, this really——should be arrested and locked up in the prison to learn your lesson? ”

“I did not——” The woman’s complexion turned extremely pale, desperately shaking her head, but was unable to explain herself: “I didn’t steal. I didn’t do anything, you threw your purse into my basket——”

“Hahaha—-” Gao Qiu raised his voice as he laughed loudly: “You’ve got to be kidding me? How can my purse run right into your basket? My purse did not fall into the basket of others but instead ran right into your basket? How come your purse did not run right into my pocket? This explanation, won’t work on me.”

Gao Qiu walked towards the watching crowd with a face of discontent and cupped his hands: “Ladies and gentlemen, everyone come and judge this for me, would there be such a thing—-my money was stolen by her, but she said my purse ran towards her. It can’t be that a purse also has long legs so it can move by itself?”

“Pei—-” Someone at the back of the crowd scolded: “The son of Gao official wants to harm other young women again. ”

“It’s not like he hasn’t done such things before—–”

“Placing his money bag into someone else’s basket, slandering them as thieves, then bringing them to Tiandu’s mansion to do whatever he wants——-”

——-

“Who?” Gao Qiu raised his voice and scolded. “Which dog is talking behind the crowd? Come to the front; stand here and confront me—-”

As expected no one dared to walk to the front to confront him, who would dare to offend the son of Tiandu’s magistrate family?

Gao Qiu looked at the maiden with a face of distress and said: “I have protective feelings towards fair maidens, but I can’t condone criminals—-young lady you have to take a trip to Tiandu’s mansion with me, let young master I enlighten you, hope that after you and me——spend a night together you would turn over a new leaf and not carry on in this wrong path—”

“I’m not going.” The young woman’s thin and weak body shrink back and screamed in tears:” I’m not going, I know who you are——help me, help me——”

Gao Qiu is angry; he is infuriated.

He felt his character has been insulted and questioned.

He ordered the woman with his fan, said: “Since you want to do it the hard way; take her away.”

His voice lowered, the henchmen behind him dashed forward to arrest the girl who ‘stole his wallet’.

Pa——

A whip swung across.

Before Gao Qiu’s eyes were complete darkness and then his cheek were burning in pain. He felt that the right side of his face was almost being split into two halves.

“Who was it?” Gao Qiu screamed in a sharp voice. “Who just hit me? ”

Hearing Gao Qiu’s sharp screeching voice, his servants immediately stopped what their doing and gathered together to protect the young master.

“Who?” Gao Fugui was considerably loyal, rushed forward to shield Gao Qiu and shouted:”Who dares to attack our young master? Come and fight me Gao Fugui—-”

Pa—-

A whip slashed across Gao Fugui’s mouth. Drenching in blood, his skin was flayed open and his flesh was torn apart.

He covered his mouth with his hands as he shouted but the malicious words he wanted to say couldn't come out.

Gao Qiu's eyes browsed around the surroundings and then locked on his attacker.

It was a young lady, a beautiful young lady.

The most beautiful girl Gao Qiu have seen in all these years.

If he could marry such a woman, he would rather turn over a new leaf, abstain from eating meat, pray to Buddha, and would stop dallying with other young women.

Flawless like a painting.

She had the beauty of a concubine that would be renowned through history, an appearance like singing snow.

Her beauty can't even be described by thousands of words.

The maiden's purple long hair was tied back into a confident ponytail and she was dressed in white Chinese clothes and sat on a black fine horse. She condescendingly sized up Gao Qiu.

No, it seems she did not even took a glimpse of him. Throughout the never ending long street and the gathering crowd, not even one person is worthy for

her take a glance at.

Gao Qiu is a thoughtful and sensitive man; when he noticed that this woman did not even pay the slightest attention to him, he could not help but feel furious.

“What is your name?” Gao Qiu cupped his hands in salute, looked at the maiden on the black horse with a smiling expression and asked.

Pa——

The maiden flicks her wrist, the black horsewhip in her hand flayed towards Gao Qiu’s face.

Gao Qiu was not able to dodge at all; his left cheek endured another hit.

Both his left and right sides now displayed a red hole, looks quite balanced and funny.

“Maiden, if you have something to say then go ahead, no need to use violence ——-we are all polite people, if there’s something you’re not happy with about me then you can tell me directly——-”

Pa——

The maiden stretched her hand; it was the whip once again.

“Hey, do you hear me? Are you deaf? Are you a mute? ”

Pa——

“Do you know who my father is? You dare to hit me——-”

Pa—-

Gao Qiu’s face suffered yet another whip.

Gao Qiu began to weep.

He really is weeping, he felt sad and deeply hurt, and his face was burning with throbbing pain——just like someone had used a knife to slash across the flesh of his face.

Gao Qiu’s cheeks were streaming with tears, he raised his head to look up at the young lady in white and howled in agony: “Don’t think because you’re beautiful you can do whatever you want. I’ll tell you, when I’m praising you, you can do whatever you say, I’m fed up of you-who do you think you are——It’s bad enough that you hit me but you also won’t tell me your name. Isn’t that unreasonable? ”

Pa——

Gao Qiu’s face was flayed with the whip once again.

Gao Qiu's lied on one side and then suddenly flopped to the ground.

"You dare to bully our young master——-" Gao Fugui's mouth was dripping with blood, even his speech is not as clear as before, he pulled out a long blade from his waist and shouted: "Brothers, help me grab hold of this person."

The maiden in white glanced ahead; his pace in rushing forward slowed down substantially and then cautiously began to circle round at the horse's muzzle and returned.

He pointed at the woman and shouted: "Who are you, leave your name, wait for us to come to your door———"

"Lu Qiji." The maiden in white rocked forward in the saddle and the black horse clattered through the splitting crowd.

Gao Fugui was delighted and glad. He ran over to support Gao Qiu from the ground, proud of his achievements he said: "Young master, young master, I helped you ask the young lady's name, she told me her name is Lu Qiji———-"

Pa—

Gao Qiu slapped Gao Fugui's face and then one fist after one fist punched across, while yelling: "You dog servant, you deserve to be killed with thousands of blade——-Who the hell told you ask who she is? What do you need to know whom she is for? "

"Young master—-young master——" Gao Fugui clutched his head, desperately begging for mercy.

Behind the maiden in white were several similarly dressed young men and women wearing gorgeous clothes and riding on horses. They were of a similar age and their backgrounds were similar. The bright vigorous horses trotted through the crowd, receiving the admiration of the passer-by one after another.

“Son of Gao magistrate is becoming more ridiculous————comparable to a brutish rogue”. A young man wearing a black warrior suit and carrying a sword said with a faint smile: “Qiji are you not worried of dirtying your whip?”

“If I don’t whip him, he will dirty my eyes.” The maiden in white said in a cold and harsh tone.

054 – I’m not stupid anymore!

The Sun was shining brightly, and Spring was in the air.

The proud youngsters trotted through the middle of the street on their horses, as if the crowd on the streets was a river that naturally split into two for them.

They looked very imposing, like they were in the centre of the world, as if they were the people blessed by the heavens.

They are domineering, but not annoying; instead people admired them and even wished to become one of them.

The youngster with the sword who’s talking was called Chu Xun, a member of the West Wind Kingdom Royal family. His father was a prince who did not do much, but an idle prince is still a prince. Therefore, among all the people present here, his status is the most respected.

“However, that Gao Qiu is too annoying, if sister Qiji don’t hit him, I would have beat him up——” A cute girl with an oval faced chuckled. “However, if I whip him it won’t be as mighty and intimidating as sister Qiji. She did not even respond to one word he said. Seeing his hateful face, she flayed him with her whip——until he cried and fell on his knees, begging for mercy. ”

“Xiaoxing, it’s the difference in temperament—-Qiji is one of the three bright moons of the kingdom, you are one of the three pets of the kingdom, how could there be the same effect?” A bulky youngster wearing green said teasingly. It seemed like he liked this Xiaoxing girl; when he looked at her as he spoke, his eyes were filled with joy.

“Liu Long, you’re the pet, you’re a big black horse, big stupid bull—-so

annoying.” Xiaoxing did not like others calling her a pet, she said these words with evident discontent as she argued back. “

Although many people have gathered together, Chu Xun’s mind was entirely on the maiden in white, Lu Qiji.

He looked straight ahead, one hand holding the reins and the other hand holding a sword, keeping a cautious attitude.

“Qiji, Grandfather Lu is fighting for the position of left government minister. It’s in the bag, right?” Chu Xun said with a smile.

Hearing Chu Xun asking this question, everyone all turned silent, waiting to hear the gossip not known to anyone. It should be said that all the people present here are children of officials; from being exposed to politics from a young age, they more or less understand the current political situation. Lu Xingkong fighting for the left government minister position is now the matter that’s everyone is most concerned about in Tiandu, or perhaps even the entire Kingdoms’s social class is paying special attention to it. If Lu Xingkong, the leader of the military, is successful in the role of left government minister, then with both the military and political powers in his hand, just how powerful will the Lu family become?

As someone who enjoys the benefits of the country, if they were able to bring back some important news for their family or parents, is that not a great merit in itself?

“If Prince Han is willing to come forward and support him, then it is in the bag.” Lu Qiji said without any expression.

Chu Xun smiled wryly and said: “My father will naturally support Lu grandfather, but he also have some unavoidable difficulties himself. Lu grandfather wants to fight for the left government minister position, then of course the Cui family would be obstructing in every possible ways. But the most critical person is the old grandpa of the Song family, don’t know why but he never liked Lu grandfather, even giving him the name ‘Sand Eagle’——such a graceless title. Many people have said the old grandpa might not be able to persist for too long, but the royal family still majorly values his opinion. If the royal family attaches so much importance to his opinion, in that case there would be some bias. My father by himself is weak and powerless, he can’t influence the emperor’s final decision”

“The Cui family is obstructing, the Song family hates him and the royal family dislikes him, yet you say my grandfather’s attack for government minister position is in the bag? Chu Xun, what is your intention?” The girl in white words were sharp and she said this with disdain.

Chu Xun paused, then shrugged charmingly and said: “Look, Qiji is grabbing onto my mistakes again and mercilessly piercing me with a blade. People, do pay particular attention when you speak with Qiji. We’re not worried of rigid knives, but your soft spoken words can kill.

The crowd burst into loud laughter, immediately dissolving the embarrassment of Chu Xun.

“Never mind, let’s not mention the affairs of the nation. Although these matters are not that distant from us now, but we are still young and weak, and won’t have the power to affect any plans. Let’s talk about school instead; entrance examination results will be out soon. Qiji, you’ve decided to go to West Wind University, right? ”

“In this world, is there even one thing you can be certain of?” Lu Qiji pondered then said: “That person of the Cui family is coming back soon, right? ”

“I heard that Cui Xiaoxin enrolled to West Wind University, with her academic achievements this is definitely not a problem. Calculating the time, she should be coming back within a month? When she comes back, Tiandu will be even more lively—“A youngster wearing bright clothes matched with jade said with a flushed face.

“Before I heard that Wanxi likes Cui Xiaoxin—so it really is true—-Did you see how excited he was? Cui Xiaoxin isn’t back yet, wait until she comes back, would you even be able to speak to her?” Liu Long said teasingly. “

“Exactly. Cui Xiaoxin is coming back; our Tiandu will be even more lively and busy. Is Cui Xiaoxin a person or a group of people? She alone could be compared to half of the city’s population?” Xiaoxing said resentfully; she is Lu Qiji’s diehard fan girl. Among the three bright moon of the kingdom, her favourite is the cold and strong Lu Qiji, she does not even care about the other two. “If you like, then go play with her in the future.”

Wanxi scowled miserably and said: “I’m just saying, wasn’t it you who brought it to the discussion——”

Chu Xun laughed, looked at Lu Qiji and said: “Wherever you’re going, I will be going there too.”

With the status of his father, he can choose from any elite school in the kingdom. Besides, his ability is already outstanding within his generation; whether it’s his knowledge in literature or martial arts skills, he is still a leader of the younger generation of Tiandu. No matter which school he wants to go to,

that school will definitely welcome him.

What Chu Xun just said, is no different to confessing to Lu Qiji.

Wherever you go, I'll go with you; in any case I just want to be with you.

"As you wish." Lu Qiji's pony tail swayed from side to side as she charmingly swept her eyes behind and said: "You guys must also come. "

"Good, good." Xiaoxing who looked dispirited repeatedly nodded. She naturally will follow her idol; even if Lu Qiji were not willing she would desperately fight for this chance as if her life depends on it.

The others just smiled awkwardly and did not explicitly respond to Lu Qiji

They were not fools——Lu Qiji had used them as a cover to reject Chu Xun. To them it sounded euphemistic, but to this wounded youth, what is the difference of this rejection to other words like ' I don't like you ' and ' you're a good person?'

Chu Xun smiled, and took the initiative to say to the companions: "Let's stay together, the more the merrier. "

The atmosphere became harmonious once again, everyone continued to talk and laugh happily and loudly.

————

————

Knock knock knock——

Li Muyang gently knocked on the next-door neighbour's gate.

Kacha——

The gate opened, Zhao auntie stood in the yard looking at Li Muyang who was standing at the door, smiled and asked: "Muyang, what is it? "

"Auntie Zhao, my mum told me to give you some desserts to thank you for your help last time." As Li Muyang spoke he handed over the box of desserts. "Last time, if you did not come to our house to inform us, then who knows what will happen to the shop. This kindness our family will always remember, we don't know how to thank you, here is a box of desserts from us. Try it, if you like it, we will bring more over."

Zhao auntie received the box happily, but pretending to be courteous she said: "Muyang, why mention it? We are neighbours; according to the old saying: a good neighbour is also a distant relative. That was nothing. If something happened to our family, you will also run over to help right? Ptui, ptui, ptui! What am I talking about, we are all perfectly fine——Yes, is your mother alright? "

"She's fine, we're all fine." Li Muyang said smilingly. "Zhao auntie, who was the uncle who came to your house to notify you last time? We also want to thank him with a box of desserts."

"Why would I know his name——-" Zhao auntie suddenly stopped talking,

then nervously said: “What uncle? I only walked past your entrance and saw what was happening, so I urgently ran to your home to notify you——-”

“Zhao auntie, don’t worry, I don’t mean anything. I just sincerely want to thank him. If it wasn’t for the uncle’s help, my family would have faced a disaster?” The expression on Li Muyang’s face was simple and honest and showed no hostility at all. “Zhao auntie, if someone sees the uncle then please tell me. It doesn’t make sense to do good deeds and get nothing in return?”

Zhao auntie’s face revealed a distressed expression, then browsed around the surroundings and said: “Muyang, it’s not that auntie is reluctant to tell you, just that auntie really does not know his name. I was working in the shop, then a man dressed in black came in. He gave me a gold coin and said there’s an accident in your shop and told me to immediately come over to your house——-”

Li Muyang smiled and nodded: “he told you to find help, then you should have went to notify my father——-From Water Willow Street to Hubu Lane you would have past my father’s workplace. Why didn’t you go find him instead? ”

“That’s what I thought at the time. But that man told me to come find you in your house, he told me to be sure to inform your——-I didn’t think about it that much, just hurriedly came over———”

“He also instructed you to not tell others that he told you to come to my house for help, right? ”

“He did say that———” Zhao auntie nodded and said: “Muyang, how did you know? ”

Li Muyang pointed to his head and said in a sort of declaring tone: “Aunty Zhao, I’m not stupid anymore. ”

“—————-”

055 – Explosive Temper

Lu Qiji rode the horse back to the Lu mansion, where a seven or eight year old little boy came running over. Then, like a lackey he held onto Lu Qiji's horse rope, his chubby face looked up and whispered: "Sister, you're finally back? "

"Lu Tianyu, what are you doing sneaking about?"

"Sister, father and mother quarreled—-" While glancing around the surroundings, Lu Tianyu answered in a low voice.

"Hmm? Do you know the reason why? "Lu Qiji asked aloud.

Father is tolerant and mother is kind; their relationship is very good, they don't often get angry, let alone quarrel. This made her very curious.

"I heard that mother wants to bring someone back and father won't allow it—-Sister, who is it that mother wants to bring? It's just bringing someone back, why would father not agree? Oh, father said grandpa don't agree as well. Why would grandpa know of this matter as well? Is he not fighting for the position of government minister? Is he successful? Why would he have the time to care about these trivial matters?"

Lu Qiji's black pupils turned purple and her purple hair became even more beautiful, just like a pretty flower deity descending from the heaven.

"Lu Tianyu, shut up." Lu Qiji said aloud in a cold tone: "Do not say something like this again in the future."

“Sister, sister, what’s going on with you? “Lu Tianyu was so nervous he felt a shiver down his spine and his legs began to tremble. “Why are you angry? It’s not me who said this; it’s father and mother——”

“It doesn’t matter who said it. Do not say it again, and you must not spread this around——” The purple colour in Lu Qiji’s eyes suddenly flashed away and her voice become much calmer: “If I hear it again, I will whip you.”

Lu Tianyu is fearless, but he’s most afraid of his cold and beautiful sister.

When he observed Lu Qiji’s expression, she was serious and grave.

Then he glanced at the whip in Lu Qiji’s hand, it is indeed ice-cold.

As a result, he nodded repeatedly and said: “Sister, I understand, I will never utter these words again——sister, you’ve been practicing sword all day, you must be tired? Let me help you take your horse, you go get some rest inside.”

Lu Qiji also handed the horsewhip over to his brother Lu Tianyu, dismounted from the horse, and headed towards the small independent courtyard that she lives at.

Watching Lu Qiji walk into the distance, the little chubby Lu Tianyu held onto the horsewhip and whipped the black horse’s butt while scolding: “Your master bullied me, I’m going to bully you instead——”

The black horse is extraordinarily brave; after his butt suffered some pain, his hoofs naturally performed a self-defense movement

Thump—-

Being caught off guard, the horse’s leg kicked Lu Tianyu to the floor, making him fall flat on his face.

Lu Qiji heard the loud noise, instantly turned around and asked: “What’s going on? ”

Lu Tianyu lied flat on the floor, then after much struggle his chubby face squeezed out a tiny smile and said: “Sister, do I look like a frog? ”

As he spoke, he also imitated a frog’s croaking: “ribbet-ribbet”.

“Idiot.” Lu Qiji turned to leave.

After returning back to her courtyard, she shut the gates of the courtyard, and instantly Lu Qiji’s black pupil turned into a dark purple colour once again.

The violet-blue pupils looked like a strange monster.

She drew in the air with her hand, then a small mountain that looks more like a boulder flew over towards her.

Her right palm unfolded supporting the stone mountain and then rays of purple light wrapped around her palm. The mountain boulder incinerated into a handful of dust, disappearing without any traces at all.

“Li Muyang——-” Lu Qiji’s voice was ice-cold as she uttered this name. “Welcome to Tiandu.”

Knock knock knock—-

From the front door came the distant sound of knocking.

“Miss, lady invites you over.” The voice of a maid sounded from the door. “

Lu Qiji’s purple pupils disappeared within seconds, changing back to her black pupils as before just like a normal person.

“I know.” Lu Qiji said softly. “Tell mother I’m coming over.”

“Yes, Miss.” The maid at the door replied.

———

———

Just as Li Muyang pushed open the gate, sister Li Shinian was already waiting in the yard.

“Brother, what did you find out?” Li Shinian asked with a grinning face.

“About what?” Li Muyang said, pretending to be confused.

“Yeah right, don’t pretend.” Li Shinian rolled her eyes and said with disdain: “I have said already, before your butt even sticks out I know you want to shit ———”

“Li Shinian——” A flush of embarrassment rose to Li Muyang’s cheeks, this awkward incident from when he was young being exposed like this by his little sister, it really was quite embarrassing. He has now grown into a handsome and not-as-dark teenager——at least this is what Li Muyang thought.

We are all adults, why still mention theses old stories of butt and shit from when he was young——-It really was degrading.

“Oh! Oh! Oh! Li Muyang is blushing——Brother to tell the truth, this is the first time I saw you blush.” Li Shinian stared at Li Muyang’s redden face and said while smiling. “It’s weird, why is this the first time? Oh, I understand, it’s not that you haven’t blushed before, but just that your skin was too dark; even if you were blushing, I couldn’t tell. Now I can see clearly——that proves you indeed is paler now. Oh, you really turned much paler———”

“Li Shinian———-” Li Muyang completely has no temper towards his precious little sister,

“Fine, let’s talk about something serious.” Li Shinian stopped poking fun at her brother and said: “Tell me, why did you go bring cakes to Aunty Zhao? What’s your intention?”

“Last time we received her help, so I just want to thank her. I just brought her a box of cakes, its manners.” Li Muyang said with a smile. “

“Li Muyang———look me in the eyes.” Li Shinian aligned Li Muyang’s head, making his eyes face her eyes directly. “Do you think I’m stupid?”

“Not stupid at all.” Li Muyang shook his head. Whoever dares to say Li Shinian is stupid, they are the real idiot.

“But why is there an idiot in my eyes?” Li Shinian said. “

“That idiot———” Li Muyang revealed a wry smile and said: “You’re just a child, why ask so many questions? Study hard and make progress everyday. What was our deal? I go to West Wind first and then you will come over next year. Based on your academic record, isn’t this just a small matter for you?”

“I’m a kid, then how much older are you than I am? You won’t tell me? If you don’t tell me I’ll ask Aunty Zhao——-You were able to find out something, do you think I can’t? ”

Li Muyang let out a sigh and said: “I feel someone is targeting us. ”

“Targeting us?” Alarmed by this, Li Shinian asked: “Are they with that assassin?”

“Not sure at this moment.” Li Muyang replied in a deep voice. “However, they have bad intentions.”

“Brother, so what are we going to do? ”

“I’ll find a way.” Li Muyang looked fondly at her little sister Li Shinian and said:

“Don’t worry, it’ll be all right.”

Whatever happens, he will protect his family and won’t ever let them get hurt.

For that, he is willing to pay any price.

“Li Muyang———Li Muyang, I know you’re at home, hurry come and open the door for young master me——” Someone shouted loudly at the door.

Immediately hearing this voice Li Shinian became irritated and said: “That idiot young master is here again.”

Li Muyang laughed and joked: “Maybe he is here for you.”

“It seems he is here for you? Muyang and Xiangma [1], two animals put together makes a family——one black and one white, who dares say you two are not a pair I will get mad on the spot.”

[tl: [1] = Their names has the characters horse and sheep in it.]

“————”

“Li Muyang, hurry and open the door. I have someone important to discuss with you———“Yan Xiangma voice echoed over once again. “

“He is someone who helped us after all.” Li Muyang sighed, walked over to open the gate and said with a smile:” Yan young master———”

“No, no, no, don’t be so polite. Call me cousin, cousin—-we sound closer like this. I’m not a particularly cold or arrogant young master, although I’m born of noble birth but I’m modest and unassuming———” -”

Yan Xiangma looked at Li Shinian who was coldly glaring at him, his smiling eyes narrowed into a thin gap.

He waved his fan, charmingly walked into the courtyard and said: “Shinian little sister is also at home? Shinian, Shinian, every time I hear this sweet name it feels like my heart is being melted——-”

“Who is your little sister?” Li Shinian stayed on the alert, staring intently at Yan Xiangma: “Cui Xiaoxin is your little sister.”

“Yes, yes. Xiaoxin is my sister. You’re also my sister——your brother calls me older cousin, if you’re not my sister then who?” Yan Xiangma used his arm to nudge Li Muyang’s arm and said: “isn’t that right, cousin Muyang? ”

Li Muyang just felt he wants to hide his face with his sleeves; he is definitely the well-respected young master of the city’s lord, then why would Li Muyang have this sort of feeling of shame when he’s with him?

“At that time I was———possessed.” Li Muyang said helplessly.

“I think possessed by lustful thoughts? “Yan Xiangma glanced at Li Muyang with a meaningful look and said: “There is one thing that I don’t know if I should tell you——-”

“What is it? “Li Muyang asked.

“Xiaoxin is waiting for you at Sunset Lake.” Yan Xiangma said.

“Really? “Li Muyang was overjoyed.

“It is true.” Yan Xiangma said with a smile. Why would I lie to you about this sort of thing? If you go there you will know.”

Li Muyang turned around, hurriedly ran towards the outside, but after running two steps he immediately return back and said: “No, you might trick me——you should go with me. ”

“Li Muyang———” Yan Xiangma is truly infuriated by this fool. Grabbing his arm, he dragged him to the corner, lowered his voice and said: “I brought my cousin to your mouth for you, but you won’t even let me say a few words with your sister? Do you have a heart? Did the dog eat your conscience? ”

Li Muyang also had the same thought; Yan Xiangma brought his own cousin to him, then of course he should also give him and his sister some time to spend alone together.

However, doing so, he felt very uncomfortable.

And so, he looked at Yan Xiangma and said: “I’d rather use my conscience to feed the dog, I can’t let you stay alone with my sister——”

Li Muyang pulled Yan Xiangma by his arm and said: Come on, you come with

me. ”

“Brother———–” Li Shinian shouted aloud. “Xiaoxin sister is waiting for you at Sunset Lake, hurry go there. This idiot——young master, leave him stay with me. ”

“Shinian——-” Li Muyang was still somewhat concerned. “思念——-”李牧羊還有些不放心。

“Don’t worry. Could he eat me?” Li Shinian blinked her eyes, innocently smiled and said: “I also planned to have a discussion with him.”

Li Muyang nodded and said: “Alright. I’ll be right back.”

“My idiot brother——-” Li Shinian stamped her feet in rage and said angrily: “This sort of matter, a girl is not even worried, why did you urgently return back? Don’t be long-winded, hurry go.”

Li Muyang nodded and ran towards the direction of Sunset Lake in big strides.

After Li Muyang had disappeared into the distance, Yan Xiangma straightened his clothes and said with a courteous bow: “Shinian sister, Xiangma——-”

“Don’t Xiangma this, you smelly horse. You come out with me.” Just as Li Shinian spoke, she stomped towards the street outside of the yard.

“Hey, this woman———–” Yan Xiangma felt insulted, the feeling of being humiliated to death. “Why would someone like this person with such an explosive temper?”

056 – Sunset Farewell!

Yan Xiangma strolled closely behind Li Shinian, with a sweet smile on his face he asked: “Shinian little sister, where are we going?”

“Shopping.” Li Shinian walked swiftly along the street and answered him snappily.

“Hey, so we are on a date? Although we are developing a little too fast, but extraordinary people behaves more extraordinarily, both you and I are not ordinary people; if you want to hold my hand or kiss me in the middle of the street I also don’t mind.” Yan Xiangma said with a face willing to would do anything for love.

“Hold hands? Your left hand can hold your right hand. I pulled you out here shopping because there are many people on the street so you can’t make any advances towards me—-Who would want to stay alone with you in the yard? Do you think I’m stupid?”

Yan Xiangma stood still looking stunned, a pained expression like he’s been struck by a bolt of lightning: “You—-you doubted my character? How dare you insult— a young master’s integrity?

“I’m not even familiar with you, why can’t I doubt your character? If I believe you have integrity, I must have saw a ghost—-”

“Li Shinian, I can tell you, as Jiangnan city’s famous hedonistic young master, there’s nothing I can’t do. You insulted me, aren’t you afraid that I want revenge? ”

“What do you want? “Li Shinian glared at Yan Xiangma warily; if this bastard dares to mess around she’s already prepared to throw out her fist and then cover her chest screaming ‘sexual harassment’——Hmm, should her shirt collar be loosened a little? Would that be too shameless? She is a decent girl after all.

Yan Xiangma’s eyes ferociously stared at Li Shinian, swallowing saliva several times. Just as Li Shinian was worried if he would be full to the point of bursting with his own saliva, he finally said in a angry and harsh tone: “I seriously warn

you, don’t do it again. ”

“Idiot. ”

“Shinian——” Yan Xiangma once again pulled out his handsome and kind face, smilingly said: “Actually the reason for me to come over was——”

“What kind of person is Cui Xiaoxin?” Li Shinian asked aloud, interrupting Yan Xiangma.

“What?” “Yan Xiangma was taken aback for a moment. He was still thinking about how to express his feelings, but the topic had changed far too fast, making the situation somewhat unsuitable for him to do so.

“I want to ask you what kind of person is Xiaoxin sister?” Li Shinian asked aloud: “I know her background is not that simple, right? ”

“Yes.” Yan Xiangma nodded and answered.

Of course it’s not that simple, the Cui family is a clan that had a lot of weight within the political and government circle in the kingdom. Besides the Song family who has been standing for thousands of year and is known as the ‘family of imperial officials of West Wind’, that can suppress them, only the Lu family, the family of military generals for several generations could contend with them. Cui Xiaoxin, a direct line of descent of the Cui family and also as one the most outstanding woman of that family, how can her background be so simple? Even as his older cousin, he has to take good care of her and show consideration for her in every possible way. When his father talks to her he also has to treat her like a special person—-and not simply as a junior of the Yan family.

“Who is she?” Li Shinian’s footsteps came to a halt, blinked her big sweet eyes looking at Yan Xiangma, and asked with a nosy face.

“Why should I tell you? “Yan Xiangma said aloud. “This is our family secret, I can’t just tell others as they please. What kind of person do you think I, Yan Xiangma is? Don’t think that because of your beauty I would easily tell you? Try and see if I, Yan Xiangma is a spineless person—-”

“Xiangma brother, I beg you, tell me please——” Stamping her feet softly, Li Shinian said imploringly.

“I told you I can’t say it——” Yan Xiangma once again swallowed saliva several times then continued: “Actually even if I didn’t say it you would still be able to guess. Xiaoxin cousin is from the Cui family of Tiandu——–”

“Cui Hongyan? ” Li Shinian spoke out a name that would resonate throughout the kingdom anywhere.

“That’s Xiaoxin’s great grandpa. ”

“——”

A bitter sad expression surfaced on Li Shinian’s little face, as if she had heard some grievous news.

“Shinian, what’s wrong?” Yan Xiangma asked aloud.

“My brother—-has no chance at all, right?” Li Shinian asked.

Yan Xiangma let out a light sigh and said: “Actually from my standpoint, I support Muyang and Xiaoxin cousin together, although Muyang is ugly but he is very kind, and also he is deeply in love with Xiaoxin cousin——–”

“You’re the ugly one, my brother is one hundred times more handsome than you.” Li Shinian said in an extremely discontent tone interrupting Yan Xiangma’s statement of his standpoint: “Answer my question. Is there any hope between my brother and Xioaxin sister? ”

“No”. Yan Xiangma said bluntly.

“Not even a little—-a trace of hope? ”

“Shinian, you must know that if one of these days, Muyang really does have a little or a trace of hope, that situation would instead be much dangerous.” Yan Xiangma said with a serious face: “Why is your brother still safe now and why no one came to his door to find him? Because everyone knows that it is impossible for them to be together and they have no hope of being together at all. If Li Muyang’s existence makes people detect danger—-do you think he would still be alive? ”

“——-”

Li Shinian felt bitter agony in her heart, felt aggrieved for his brother.

However, this is the truth that she can't change.

A child of an ordinary family, how could they marry a descendant of someone like the powerful Cui Hongyan who is able to move unhindered throughout the continent?

After understanding this problem, Li Shinian turned and walked back along the street.

"Ah Ah Ah—-" Yan Xiangma shouting from behind: "Li Shinian, where are you going? "

"Home. "

"Finished shopping? Did we not just come out? I still have something to say—-Hey, Li Shinian——"

"Let's talk next time. "Li Shinian did not turn her head, just half-heartedly waved to Yan Xiangma.

"Let's talk next time?"A wry smile emerged on Yan Xiangma's face, watching the distant figure of the delicate and pretty girl from behind, he whispered: "Silly girl, I'm afraid I won't have an opportunity to say it next time."

——

——

Yan Xiangma only said Cui Xiaoxin is waiting at Sunset Lake and did not specify which part of Sunset Lake Cui Xiaoxin is waiting at.

Sunset Lake meanders over hundreds of miles then enters into Lake Tai. Trying to find a girl in such a vast place, is this not the same as searching for pearls in the sandy beach?

Fortunately Li Muyang is not a fool, he directly made his way towards the location of where they had their spring excursion last time. Indeed, as expected, Cui Xiaoxin was sitting under thickets of willow trees.

"Cui Xiaoxin." Li Muyang shouted aloud.

Cui Xiaoxin turned her head and smiled at Li Muyang.

Cui Xiaoxin merely just draw back the corners of her mouth, but Li Muyang felt that every flesh and each hair throughout his body is standing up in joy.

Just as one of the kingdom's famous poet with the surname Guo wrote: 'Seeing you cry, I was happy for days. Seeing you smile, I was sad for years—- '

No, no, no, it's the opposite; seeing you cry, I feel sad for days. Seeing you smile, I will be happy for years.

Li Muyang felt these words truly reflects the bottom of his heart, how is a poet able to understand the will of the people and the human nature?

If you like someone, you are willing to bear all their pain and sorrow. If you like someone, you can't help but magnify their happiness by several times. If their smiling expression stays on the tip of their brow, you already feel happy to the point of not being able to stand up straight.

Li Muyang quickly stepped over to sit down beside Cui Xiaoxin and said with a smile: "This is the place where we first met. "

Worried that using the word 'met' Cui Xiaoxin wouldn't like it, Li Muyang hurriedly added: "Although we met a long time ago, but that day was when we really got acquainted with each other? Got to know each other? "

"Yes. This is the place where we first met." Cui Xiaoxin looked out at the blue jade lake and said: "If it wasn't for that conversation that day, I wouldn't have known that within our class there is a guy who possesses such a distinct way of thinking and such sharp words."

"Actually before I wasn't like that at all." Li Muyang grinned, showing two rows of sparkly white teeth then continued: "They were right to scold me, back then I was indeed a trash. "

"I can see it." Cui Xiaoxin said. "The you at that time and right now are very different——"

She turned around and looked pensively at Li Muyang's face, staring into Li Muyang's eyes and said: "Back then your eyes were dull, lifeless and did not have any focus. Also your face just stares blankly into space but now you're clever and confident—-In this time you really have changed so much. If I was not always by your side, it will be awfully difficult to connect the previous you and who you are

now.”

“So I really am thankful.” Li Muyang looked at Cui Xiaoxin and said: “You made me motivated to learn once again, When you were tutoring me you told me not to give up at any time——”

“Compared to you saving my life, that was nothing.” Cui Xiaoxin sighed.

“Let’s not talk about this.” Li Muyang intends to change the subject. This is the technique sister Li Shinian taught him for chasing after girls; when the conversation between you and the girl becomes more and more boring or serious it is important to change the subject quickly and find a topic that girls are interested in. “I haven’t seen you in a while, how are you these days?”

“Very well.” Cui Xiaoxin nodded. “I’ve been reading, enjoying tea and strolling under the jacaranda tree; I thought about the past and about the future. Very productive.”

“That’s good.” Li Muyang revealed a look of infinite yearning. If when Cui Xiaoxin was reading, he is able to accompany her, just like when she was tutoring him. If when Cui Xiaoxin was enjoying tea, he can fill the cup for her, just like when she was tutoring him. If when Cui Xiaoxin was walking under the jacaranda trees, he can walk side by side with her, just like a fantasy, wouldn’t that be wonderful?

Cui Xiaoxin turned away, no longer looking at Li Muyang’s eyes. “I have to return to Tiandu. I’m leaving in two days.”

“Good. I’ll go back and pack to leave with you.” Li Muyang said with a smile.

“＿＿＿”

057 – Don’t worry

The cool and fresh wind breezed over the green grass.

Water ripples moving across the surface of the lake, the soil distributing a sweet fragrance that moistens the throat.

A young man and a young woman sat by the lake, looking like a couple who had skipped class to secretly come out to play by the lake.

Falling in love, every word they say gives people the feeling of love.

However, a dream is plump while the reality is skinny.

It was a farewell, the girl is saying goodbye to the boy.

The girl is leaving somewhere far, somewhere very far.

They said see you later to each other, but there most likely would not be a later.

Hearing Li Muyang’s words, Cui Xiaoxin’s mouth was slightly raised and said: “I’m trying very hard to say goodbye to you.”

“I know.” Li Muyang said with a smile: “I am also making a joke very seriously.”

“You really have changed a lot.” Cui Xiaoxin took a glimpse at Li Muyang then continued: “You’ve become like Yan Xiangma. Oh, I remember that day when you attack Zhang Chen, your words were much sharper than those of Yan Xiangma’s—-Perhaps, you two are the same type of people? ”

“Those who stay near ink get stained black. Yan Xiangma constantly comes over looking for me, I also caught some of his habits.”

“That means you would become a hedonistic young master.”

“This is his innate nature, you can’t acquire that even with hard work—–” Li Muyang said with a smile. “No matter how much I try, there is no way I could become the son of the lord of the city, right?”

Cui Xiaoxin smiled and said: “But your son can become the young master of the lord of the city.”

“Hopefully; I will do my best.” Li Muyang pulled out a sugar cane stalk from the meadow, placed into his mouth to chew. It was unsure when he had acquired this habit; perhaps it was one day when he was sitting alone in a daze. “However, did we not make a promise? We will go see the sunset together at Weiming Lake in West Wind University——I also should be going to Tiandu soon, right? ”

“At Tiandu——” Cui Xiaoxin’s hesitated then said quietly: “At that time our school work will be quite hectic, not sure if we’ll have time to watch the sunset.”

Li Muyang’s facial expression stiffened for a second before he regained his smile and said: “it doesn’t matter anyway, we will be at school for a couple of years, no need to worry—-Wait until you’re free, then we can go to Weiming Lake together.”

“In that case, I don’t know how long you have to wait.” Cui Xiaoxin said: “I hope that day will come.”

Cui Xiaoxin felt she should say something to sever all relations with Li Muyang, by doing so she can cleanly and completely separate the two people of different worlds. But when her eyes meet with Li Muyang’s gaze, she could never utter such words.

Li Muyang remained silent; Cui Xiaoxin also did not say anything else.

The boy and girl sat by the lake, worrying about something that people of their age should not worry about.

After a long time, Li Muyang finally said softly: “Cui Xiaoxin, what are you worried about? ”

“What?”

“I know I am not good enough for you, I just want to be your friend.” Li Muyang’s eyes calmly shifted over at Cui Xiaoxin, then said in an incomparable composed tone as if it has nothing to do with him: “I admit, I have hoped something like this would happen before, but very quickly I extinguished that thought by myself. When I liked you, I did not tell you; when I decided that I don’t like you anymore I also did not tell you. The reason I didn’t say anything is because I know you definitely wouldn’t want to hear it.”

“Boys of our age, who doesn’t like beautiful girls? In my eyes you are not only

beautiful, but also kind and independent. I really thought that it would be great if you can be my girlfriend, just like other couples in our school——At that time, I must be the most awe-inspiring and most admired boy in the school, right? ”

“I never asked where you come from or your background, but I already guessed your family must be very impressive. Even Yan Xiangma is your cousin, which means your family must surely be comparable to their family. I know we are people of different worlds, and I know it is impossible—-impossible for you to fall in love with someone like me, an ugly and insignificant boy. I just thought we could be friends. Even as a friend, you are a very good friend——Also, you were my first real friend. Except from Shinian, you were the only one of a similar age willing to interact with me. ”

“But, you suddenly disappeared and no longer came over to my house. When I wanted to find you I realised I don’t even know where you live—-you pushed me aside so our relationship would return to what it was before. But I can feel it. You don’t even want to keep our relationship as ordinary friends, right? ”

“Li Muyang—”

“Cui Xiaoxin, don’t you worry.” Li Muyang opened his mouth, smiled and said: “Even if we are still friends, I wouldn’t be pursuing you. Even at West Wind University, I also wouldn’t be pursuing you.”

“———”

Cui Xiaoxin left.

She left Sunset Lake, and will also be leaving Jiangnan.

Li Muyang sat alone by Sunset Lake, the sweet juices from the sugarcane stalk have already been drawn out completely but he is still reluctant to part with it and continued to chew.

Li Muyang was a very affectionate person, because he lacks affection.

Li Muyang was someone who cherishes friendships because besides this he does not have much he could cherish.

Li Muyang recalled that day, the scene of thousands of carps leaping forward

under the blood-red sun, thinking to himself he may possibly become a great man.

“At that time, many people will be willing to be friends with me, right?” Li Muyang thought to himself.

Just as Cui Xiaoxin walked down to the river’s edge, Yan Xiangma was already waiting at the side.

Yan Xiangma glanced over into the distance, unable to see Li Muyang’s location.

He opened his mouth, smiled and said: “You’ve said goodbye?”

“I’ve said goodbye.” Cui Xiaoxin answered without any expression at all.

“You’ve made it clear?”

“Shut up. ”

“That means you’ve not made it clear.” Yan Xiangma gently shook his head and said: “Love is just one word but it can make many people sad and emotional. However, this is for his own good. Back then during the exams Crow came to Li Muyang’s house to attack him, although I arrived on time to dissolve this danger, but that still limited his time to answer questions—-I don’t think he will get into West Wind University, and whether he will go to Tiandu or not is still uncertain. At that time, you two will naturally separate.”

“I have a premonition.” Cui Xiaoxin said in a firm voice. “He will go to Tiandu, not only that but he will set off a great wave that will frighten the heavens. ”

“You’re a fortune teller?”

“You didn’t see his eyes.” Cui Xiaoxin’s voice sounded a little emotional. “You didn’t see how sullen and unwilling he was.”

“———”

————

————

Cui Xiaoxin left; Li Muyang did not see her off.

However, Li Shinian did go. Li Shinian simply said a few words after she

returned: ‘Xiaoxin sister is gone, that idiot young master is also gone’. As to how the farewell was, Li Muyang did not ask and Li Shinian did not say anything.

Cui Xiaoxin is merely a passing traveller in their lives, come and go, just like many people they briefly encountered on the streets, occasionally they come to your mind and you miss the memories together but it will never return to what it used to be.

Everyday Li Muyang practised writing, read and then followed his sister practising ‘The Art of Breaking Body’.

Li Muyang possesses plenty of brute force but he does not know how to exert that strength.

Every time he throws out a punch it is not weak nor lacks response, but instead cause devastating destruction.

These are the two extremes and shows he’s not exerting force in the right way.

Without any teacher, he can only ask Li Shinian, who started training martial arts and practicing qi before him, for advice.

Li Shinian’s knowledge is limited, but she gives it everything to teach his brother. Li Muyang possess an extremely abnormal ability to learn, and so very quickly Li Shinian found her knowledge was emptied. Because of her competitive nature she does not want to admit defeat so easily, everyday after reviewing her lessons she practiced ‘The Art of Breaking Body’ diligently.

In this process, Li Shinian’s skill greatly improved.

Li Muyang also borrowed Li Shinian’s book ‘The Art of Breaking Body’ to study. Back then Li Shinian wanted to use it to exchange for Li Muyang’s life but Crow did not agree, so Li Muyang took his life instead——

‘The Art of Breaking Body’ is a valuable book that belongs to the Taoist and is used for training qi. Although getting started is simple, and it can strengthen the body and build up health, but it is extremely difficult to practice. Even being able to throw out ‘breaking fist’ like Li Shinian after many years of continuous training was already considered a gift.

‘The Art of Breaking Body’ has mentioned that those who reached the peak of

training, will be able to grasp hold of the sun and moon and smash the empty air into pieces. Li Muyang is unable to distinguish if this is true or false, and whether there is indeed such an unusual result or the author is just boasting.

After all, every author likes to boast.

Li Muyang is delighted when he reas this book, and very often he feels a sudden flash of insight and then all is clear.

Before Li Muyang knows nothing about martial arts but now he finally developed a system of learning and processing his knowledge.

Because he just started training, it is in line with Li Muyang's physical condition.

What made him most amazed was that when he read to the end of the book it seems very familiar to him.

There were three thousand great ways, a myriad of paths, but the destination was all the same when the pinnacle was reached.

Li Muyang felt that the knowledge within 'The Art of Breaking Body is the same as those in his memory, he dares to swear on Yan Xiangma's integrity that he had never seen this book before.

But recently many strange things have happened, so Li Muyang don't think it's worth delving into further. Even if he has the mind to find out it will still be difficult for him to seek answers.

He is just like a thirsty wayfarer, desperately trying to absorb the knowledge of 'The Art of Breaking Body'.

What he remembered is checked against the knowledge within his memory, after verifying, and based on his physical condition, he finally develops a systematic method of training.

Li Muyang really has become much smarter.

Time flies.

At the end of August, the results of each school in the kingdom will finally be released.

058 – Heroes list

“The sun rises just like always, it doesn’t matter who had left.” Li Muyang said to himself.

Just as before, Li Muyang woke up early in the morning, because there is a lot on his mind he even got up earlier than he used to. At five o’clock in the morning he had already woken up.

Perhaps because he has been sleeping too much back then, Li Muyang now sleeps less and less, but he became more and more energetic. Completely different from how he was before. Back then, even with twelve hours of sleep he was still lethargic and without the vigour of youth.

After getting up, Li Muyang began training from the first stage of the ‘Art of Breaking Body’, which he had arranged himself.

Since he lacks guidance from a teacher, he can only rely his own thoughts, memories, and then to connect the two of them—-Li Muyang is not even certain if his summary is correct.

So, he still very cautiously follows the walking routine the yellow-robed monk taught Li Shinian before he left.

‘Walk’ is the first step, and also the foundation of the ‘Art of Breaking Body’. Walk to toughen bones, walk until the passages through which vital energy circulates are activated, walk to guide the flow of qi downwards and finally in one swoop, throw out breaking fist.

Of course, you can’t just randomly walk or walk around blindly but following the secret method of walking in the ‘Art of Breaking Body’.

Mood, breathing, the state of mind and techniques are all indispensable.

Thinking of Li Shinian drowsily walking around every time, bumping into the corner of tables or kicking doors several times, looking as if she has yet awaken from her dream, Li Muyang felt endless injustice for this secret skill of thousand years old—-It is indeed insulting.

Even so, Li Shinian was still able to learn ‘breaking fist’ through her long period

of practice, this has given Li Muyang great confidence—-If Li Shinian can do it, he has to be better than her by thousands times?

In the process of walking, he has to keep in mind the first sentence of ‘The Art of Breaking Fist: ‘gather qi in the lower part of the abdomen, then release it in a flash’ when you begin to feel the essential qi from around the body efficiently progressing and accumulating at the sea-of-qi acupoint at the lower abdomen.

This accumulation frightens Li Muyang; the flow of qi throughout his body from every one of his hair, each muscles and bones, constantly surging towards and gathering in his lower abdomen region, it almost felt as if his dantian was exploding.

It’s hard to imagine how his weak and thin body could hide such immense power.

Even Li Muyang himself was shocked, he immediately stopped this kind of dangerous behaviour.

Although he stopped walking, Li Muyang continued to feel the burning pain in his lower abdomen, like being seared by burning red coal.

Li Muyang’s forehead was dripping with sweating, his face and ears redden, and his heart beating rapidly.

He hurried over to lie on the bed, after resting a while he finally felt much comfortable, and the feeling of discomfort also gradually disappeared.

It was still early, but Li Muyang doesn’t dare to practice walking anymore, instead decided to practice calligraphy.

Li Muyang’s calligraphy writing is getting better and better, so he was eager to practice to make it even better. The same as when someone’s face is pretty, they will tilt their head each time they talk.

Just as Li Muyang leaned forward on the table practicing writing, the door was forcefully pushed open by someone.

Without even turning his head Li Muyang knew Li Shinian had come back, when others open the door they use their hand, only Li Shinian opens the door with her feet or arms——does she not feel pain?

Li Shinian noticed that her vigorous appearance did not attract the attention of Li Muyang, she loudly yelled: “Li Muyang, hurry, today is the day exam results are released—-”

Li Muyang immediately stopped what he’s doing, placed the brush at the edge of ink stone, got up to stretch himself, then glanced over at Li Shinian’s rosy little face: “what’s the rush? It’s still early, right? ”

“How is it early? ” Li Shinian stamping her feet anxiously. “There are two more hours until the notice, at that time it will be packed with people in front of the list of heroes, we won’t even be able to squeeze in—-”

Li Muyang grinned and said: “After they took a look at the results they will naturally scatter, would they stay in front of the list for their whole life? So let’s wait until they finish then we look at it after them.””

“You—-” Li Shinian itching to rush over to give her brother a few punches: “Why do you not care about anything? Who doesn’t want to see their grades and scores first? I heard if you can dominate the top three places, the school has great rewards.”

“I don’t want to be listed in the top three.” Li Muyang shook his head:” I just want to go to West Wind University.”

“——-” Li Shinian is infuriated by her own brother: “Oh, my good brother, if you are not able to dominate the top three place, then how are you able to get into West Wind University? West Wind University is the best University in the Kingdom and also the first choice of every model students in each school. Once you’re admitted into West Wind University, you are guaranteed a good career—-Last year how many people did West Wind University admitted from our school? Two people? Even if this year they admit one more person, you still have to finish in the top three place—-”

“It’s like that? ” Hearing what Li Shinian said, Li Muyang became a bit anxious: “We will go and take a look after we finished eating breakfast. ”

“__”

After washing his face and rinsing his mouth Li Muyang sat at the table eating a bun. The millet porridge was too hot and before he even had two spoonfuls, Li

Shinian who was already sitting at the table became impatient, pulled him up and ran towards the school.

“Eat some more——” Luo Qi shouted from behind.

“No more.” Li Shinian yelled loudly. “We will come back to celebrate, I want to eat meat.”

Luo Qi shook her head and sighed: “This child, what kind of girl is like this? ”

Li Yan finished his porridge in big mouthfuls, then said: “At least she still looks pretty like a girl. ”

“Only you will defend her.” Luo Qi said snappily: “Do you think the Lu family will help? ”

Li Yan suddenly lost his appetite, placed down the bowl of porridge and sat still with a blank expression on his face for a while: “From what we know about the Lu family they probably won’t help——”

“Then Muyang won’t have——” Luo Qi eyes redden: “not even a glimmer of hope?”

“Maybe, if Muyang can get a good grade himself—-” Even saying this, Li Yan felt guilty, eventually he couldn’t continue anymore. He is aware of his son’s grades more than anybody else. Even if he worked hard last month, and Cui Xioaxin and Li Shinian both said he improved drastically, is this enough for him to be admitted into West Wind University?

“I secretly found out from Shinian that Xiaoxin has gone back to Tiandu, it is said that she will certainly be admitted into West Wind University—-If Muyang can’t go, they won’t have a chance. Such a good girl—Also, Muyang’s always wanted to go to West Wind University, if he fails, this will be a huge blow to him, I’m afraid he won’t be able to bear it—-”

“Don’t worry.” Li Yan said firmly. “He is much braver than we think. You forgot that one night he suddenly became sick, his whole body was as hot as coal and we were both terrified, thinking that he won’t be able to hang on this time—-but he woke up in a daze, opened his eyes looking at us, stretched out to hold your

hand and said: “Mum, hurry give me medicine, I don’t want to die, I want to live —-”

Hearing this incident, streams of tears flowed down Luo Qi’s face: “I just think, this kid suffer so much pain when he was young, and now he has grown up he should live comfortably —-Why does the heavens always torment him?”

Li Yan reached out and hugged his wife, secretly hating himself for being so powerless.

Just as Li Shinian had said, the school gate is indeed packed with people; the road leading to the front of the hero stage is crowded to that extent it became impenetrable.

The hero stage is a platform in front of the school gate; there are eight steps to the top of the stage, meaning students rises steadily step by step.

Behind the stage is a black wall, each year this is where the school post the list of students admitted to each university. This list is what students called the heroes list, those who made it to the list are ‘super heroes’.

“Students, please make way, make way——” Worried about Li Shinian, Li Muyang held her hand to charge and break through the lines.

“Are you stupid? Why should I let you through? ” The student in front being forced to one side said in an unsatisfied voice. “You want to go ahead, do you think I don’t? Why don’t you fly over there if you’re so amazing?”

“__”

Li Shinian swapped placed with her brother, stretched out and patted the shoulder of the student while displaying a cute smile and said in a sweet voice: ‘Classmate, can you let us through, I want to see my result——”

“I told you—-Ah, girl, you want to go ahead? It’s too crowded in front; you have to pay attention to your safety. Just now a silly fool wanted me to make way, so I sent him back—-Here, you stand in front of me, I can defend you from any pervert behind——”

Li Shinian is relying on her attractiveness to rattle her way through. She triumphed in every battle and won every fight.

Very quickly, she pulled Li Muyang's by his hand to the front row of the hero stage.

"Brother, is my makeup messed up?" Li Shinian brushed her hair, looking at Li Muyang's face like a mirror. Then angrily kicked Li Muyang's feet and said: "Please, why do you whiten yourself? You've became more and more pale, I can't use your face to touch up my makeup anymore—-"

"__"

"Hey, isn't that Li Muyang classmate? You also came to see the list?" A familiar voice echoed over.

The reason why this voice sounded familiar is because this voice, which carries a hint of sneering, has been deeply ingrained into Li Muynag memories.

Wu Man, Li Muyang's classmate from the class next door.

Back then when Li Muyang walked past them, they jumped onto the weak Li Muyang, riding him like a sheep. He and his friends then jumped over Li Muyang's head, pointing and laughing at Li Muyang's back: 'Doesn't he look like a pig?'

Li Muyang had clenched his fist tightly, crushing his white teeth, but did not rush forward to fight with him.

Because he knows he can't beat him.

In the end, Li Shinian had dashed forward and taught them a lesson.

"I have." Li Muyang looked at Wu Man's swollen face and said aloud.

"I say, the front position is more stressful—-why did you come over here to take the humiliation? If I were you, I would stand behind the crowd, or simply just stay at home—-Don't tell me you think you will be on the heroes list?" Wu Man pointing and laughing at Li Muyang, as if he had just seen something very absurd.

059 – Not a hero!

“Big brother Wu Man, you can’t say that—-Maybe Li Muyang will also be on the heroes list too? Right?”

“Exactly, at that time when Li Muyang soars into the sky it will certainly blind our eyes—-”

“Hey, how can you bully Li Muyang classmate? You want him to be on the heroes list, isn’t that more difficult than seeing a pig climbing a tree? Li Muyang, don’t listen to them, I’m certain you won’t make it to the list—-”

——

Li Shinian stomped in front of Li Muyang, glaring fiercely at Wu Man: “asshole, you want to get beaten again? ”

Wu Man was indeed somewhat afraid of Li Shinian; after they bullied Li Muyang last time, on the way home from school, Li Shinian intercepted the same group of boys. They were in high spirits, smug and were immensely proud of themselves, a similar feeling of joy to when a little rabbit throws herself into a wolf’s mouth.

In the end the group of wolves was beat up by the little rabbit. For quite some time after that they did not dare to appear in front of Li Muyang.

“Li Shinian, I can tell you, this is the school grounds, if you use violence, the school won’t let you off—-” Wu Man stared at Li Shinian.

Then he laid his eyes on Li Muyang’s face and said: “Li Muyang, you need a woman to protect you all your life?”

Li Shinian wanted to beat them up once again but was intercepted by Li Muyang.

Li Muyang looked at Wu Man and said: “She is my sister, it’s only right that she defends me.”

Wu man burst into loud laughter: “Li Muyang, how can you say such a shameless thing?”

“If she’s being bullied, I will also do the same thing.” Li Muyang glanced over at Li Shinian and said with a smile. Li Shinian returned a sweet and pretty smile.

“This is even more funny. Li Muyang, you can’t even protect yourself, how can you say you will protect others?” Wu Man said with a look of disdain.

“I’ve become very strong now.” Li Muyang said with a serious expression.

“Idiot.” Wu Man thought he saw a lunatic. What kind of people would say they had became very powerful? “If you’re that powerful then try and punch me?”

Bang!

Li Muyang punched Wu Man right on his nose.

Click—-

Snapping sounds coming from his nose and blood flowing rapidly down his face.

Wu Man was foolish; Wu Man’s friends are also foolish.

They had no idea that Li Muyang would really hit him, it should be said that last time when they knocked him to the ground and had ridden him like a sheep, he had showed no resistance at all—-

“Li Muyang——” Wu Man finally reacted, reaching out his hands to cover his nose, with blood still flooding out between his fingers he angrily shouted: “How dare you hit me?”

Li Muyang shrugged, looked at Wu Man and said: “you told me to——”

“I told you to hit me and you hit me?”

“Although you bullied me before, but I still have to respect what you say.”

“Brothers, beat him up——”

Li Shinian was one step ahead of them. She used her body to shield in front of Li Muyang, then shouted: “Who dares move?”

Everyone took a step back, staring warily at Li Shinian who is likely to attack any second.

“Everyone stay calm——” A guy said.

“Exactly, how can you casually hit someone?” The other guy added.

“That’s too barbaric, this is the school gate, a disgrace to the educated class ——” The third guy was scornful of this violent behaviour.

——

“Idiot.” Li Shinian smiled coldly.

Just then, the crowd suddenly becomes noisy.

Under the protection of the security guards, the headmaster Lin Zhengyin walked towards the hero stage in big strides.

Everyone already knows, the heroes’ list was about to be announced.

“I know you all are looking forward to this; just like everyone, I look also forward to it. You should be proud of yourself, I’m also proud of you, the school is proud of you.” Headmaster Lin Zhengyin stood high above on the stage shouting loudly: “I sincerely hope that every candidate will achieve good results and become successful.”

Wa—-

The atmosphere became much more lively, countless students and parents applauded while excitedly await the announcement of the heroes’ list.

Lin Zhengyin gestured with his hand and shouted: “Announce the results.”

Wa—

A giant red silk banner more than ten meters long was carried over and then hung on the enormous black wall.

By the time the heroes’ list was set rigidly in place, everyone’s attention was locked onto the top of the list.

At the top position was West Wind University’s admission list: Cui Xiaoxin, Li Haoming, and Zhang Bi.

Cui Xiaoxin was always one of the top students in the school, and had never obtained any test results that wasn’t the first place. She dominated the list for many years, almost no one was able to make her move from her position.

Seeing Cui Xiaoxin’s name at the top, Li Muyang sincerely felt happy for her.

Although everyone knew she should be in this ranking and plus she had repeatedly said she would certainly attend West Wind University—-but everything being set in place by the heroes list, is still a very good thing.

Li Haoming was always the second best student of the year; everyone expected him to attend West Wind University.

The name Zhang Bi seems a little unfamiliar, but Li Muyang knows she is a gentle and quiet girl, in the past her exam results never entered the top ten. Being able to achieve such a result she was a little dark horse. During the exams she should have did frighteningly well, in the end she amazed the world with her extraordinary academic performance.

“Oh, I am admitted into West Wind—-I’m going to West Wind—–”

“Oh, I’m in Jiangnan University——”

“I’m Shiling College—–”

——-

Wu Man’s eyes lit up, he found his name on the heroes list.

At the moment he noticed his name was in the middle of the list, he was unable to deal with his bleeding nose anymore, he waved his arms while shouting and screaming: “I’m going to Southeast College, I am admitted into Southeast College——-”

Southeast University is also quite a good school, it seems Wu Man performed quite well in the entrance examinations.

People around were all screaming continuously and glad to be admitted into their dream school. There were also some people wailing aloud, who were deeply hurt that they failed the kingdoms examination.

Li Muyang’s eyes were glued to the top of the list all along, he wanted to go to West Wind University, but his name is not on West Wind University enrolment list.

In other words, he can’t go; he can’t attend West Wind University.

Li Muyang’s eyes lost his luster and his face grew pale.

“I failed to keep the promise.” Li Muyang muttered to himself.

“Brother, don’t worry——” Li Shinian was extremely anxious, she tried to comfort Li Muyang while quickly finding Li Muyang’s name in the huge list above. “It’s okay, even if you don’t go to West Wind University, you can still go to other schools. You worked so hard, you will get into a good school, you can still go to Tiandu, and can still find Xiaoxin sister——”

Li Muyang gently shook his head, smiled and said: “Never mind, I also thought this would happen——-”

Li Muyang knew he couldn’t get upset, because if he gets upset, those who really care about him would be even more upset. Li Shinian will be sad, his parents will be even more sad.

He rubbed his nose with his finger, making an expression of indifference, smiled and said: “It doesn’t matter if I don’t pass this time, anyway I now have the ability to learn, I’ll just sit the exams next year——Didn’t you say? If I study properly for one year, next year I could attend West Wind University with you. What do you think? ”

“Good.” Li Shinian’s eyes redden, streams of tears flowing down her cheeks. She knows that although her brother is saying these words, he is extremely upset inside.

He was always like that, from a young age till now so he was always worried that he would become the family’s burden, and he was very reluctant to give his family’s any troubles.

When he was bullied by his classmates he never once mentioned one word at home.

When he was badly beaten, he just told them he had accidentally knocked into the wall.

He felt that he was born a burden, so he wants to make his family less worried about himself as much as possible.

He worked so hard just to attend West Wind University, but in the end he still

failed.

And to make matters worse, Li Shinian searched the entire heroes' list but was not able to find Li Muyang's name.

In other words, Li Muyang has not been admitted to any school in the kingdom.

060 – Heavens won't forgive them!

When someone is pleased with themselves, someone else is disappointed.

In the split second that ordinary red silk banner appeared, in a simple and brutal manner, it had divided these students, who lived and studied in the same school, into two different kinds of life entirely.

At the moment when Wu Man and friends were celebrating their admittance into university, they inadvertently saw a tearful Li Shinian smiling and comforting Li Muyang. They stared blankly for a moment, then instantly realised what had happened.

Li Muyang had failed!

Li Muyang is not qualified to be on the heroes list!

Wu Man was delighted, he pointed at Li Muyang and said to his friends around him: "Look, look, we kindly reminded him, told him not to squeeze in front and its better for him to hide at home and not go out——In the end? He did not listen and shamelessly rushed to the front. You can see much more clearly in front, but isn't the impact of the failure much heavier? Dog biting Lu Dongbin, he doesn't even recognize our kind-intention, even went as far as hitting us——-What was the result? It was as we said? He really has failed."

"Wu Man, where are we going to celebrate? Osmanthus Flower Lane? I'm paying today——"

"If Osmantus Flower Lane then why not Champion Lane—-Starting from today, we are all students of famous schools, Just like the champions in the ancient times——If we celebrate, of course, we have to find a fitting place. Tonight at Champion lane, everything you eat and drink are on me——"

——

Originally Li Shinian's heart was filled with fury, while crying and sobbing. Hearing their words she flew into a rage, clenching her fist she rushed over and yelled in an angry voice: "Who did you say is the dog? You are a dog, your whole family is a dog, you dog things——-"

Li Muyang grabbed Li Shinian, then said with a smile: “Come on, we should go back. Mum and dad are waiting at home, if we go back later they will be worried. ”

“They called you——” Li Shinian was unable to calm down her anger, still wanting to rush forward to beat them up.

“I know that.” Li Muyang nodded and said: “So I broke his nose just now.”

“These assholes——” Li Shinian clenches her teeth, furiously glaring at Wu Man and the others, and said: “Don’t ever let me see your faces again, if I see you I’ll hit you again.” “這些混蛋——”李思念銀牙緊咬，惡狠狠地盯著吳漫等人，說道：“別再讓我看到你們，見一次我打一次。”

“Hahaha, Li Shinian don’t worry, other than your trash brother, no one will see you again—-We will soon leave Jiangnan and study in other provinces. Only your useless brother is guarding Jiangnan, refusing to leave, and also can’t leave——”

Li Shinian eyes were blood-red; she stretched out her hand to pull out a brick from the steps of the heroes’ stage, then aimed at Wu Man’s head.

Wu Man hurriedly tried to escape; he had already experienced Li Shinian’s power before.

Li Shinian was unwilling to let the matter drop, seeing Wu Man wanting to run away, she threw the brick in her hand towards Wu Man’s head.

Pa—

“Ahhh——” Wu Man let out a miserable scream, and then clutched his head before falling to the ground.

The brick smashed right onto his head, causing a big opening in the back of his head and his black hair was quickly dyed red with blood.

“Help me, someone’s killing——help——” Wu Man’s condition was like a pig howling for dear life. While lying on the ground he was screaming and shouting loudly.

The commotion over there naturally alarmed the other students and the headmaster Lin Zhengyin who was close by.

“Go look at what is going on over there?” Lin Zhengyin wrinkled her brows and

yelled at the guards around her

Every year, the day of the announcement of the heroes list is a sacred and festive time for the school; a fight had never happened before in front of the heroes' stage.

The guards don't dare to disobey the headmaster's order. They quickly separated the crowd and then surrounded Wu Man who was lying on the floor wailing loudly.

Lin Zhengyin briskly walked over, kicked Wu Man who was lying on the ground, and shouted in an imposing manner: "In front of the heroes stage, why are you weeping endlessly? Get up to speak. "

The guards supported Wu Man up and said aloud: "The headmaster is asking a question, quickly answer."

Wu Man's head was bleeding, and the cloth stuffed inside his nostrils had disappeared, so his nose also began to bleed.

He was bleeding in front and also bleeding behind, it was practically a tragic sight from all angles.

"Headmaster——" Wu Man pointing at Li Muyang and said: "He hit my head with a brick—-"

Wu Man was smart; he knows that because Li Shinian is a girl, even if she is guilty, it is likely the school won't do much. Besides this girl is pretty and her grades are good, he also heard that some of the teachers in the school treat her like a baby. Encountering a matter like this, would the schools give justice to him?

So, he simply pushed the blame to Li Muyang.

Did Li Muyang not want to re-take a year and sit the exams again? I'm sorry, but today I'll block this path. Go back to the farms and sell baked sweet potatoes, forever stay on the farmland and not be able to lift your head again. This is the life you should have.

Lin Zhengyin shifted her attention to Li Muyang's face and asked in a deep voice: "You hit him with a brick?"

Headmaster, they're blaming my brother." Li Shinian's little face turned red, she pointed at Wu Man and said: "The person who hit your head with a brick was me, are you blind? "

"Headmaster, they can be my witness." Wu Man pointed to his friends by the side.

"Yes, I saw it with my own eyes, he used a brick to hit Wu Man's head——"

"Because he failed, so he's jealous—-"

"Headmaster, is a student like him who failed the exams still a student of the school? A student like him can disregard the law and do anything he wants?"

——

Wu Man used one hand to cover his nose and his other hand to cover his head.

Later, he felt that his pose was far too comedic so he only used one hand to cover his nose. This left the wound at the back of his head to flow unhindered.

"Headmaster, you have to be a judge of this—-My nose was hit by him, and my head was also hit by him—-" Wu man said while weeping.

"Ridiculous." Lin Zhengyin is enraged, her eyes staring coldly at Li Muyang as she said: "Do you think that because the entrance examinations are finished, I can't manage you? Even if you failed this time, do you think you are forbid to take the exams again? Do you want me to give notice to deny you the right to sit the exams forever——"

"Headmaster, it wasn't my brother—-It was me—-" Li Shinian's eyes reddened once again. She felt sad, why does these people always bully her big brother and always make life difficult for her brother?

Why? Just because my brother's skin is dark? Because my brother is weak? Because my brother does not have the strength to resist? So their bullying became much worse? So they act without the slightest scruple?

"Headmaster—-" Li Muyang calmly looked at Lin Zhengyin and said: "I admit it, he was wounded by me."

“Brother, are you crazy—-” Li Shinian pulled Li Muyang’s arms to stop him. “It wasn’t you, it was obviously me? I obviously hit him? I broke his nose and I hit him with bricks, because he called you——”

Li Muyang used his body to block the front of Li Shinian; at this moment his figure was tall and straight, and his face was cool and calm, like a sturdy strong pine tree.

“However, I did it for a reason. They had always bullied me and called me a pig. Many students in the school know of this. If headmaster asks around you will be able to find out. Today they repeatedly insulted me and said I should not appear on the heroes stage and instead I should hide at home to avoid the impact of failing the exams—-” Li Muyang glanced over at Wu Man, then said: “Most importantly, he asked me to hit him.”

“How is that possible?” Wu Man yelled loudly. “Why would I tell him to hit me? Why would anyone in the world say this? Do you think I’m an idiot?”

“Exactly. How in the world would there be such a thing?” Zhang Chen squeezed through the crowd and said while looking at Lin Zhengyin: “Headmaster, I’ve been standing at the side all along, I saw the whole thing. I did not hear Wu Man classmate say anything like that, I just saw Li Muyang classmate hit him without saying a word—-I can understand that he failed so he may not be in a good mood, but this is not a reason to hit brothers of the same school —-”

“You dare to swear on your parents’ integrity and reputation that this is true?” Li Muyang said while looking at Zhang Chen. “

“I—-I dare to swear on my parents’ integrity and reputation, Wu Man did not tell you to hit him. If he did say that, then my parents and family will die tragically—”

“——” Li Muyang’s eyes wided watching Zhang Chen. He didn’t think he could just say such malicious asseveration so easily, like he’s drinking a cup of cold water or eating two pieces of cake.

That’s his parents and his loved ones, he could curse them like that—-for them to die tragically?

Asseveration is sometimes too worthless, in the eyes of some people it is merely just used to hide their crimes.

“Also, previously Li Muyang was criticised by the teacher for cheating—-” Zhang Chen continue to add onto the list of crimes.

“Yes, he was in our class. He was bitter that the teacher said he cheated——”

“He skipped school for a long time, we thought he wouldn’t come back?”

“It turns out he is someone who cheats, you really can’t judge someone by their face——”

——

Everyone added in, the tides of the situation began leaning to one side.

Because of Zhang Chen and Wu Man, two influential figures of the school. Who were taking the lead, and in addition to the group of friends around them agreeing along, they had created an extremely negative image of Li Muyang.

They intended to make Li Muyang as someone who cheats, fights, and sleep all day long, giving him the image of a bad student, therefore affecting headmaster Lin Zhengyin’s judgment.

They wanted to ruin Li Muyang!

“What do you have to say for yourself?” Lin Zhengen looked at Li Muyang, her eyes were filled with hostility; a student like him should long have been kicked out from the school.

“It’s not like that. It’s not that.” Li Shinian pointed to the people around and shouted in desperation while weeping, tears running down her face: “My brother did not cheat, my brother did not hit anyone, you can’t say that about my brother, you can’t wrongly accuse him—-”

These people are crazy!

How can they say something like that?

Do they have any shame? Is there even a little sense of justice in their hearts?

Li Shinian clenches her hand, gathering qi in her lower abdomen.

Waiting to throw out ‘breaking fist’ after accumulating enough power!

She is going to rush over; she is about to knock down all those who used words to harm her brother like knives and arrows.

She wants them to die!

She swears she would not allow them to exist under the heavens!

“Li Shinian——” Li Muyang grabbed Li Shinian’s arm.

Li Shinian desperately struggled, but was still unable to throw off the hold of Li Muyang’s strong hand.

Li Muyang now possesses matchless strength, manpower alone absolutely cannot contend against him.

His eyes had already turned blood red, and were wrapped in red fog.

Black scales resurfaced on the back of his hand once again, the scales were just like black ink, pitch-black and hidden in depth, with sounds of wind and thunder echoing underneath.

“Don’t be impulsive.” Li Muyang said each word slowly to Li Shinian. His voice was hoarse and imposing.

Li Shinian must not be impulsive, because she still has to go to school and she still has to continue to be a good student of the school. If she were to hit someone in the presence of so many students and in front of the headmaster, there is no way anyone could do anything to cover up. As a result her future will likely be ruined.

“Brother——” Seeing her brother’s red eyes, Li Shinian said with her eyes gleaming with tears: “Brother, don’t get angry, it’s fine, it’s fine—-Let’s go home. We should go home. Mum and dad is waiting for us at home, they will be worried——”

Li Muyang did not move, his blood red eyes swept across the surroundings, just like an arrogant king looking down at the sentient beings.

“Bullying people is the same as bullying the heavens, the heavens won’t forgive them.”

061 – Listen and distinguish!

Truth was a shameless prostitute. It always stood on the side with the greatest force and with the highest number of people or on the side of the rich and powerful.

Perhaps you have also experienced something like this before. Most of the time it is not the argument which makes the most sense that is right, but rather those who speaks in a loud tone, those with an important status and high ranking are the ones who are correct.

Li Shinian is innocent and has the mind of a child. She's beautiful, smart, and her temper is somewhat arrogant and willful. She had always thought that between students there will inevitably be arguments and fights. Sometimes you will bully him and sometimes he will bully you back.

Is this not the campus? Isn't this what youngsters do?

People bullied her beloved brother, so she will bully them back on behalf of her brother. Because she's worried her brother does not have the strength to protect himself, worried that her brother would just suppress everything in his heart.

The simplest and most pure way of thinking.

But she underestimated the evil of people, underestimated the dangers of the world.

While she's still using a child's way to play games of vengeance with other people, these senior students, who are on the verge of walking into prestigious houses and universities and colleges, are already using other more mature and cruel methods to force her to grow up.

They used their influence to manipulate the public's opinion, to form a devastating storm of words that's difficult for anyone to even contend against.

Repeated rumours becomes a fact. Because everybody is spreading rumours that Li Muyang is a bad student, the suspicion of Li Muyang hitting people became more and more real with every passing moment.

Thus, being in the centre of the storm, how would Li Muyang find a way to break out? Under the pressure of the public's opinion, what would Lin Zhengyin final judgment be?

Li Muyang really doesn't want to explain. A fail is a fail, even if he explained thousands of times or ten thousand of times those who look down on him, will still despise him.

His body's condition is getting better now, and his ability to learn is getting stronger. He only needs to study and work hard for one more year. All the famous schools in the kingdom, which one he can't enrol into?

As to his promise with Cui Xiaoxin, although he still keeps it in mind, but when Cui Xiaoxin was leaving Jiangnan he had already broken the promise in advance —-On the contrary this matter is irrelevant. Because even by thinking about this, it simply just brings worries to himself and nothing more.

Li Muyang wants to be calmer and more composed.

If he wins he has to win gloriously, if he loses he has to lose gracefully.

Just as how he handsomely waved at Cui Xiaoxin and said: 'Don't worry, even if I attend West Wind University I won't chase after you'.

However, why did the situation become like this?

What did they want to achieve? They wanted to ruin him.

Ruin his reputation, ruin his image, and ruin his future.

Seeing Li Shinian crying and her pitiful little face wanting to pull him away, wanting to break away from this storm, the vicious tendencies in Li Muyang's heart's rapidly surged up, and streams of blood rushed wildly to his head.

The vicious tendencies inside his body were roaming all over the place, the blood inside his blood vessels boiling rapidly.

They pounded Li Muyang's body, hit Li Muyang's nerves, they wanted to tear open his head. Perhaps, only through this way could they freely take a breath of fresh air.

At the bottom of his hearts was a desire to destroy everything, he does not know where did that feeling came from, but there is nothing he could do to

extinguish it.

The scales on the back of hand were pitch-black like ink, but his eyes were once again wrapped in red clouds.

With Li Shinian staying behind him, he forged ahead towards the surrounding crowd.

“Everyone run, he wants to hit people again—-” Wu Man shouted out loud. He actually wants to escape, he took a step back and tried to retreat. But the crowd behind was huge; there was no way he could move back.

“Look, his eyes turned all red, one glance and you can tell this person is very violent——”

“Li Muyang, what do you want?” Zhang Chen loudly yelled: “You dare to harm the headmaster?”

With Zhang Chen’s ‘ reminder’, the guards by Lin Zhengyin side immediately came around.

This guy actually dares to hurt the headmaster? They immediately dashed towards Li Muyang who was heading forward in big strides.

Two security guards, one from the left and one from the right, tried to grab Li Muyang’s arms. Li Muyang completely does not care; he continued to advance in big strides, his both hands exerted strength and pulled, and both of the two bodies flew out.

More guards rushed over, some self-assured students also wanted to show-off their good skills in front of the headmaster came forward to help.

“Let him come here.” Lin Zhengyin’s stood still with her back straight, and thundered in a stern voice.

“Headmaster, you must not let him get too close—-” Zhang Chen shielded in front of headmaster, and said, concern in his voice: “Me and him were classmates for many years, this man can do anything.”

“Move aside.” Lin Zhengyin chose not to believe in this. Her eyes were fiercely staring at Li Muyang, then shouted in a deep voice: “Li Muyang, what are you trying to do? Are you still a student of this school? Do you still want to come

back to this school and retake the year? Are you still going to sit the entrance examinations? Do you still want there to be a future for you?”

Li Muyang’s footsteps paused for a moment, the red clouds within his eyes scattered, and his black pupils were like a cold puddle closely watching Lin Zhengyin.

“A failure is not terrible, what’s terrible is when you’re unable to recover after a minor hitch, to the extent of being jealous of and blaming others. Those who had became a general, who hasn’t been pierced by sharp blades? Those who accomplish something great, who hasn’t experienced torment? ”

“The sharpness of a sword results from sharpening on a grindstone, the fragrant of the plum blossom arrives after the bitter cold. I have said this sentence over and over again, this sentence is also the school’s motto—-Have you ever read these words? Have you never properly thought about the deep meaning contained within these words? ”

“Headmaster, don’t waste your breath talking to these kinds of people, he won’t listen at all—-” Zhang Chen saying in a ‘friendly’ reminder, hoping that Lin Zhengyin will quickly make a decision.

Lin Zhengyin’ gaze swept across Zhang Chen, and said with a stern expression: “What do you have against him, that you want to ruin him like so? ”

Zhang Chen was startled, he hastily tried to explain: “Headmaster, I did not—-I’m not trying to defame him. Although me and him have a little tiny past, but every word I say was true. As you can see, everyone said he cheated, and not only just me.”

“People have eyes, not only to let you see, but to allow you to distinguish right and wrong. People have ears, not just to let you listen, but so you can to listen to both sides. Did you see his eyes? His eyes were filled with grief and indignation, would a bad student who used a brick to hit people have this kind of expression in their eyes? Did you hear what he said to his sister? The older brother is caring and kind and the younger sister is a virtuous person, when they came across danger and when they know there is a possibility of being punished they desperately tried to push each other away—–Someone who cares so much for

their loved ones, how could their character be that bad?”

“But you, you can easily swear on your parents’ health and safety, and use such a cruel asseveration to curse your parents to have a tragic death. This is enough to make people shudder. You don’t even respect or love your own parents, then the way you treat outsiders, how could it not be cruel and merciless?”

“But headmaster——”

“At the moment when I heard you say his character is bad and he hits people, I also believed it was true. But after carefully thinking about it, I noticed many things are suspicious. You all speak unanimously, trying to stir up a wave to form a storm, so Li Muyang can’t say anything and can’t argue back——The words are becoming clearer and clearer, the truth is becoming more and more obvious. You are trying to block his mouth, trying to block that little girl’s mouth. This proves that you are up to something, and there’s something wrong. A scheme like this, you can only use it to bully a bunch of children, don’t tell me you want to deceive me too? ”

“Headmaster, you’ve mistaken, we don’t even want to bully him, we just——just said the truth.” Zhang Chen felt weak. How come this old woman would not react in a conventional manner?

Lin Zhengyin swept her eyes over all the students in the crowd, lifted up her sleeves and dusting it. The veins across her forehead were throbbing as she yelled loudly:

“At such a young age, you are all so ruthless, where is your moral integrity? How can you carry any responsibility? You’ve been learning in this school for many years; propriety, righteousness, honesty and sense of shame, have you ever understood one of these four words?”

“And also you, you, you there, and you——You thought by not saying a word, and by just sitting on the sidelines and simply watching, you can have a clear conscience? Seeing good but don’t try to emulate him, seeing evil but not obstruct, you are just the same as the murderer and their accomplices. You are the accomplices to this crime.”

“———”

The entire crowd became silent, even the falling of a needle could be heard.

Zhang Chen, Wu Man, and the others face reddened in embarrassment, their eyes evading any eye contact. More students also felt ashamed and were afraid to directly meet Lin Zhengyin in the eye.

“It’s my sin.” Lin Zhengyin directly faced Li Muyang, then bowed with both her hands in front, and whispered hoarsely: “As the proverb says, a teacher for a day, a father for life. As half your teacher, the headmaster of the school, I was not able to teach them well. It’s my fault they did such a heartless and shameless thing, as the headmaster I did not do enough, I am an incompetent headmaster ——-After what happened, I’m going to notify the ministry of education and resign from the post of headmaster as a punishment.”

“Headmaster, it’s not your fault——” someone exclaimed aloud.

“Headmaster, I need to testify.” Zhao Mingzhu squeezed through from the back of the crowd, because of running too quickly she was gasping for breath.

Zhao Mingzhu stood by the headmaster’s side, looked at Li Muyang opposite of her and said: “Once I was prejudiced against him, and when he achieved good grades I suspected him of cheating——the reason why there are rumours of him cheating at school was because I suspected him. So, I would like to publicly apologise to Li Muyang.”

“After later investigation, Li Muyang did not cheat in the exams. He relied on his own efforts to achieve that kind of result. Without any evidence I still suspected him; although he has not appear on the list of heroes above this time, but he is still a good student in my heart. ”

Zhao Mingzhu looked at Li Muyang with a sincere face and said: “Li Muyang student, if you wish to continue to stay in my class, I will certainly do my best to help you get on the hero list next year.”

Yes, like this.

This was the recognition he wanted, the respect he wished for.

This is what he worked so hard for. Not for special treatment nor special attention, but just to be treated and looked at in the same way as other students.

The evil tendencies in Li Muyang’s heart evaporated, but his blood is still boiling.

His fist relaxes then clenches tightly again, clenches then let go.

His throat choked back the urge to burst into tears.

“Thank you, teacher.” Li Muyang deeply bowed down, lowering his proud head that he held high all long.

062 – Cry of a crane from the high riverbank

A teacher is someone who transmits wisdom, imparts knowledge and resolves doubts.

Teachers are characterized by high moral qualities, conduct and are of a noble nature.

Thank you, teacher!

These four words were said to Lin Zhengyin and also to Zhao Mingzhu. And to all the good teachers in the world.

Lin Zhengyin does not follow blindly, nor make arbitrary judgements; instead she used her intelligence to interpret the scheme and resolved a student's difficulties, making Li Muyang extremely grateful to her and calling her a teacher.

Zhao Mingzhu realised her mistakes and tried to amend it. She placed down the dignity of an elder and the respect of a teacher at this critical time to publicly apologise in front of the mass crowd. This was also something to be admired.

"Thank you for what?" Lin Zhengyin waved her hand and said:" if we were able to teach the students well, everyone would be well-mannered and help each other out, then something so ridiculous would not have happened? "

Hearing Lin Zhengyin's words, those students who kept their heads down and remained silent all along finally can't stand it any longer.

"Principal, we did not see Li Muyang hit anyone——"

"Zhang Chen often bullied Li Muyang at school——-"

"Wu Man also forced Li Muyang to give him a ride on his back——"

———-

Every candidate jumped out to complain, complaining about Zhang Chen, Wu Man and the others' usual bad behaviour.

"You assholes——" Zhang Chen was extremely angry. But just like the tactic he used against Li Muyang, the voices of many people can confuse right with wrong, he can't deny or argue against this at all.

Moreover, what everyone said was all true.

Lin Zhengyin stared at Zhang Chen and Wu Man: “You two have now graduated from this school, as the principal of this school, there is a limit to the punishment I can give you. But I will write your conducts and behaviour into a report and add it to your record. This will follow you, along with your other data, to the school you will soon enter——I think at that time when they see this, they will make a fair judgement.”

“Principal, you must not——-” Zhang Chen was extremely terrified, he said with a pleading face: “Principal, you can’t destroy us like that. Ten years of strenuous studies, and finally after much difficulty we managed to get into university, if you do this it will completely ruin our future———”

“Principal, I was wrong. I would like to apologise to Li Muyang, I would like to apologise to Li Shinian——–” Wu Man was even more anxious, tears began to flow down his face, but he still repeatedly said: “Principal, I admit it, I always bullied Li Muyang, I deliberately insulted Li Muyang I used a brick to smash my own head and broke my nose by myself, it has nothing to do with Li Muyang ———”

Lin Zhengyin simply ignored Zhang Chen and Wu Man. They ran in front of Li Muyang instead.

“Li Muyang, we are classmates, why don’t we put this behind us? What do you say? I’m willing to apologise to you.” Desperately trying to please Li Muyang, Zhang Chen said with a smiling expression. This is the first time he spoke to Li Muyang in such a tone.

“Yes, Li Muyang, can you say a few words for us? As you know, we usually like to joke with you——-not bully you, and it’s because you’re popular——Li Muyang, you’re also very kind-hearted, this time you also won’t blame us, right?” Wu Man hurriedly ran over and said while pulling at Li Muyang’s sleeve.

“I’m not going to speak for you.” Li Muyang looked at Zhang Chen and Wu Man: “you were not joking with me. Not before, nor today. I can see very clearly, when you tried to ruin me you really were going to ruin me——-ruin everything I have.”

“Li Muyang——–”

“You’re very angry?” At the corner of Li Muyang’s mouth, there was a smear of a sneer that emerged : “On what grounds? What rights do you have to get angry? You bullied me for so many years, and today you wanted to completely ruin me——If I had begged for mercy, would you let me go? ”

“————-” Zhang Chen and Wu Man was speechless.

“You won’t, and neither will I. ”

“————”

Lin Zhengyin waved her hand and said: “Go, go, everyone go. Today was an important day, but now everything is in a tremendous mess and the joyful atmosphere is ruined by you.”

Zhao Mingzhu walked in front of Li Muyang and said: “Li Muyang, don’t be dispirited just because you failed the exams this time, as long as you are willing to learn, you will always have the opportunity. Next year you will definitely be on the top of the heroes list, and set an example of how someone can change to the junior students.”

“Okay.” Li Muyang said with a smile: “I will definitely work hard.”

Li Muyang turned and looked at Li Shinian, then asked: “Are you alright? “

Li Shinian wiped the tears in the corner of her eyes, her eyes misted over as she said: “I’m fine——As long as you’re fine, then I’m fine.”

Li Muyang reached out to stroke her hair and said with a smile: “Come on. Let’s go home.”

“Okay. Let’s go home.” Li Shinian said.

Puuuu——

A sharp and clear cry of a bird pierces across the horizon from deep within the clouds.

Above the heroes stage came a sudden clamour, everyone looked up at the sky.

The sky was clear and the clouds were calm, not one living creature was within

sight.

Pu——

Once again a loud and shrill cry of a bird resonated over once again.

“Cry of a crane from the high riverbank, its voice echoing throughout the wild. The cry of a crane from the high riverbank, its voice echoing throughout the sky.” Lin Zhengyin’s expression was serious as she said these words: “It’s a crane. It urgently flew over here from somewhere far—”

“Why would there be a crane?” Someone asked in a puzzled tone.

No one was able to answer this question; everyone just raised their head and stared at the sky, wanting to see exactly what was it that made the loud sound that vibrated throughout the high riverbank.

Without making everyone wait too long, the fog and white clouds were being tore through, then a crane with gigantic wings flew forward.

Feathers like snow, and a body like a giant eagle.

It swooped down as swift as lightning.

It seems the white crane is very intelligent, to everyone’s surprise it headed towards the direction of the heroes’ stage.

“Heavens, a great white crane——-”

“Quickly look, someone is on the crane, someone’s on the crane——-”

“Hurry kneel down, it’s a celestial being——”

——-

Pu——

The white crane brandishes its gigantic wings, drawing a graceful arc above the heroes’ stage.

The attention of the entire crowd all shifted onto the heroes’ stage, their eyes fixed on the beautiful white crane that was proudly holding its head high up, and on the handsome boy who was dressed in gorgeous clothes embroidered with a cloud pattern.

“Beautiful white crane, I also want a pet like that——”

“The man is handsome, the most handsome man I’ve ever seen——”

“Is he a celestial being, right? What’s he doing here? ”

——-

Every student were discussing spiritedly in a low voice about the crane and the crane’s owner.

Because the sound of the crane was so loud and clear, many more people rushed forth towards the heroes’ stage. The students inside the school, the parents and students waiting outside, and some spectators who enjoy watching a bustling scene also crowded forward.

Lin Zhengyin cupped hands in greeting and said loudly: “Celestial being riding a crane down to Jiangnan, and ultimately landed on top of our heroes stage, what can I do for you?”

Without seeing much movement, the handsome man had already lightly dismounted to the ground like a feather from the back of the crane.

Using one hand he covered his chest, performing the standard etiquette of a noble, then said in a cheerful voice: “My journey was urgent, I alarmed everybody. I am truly sorry. Excuse me, who is student Li Muyang? ”

Li Muyang?

He is actually here to find Li Muyang?

What is the relationship between Li Muyang and the celestial being?

All eyes were gathered on Li Muyang, they don’t understand how today’s ‘main character’ could even alarm a celestial being?

Others don’t understand, Li Muyang himself also doesn’t understand.

Look at his face, look at his clothes, look at his horse, and look how classy he is; there is no way Li Muyang would have a distant cousin or relative like him——if he did, he would have told the whole world already.

“I’m Li Muyang.” Li Muyang walked out from the middle of the crowd.

Li Shinian closely followed, her round eyes staring at the celestial being and

then looking at the red-crowned crane with a curious little face.

The celestial being pursed his lips then chuckled lightly, his eyes were full of enthusiasm as he looked at Li Muyang and said: “Congratulations, Junior Muyang, you have been selected into our school.”

063 – Not heard of it!

He came all the way to Jiangnan on a crane just to recruit Li Muyang into their school?

After hearing the news, every teacher and student standing in front of the heroes' stage were in shock.

"What is the school that Li Muyang got admitted into? There's the need to report the good news in such a way?"

"Isn't that a bit extreme? Li Muyang is not even on the heroes list——Even Cui Xiaoxin, who achieved first place, is not treated like this, right?"

"It seems like it's a great school, and the image and manners of the man riding the crane is very admirable——"

——

Others can only whisper and discuss, but Li Muyang, the person directly involved, has numerous unsolved problems and doubts.

He looked at the man riding the crane with a puzzled expression and said: "Thank you senior for coming all the way here to deliver the good news, Muyang is very grateful——But what I don't understand is which school am I admitted into?"

"Starry Sky Academy." The man who rode the crane wore a white robe embroidered with clouds; he stood still on the heroes stage, then slightly moved his body to stand straight up and uttered these words with rays of light flickering in his eyes.

Anyone could see; this is his pride, this is a place he admired to the extreme.

"Starry Sky Academy?" Li Muyang became even more confused, he asked: " I have never heard of such an institution, and also I did not enroll into this school. Why did Starry Sky Academy recruit me?"

"What kind of school is Starry Sky Academy?" Lin Zhengyin is worried her student is being deceived by some unscrupulous schools.

After all, the present society is not too good. Each year, at the time of August/September, when major colleges and universities released their results, some third class universities also blend in and grant students with admission notices. Previously, some students who usually have bad grades also received five or six notice of enrollment at the same time——However, even if Starry Sky Academy is a liar, this time the money they put into this production is not little, right? In front of them were a beautiful and proud white crane and a handsome man, which most likely can't be hired with just three, five or ten coins, right?

However, Lin Zhengyin has been in the business for many years, she indeed had never heard of the name Starry Sky Academy.

He had sent out countless graduates but not one of his students had been admitted into Starry Sky Academy before——

So, the background of Starry Sky Academy is very suspicious.

For students, entrance examination is one of the most important turning points in their life. The choice of school also has an important effect on any future decisions. If they were able to enter into a famous school, meet outstanding students, and take in excellent knowledge, their life would be as bright and beautiful as brocade.

However, if you accidentally entered into a third class university, then——even a good person will turn into a pheasant.

"Starry Sky Academy is simply Starry Sky Academy." The man riding the crane said with a smiling face. He can't answer this question and is also not willing to explain further. "Starry Sky Academy is Starry Sky Academy, there is no need to add any labels or talk about its glorious history. It's like the sun and the moon; it existed from ancient times till now, the same age as the heaven and earth. "

Cultured and refined; his expression and each of his movements is simply perfect. Drifting clouds and flowing water, natural and smooth like a celestial being descended from the sky. Only a celestial being would have this faintly discernable qualities and elegance?

"What I meant was——" Lin Zhengyin brows puckered in a frown and said: "No one knows of Starry Sky Academy. Not one student from our school had ever been admitted into Starry Sky Academy—-"

“Well, maybe they are not good enough.” The man who rode the crane said with a smile and in an extremely calm voice. This remark of his almost slapped the face of every teachers and students present——because the students you taught are not good enough, so they can’t go to the Starry Sky Academy. Because all the candidates present here are not good enough, so there is no way they would be aware of the existence of Starry Sky Academy.

However, because of the pure smile on his face and the sincere attitude when he spoke, it makes everyone think what he said is the truth.

Including the people he insulted, they also had the same thoughts——-Otherwise, why would Starry Sky Academy have such an outstanding student riding on a gigantic crane?

The man who rode the crane really stands out; his tall body stood up straight on the heroes stage, giving the feeling of a crane among a flock of chickens. Resembling a god worshipped by countless believers and an idol being chased after by numerous fans.

A person like him said these words, even if the students below has any discontent they won’t have the heart to rebel.

“Li Muyang——“ Lin Zhengyin turned around and looked at Li Muyang with a face of disbelief then said: “He is the only person who is admitted to Starry Sky Academy?”

“Yes.” The man with the crane looked at Li Muyang with the same enthusiasm as before, making some of the love-struck schoolgirls below the stage extremely dissatisfied. Why don’t you take a glance at us? Why do you always look at that boy? “He is the only person who’s admitted into Starry Sky Academy.”

“You said we’re not good enough, but Li Muyang is not even on the heroes list——-what’s so good about him?” Zhang Chen yelled in a sharp voice. What happened today was practically a nightmare to him and he only just moments ago struggled out from this nightmare but now he has entered into a more terrifying dream.

Is Li Muyang not just a defective child? Is he not just a little charcoal? Is he not

just a big pig?

He has been holding onto the last place of the year for such a long time. Some of the basic foundation and general knowledge questions he did not even understood. He was lucky to achieve a good score in the exam, but because he was suspected of cheating he was driven out of the school by the teacher—-Suddenly a trash like him has became a fragrant steamed bun that everyone likes?

Also, that ridiculous Starry Sky Academy—No one has ever heard of this school, there also isn't an enrollment list for this school on the heroes list above. Suddenly a stupid fool riding a crane came out and said Li Muyang is recruited, and at the same time he also looked down at the other students who are admitted to other schools because they are not good enough. Is there any justice? Is there any law?

An act!

It must all be an act!

Maybe this is a theatrical troupe that Li Muyang paid money to invite them here. Oh, Li Muyang has no money; Cui Xiaoxin must have found this troupe to perform for Li Muyang——Cui Xiaoxin and Li Muyang has a good relationship. Last time she publicly went against Zhao Mingzhu in front of the class because of Li Muyang. She must be worried that after failing the exams he would be laughed at, it is understandable that she did some preparations.

Otherwise, why would a third class institution suddenly come to recruit Li Muyang?

Not only Zhang Chen himself had this thought, several other students also had this thought.

When Li Muyang was bullied, they more or less felt some sympathy for him.

However, when Li Muyang soars into the sky and is about to become a person they have to look up to, their heart feels somewhat uncomfortable——What makes Li Muyang better than them? He's just a trash who eats all day long and waiting to die, yet he unexpectedly turned out to be the best in this school?

It's practically an enormous joke!

“Heroes list?” The man with the crane was evidently stumbled by Zhang Chen’s question. He carefully pondered over this question, then turned around to look at the names on the huge red silk, and said with a smile: “Sorry, I only know of the Riding wind list, Clear sky list and starry sky list, I had never heard of this heroes list——Also, what’s most important is being widely known to the rest of the world and not simply writing on a red silk to show off their accomplishments.”

“＿＿”

This guy words were far too direct.

This sentence not only slapped Zhang Chen’s white face until its purple-red, even Lin Zhengyin and Zhao Mingzhu’s face were slapped across loudly.

064 – First of West Wind!

Lin Zhengyin can no longer conceal his expression; the looks of the teachers present were also quite unsightly.

Had this kid not came on a crane, looking high and mighty and insufferably arrogant, Lin Zhengyin would want to make people rush forward to beat him up.

The announcement of the heroes list each year is a fine tradition of the school and also a huge festive day. Writing candidates names on the red silk was to allow the students to aim for high grades and to motivate those students lagging behind, so that every student could win top marks in the examinations and be proud of themselves.

Because of some words from this kid, the heroes list became a fabric an old woman used to wash her feet with—-unbearably stinky?

“You—-I did not ask your name?” Lin Zhengyin looked at the man riding a crane and asked.

“Student Xie Wuyou.” The white-robed youngster cup one fist in the other hand and answered with a smile. He did not even realise that he had just slapped many people across their faces.

“Well, Xie Wuyou student you have not answered my question. Just as Li Muyang student had mentioned, he did not apply to your Starry Sky Academy and we have never heard of Starry Sky Academy—-It’s not because we’re suspicious, but rather there are too many crooks outside enrolling new students. As the school principal, I should consider my students’ future and not allow them to be cheated of money and time.” Lin Zhengyin looked at Xie Wuyou and said: “Excuse me, do you have anything to prove the authenticity of your school?”

“Prove?” The smile on Xie Wuyou;’s face gradually disappeared, he then regained his smile and said: “You can choose to believe it or you can choose not to believe it, that is your choice—–What does it have to do with me? I’m only a messenger.”

“—-”

If she hadn't studied the etiquette of the ancient sage, Lin Zhengyin wanted to let off her rage and curse at him; would she still nicely chat to him?

You can believe it if you want, in any case I will not explain to you—-What is this attitude? What is with his attitude?

Arrogant to the extreme!

Listening to this conversation, Li Muyang instead became more interested about Xie Wuyou. He cupped his hands in salute, smiled and said: "Nice to meet you Wuyou senior."

Towards other people Xie Wuyou is cruel and arrogant, but towards Li Muyang he's extremely polite. He also cupped his hands in salute and said with a smile: "Muyang junior no need to be so polite. If you have any questions feel free to ask me, I started the school one year earlier than you, so of course I will clear up any confusion and clarify any doubts you may have."

"I troubled Wuyou brother to deliberately take a trip down to Jiangnan, Muyang is really grateful." Li Muyang said with a sincere look. "But I still have a lot of questions on this matter. I did not apply for Starry Sky Academy, why did Starry Sky Academy enrolled me into the school?"

"I do not know the details." Xie Wuyou said with a smile. "I just followed the orders of the president of the school to come and notify a student in Jiangnan. Because today is the day of the announcement of results, so I hurriedly came all the way here. After much difficulty I finally reached Jiangnan in time, I hope I did not disappoint Muyang brother."

"I'm not disappointed, just excited." Li Muyang answered honestly. I thought I fell deep into the mountains; I did not expect that an academic from a school that sounds extremely impressive with just its name would come over here on a crane to deliver the good news. The ups and downs of life happen too quickly, it is indeed so exciting. "So, Starry Sky Academy is a——normal institution, right?"

"Of course." Xie Wuyou nodded as he answered.

"How is it compared with West Wind University?"

"We don't compare our school to others"

“So it’s just a third class institution.” Across Zhang Chen’s face, there was a mocking expression clearly written. “It sounds impressive, but nobody knows of it. There’s no name on the heroes list, even the educational system does not have its record? Only a lousy school like that will treat an idiot who failed the exam like a treasure—-Isn’t that right everyone?”

Everyone burst into laughter.

What Zhang Chen said was amusing, but after carefully listening, it indeed sounds true. Fame is like an awl inside a sack, the greater the fame, the sharper the awl. It will pierce through the bag by itself; there is no way for it to hide.

Starry Sky Academy sounds impressive but no one had ever heard of this school before, even principal Lin Zhengyin does not know—-What’s most important is that even Li Muyang said he didn’t apply for it.

Deducing from this, if this is not a diploma mill then what is?

Xie Wuyou frowned slightly, reached into his arms, pulled out a little box and said: “I’ve got an admission notice—-”

Lin Zhengyin held out her hands, but Xie Wuyou handed the box to Li Muyang instead: “It’s for Li Muyang.”

Li Shinian hurried over to receive the box, extremely happy to be able to look at the white crane at close range. She then reluctantly ran back.

Li Muyang took the box and open; inside was a leather scroll.

There is no writing on the scroll but just a very simple map painted on.

“This is the address of the academy.” Xie Wuyou explained. 。

“Thank you Wuyou brother.” Li Muyang once again expressed his gratitude.

“Muyang, be careful you’re being deceived.” Lin Zhengyin kindly reminded him.

“Yes, principal, I will be careful.” Li Muyang answered, happy to receive her advice.

“You said we were not good enough so we don’t deserve to know about this

diploma mill——” Zhang Chen yelled loudly: “Do you dare to tell us, what was the score that the trash Li Muyang got? That allowed him to be admitted to your third class institution?”

This sentence finally asked the critical point.

Generally those with a high score will enter into famous schools and those with low scores will study at second-rate schools. If Zhang Chen obtained a higher score than Li Muyang but did not receive admission notice, then what kind of school Starry Sky Academy is sjould be obvious?

“Slap him.” Xie Wuyou thundered. This person repeatedly insulted Starry Sky Academy as a third class institution, even if he is broad-minded, it is still difficult for him to tolerate any more.

The crane he rode here all of a sudden leaped up, circled around in the air and then nimbly flew towards the direction of Zhang Chen.

Both Zhang Chen’s mouth and eyes opened wide; before he could even react, the left wing of the crane had already attacked his head—-

This wing attack was unimportant because the force was too big and too strong, Zhang Chen was not able to dodge in time. His whole body was blown away from the ground by the strong gale and flew far into the distance—-

The crane flew over here on a long boring journey. After much difficulty the crane finally found something to play with, would he give up so easily?

The crane chased after Zhang Chen who was sent flying into the air, and then brandished its wings again—-

“Ah, ah, ah——Help help—-Mum, I’m going to die—-”

Plop—-

Zhang Chen dropped down from around ten meters above; his body heavily fell onto the solid stone road.

He howled miserably a few times and then desperately tried to climb back up from the ground. But in the end he gave up, he felt as if all his bones are falling apart.

The crane returned back to the heroes stage, lifted its little head proudly while

standing behind Xie Wuyou.

Everyone below the stage had no idea this crane can understand human language. Everyone exclaimed in praise, and a few students even applauded. Li Shinian was the one who clapped most enthusiastically.

“What’s the crane’s name?” Li Shinian asked aloud. “

“Little Ugly.” Xie Wuyou liked the Li Shinian with a sweet and happy face; it seems like this is an innocent little girl.

“The crane is not ugly at all.” Li Shinian stood up for the crane.

Xie Wuyou smiled and did not explain any further.

Once again, he pulled out a piece of fabric from his sleeves, stretched his hand and then flicked his fingers, the scroll lightly like a feather floated over to Lin Zhengyin.

Lin Zhengyin held out her hand and the piece of fabric fell onto her palm.

“This is the imperial readings of the list of exam results for the monarch, Li Muyang obtained first place of West Wind——-” Xie Wuyou said with a smiling expression. “If you don’t doubt the genuineness of the list, you must know its true weight.”

First in the exams?

First in West Wind?

Lin Zhengyin face flushes, the hand clenching onto the scroll trembling incessantly.

She’s been teaching for decades, but she had never taught a student who achieved first place in the entire kingdom.

Just how great a fortune was this? Just how special was this?

Perhaps in the eyes of candidates and Li Muyang, an achievement like that would be the most glorious moment of his life.

For educators, isn’t it just the same?

“Principal——” Zhao Mingzhu was too excited she couldn’t utter a word. Someone from her class achieved the first place of West Wind, and also it was

the trash that was falsely accused of cheating before——–No, a charcoal teenager Li Muyang. How's that possible? How could such a thing happen? Could it be that before he was deliberately pretending to be asleep in every class, but he had been thinking hard all along? Could it be he intentionally cheated in every examinations just so he can amaze the word today?

If that's the case, then everything happened today is starting to make sense.

Otherwise, how could there be a student who could achieve the first place of the entire kingdom with merely a few months of study time? Unless he or she is possessed by one of the ancient sages.

Before she was a famous teacher in Jiangnan, but soon she will become a famous teacher in the kingdom——–Zhao Mingzhu was so excited she couldn't control herself anymore.

Fortunately she was not deceived by Li Muyang' s false appearance, during the critical moment she empathised with him and supported him. As a result, Li Muyang was able to achieve such a result so she deserves half the credit——–No less than half. No, one-third. One-sixth, yes it can't be any less than that——–

"It's real." Lin Zhengyin said in a trembling voice. "This is the distinctive ancient silk fabric that only the royal family use. The writing is in Tiandu's ancient font, and the monarch precious seal —-This can't be faked, and no one dares to do so either. The school receives a copy every year just to file away. It has nothing to do with our school. But, unexpectedly this year, one of the students of our school is on the top of the list and scored first place——"

The old principal was moved to tears, she used her sleeve to wipe a tear away, then said with her eyes brimming with tears: "I have no more regrets in my life ——–"

065 – Journey with Wise men

After experiencing so many shocks so frequently, everyone became too lazy to even move.

After being surprised so often, everyone became too lazy to say anything.

Li Muyang if you have any other moves then show it all at once. They had already long treated today as celebrating Chinese new year in advance—-

“I got first?”

Li Muyang revealed a look of astonishment across his face. Others were in disbelief, Li Muyang also didn’t believe it at all.

He had spent little time studying and his knowledge is very limited. Fortunately, in his mind there was a familiar feeling that helped him, otherwise many major questions and problems he wouldn’t be able to figure them out.

He just wanted to do his utmost, his best. He just wanted to try his best to do a good job, because only then he will have a chance to go to West Wind University.

However, he achieved first in the exams?

Li Muyang widened his eyes, thinking that this world is quite absurd——This sort of thing happening to him is the same as a beautiful woman with big chest and milky-white skin coming up to him and say ‘Li Muyang you’re so handsome, I love you’.

“Brother, you’re so cool, I love you so much.” Li Shinian threw herself into Li Muyang’s arms, her head leaning on his chest as she said: “You’re the first place in the entire West Wind, you’re the first in the kingdom——Heavens, you’re too amazing. Brother, I’m going to go back and tell mum and dad, they will definitely be very glad—-”

Li Shinian was extremely happy, even happier than if she were admitted to West Wind University her.

Because if she was admitted into West Wind University it’s very normal, but Li

Muyang achieving first place in the exam is not normal at all. Would someone find it strange that Cui Xiaoxin occupied the top of the heroes list and was admitted to West Wind University?

She had always done her best to take care of and defend her big brother, the pitch-black and weak brother who was always bullied. However once he's serious he could unleash such ability and could achieve such dazzling achievements, this is indeed too stunning, too crazy.

Li Muyang was able to feel the joy of Li Shinian. When you achieve some results, people who really care about you will be happier than you yourself.

Li Muyang's held Li Shinian's hand tightly, then said with a smile: "I didn't expect this at all——"

"This is absolutely true. This can't be fake." Xie Wuyou glanced over at the excited sibling Li Muyang and Li Shinian, smiled and said: "The good news has been delivered, I have to go back and report. I hope that student Muyang will be punctual on your first day at school and not make us wait."

"Thank you senior Wuyou ." Li Muyang once again bowed to express his gratitude.

"Don't mention it." Xie Wuyou waved his hand.

"Little Ugly." Xie Wuyou drew his hand and the white crane little ugly soared into the air, with a loud cry.

Xie Wuyou took a last glimpse at Li Muyang and soon after his body rose steeply from the ground, his robe stretching out with the strong wind and his feet firmly on top of the crane's back.

One man and one crane ride the wind, in a flash they had already disappeared into the depths of the clouds.

Everyone was dumbstruck.

His means of transport was really too cool, who wouldn't want to be a crane-riding youngster?

What kind of school was able to nurture such a student? Don't tell me that later Li Muyang——would also be like this Xie Wuyou, riding down to Jiangnan on

a crane?

Thinking of the scene of Li Muyang's returning home in the future, many people present here were full of yearning and envy.

This is life!

Lin Zhengyin walked over to Li Muyang's side, looked at him happily and said: "Congratulations, Li Muyang. First place in the exams, this is the glory our school had never received before. Even in the entire Jiangnan, only the genius youngster Du Ruofu achieved such a special glory twelve years ago——"

"Thank you, principal." Li Muyang said with a smile: "And I would also like to thank the school teacher's for teaching me."

Zhao Mingzhu's face revealed an embarrassed look as she said: "Although I really want to receive some of the glory of the first place in the kingdom, but talking about this I still feel ashamed——On the first day I came to this school I already had some conflict with Muyang student, afterwards I had always been hostile to Li Muyang student, I always felt Li Muyang was deliberately opposing the teachers and was not showing any interest in learning."

"Miss Zhao, this is in the past. At that time I was wrong, but it wasn't intentional, just that my body—-was not too well." Li Muyang said comfortingly.

"Yes. This is in the past, let's all not keep this in mind." Lin Zhengyin tried to smooth things over. "Muyang student can you come to my study? I would like to have a chat with you."

"The pleasure is all mine."His did not dare to refuse his elder's invitation.. Li Muyang readily agreed.

Lin Zhengyin glanced over at Li Shinian who was clutching the corner of Li Muyang's sleeve refusing to let go, She then said with a smile: "This little girl can also come."

"Thank you, principal." Li Shinian smiled sweetly.

"Ms Zhao should also come along. Muyang is a brilliant student of yours, surely you want to have a chat with him. When Muyang leaves for Starry Sky Academy, such opportunities will be rare."

“Thank you, principal.” Zhao Mingzhu said with a look of delight.

Lin Zhengyin’s study is a small independent building in the northeast corner of the school; a wooden structure, classic and elegant, full of literary taste.

Lin Zhengyin invited the guests to sit, while a server promptly brought tea over.

“Muyang, try the Longjing tea, the leaves are picked before pure brightness; it’s a specialty of the lion mountain, the tea is not expensive, but what’s good is its fresh and clean flavour.” Lin Zhengyin made an inviting gesture.

“Principal, please go ahead.” Li Muyang held the teacup with both his hands, slowly savouring the tea.

Li Shinian did not drink the tea, but just sat at the side smiling like a happy little fool.

Lin Zhengyin glanced over at Li Shinian with a puzzled expression and asked: “What is this little girl laughing about?”

“I’m extremely happy.” The smile on Li Shinian’s face became even stronger. “I never thought that one day the principal would ask my brother to drink tea with her.”

“There are ups and downs in life and life changes unpredictably. No one knows what kind of things will happen in the future. However, I firmly believe that a precious jade will emit bright rays of light in the end.” Lin Zhengyin said with a sigh. A bad student became the first place in the kingdom’s exam; this student’s fate will change tremendously as a result. The fate of the school would also be the same.

“Principal is right, my brother is a precious jade.” Li Shinian nodded. “Stones can’t shine no matter what.”

“＿＿”

Zhao Mingzhu looked at Li Muyang with a serious expression and asked him for guidance: “Muyang, can you tell teacher your secret to success? What is your learning style? How long do you spend studying every day? What about your

resting time? Is there a unique technique to rapidly improve your grades? I'm just asking for your junior schoolmates, I hope they can be like you and amaze the world as the kingdom's most dazzling presence——"

This question truly baffled Li Muyang, does sleeping all day count as a unique technique? Being struck by lightning is a secret to success?

"I think——" Li Muyang said embarrassingly, his glance evading hers: "Just never give up and you will have the opportunity."

Li Muyang suddenly remembered Cui Xiaoxin, because she's the first one to tell Li Muyang to never give up: 'As long as you never give up there will be an opportunity'. She also did not feel troubled to tutor Li Muyang everyday, she even explained utterly simple questions over and over again to him.

If she knew about his results, if she knew that he achieved the first place in the exams in the entire kingdom, she will definitely feel happy for him, right?

Lin Zhengyin made a gesture with her hand and said: "Teach according to the student's ability, how could there be a universal law for success?"

"Principal is right, I was too pressing." Zhao Mingzhu nodded in agreement.

Lin Zhengyin looked at Muyang with a kind face and said with a smile: "Muyang has achieved first place in the exams out of the entire kingdom, this is the greatest glory our school had received in hundred of years, this is also the greatest glory I, Lin Zhengyin, has achieved in my whole life——To obtain the first place among all the famous schools in the kingdom is indeed incredibly difficult. It's almost something unimaginable."

"Principal, I just——"

Lin Zhengyin waved her hand and said: "Muyang no need to be modest. I also have been a student; I understand the hardship and difficulty. Although I'm unsure of the background of Starry Sky Academy but it must be a great college ——Only with the results of the first place in the exams could be admitted into this school. It's already clear that this is not an ordinary school, after you enter Starry Sky you must continue to try your best and achieve remarkable results."

"Thank you principal for your teaching."

“I think your senor is not an ordinary person, but more like those cultivator celestial beings from the legends, perhaps your fate from here will also be uncertain——Regardless whether you seek a career or longevity, the key lies in the heart. No matter what you want you should go chase after it. We definitely will support you.”

“Thank you principal for your advice”. Li Muyang just kept nodding.

“Each year when the heroes list is announced, the school will give out major rewards. This year, Cui Xiaoxin is at the top of the list, she should receive an award. Today I made a decision on my own; I will reward you and Cui Xiaoxin student equally. Wait until the list of the kingdoms’s exam results are issued to each city and town, the governor and city’s lord will certainly reward greatly——” “

“Thank you—-“

Lin Zhengyin waved her hand, indicating Li Muyang need not to thank her anymore.

She looked at Li Muyang and said: “Muyang, your name will be engraved on a school’s plate, together with your incredible milestone, so that other students will follow you as an example and everyone will strive to achieve the honour of being the first place in the kingdom—-I know you will soon be leaving to study, you may wish to take this opportunity to inscribe a few words for your junior schoolmates, I will tell people to engrave it on the motto stone in front of the school’s gate. So we can admire it each day and encourage ourselves to improve and learn. What do you think?”

“Lin principal, I don’t think that’s necessary?” Li Muyang quickly refused: “I’m not used to this.”

“Muyang, you can’t refuse this sort of thing.” Lin Zhengyin said with a serious face: “it’s for me, for the school but also for your junior schoolmates, how about it?”

“Brother, do it.” Li Shinian said agitatedly: “When I go to school I can see your words every day, just how intimate would that be?” “

“Yes Muyang, engraving the stone is a major event. You gain so much glory for

the school we should let everyone know your credits.” Zhao Mingzhu said comfortingly beside him.

“But I really don’t know what to write.”

“It’s okay, take your time to think.” Lin Zhengyin said patiently: “You can think while drinking tea.”

And then shouted at the people behind: “Come, bring pen and ink.”

Li Muyang knows he can’t refuse anymore, he got up and said: “Then I’ll embarrass myself.”

“Our thousands of students are incredibly fortunate.” Lin Zhengyin said.

Li Muyang walked over to the table, holding a brush with ink in his hand, he gazed for a long time in silence.

Everyone surrounded him as they looked forward to his words with a smiling face.

After a long while, Li Muyang’s finally began to write, on the white blank paper he wrote a line of words: Journey with wise men!

“Good, good words.” Lin Zhengyin was full of praise. “The words are good, the meaning is even better. Journey with wise men, and then you will definitely gain something, increase your knowledge and open up new horizons. Muyang’s insight is not ordinary at all, worthy of celebration.”

“The next line?” Zhao Mingzhu asked with a smile. “Muyang, quickly write down the next line. I can’t wait.” “

“There’s no second line.” Li Muyang placed down the brush and said while shaking his head.

“How can you not have a next line?” Lin Zhengyin was also anxious, she said: “Muyang, you got off to an amazing start, it needs a perfect ending. Otherwise, it will be a lifelong regret——”

“But principal, I really didn’t think of a second line.”

“Think again, think again, we’re in no rush, no hurry.” Lin Zhengyin said impatiently, with a look that says if you don’t write the second line you won’t

walk out this door.

“Principal, then this time I really will embarrass myself.” Li Muyang put on a brave face and said.

“Not at all, not at all, not embarrassing at all. We will only be amazed and pleasantly surprised.”

“I have a hunch that this will become a famous pair of lines for centuries ——–”

“Brother, just write it, don’t be modest——–”

Li Muyang once again began to write, neatly writing the next line on the huge blank paper: Rejected by retards!

“_ __ _”

066 – Achieved this result before!

After seeing the siblings off, Lin Zhengyin returned to her study. Glancing at the words on the desk, she let out a long sigh: “The characters are good, the brush strokes are also strong, and it seems there’s knowledge of the fundamentals. But the content—-could be better.”

“It’s my fault”. Zhao Mingzhu quickly apologised to Lin Zhengyin: “When Muyang was bullied by his classmates, I did not fulfil my duty as a teacher. If I stood up for him and said a few words then, perhaps the situation won’t be like it was today. The children went too far, if it wasn’t for principal distinguishing right from wrong, and that crane-riding youngster delivering the good news in time, then most likely Li Muyang would have had a hard time today.”

Lin Zhengyin waved her hand and said: “It doesn’t matter. Why talk about things that has happened already? But if there’s a student like Li Muyang in the future, you should pay a lot more care and attention—-and not judge who’s a hero based on performance. Many heroes in the kingdom can’t even or even went to school.”

“Yes. I have learnt a lesson from this experience, from now on I will treat all students equally.” Zhao Mingzhu bowed and promised.

“This is the school’s fortune, also the student’s fortune.” Lin Zhengyin said.

Zhao Mingzhu glanced at the strange phrases on the table and said: “Principal, these two lines——are we really going to carve it on the motto stone in front of the school?”

“I’ve said it already, how can I go back on my words?” Lin Zhengyin said with a serious expression. “But, let’s just engrave the first phrase for now—-”

“Just the ‘journey with wise men’?”

“Yes. This phrase is simple and clear, yet it contains the great wisdom and knowledge of life. Put it on the motto stone along with Li Muyang’s results——” Lin Zhengyin said with a smiling face. “As for the second verse, for the time being let’s temporarily hide it. I can see that this child’s eyes show determination and

his mind is clear. He had suffered humiliation up until now, but he still had not given up; he will definitely have a great future. Traveling all the way to Starry Sky, it's possible he will achieve some outstanding achievements that would be widely known to everyone——At that time, we should then engrave the following phrase. Since at that time whatever he says will be right. Just as the kingdom's richest man Ma Yunhuao did not spread his famous saying: 'today you refuse to acknowledge me, tomorrow I will be out of your league' yet it is still widely known."

"Principal, Ma Yunhuao did not say that." Zhao Mingzhu quietly reminded.

"He did not say that?" Lin Zhengyin paused for a moment.

"Yes." According to textual research——he did not say that. "Zhao Mingzhu did not dare to go against her superior, her voice becoming increasingly lacking in confidence.

"Take a look, he undoubtedly did not say that, but just some busybody claimed he did——-There are many gossips and rumours surrounding celebrities." Lin Zhengyin laughed and said: "in any case, today is a festive day."

"Congratulations Principal."

"Congratulations Ms Zhao."

The two looked at each other and burst into loud laughter.

Outside at the school gate, Li Shinian held tightly onto Li Muyang's arm while giggling and laughing.

"Brother, how can you write such a phrase? Did you notice Miss Zhao's face back there? You know, she was also one of the people who were originally against you—-Were you trying to embarrass her on the spot? Fortunately, principal is intelligent, she immediately talk about the structure of your writing and did not let the atmosphere become awkward."

Li Muyang shook his head as he said: "Actually I wasn't talking about Ms Zhao."

"Ah? Then who were you talking about? Zhang Chen and Wu Man? Students who bullied you before?"

“Yes. Not them either.” As he shook his head, Li Muyang sighed lightly and said: “I used to feel aggrieved. I never said bad words about anyone, did not do any bad things. Just that my body wasn’t well and my learning ability was also not that good. Why did people always bullied me and looked down on me? After what happened today I suddenly understood many things.”

“Understand what?”

“A lot of times when you’re hated or liked by someone it’s not because your personality is good or bad, but rather because of your ability or background—- Look at Wuyou senior, his words are sharp and penetrating and almost every sentence he says stabs right in the chest. However, when he stood on top of the stage, how many people dared to publicly strike back?”

“Brother, do you mean to say——” Li Shinian’s eyes were bright and beautiful as she looked at Li Muyang, her brother who she’s struggling to understand more and more and asked: “Do you want to become as strong as Xie Wuyou, so that in the future no one would be disrespectful to you?”

“I want to be stronger, but not because I want people to respect me.” Li Muyang looked at Li Shinian’s sweet little face. “I just hope I can protect you, protect mum and dad from any danger and not let you get bullied—- and also not be called a trash anymore. When there’s danger I can stand in front of you, rather than having you stand in front of me time and time again.”

“Brother——” Li Shinian held onto Li Muyang’s arm tightly and said: “We’re family. You’re my beloved brother——why do you say something like that?”

Li Muyang rubbed Li Shinian’s head and said: “Because you’re my beloved little sister, so whatever happens I won’t let anyone bully my little sister——”

“Brother, why do I think you look more and more handsome?”

“Do you really?” A surprised expression spreading across Li Muyang’s face.

“I’m lying.” Li Shinian pursed her lips. “You’ll always be my charcoal brother.”

“——-”

“Brother, do you think the principal will carve the words you wrote on the

motto stone in front of the school?”

“Whether they carve it or not is not important, they insisted me to say something, so I said something that I wanted to say. Journey with wise men, because I think I’m not smart enough. Parents are wise people, they have taught me how to take care of and understand family. You’re wise, you taught me how to love and protect your loved ones. Cui Xiaoxin is wise, she taught me to understand myself and never give up. And also principal, she knows how to listen and distinguish right and wrong. Ms Zhao admits her mistake and corrects what she did wrong—“

“Rejected by retards, because I care too much about what irrelevant people think of me. I feel they should stop bullying me, I feel they don’t know me enough, I feel they should respect me, but even if they had given me all that, then am I still the useless Li Muyang? As long as I become strong enough, become outstanding, would I still care about these stupid people’s opinion? Just as Wuyou senior had said——you can choose to believe, or you can choose not to believe, what does it have to do with me?”

“Brother, I really think you’re more and more handsome.” Li Shinian did not smile at all, but just, with a serious expression, looked at Li Muyang, at his pitch-black eyes that were flashing with strange lights.

She felt her brother had changed; he had become more calm and wise, become stronger and more determined.

Previously, he was at a loss, dispirited, or cowardly.

Now he has finally found his path and is willing to put in maximum effort.

A brother like that gave Li Shinian a sense of security, just like——-a true brother.

Li Muyang smiled and said: “I hope so. Anyway, I don’t believe whatever you say.”

“Brother——” Li Shinian’s voice turned higher and higher as she said these words.

“I don’t believe it.”

“You’re really, really, really, really handsome——”

“I don’t believe it, I don’t believe it—-”

———

Luo Qi had an uneasy feeling.

Sitting down she felt anxious, standing up she still felt anxious, and when doing housework she felt even more anxious.

While washing the dishes she broke a bowl and while washing chopsticks she threw the chopsticks into the bin—

Li Yan also sat at home waiting; seeing Luo Qi walking back and forth in front of him, he grumbled: “Can you sit down and have a rest? You circling around me is making me dizzy.”

“Who told you to look? If you don’t stare at me, how would you be dizzy?”

“Can you be more reasonable? You’re in front of me, what else can I look at?”

“Read a book. What are you holding the book for? The book is upside down and you still haven’t realised?” “

“——”

Li Yan also did not try to cover up, he threw the book ‘Collection of poems’ on the table and went over to Luo Qi: “don’t worry, worrying is useless. Muyang and Shinian have gone to check the results, if the results are announced they will immediately come back to let us know—-”

“They should be back by now.” Luo Qi said worriedly. “There won’t be a big problem, right?”

“Just checking the exam results list, what big problem could there be? It’s either pass or fail—-”

“Failing the exams is not a big problem? If Muyang realised he’s not on the list, how deeply hurt would he be—-No, I’m going out to find him, if the child take things too hard ——”

Plop–

The yard gate was forcefully pushed opened.

Li Shinian ran over, gasping for breath, and cried out loudly: “father, mother, brother is first——”

The moment Luo Qi heard this, her face turned deathly white, she then hurriedly said comfortingly: “It’s fine, it’s fine, it’s just the first place, before he also got this result before—-Where’s your brother?”

Seeing Li Muyang entering the door behind his sister, Luo Qi dashed over and held him into her arms and said: “Muyang, don’t take it to heart. Did a great man not say this before? Failure is the mother of success. One failure does not matter, you can take the exams next year, with my son’s talent and hard work ——-you will definitely be at the top of the list.”

“Mum, I said first in West Wind—-counting from the top.” Li Shinian rolled her eyes while she helplessly explained.

“What?” Luo Qi and Li Yan stared with their eyes wide open. “First counting from the top?”

067 – Xiangma was rejected!

Habits are something that was very terrifying.

Just as everyone is accustomed to Li Muyang obtaining last place in the exam, suddenly someone jumped out and said Li Muyang achieved first place, not counting backwards but from the top. Not just achieving the first place in the school, but first in West Wind, first in the entire kingdom. This was something that indeed subverted people's understanding and makes it difficult for anyone to accept it in such a short time.

Li Shinian managed to convince her parents after much difficulty, convinced them that their precious son had done something amazing.

"Muyang—-" Luo Qi's eyes were brimming with tears. Holding Li Muyang's arm tightly while choking back her tears, she said: "You really achieved first place, you can go to West Wind University——-You can finally go to the West Wind University. We don't have to beg other people, my son did it by himself ——"

"Mum, I can't go to West Wind University." Li Muyang said with a wry smile.

"Can't go? Why can't you go? First in the exams but can't attend West Wind University—-What kind of students does West Wind enrolls each year? Shady, they must have secretly manipulated the situation behind, this sort of thing I've seen too much—-No, I'm going to take a trip to Tiandu, I'm going to argue with them." Luo Qi became very agitated and irritated. Not because her son did not do well in the exams, it's fine if he did not do well, but because he still can't attend West wind even if he achieved such good results, this has gone too far. Although she does not like or perhaps even hate the Lu family, if she had to go back and apologise, or kneel down in front of them, she still wants to help his son to vent his anger.

"I also don't know what happened." Li Muyang's expression looked serious as he pondered the situation deeply, then said: "Logically speaking, I got first in the exams, they should allow me into West Wind University. But this time West Wind University did not accept me, and the announcement list posted in front of

the school did not even had my name on it——I feel there's many mysteries present, I have no choice but to slowly find out the answers later."

"What should we do? First in the kingdom but he's not admitted to any university, Is there any place that makes reasoned judgements anymore?" Li Yan's personality is straightforward and honest, hearing about this he can't help but feel indignant.

"Dad, mum, wait for me to finish——" Li Shinian said while stamping her feet. "Who says brother is not accepted by any school? Brother is admitted to Starry Sky Academy, it's a very good school."

"Starry Sky Academy? What kind of school is that?" Luo Qi looked puzzled, then glanced over at Li Yan and asked: "Have you heard of it?"

"No." Li Yan said while shaking his head. "Could this be a fake school?"

"Of course not." Li Shinian said with a confident face. "Do you know how they delivered over the good news? A celestial-being-like young man came to the school riding on a crane. He also looked down on West Wind University, my brother obtaining the first place in the entire kingdom came out of his mouth ——The principal checked the entire list, she said there isn't a problem. She then specially invited my brother to her office to inscribe a few words and said it's going to be carved on the motto stone in front of the school gate."

"That impressive?" With a look of astonishment across Li Yan's face, he said: "I remembered, today we also heard the cry of crane from the house. At that time your mother was restless, she also scolded a few words 'Whose damn bird is chirping so loudly'——"

"Li Yan can you not talk for a second?" Luo Qi gave her husband a stern glare and said snappily. "Our son is admitted to Starry Sky Academy, this is a great blessing. You hurry over to the butcher at the corner of the street and order some fresh pork, then head to the stewed meat shop at the East side and buy all of their prepared food in the shop. And also fish and eggs, buy as much as possible, and buy some fresh vegetables and fruits; today there will be a celebratory feast, I'll also invite some guests over——"

"Celebratory feast? Who are you inviting?" Li Yan looked bewildered.

“All the neighbours.” Luo Qi said with a smiling face “Before Muyang also received a lot of their ‘care’ and ‘encouragement’. Now that my son has achieved the first place in the kingdom, I must invite them over for a celebration?”

“——” Seeing his wife radiant and bright smile, Li Yan just felt a chill down his spine.

When did the neighbours ever cared and encouraged our Muyang? They only said countless harsh and cruel words.

Saying ‘three-years old and still so small, when this child grows up he’ll be an idiot’, ‘they have such a stupid child, they must have done some evil things in their previous life’, ‘if I had a son like him, I would have pushed him into a pond and let him drown, then all problems will be solved and everyone will live peacefully’——-Inviting guests over at this time, it’s obvious that this is to slap the faces of all those invited.

“How about we just forget about it?” Li Yan said comfortingly.

“Forget it?” Luo Qi gritted her teeth in fury and her voice was ice-cold as she said: “I can forget anything but not this. Back then what did they do to our Muyang, this time I must do something———I have to get back at them one by one. Li Yan, I’m warning you, you don’t have to help me but you can’t stop me. Or else, me and you are over.”

“——-”

Li Yan looked at Li Shinian for help, Li Shinian hurriedly ran towards the back of the house and said: “I almost forgot, I still need to study.”

Li Yan then glanced over at Li Muyang, Li Muyang also quickly dashed away while shouting: “I also have to study–I feel I didn’t do too well this time—”

——-

——-

The city’s lord mansion.

Yan Bolai was right in the middle of a meeting with his subordinate; a young

clerk stood with his back straight in front of him, seriously reporting the recent matters, no matter big or small, that happened in Jiangnan. Just then, the pot of cherry tomato plant on the table suddenly gently swayed from side to side, just like it's being provoked by the autumn wind.

The clerk's line of sight was slightly distracted by this, but his mouth did not pause at all and continued to report.

As if Yan Bolai had not heard this before, after listening to the clerk's report, he commended the young clerk's outstanding ability and allowed him to assume more important responsibilities in the future. At the moment when the young clerk was emotionally stirred and wished to pledge to work for the city's lord until he dies, the gently wind lightly blew across reminding them of the several important matter that needed immediate attention and that matters needed to be assigned to the appropriate departments.

The clerk promptly took notes; seeing the lord has no other orders, he then held onto his binder and exits the room.

Yan Bolai took a glimpse at the pot of cherry tomato plant, walked over and gently pulled the eye of the beast on the brush container.

Hua—-

The painting parted into two; a dark and deep door, as if it's leading to hell, appeared in the middle of the wall.

A man in a black robe stood in front of the door. He bowed, then walked over to Yan Bolai office and said: "The exam results list has been posted, I asked someone to reproduce a copy for you."

As he spoke, the black-robed man pulled out a silk cloth from his sleeves and placed it on top of the large mahogany table.

Yan Bolai had no intention of examining the list, he turned to look at the blue jacaranda flowers outside to rest his eyes, and in a calm voice he asked: "Xiaoxin is going to West Wind University?"

"Yes". The back-robed man immediately replied. "Miss Xiaoxin has been admitted to West Wind University."

Yan Bolai did not feel surprised at all and said flatly: “As expected. If there’s nothing else, then, you can go. I have a meeting later.”

The man in black did not leave, instead lifted his head to look at Yan Bolai, at his although not tall but extremely sturdy back and said: “When the results list was announced, something happened——”

“I don’t like guessing, if you have something to say then say it.”

“Li Muyang is enrolled into Starry Sky Academy.” The black-robed man said in a deep voice. “A man riding a crane personally delivered the notice.”

“Starry Sky Academy?” Yan Bolai suddenly turned around, his eyes blinking with red lights, as if two round suns were burning. “Li Muyang is admitted into Starry Sky Academy? Back then Xiangma was rejected by Starry Sky Academy, he ——-Just what’s so good about him?”

068 – A heavy reward can kill!

Others may not be aware of the history of Starry Sky Academy, but as a descendant of a notable family of Tiadu, how would Yan Bolai not know?

Someone had said Starry Sky Academy was founded thousand years ago, while others said that Starry Sky Academy had already been established when writing was invented. Also it has been said that the first principal of Starry Sky Academy was a cultivator at the Dragon Slayer stage, and who later on became a celestial being. It existed alongside the sun and moon, the same age as the world.

Over so many centuries there has been too many rumours. The records of Starry Sky Academy in the history books are also fairly vague, with very little details. It seemed as if the human race was hiding an enormous secret.

But Yan Bolai knows clearly, several strong men who are widely known throughout the divine continent had graduated from Starry Sky Academy.

For example thousands of years ago , there were many such people. Like the Ximen Hongying who broke past Luo Shui with he and his sword alone, like the Daoqi Qingniu who intruded into the frontiers of the desert and slaughtered the merciless tyrant Zhang Gaoren who commanded ten thousand calvalry, and the Wangying Qiangu who established the Peacok Empire with a bunch of brothers that competed equally with the martial court of West Wind—

People only know that the background and cultivation of these familiar names are mysterious and impressive, every one of them is a moon or a star of that era, and a hero of the entire divine continent.

But Yan Bolai knows they have one thing in common; they were all from Starry Sky Academy.

For the last thousand of years the divine continent has been peaceful, and the competition between countries remained in good balance. Recently, there was not any news heard of any impressive people from Starry Sky, but this does not mean Starry Sky Academy has been forgotten.

No one dared to forget.

A school like that, who would not want to send their grandchildren there for further study?

From the royal families to noble clans, who would not devote all their attention and care in order to send their most outstanding youngsters over there?

The main person that the Yan family tried to push forward was precisely Yan Bolai; in the end Yan Bolai was rejected by Star Sky Academy, without giving any reasons at all. Starry Sky Academy never gave any explanations.

After Yan Bolai became a high official, the lord of Jiangnan city, he then tried his best to send Yan Xiangma over there—-Of course, this time his family was once rejected again. Because the Cui family wanted to send someone else, and also because Yan Xiangma's qualifications and cultivation differed greatly from this youngster they wanted to send.

The youngster was rejected by Starry Sky Academy ultimately however. In a fury he entered the demon town and swore to reach the withered glory stage. Unwilling to give up, Yan Bolai once again tried to send his son over. In the end, as expected, Yan Xiangma also failed. Starry Sky Academy rejected him and did not give any explanation for his rejection just like back then.

Their Yan clan had always desired to enter into Starry Sky Academy; in order to send their outstanding younger generation over there they had invested a great deal of time and energy, including money and several other things. In the end, without any exception, they all failed.

Now someone comes over and say to him that Li Muyang is admitted into Starry Sky Academy—–And also that guy from the school who regarded everyone as beneath him came with a crane all the way down to Jiangnan and travelled over thousands of miles just to deliver the notice of enrolment.

This guy was someone whom he had never paid any attention to; what kind of ability and charm does he have after all?

Even a trash like him could enter Starry Sky Academy, so he and his son, Yan Xiangma's failure—–Did this not become even more harsh?

Thinking that himself, the well-respected lord of the city, who is at the higher

stages of the free clouds, can't even be compared to an ordinary youngster, even with Yan Bolai's temperament, it is still difficult for him to achieve a calm peaceful state of mind. Yan family's 'raging flames technique' was originally a firm and forceful technique, to completely suppress his emotions is indeed too difficult.

"First in the exam." The man in a black robe said. "Li Muyang is said to be the second person to obtain the first place in the exams and be admitted into Starry Sky Academy."

"The first person was Li Qiubai?" Yan Bolai said in a cold voice. This was not a question; the answer to this question had always stayed in his mind. Li Qiubai, who travelled down Liangshan on a small boat and killed hundreds and thousands of pirates, obtained first place in the exam. In addition, he has a love for poetry; he is also one of the most well respected poets in the entire divine continent.

The man in black robe did not answer; he knows the lord already has a clear answer in his mind.

"Jiangnan City is warm and comfortable, prosperous and peaceful, but it's also the land of tigers and dragons. But I really didn't expect that a baby tiger would be lying right in front of my nose—-Li Muyang was able kill Crow with his bare hands, obtained first place in the exams, how could someone like him be a mediocre youngster? The group of geniuses over there in Tiandu is not even as dazzling as him, right?"

"Those genius youngsters won't admit defeat." The man in black robe knows clearly what sort of answers the lord wants to hear.

"That's natural. Born and grown up in Tiandu, their field of vision and ambition will naturally be higher than people from other parts of the world—-From the net last time, did you fish out any small fish or shrimps?"

"No". The black-robed man's face displayed a puzzled expression as he said: "After our Xiangma young master killed Crow, we intentionally exposed Li Muyang to the sun—-In the end no suspicious person came into contact with him, nor did anyone came to spy on or assassinate, it's as if he'd became an

invisible person. This is really too strange.”

“Well, no small fish or shrimps, but there is a giant crocodile behind stirring up the wind and clouds. If there wasn’t any powerful backing, do you think the son of a baker in Jiangnan City could be admitted into Starry Sky Academy? No matter how mysterious Starry Sky Academy is, they can’t possibly place their eyes all over the world——Think about it, an ordinary person’s son, how would he have the opportunity to set foot into Starry Sky? The man behind this must be powerful, beyond our expectations.”

“Lord, do you mean?”

“Besides the royal family, how many other families are able to push a common teenager into the Starry Sky?”

“Lord, do you mean?”

“Since Li Muyang is a candidate from Jiangnan and he also achieved the honour of first place, as the lord of the city’s, I must reward the candidates as a form of encouragement. But I also have to highly publicise his results, so that the students lagging behind would follow him as an example—-According to the usual rules, for students who obtained the first place in the cities, what are they rewarded with?”

“Reward of gold coins or other practical things.” The man in black robe said. “The chief of prefectures reward five hundred gold coins, state capitals two hundred gold coins. ”

“We’ll double that.” Within Yan Bolai’s eyes was a biting cold light, he reached out and picked up a bright red cherry tomato fruit on the table. His fingers suddenly exerted strength and the juice of the cherry tomato splattered all over the place. “No, give him ten times the usual reward. Award Li Muyang two thousand gold coins.”

“Lord, it’s against the rules.”

“Jiangnan is prosperous, other cities can’t compare with us.” Yan Bolai chuckled. “Besides, I, the lord of the city, appreciates talents, so why not greatly reward the elite youngsters?”

“Yes.” Black-robed man bowed and replied. “I will handle it well.” “

Yan Bolai waved his hand and said: “Go.”

The moment the man in black robe left, the smile on Yan Bolai’s face instantly faded away.

His eyes shifted over at the copy of the results on the desk and then slowly untied the rope securing the list of results.

He looked at the name on the top of the list, a chill emerged from the corner of his mouth as he said: “First in exams, but he’s not on this heroes list. As long as someone looks into this it is clear it’s been tampered with, and it will be obvious who is helping this sheep to graze—-Li Muyang, do you really think you can hide from me?”

——-

——-

Lu family. In the garden.

While admiring the surrounding scenery, Lu Xingkong was lightly exercising his arms, hands and feet.

Just moments ago he continuously met with six people, drank more than ten cups of tea. But his body is different from those of ordinary people; it’s rare for him to feel tired at all.

After coming to the garden for a breath of fresh air and to look at Tiandu’s sakura flowers blooming beautifully, he felt a lot more relaxed and refreshed.

“—-That young lady of the Cui family who went to Jiangnan to avoid the family infighting is back, it is said she will soon attend West Wind University—–” The old butler who looks much older than Lu Xingkong whispered next to him.

“Well. It’s about time she’s back. Tell Qiji to visit her and deliver over some gifts.”

“Afraid Miss Qiji won’t be willing, although she and that young lady are both known as the bright moons of the kingdom, but the relationship between the three bright moons is really not that good—-”

“Then she must go.” Lu Xingkong laughed loudly and said: “Cui family’s young lady was attacked by an assassin in Jiangnan, this matter is widely known

throughout Tiandu. It's inevitable that Lu Qiji pay her a visit. Lu Qiji has grown up; she knows my meaning. Tell her I arranged this."

"Yes, head of the house." Butler respectfully replied. "Also one more thing, I heard that Jiangnan's Yan Bolai rewarded Muyang young master ten times the reward, with the status of the lord of the city to reward Li Muyang two thousand gold coins. In addition he praised him greatly and named him as 'Jiangnan famous colt'. This matter has already spread throughout Tiandu, some youngsters in Tiandu had already began to investigate who Li Muyang actually is ——"

Lu Xingkong looked calm, not a sign of anger at all.

He reached out his hand and broke half the sprig in his hands and said in a low voice: "Yan Bolai is a talented lord, placing him in Jiangnan would bring out the best in him. But with his strong drive for success, there most likely won't be a good ending—-"

"Head of the house, then Muyang young master——"

"As I said already, allow him to graze; why disrupt this because of a small affair?" Lu Xingkong said in a clear voice. "Go back, I have other matters to handle."

"Yes, Master." The butler stepped back with his head down. After Lu Xingkong turned around, he then cautiously followed his footsteps.

069 – The one who kills the leader of the horses!

The courtyard was deep and hidden; it's very easy to get lost in this huge garden.

The courtyard that Cui Xiaoxin lives at is in the deepest part of the Cui mansion; she likes quiet places. Back then when her father and two uncles were fighting fiercely, her auntie brought her down to Jiangnan. Several years have past already, although she returned to the same courtyard as before, but the scenery now has become unfamiliar.

The delicate morning glory back then has now concealed the whole wall and the Tiandu's sakura flower that she personally planted is now higher than a man. The purple flowers are blooming beautifully; as someone who loves flowers she wished she could reach out and stroke each flower petal.

Back then all her thoughts were pure, she did not expect that she would experience this sort of feelings at this moment.

"Xiaoxin——Xiaoxin——" A familiar voice echoed from behind, then quickly followed by the sound of hurried footsteps.

Cui Xiaoxin turned around and saw cousin Yan Xiangma running over in large strides, she said: "Cousin is in such a hurry, what happened?"

"It's bad. Li Muyang is first place." Yan Xiangma ran over to Cui Xiaoxin and yelled.

"What?" Across Cui Xiaoxin's face was a puzzled look, she then asked: "First in what?"

"Li Muyang, that kid achieved first place in the exam, first place in the entire kingdom, how is that possible?"

Cui Xiaoxin looked shocked and then relieved, her face broke into a smile: "I should have guessed."

"Guessed what?"

"As long as he can answer the questions, it will definitely be correct. The exam

topics this year were extremely difficult, by a lucky coincidence several of the questions I had already explained to him before. If he answered them all, naturally everything will be correct. It's only right he achieved first place in the exams."

"It's really hard to believe, could it be that kid cheated in the exams?"

Cui Xiaoxin's brows lightly puckered up in a frown, then said: "Cousin did you see him cheat?"

"Of course not. I wasn't in the same exam room as him, how would I know he cheated?"

"Since cousin did not see Li Muyang cheat, then you can't deny his efforts that easily——Just because you saw him obtain such achievement, but you don't know how much effort he has put into it." Cui Xiaoxin's expression was serious and her tone carried a hint of scolding.

"I just said it casually. When I heard everyday you were tutoring a male student, I asked someone to investigate him. In the end, one glance and it almost blinded my eyes. What sort of people do you know? He's a person with a pig's head——Don't get me wrong, I'm not saying Li Muyang is a pig. I just find it strange. Why would a person who always obtained last place in the whole school become a genius?" Yan Xiangma chuckled, blinking his eyes as he smiled at Cui Xiaoxin, then said: "Cousin is so protective of him, could it be——"

"Cousin, stop talking nonsense." Cui Xiaoxin interrupted Yan Xiangma's teasing in a stern voice.

Yan Xiangma hurriedly glanced around the surroundings, after confirming that no one was nearby was he finally able to relax.

A careless word, if travelled to the ears of some people, although Xiaoxin cousin may be fine but the black sheep far away in Jiangnan would most likely encounter thunder strikes.

"Cousin please forgive me, I was just kidding." Yan Xiangma moderated the smile on his face and said: "My father rewarded him two thousand gold coins and also named him as 'Jiangnan's famous colt', now everyone in Tiandu is talking about him, many people said they want to look at what remarkable

abilities exactly does Li Muyang possess—-”

A cold smile emerged on Cui Xiaoxin’s lips as she said: “The one who killed the leader of the horses stood at the side.”

“What does that mean? The one who killed the leader of the horses stood at the side?” Yan Xiangma asked aloud.

“‘The Wind Custom’ had mentioned: throughout the history, horses remain strong, those who observes quickly understands that those who rides them praises them endlessly. As a result, horses gallop constantly until they die due such praise.” Cui Xioaxin explained aloud while staring at the Tiandu’s sakura flowers with a face filled with worries.

“Cousin what do you mean?” Yan Xiangma’s face became much serious, with a look of disbelief he said: “Don’t tell me you suspect my father is deliberately causing Li Muyang to fail from excessive praise.”

“Otherwise, how do you explain the two thousand gold coins?”

“Perhaps my father appreciates talent, so he rewarded him greatly.”

“Then the name ‘Jiangnan’s famous colt’?”

“So geniuses in Jiangnan became famous, why not?”

“Cousin, what do you think uncle’s impression of Li Muyang is?”

“——”

“Because he and I are acquaintance, so it’s impossible for uncle to like him. Right?”

“Perhaps after this exam his impression has changed—-”

Cui Xiaoxin smiled, shook her head and said: “those influential people, why would they care about an exam performance? Whether it’s a small test or a big exam, it’s only just a test. Even if Li Muyang took the first place of the kingdom, so what? In which year was there not a first place in the kingdom? Fine, let’s not fight over this anymore. When will Li Muyang arrive at Tiandu?”

“I don’t know.” Yan Xiangma shook his head.

“You don’t know?” Is he not going to West Wind University? It’s nearly the start of term, new candidates should report to the school—-”

“Li Muyang is not going to West Wind University.” Yan Xiangma said.

Cui Xiaoxin looked stunned, with a trace of disappointment.

After a long period of silence, she then asked aloud: “Where is he going?”

“I heard he’s going to Starry Sky Academy. Where is Starry Sky Academy? Is it in the kingdom? Why have I never heard about it before? Is this a fake school?”

“Starry Sky Academy?” Cui Xiaoxin was astounded.

“Xiaoxin, What kind of school is Starry Sky Academy? I had never heard of it?”

“Because you never entered.”

“What do you mean I did not enter? Did I register for it? But why was I not aware of this—-what lousy school is that? They don’t even want young master I, it seems that nothing good could be said about this school. Later I will find their address, I must go over there and tear down the school’s door. I, Yan Xiangma is Jiangnan’s city’s most famous hedonistic young mater, what can’t I do?”

“——About this, you really can’t.”

“Why?”

“Because Star Academy has no doors.”

“__”

Just as the brother and sister are chatting, Cui Xiaoxin’s previous maid Cuier trotted over, shouting in gentle and clear voice: “Miss, Miss, the Lu family’s young lady said she wants to see you.”

“Lu Qiji?” Cui Xiaoxin’s eyes were like fog, pondering over the true meaning of this visit.

“Yes.” She’s in the living room talking to the lady of the house. I heard it’s because Miss suffered an attack in Jiangnan, this troubled her all along so she brought over many gifts——The lady of the house told me to hurry over to inform you that she will come over in a while with her.”

“Lu Qiji? The purple-haired demon girl?” Yan Xiangma was pleasantly

surprised, repeatedly rubbing his hands together while he said: “I heard she’s the most beautiful woman in Tiandu, I’ve always wanted a chance to meet her, I had no idea that today——”

“Our family’s young lady is the most beautiful woman in Tiandu.” Cui’er pouted her little mouth and retorted angrily.

“Yes, yes, yes, Cui’er is right.” Yan Xiangma only now realised his huge mistake, without blushing, his heart not beating any faster and not showing the slightest restlessness as he said: “When I heard this rumor, my heart was full of despise and disdain. I do not believe it; in this world how could there be someone who is more beautiful than my Xiaoxin cousin? The reason I want to see Lu Qiji is to bring a critical eye to take a look at her, I want her to know that the difference in beauty between her and my Xiaoxin cousin is as great as the purple mountain—– Isn’t that right Xiaoxin cousin?”

Cui Xiaoxin remained unmoved, not in the slightest bit angry that her cousin said Lu Qiji is the most beautiful in Tiandu, nor is she happy that Cui’er said she’s the most beautiful woman.

The suspicion in her eyes is still unsolved, yet she said to Cui’er: “Go tell mother I’m happy that the young lady of the Lu family came to visit.”

“Yes, Miss.” Cui’er replied, then instantly head back to report.

Yan Xiangma raised his head, inspecting around the courtyard while repeatedly waving his fan, he then complimented: “The winding path leads to a peaceful place, this is precisely the courtyard that cousin lives at——Speaking of this, I had never properly looked at the sceneries around the courtyard, there is not a better time than today—-”

“Cousin could accompany to meet the young lady of the Lu family.” Cui Xiaoxin is someone who understands the situation, she said with a smile: “We are all young people and cousin would also be living in Tiandu for quite some time, it will be good to know each other. Maybe you two will have a lot in common?”

Yan Xiangma was incredibly happy, he cupped his hands together and said: “Since cousin strongly urged me to stay, then I will accompany you to see this demon girl of Tiandu. Let’s see what exactly is so great about her, that allows her to be able to stand next to cousin as one of the three bright moons of the

kingdom——”

“Words such as Tiandu’s demon girl must not be said again.”

“Hey, I only said it in front of cousin, anyways we’re a family. It doesn’t matter.”

070 – Purple haired demon girl!

Just as Cui Xiaoxin was pondering deeply and Yan Xiangmaon was pointing his fingers and criticising the flowers in the courtyard with a posture that seems as if he's a little professional gardener, the voice of mother talking to someone could be heard outside.

"Xiaoxin, this child likes quiet, there's so many rooms in the front yard but she insists on having the most remote area. What young girl doesn't like lively and bustling places, I'm just worried that if she lived here for too long she would develop an antisocial personality——"

"I also like quiet." A young voice said. Even from a distance, it still gave people an ice-cold and conceited feeling. As if her words did not carry any emotions at all.

Cui Xiaoxin can't help but secretly chuckle to herself. The Lu family sent over an arrogant girl who doesn't know how to talk to visit her, what deep meaning are they trying to convey?

It's obvious that mother is not used to dealing with girls of this nature.

After a moment of silence, a very exaggerated laughter then followed: "Haha, I had no idea that young children of today likes quiet, this is completely different from when we were young——Now that Xiaoxin is back and since you two are of a similar age and will both study in West Wind, you should visit each other more often in the future, so you two won't be lonely."

"I have lot of friends." Lu Qiji said.

"——-"

"But I am very happy to be friends with older sister Xiaoxin." Lu Qiji said aloud.

Cui mother really can't stand this style of speech, ice-cold and tough, every word was like a sword suddenly being unsheathed.

As a noble of Tiandu, shouldn't we compliment and flatter each other, and despite any backstabbing, maintain grace and act calm on the outside?

This Lu family's young lady is not playing the usual cards, making it difficult for a perfect example of an upper-class woman to receive the cards normally.

It's obvious that Cui mother significantly increased her walking pace, after bringing Lu Qiji over to Cui Xiaoxin's small courtyard door, she shouted: "Xiaoxin, Xiaoxin, Lu family's young lady is here to see you—-"

Cui Xiaoxin was already waiting inside the courtyard, hearing her mother's voice she immediately came to the entrance of the courtyard. Taking a glance at the 'purple-haired demon girl' Lu Qiji in front of her, known as one of the three bright moons of the kingdom, she can't help but have a breathtaking feeling.

Although she had seen Lu Qiji before but that was when they were still young, their faces and bodies had not developed yet. At that time she already thought she was cute and must be a beauty when she grows up.

But now, after seeing her in person she realised the word 'beauty' can hardly describe her good looks? This really is a devastatingly beautiful face.

Cui Xiaoxin had always thought high of herself, although she and the Lu family's Lu Qiji, Song family's Song Chenxi are all known as the three bright moons of the kingdom, but she simply laughed off these rumours because she felt she is different from other people——that is, deep in her heart she considers herself to be more outstanding, more beautiful and much more intelligent than them.

But now seeing the captivating and gorgeous young woman wearing a long white robe, there is a feeling of shame.

This beautiful woman is not only the bright moon, she's clearly a fiery sun.

Lu Qiji waited for quite some time but Cui Xiaoxin did not say anything to her and instead just stared at her in astonishment, as if this is the first time she laid her eyes on a treasured object.

This sizing up made her extremely unhappy, with her brows slightly raised, she broke the silence by saying: "I heard Xiaoxin sister was attacked in Jiangnan, we had been worried incessantly at Tiandu. I know that sister came back a few days ago, so I wanted to come and visit. I picked out a few small gifts that I hope Xiaoxin sister will like."

The maid following behind Lu Qiji walked in front holding a box, delivering it over to Cui Xiaoxin.

“Thank you Qiji little sister, I like it very much.” Cui Xiaoxin also knows she’s was too rude just now, what reason is there to just abruptly stare at the guest without saying a single word? She did not open the presents on the spot and merely beckoned to the servant, instructing her to take the gifts back to her room. “Qiji sister should just come to visit, there is no need to be so polite.”

“It’s just some little gifts, as long as sister likes it.” Lu Qiji said indifferently. She was also sizing up Cui Xiaoxin; a beauty, her manners are also very good, she’s gentle and intelligent, a completely different style to her.

Yan Xiangma wiped away his saliva, flipped open his fan and gently waved it in front of his chest, displaying the look of a fine noble son, then with a bright and cheerful he said aloud: “My little sister is right, you only need to come visit, no need to bring gifts. Xiaoxin little sister, isn’t that right?”

“This is?” Lu Qiji stared at Yan Xiangma with an annoyed face and asked aloud. This idiot was just staring at her attentively with a flushing face, his saliva is splashing across and yet he’s still unaware of it. If she weren’t a guest at someone else home, she would have kicked him out already.

Before Cui Xiaoxin had time to say anything, Yan Xiangma had already walked in front of Lu Qiji, bowed deeply with his hands held in front and said: “Yan Xiangma, Cui Xiaoxin’s older cousin. Of course, I regards her as my younger sister, she also sees me as her older brother—–Miss you are Lu Qiji, the fairy of Tiandu? After seeing you today, this is surely a fully justified name. As they say, you really are the most beautiful woman I have ever seen. Like the bright moon in the sky, like the fierce blazing sun. Everything on the earth, when in front of Miss beautiful face loses its luster. Of course, as a result my eyes lit up as a result. Because this light is too strong, I can’t even see clearly—-”

Lu Qiji’s eyes swept across him and then looked at Cui Xiaoxin and asked: “Is he crazy?”

“Not crazy.” Cui Xiaoxin covered her mouth and lightly chuckled: “Just a love-struck idiot.”

Cui Xiaoxin made an inviting gesture and said: “Little sister come inside and talk.”

“You young people can talk, I won’t bother you.” After finishing her sentence, Cui Xiaoxin’s mother hurriedly left with her maid. If this continues any longer she might choke to death from the words of the Lu family’s young lady.

They took a seat in a small but elegant living room, while the servant brought up tea and cakes.

Two unfamiliar young girls wanting to be like the adults, exchanging warm greetings and talking non stop, really isn’t easy.

Lu Qiji held a cup of tea with both her hands; Cui Xiaoxin also doesn’t know what to say.

Fortunately, Yan Xiangma who just suffered a huge blow just moment ago took the cup of tea handed over by the servants and said: “Miss Qiji likes to drink tea, right? This is fresh Lung Fu mountain birds tongue, although the first taste is light and there’s only a hint of aroma. But once the tea enters into the lungs, the delicate fragrance is much more intense.”

“Xiangma young master, this is Junshan Silver Needle, not bird’s tongue—-” The little maid next to him corrected him.

“＿＿＿”

Cui Xiaoxin really cannot bear to see this idiot older cousin continue his performance, she quickly helped him out of his embarrassment: “I like to drink Longjing tea. What about Qiji sister?”

“It depends.” Lu Qiji said. She then thought this answer might be too cold and tough, she added: “As long as its tea, its fine..”

“Oh.” Cui Xiaoxin also felt exhausting dealing with her: “Sister is going to West Wind, right? We might be school mates.”

“Still not finalised.” Lu Qiji said with a gentle smile. “Saying this, it reminds me of another thing. Xiaoxin sister has just returned from Jiangnan, you should know the ‘Jiangnan famous colt ‘ Li Muyang, right? Recently many people are discussing about him, many people are eager to catch a glimpse of him. I wonder

what his appearance and style are like?”

“About this—-”

“Hahahahaha—” Yan Xiangma burst into loud laughter: “What appearance and style? He’s clearly just a big piece of charcoal. If Miss Qiji would like to meet him then leave it to me, he was my good brother when I was still in Jiangnan. Although he’s ugly but his character is trustworthy. Otherwise, I wouldn’t be friends with him.”

“Ugly is a bit too harsh.” Cui Xiaoxin corrected Yan Xiangma’s unintentional degrading: “He has a sense of pride in himself and he’s ambitious. Rumours are true. If he comes to Tiandu, Qiji sister will understand.”

“I’m really curious.” Lu Qiji’s eyes were twinkling brightly, she said with a smile: “He won and achieve the title, became the first in the kingdom; when he comes to Tiandu he will definitely face many criticism and challenges, right?”

“I believe Tiandu’s youngsters have a big heart.” Cui Xiaoxin answered indifferently.

“It seems—-Xiaoxin sister is trying to defend him?” Lu Qiji blinked her long eyelashes; her perfect enchanting face has a sense of oppression that makes it difficult for anyone to breathe.

Yan Xiangma immediately touched his nose, fearing that the dry weather would cause his nose to start to bleed.

“Does it?” Cui Xiaoxin smiled: “He and I are classmates, I should speak up for him. If I see my classmates being bullied, I won’t stand aside and do nothing, that’s too cold-hearted.”

“Xiaoxin sister is kind, we should learn from her.” Lu Qiji said with a smile. “I won’t disturb sister from resting, I’ll come and visit sister next time.”

After finished talking, Lu Qiji stood up and left.

Cui Xiaoxin also stood up to see her off, until the silhouette of the domineering and arrogant purple haired girl disappears into the garden.

“This Tiandu demon girl really is conceited and has an insufferably arrogant face—-Well, what’s the big deal? With her appearance, she’s not even one-

thousandth of Xiaoxin cousin——” Yan Xiangma grumbled while staring with a look of infatuation at Lu Qiji from behind.

With a face deep in thought, Cui Xiaoxin whispered: “She came for Li Muyang.”

“What?” Yan Xiangma turned around and asked.

“Don’t you think it’s strange? After she entered the room she said less than ten words to me, but more than half are directed against Li Muyang——do they know each other?”

071 – Broke the wall with one punch!

Spirit and energy, if you have the spirit then you'll have the energy.

In the past, Li Muyang needed more than ten hours of sleep a day but now he can use more than ten hours a day to practice martial arts.

As usual, Li Muyang woke up at five o'clock in the morning.

He habitually stretched his muscles and then following his own set of steps of 'The Art of the Broken Body' to walk around.

During his course of practising walking last time, his body became dry and hot, and his heartbeat increased rapidly almost to the point of fainting, but this was not a reason for him to give up.

However, following what happened, he once again studied the little booklet of 'The Art of the Breaking Body', which contains thousands of words, several times to carefully interpret the deep meaning inside. However, he noticed that he had not done anything wrong.

Since his steps were correct, then during the process of learning he must pay the price or perhaps this was a normal response after arriving at a certain level.

Li Muyang was not willing to give up, so much so that even if he slacks off a little he still thought it was a very disgraceful thing.

He spent more than ten years as a trash and has also been criticised as a trash for more than ten years, no one would be able understand how happy it is for him to learn normally.

Furthermore, following Crow's attack and the incident of rogues destroying their store, his desire to learn and awareness of martial arts are much stronger.

He needs to become powerful.

He wants to protect himself but also needs to protect his family from any danger.

He regained focus by clearing his mind.

Li Muyang slowly walked one step at a time, he took three steps forward then

two steps back, one step to the right then one step to the left, and forward two steps then back three steps. He did not feel tired at all.

Not being aware of his tiredness indicates he had reached the endless state, as long as he has the energy, then he can continue walking in this manner. Coupled with his summarised method and breathing technique, walking in this way for long duration of time is beneficial to the body.

Of course, it's natural to get tired after a long period of walk, and it's natural to stop and rest when you're tired.

However, during his morning training, something unexpected happened.

After walking for half an hour, he already felt a shortness of breath, a flushed complexion, his heart racing and other discomforts.

Since there is nothing wrong with his own method of practice, then this must be a normal response from learning 'The Art of the Breaking Body'——Even little sister Li Shinian had said that during her training this also happened before. So Li Muyang wanted to hold on for a while longer.

After persisting in walking for another hour, all these terrible symptoms disappeared; his face was no longer flushing, his heart was not beating as intense, and his face returned back to usual.

"As expected." Li Muyang congratulated himself. He felt he took the right gamble.

Now Li Muyang had walked for as much as two hours, not only was he not exhausted but also the more he walks the more energetic he was.

He suddenly felt something abnormal; he urgently wanted to stop to take a rest. But he could not stop no matter what.

His body was like a balloon, even with a gentle breeze he would soar into the air and walk around following the direction of the wind. Even if he were not blown away, he would still drift along with the wind.

The more anxious he was, the faster his pace. The faster he was, the lighter his body became.

Finally he was able to clearly see his body, yet he was not able to feel the

existence of his body.

He lost the right to control his own body.

“Aaarghhhh—”

Li Muyang let out a long groan.

Burst of sharp pains quickly followed.

He felt his qi and blood were flowing openly and freely, like blocked drains being cleaned thoroughly, a steady and continuous passage without any obstruction.

Thump–

Sharp pains came again.

He felt all the qi points in his body were exploding and forming into a one, like groups of stars joining together in criss-cross patterns and concealing the whole sky.

Bang—

Li Muyang’s bones were letting out throbbing sounds, as if they were beans being stir-fried in a pan over a high flame.

Li Muyang felt he was about to float up into the sky, he felt he was about to become a swallow, hovering high above.

This feeling is wonderful, yet still made him panic.

He knows he’s practicing ‘The Art of the Breaking Body’, so he needs to store qi in his dantian and then unleash his strength in a flash.

His body became lighter and lighter, how could he gather energy?

Li Muyang is finally starting to become afraid; although it is said that ‘The Art of the Breaking Body is the most precious treasure of Daoism, it is easy to practice but difficult to perfect it. However if you become obsess and let it take over or perhaps even sink into a state of confusion, then all your previous efforts may be destroyed in an instant.

If serious, his qi will destroy his lower abdominal region and he may possibly become a demented child——If that’s the case, he will certainly become a trash.

He could accept that he used to be a trash since he's already a trash on the day he was born.

But after he stood up and experienced the taste of success, if he turned into a trash again, this would be absolutely unbearable to him.

What Li Muyang did not know is that he has to progress slowly step-by-step, he must gradually adapt to the process of learning.

Li Shinian has been training for ten years, although she trained without any teachers but she was able to teach herself the breaking fist.

The foundation is the most important.

Li Muyang has been training for less than three months, yet he's aggressively pursuing success and fiercely advancing forward. As a result, he did not allow his body to accumulate and his dantian to settle. The faster he walks and the quicker he progresses, his body becomes empty.

This is precisely the pitfall of 'The Art of the Breaking Body': emptiness.

If his body was empty, he would float.

If no one promptly stops him or help his passage of qi, Li Muyang will be ran exhausted till death.

Without any guidance from a teacher and without any skilled master standing beside him, Li Muyang is at a moment of extreme danger.

Because there is fear in his heart, he lost his completely 'clear' state of mind.

The more he thought, the more terrified he was; the more terrified he was the more he pondered.

Li Muyang cried out aloud but realised it was difficult for his mouth to form any words. He wanted to shift his direction and run towards the rooms, but his feet continued to circle around in the same place.

Forward three steps then back two steps, one step to the left then to the right. Forward two steps then back three steps; he still did not feel tired in the slightest.

Beads of sweat emerged around Li Muyang's eyebrows and forehead, rolled down his cheeks and crowded together, looking as if his entire head and body has just been drenched.

Li Muyang's heartbeat once again increased tremendously, pounding violently in his chest like he just suffered the impact of a heavy hammer.

Li Muyang eyes were wrapped with wisps of blood; every wisps of blood were like strips of red worm. They lengthen and shorten and then spread around Li Muyang's pupils.

A matter of life or death

His live is at stake!

Just then, a smear of red mist appeared within Li Muyang's eyes.

Black scales bulging out on the back of his hand, and sudden claps of thunder and bolts of lightning surfaced on the outside of these scales without any noises.

Li Muyang's body began to heat up, a powerful stream of heat pushed forward from the scales on the back of his hand, flowing directly towards the acupoints and meridians throughout his body.

This flow of heat was like currents of red-hot lava, devastating and destroying everything they encounter, then instantly rebuilding it back.

Thousands of streams extended throughout his body and then finally enter into the sea, towards Li Muyang's dantian region at his lower abdomen.

Millions flowed into the sea, firing fully and openly.

His lower abdominal region became scorching hot, Li Muyang thought he was being cooked.

Li Muyang felt a sudden surge of rage and instantly became fond of killing.

He has thousands of words he wants to say and a list of endless grievances, yet he remained silent.

A multitude of hatred he wants to vent.

Li Muyang felt his body swelling up, his dantian on the verge of bursting from the violent streams of energy surging forth.

Li Muyang's right hand clenched into a fist and punched out.

Bang——

A loud bang echoed throughout the air, a gigantic hole appeared on the walls in front of Li Muyang.

The first ray of light pierced through the large hole, shining over Li Muyang who had collapsed on the ground.

It's dawn!

——-

——-

Luo Qi and Li Yan were awakened from their sleep; they hurriedly ran over and saw the huge hole on the wall.

Though Li Shinian remained quite calm, while yawning she walked and glanced at the hole in the wall, then snappily said: "Li Muyang, are you done? You won't let anyone sleep? Running around and practising so early in the morning, it's so noisy——"

"Is——Muyang training?" Li Yan's eyes wide open in disbelief, staring at the gigantic hole on the wall that was higher than a man. Even with his heavenly spear it's highly unlikely he would be able to break a hole on the wall as big as this. Moreover, his son used his fist to punched through the walls; exactly how much strength and power are needed?

"He certainly is." Li Shinian said while rubbing her eyes. "'The Art of the Breaking Body', I taught him it."

All Luo Qi's attention was on Li Muyang, seeing Li Muyang collapsed on the ground, she immediately rushed over and asked in a worried voice: "Muyang, are you alright? Are you hurt?"

"I'm fine." Li Muyang pointed at the gigantic hole on the broken wall and said with an embarrassed face: "Mum, I didn't mean to——-"

"I know you didn't mean to." Luo Qi looked pensively at Li Muyang, smiled and said: "Who would deliberately punch the walls?" "

Luo Qi has already witnessed Li Muyang's power before, so she is already mentally prepared for this kind of thing to happen at home.

Li Yan was thrilled, he came over and asked: "Muyang also learnt 'The Art of the Breaking Body'?"

"Yes." Li Muyang nodded and said: "I have been learning for just over two months."

"With merely two months of practice you could reach such a state, I guess I should also abandon the heavenly spears and learn it too— " Li Yan said while thinking to himself that both his son and daughter were able to learn, their Li family and the secret skill 'The Art of the Breaking Body ' are brought together by fate. He can't miss this opportunity.

Li Shinian walked in front of Li Muyang, took a glimpse at Li Muyang, then glanced over at the large hole in the wall and said unhappily: "Brother, you used breaking fist?"

"I think so——" Li Muyang said. "I'm also not too sure."

"After learning for more than ten years I was able to throw out a breaking fist and broke a jar. You can punch down a wall with less than three months of practice——-Brother, you give me a lot of pressure. First, you achieved first in the exam, now your martial arts are even more impressive, how can I bully you in the future?"

"————"

072 – Shinian misses

After taking bath and thoroughly drying his body, he changed into a long white gown his mother specially prepared for him.

Looking at himself in the mirror, Li Muyang felt somewhat unfamiliar.

No, quite unfamiliar.

Li Muyang can hardly recognise himself, from the surprise in his parents' eyes he knows exactly how much he had changed recently.

Just as Li Shinian had said: he achieved the first place in the exams of the entire kingdom and he was able to punch through a wall with merely a few months of practicing 'The Art of the Breaking Body'. Do you know that would give me a lot of pressure?

The person who said this is precisely Li Shinian, a talented girl well known in Hubu lane. Before when Li Muyang was being ridiculed and bullied she was the secret weapon Luo Qi used to counter-attack, with just a simple sentence 'the kid in your house is not doing so well, our Shinian said she had never seen his name on the list', this immediately made the other side speechless and surrendered immediately.

But now even Li Shinian noticed Li Muyang's rapid progress, then that means Li Muyang's——skills are really terrifying.

"Have to be low-key." Li Muyang grinned at the mirror while patting his face and said: "Have to be stupid-cute."

Li Muyang pushed open the door, in front of him was Li Shinian sitting in his room eating fruits.

Seeing Li Muyang's tall and straight stature and his fluttering white gown, Li Shinian's eyes were glistening brightly; she couldn't finish off the apple in her hand.

"Who are you?" Li Shinian finally swallowed the piece of apple in her mouth and asked aloud.

“I’m your brother. Have you gone crazy?” Li Muyang was bewildered, this little girl doesn’t even recognise him?

“Impossible. My brother is black and ugly, people call him a charcoal——” Li Shinian threw the apple onto the table, casually wiped her hands on Li Muyang’s quilt and ran over to stroke Li Muyang’s face and nose: “Hurry up, tell me who the hell are you? Where did you hide my brother?”

“Li Shinian——” Li Muyang is speechless in front of his precious little sister. From when they were still little she had always bullied him. Of course, she had also protected him.

Li Shinian circled around Li Muyang, uttering sounds of amazement: “Ooohh I did not expect this—-a pheasant can also become a swan, a toad can turn into a prince. Brother, do you have any idea how handsome you are now?”

“Really?” Li Muyang flushed with excitement, then touched his face in embarrassment and said: “Maybe recently, my skin is a little whiter?” “

Li Shinian closely inspected his face and said: “You’re really much whiter, but this is not the most important. You may not have noticed yourself but your body has grown and you’re not as thin as before, now you have muscles. It feels good to touch too——”

“Li Shinian——” Li Muyang pushed away Li Shinian’s hand and said: “You’re a girl.”

“So I touched you. Don’t tell me you like men touching you?”

“＿＿”

“Also you’re taller, before you were a similar height to me, although I’m not short but as a man you looked quite short. Now you’re half a head taller than me ——Also the expression on your face, you used to be constantly in a daze, like you stayed up all night stealing cattle. Now you’re energetic, spirited, and full of confidence. Oh, even your smile looks more charming——”

Li Muyang’s heart was pleased to hear this, but his mouth deliberately tried to be modest: “I’m not as good as you say, in fact I’m not that good-looking——”

“Don’t be so modest, you’re already very good.” Li Shinian patted Li Muyang’s

shoulder. “Continue to grow more and try your best to become like me. The moon is right in front of your eyes, is that not enough motivation for you?”

“——-”

“But really, if you head back to school now, you would definitely become the school’s idol, countless girls would chase after you.”

“Forget it. You can be the school’s idol.” Li Muyang said with a smile. “My goal is to be the star of the sea.”

Li Shinian pursed her lips and said: “Hey, you’re looking down on the school’s idol, you want to be the kingdom’s idol?”

“I just don’t want to compete with you.”

“Hmph, it’s not like if you want to compete with me then you can win against me.”

“——”

Luo Qi was in the kitchen cooking while Li Yan was standing at the side helping her.

“I really can’t bear to separate with him.” Luo Qi said in depressed tone. “I did not expect a day like this would come, Muyang is leaving to somewhere far. He had never been that far away from home, I don’t know if he can adjust.”

Li Yan helplessly looked at his wife. “You always worry. When you took him home, you were worrying day and night that he won’t survive. Then when his body slowly became better, you kept worrying that his IQ won’t be high enough. Now his IQ is high and he achieved first in the exams. Also he’s much stronger than before, he was able to punch a gigantic hole in the wall, but you’re worrying that he’ll be leaving——”

“Which mum isn’t worried about their kids? Now I worry that he’ll be leaving us, later we still have to worry about his wife and kids——unless I die, or I will always worry about him. ”

“You make it seems like I don’t worry about him? It’s just that I worry in my heart.” Li Yan said in a low voice: “Do you think——the Lu family did something?”

Luo Qi pondered for a moment. “I think they did. Before Muyang were clamoring to attend West Wind University. I also specifically asked him, he said he only applied to West Wind University——but in the end he’s enrolled into Starry Sky Academy. Although I don’t know why the Lu family wants to send Muyang to Starry Sky Academy, but I know for sure, they must have tampered with the enrolments——Otherwise, with Muyang’s results he definitely could attend West Wind University.”

“Yes.” Li Yan let out a long sigh: “Just a while ago we were worried that Muyang won’t do well in the exams and hoped that the Lu family will help him out. Now Muyang did well, but we start to worry that the Lu family is watching Muyang closely——Is this good or bad for Muyang?”

Luo Qi’s face was filled with worries as she said: “We should look on the good side, after all according to Shinian, Starry Sky Academy is also pretty good.”

“Yes.” Li Yan nodded. “We should think on the good side. If we really can’t deal with it, we can go and ask Miss for help. She definitely will be on our side.”

“Hmm.” Luo Qi pondered deeply then continued: “If we really can’t handle it, I’m going to Tiandu to find Miss.”

The brother and sister came over to the dining room; Luo Qi already prepared lunch.

Li Muyang tried to help wash the dishes and set the table but Luo Qi pushed him out.“You just changed into new clothes, don’t let it get dirty——Li Shinian, come over and wash the dishes.”

“Mum, I also changed into new clothes—”

“If it gets dirty you can wash it, it’s not like you don’t have any hands.”

“——-”

Father and mother constantly added food to Li Muyang’s bowl, Li Muyang’s rice bowl had to be swapped for a large plate.

Very quickly his plate was also piled high up, Luo Qi then began to prepare to swap it for a pot.

“You’re biased towards the son.” Li Shinian angrily ate the green vegetables and said with a face filled with injustice.

“You——-” Luo Qi used the chopsticks to hit Li Shinian’s head. “Your brother is going away to study tomorrow, he needs energy. Boys at this age is growing a lot, so will need to eat more——-When your brother leaves, I can cook for you every day.””

“I’m jealous of you.” Li Shinian said meaningfully to Li Muyang.

“If you continue to eat like that you’ll become a fatty. When you come to find me, I won’t admit you’re my sister.”

“Li Muyang you heartless person, when others were calling you a charcoal I also did not turn my back on you ———”

“Li Shinian, how can you say that to your brother.” Luo Qi was ready to hit her again.

“Mum, why are you so biased towards him? I wonder if I’m really your daughter?” Li Shinian reached out to cover her head and said snappily.

With the chopsticks Luo Qi hit her even harder while scolding: “You said you’re not my daughter? You said you’re not my daughter?”

“Mum don’t hit anymore, I’ll become stupid—-”

———

Li Muyang lowered his head to eat dinner, while feeling the warmth of home.

Father is kind, mother is loving and his little sister is so cute, he really is reluctant to leave the house.

———-

———-

Maple Forest Crossing, Li Muyang was getting ready to travel by ship to Tiandu.

This made Li Muyang extremely unsatisfied towards Starry Sky Academy, they sent someone on a crane to deliver the good news of enrolment. Then they can also send someone over to collect him on a crane, won’t this save some poor

students a lot of money from travel expenses?

At Maple Forest Crossing, the whole family came to see Li Muyang off.

Mother Luo Qi held tightly onto Li Muyang's hand not wanting to let go at all. On her way here, she had already secretly wiped away her tears several times.

"Muyang, take care of yourself. Have your meals regularly; if you're cold then you have to wear more clothes, if you're hot then wear thinner tops. Did you bring enough money? I'll give you another one hundred gold coins——-"

"Mum——-" Li Muyang also tightly held on to his mother's hand. "I know, I know. I'm not a baby anymore. I'll take good care of myself. I have brought enough money, you already gave me three hundred gold coins——What students would bring so much money to study?"

Father Li Yan patted Li Muyang's shoulder as encouragement: "Men should have huge ambition to conquer the world. Continue to learn and train, so everyone——-make everyone proud of you. "

"Dad, I will." Li Muyang was able to feel the strength of his father from his palm. "You should also take care your body and look after mom."

"Don't worry about home." Li Yan said.

Li Muyang's eyes shifted over to Li Shinian who was standing far away, unwilling to come over. He shouted: "Li Shinian, if you don't come over, I'll be boarding soon——"

"Go, go, who wants to come over?" Li Shinian stood underneath the willow tree with her back facing Li Muyang, refusing to say goodbye.

Her hand was clutching tightly onto a willow tree branch and beating the air, as she stubbornly shouted: "it's not like you won't come back, so why say goodbye?"

From the side where Li Muyang couldn't see, both her eyes were red and swollen, and beads of tears were slipping down her flawless white little face.

There was a type of feeling, that before you had even gone far, called Shinian[1].

[1] Shinian means to miss.

073 – Goodbye Jiangnan!

“That silly girl won’t come over here——” With her eyes brimming with tears, Luo Qi sighed slightly: “From a young age till now, you two had almost never separated from each other. After today, we probably won’t see you for a couple of years. How would she not miss you?”

“I understand.” Li Muyang glanced over at the little girl’s slightly trembling shoulders, holding back the urge to burst into tears and with his voice sounding somewhat choking with sobs he yelled: “I won’t be gone for long, I’ll be back soon. Shinian did you not say that the people of our school can have cranes——I will also get a crane and fly back to see you every day. Eat breakfast at home and then go to school.”

Luo Qi smacked Li Muyang on the shoulder. “Nonsense. How can you come back every day? What’s most important is to take care of yourself, study hard and not let people look down on you.”

“Mum, I will.” Li Muyang nodded solemnly.

“Board the ship, board the ship. The ship will leave soon.” A boatman wearing short garments shouted from the ship.

The ship is a passenger ship, except for the few merchants visiting Tiandu, most of the passengers are also like Li Muyang, students heading to Tiandu to study.

Their children are traveling on a long journey, all parents and relatives came to bid farewell.

Maple Forest Ferry Crossing was unusually bustling with noise and excitement; everyone were exchanging conventional greetings, laughing and crying together.

Li Muyang waved and said: “Dad, mum, go back. I’m boarding the boat now.”

“Muyang———” Luo Qi holding back her tears with great difficulty, she then released her son’s hand. “You could have had a better life, mum and dad couldn’t give it to you. You have to protect yourself and don’t get bullied. If you suffer any hardship then come back, mum and dad will always look after you.”

“Mum, what are you saying?” Li Muyang said with a smile. “I’m glad to be your son, I think I’m living pretty good right now. And it will only get better and better. Don’t worry, I’ll be alright.”

Li Muyang knows his parents won’t leave until he leaves, his eyes shifted over to Li Shinian, the little girl was still standing with her back facing the shore.

“Li Shinian——” Li Muyang shouted into the distance: “I’m going to miss you.”

He waved his hand at Li Shinian’s back, turned around and walked towards the ship.

“Li Muyang——” Someone yelled from afar and then very quickly a horse came galloping over.

The man on the large horse fiercely galloping over attracted the line of sight of everyone on the shore; on the horse was a young man dressed in warrior clothes yelling.

“Li Muyang, please wait a moment.” The man and the horse directly advanced towards Li Muyang, the man then jumped off from the horse, cupped his hands in greeting and said respectfully: “Lord of the city came to see you off, he has now arrived at Stone Forest.”

With these words, the crowd broke into an uproar.

“The lord of the city personally came to see Li Muyang off?”

“Lord of the city is too kind to Li Muyang, right? Just because he achieved first place in the exams, he rewarded him two thousand gold coins——-That amount of money is enough for him to live his whole life, right?”

“That Li Muyang won’t be the lord of the city’s godson, right? Maybe he’s an illegitimate child———”

———-

Li Muyang was also slightly shocked by this. “The lord of the city is incredibly busy, he really doesn’t have to go to all the trouble to come here.”

Not only is the entire crowd suspecting the relationship between the lord of the city and Li Muyang, even Li Muyang is also beginning to suspect himself.

After the result was announced, the lord of the city ordered Jiangnan's education secretary to specially send over two thousand gold coins to him as a reward. When the news spread throughout the city, everyone in Hubu Lane was boiling over with anger. Many of the people living there won't even make as much money in their entire life, but Li Muyang simply sat an exam and was able to receive such a large sum of money. No wonder people say 'knowledge brings wealth'; as a matter of fact this has just been demonstrated by Li Muyang?

Now the lord of the city personally came to see him off, this indeed made Li Muyang deeply moved. I am friends with your son, but isn't this privilege a bit too much?

"I disagree." A big brown horse fiercely galloped over. On the horseback was a middle-aged man wearing a maroon scholar outfit, with thick eyebrows, big eyes and a broad but charming face.

A group of soldiers wearing black warrior clothing and carrying long blades closely followed behind, protecting him from both sides. The clang of hoofs orderly resounded on the path. It sounded as if they were well trained and were not ordinary soldiers.

Phok———

Before the horse came to a halt, the middle-aged man had dismounted.

With both his feet trod on the ground, it gave people the feeling that he just stamped a large hole on the ground.

"Selecting talents is a top priority of the country. Today, numerous students are leaving far away to Tiandu to study, to seek a job as an official. As the lord of the city, I should rush over to see everyone off." When the middle-aged man spoke these words he deliberately raised his volume so that everyone on the shore could hear him clearly.

"You are——the lord of Jiangnan city?" Li Muyang looked up and down, at the man who's not tall in stature but is extremely imposing, and asked in a timid voice. This was the first time he came into contact with such a major person.

Moreover, this man has a kind of oppression that makes people hope to gain power; ordinary people can hardly look him in the eyes.

“I’m Yan Bolai.” Yan Bolai said with a smile. He was also sizing up Li Muyang; he’s tall and handsome, and his skin color is not as dark as everyone says. His eyes are clear and bright, and did not avoid eye contact. He’s confident and calm but also on the alert.

“The lord of the city came to see me off, Muyang can’t thank you enough.” Li Muyang bowed deeply to him.

Other students, one after another, began to surround them; who doesn’t want to have the opportunity to strike up a relationship with the Lord of the City. Even if they are going to study now, when they return from study they will still need to find a good job, right? In Jiangnan, is there anything better than working for the lord of the city?

“The lord of the city appreciates talents, us scholars in Jiangnan are incredibly lucky. ”

“Thank you lord, I shall study diligently, sharpen my mind, and work for the lord of the city in the future——-”

“Lord, please accept my bow——-”

———

A simple bidding farewell and a few words but many candidates were deeply moved and full of admiration.

Yan Bolai was unfathomable.

Yan Bolai was bold and forthright, he supported up the students who bowed to him and said with a huge smile: “You are the pearls of Jiangnan, you’re all outstanding people who will represent Jiangnan. When you go to Tiandu, it’s precisely the time to pass the last hurdle and soar. I hope you do not forget your hometown, after studying return and help me build Jiangnan city.”

Yan Bolai beckons his big hands and shouted: “Wine, I want to have a drink with all the young heroes. ”

Very quickly the drinks were prepared and distributed amongst the candidate, Yan Bolai also picked up a big bowl and said: “I wish you a safe journey and a

great future.”

Yan Bolai pounded down the bowl of wine in one gulp, other students were also infected with his words and by the atmosphere, everyone was excited and fired up, their blood racing as they chugged down the bowl of wine.

Some of these guys have read too much heroes novels, someone even imitated those Jianghu thieves, after vigorously drinking up the wine, he smashed the bowl against the ground——-Seeing the students around staring at him in bewilderment, his face flushed from embarrassment.

“I paid out of my own pocket to give out some pens and ink to everyone, I hope everyone likes it.” Yan Bolai gestured with his hand and without any delay the soldiers handed out the prepared ‘Four Treasures of the Study’ from a cart to every candidate.

“Thank you lord.”

“Lord is really kind to us———”

“Lord, three years later I will definitely report to the lord’s mansion and follow your orders without question.”

———-

Yan Bolai exchanged pleasantries with the crowd and then laid his eyes upon Li Muyang and said: “Starry Sky Academy is not an ordinary school, Muyang are you prepared for it?”

“Prepared?” Li Muyang stared at him blankly. “What do I need to prepare?”

Seeing Li Muyang’s genuine expression, it seems he really does not know. He laughed heartily and patted Li Muyang on the shoulder. “No matter. No matter. It’s just that the journey is difficult to travel; it’s no big deal. Since Muyang is able to attend Starry Sky, then you will naturally be able to reach the peak of the mountain———So, have a safe journey.”

“Thank you Lord.”

“You and Xiangma are friends, just call me uncle——”

“Thank you—-uncle.” Li Muyang hesitated slightly, but still listened to him. Since having the lord of the city as his uncle can’t be a bad thing.

“Study hard and don’t let everyone down.”

Yan Bolai uttered a few words of encouragement to everyone, and then leaped on the horseback, leading a group of guards as he galloped along the road.

Li Muyang once again said goodbye to his parents; just when he glanced over at Li Shinian, the little girl was also facing him directly; she merely waved her small fist at him then immediately turned away.

Li Muyang smiled to himself, carrying his luggage and the Four Treasures of the Study gifted by Yan Bolai he boarded the ship.

Because Luo Qi was willing to spend money, Li Muyang has a second-class accommodation on the ship.

The top class accommodation above was said to be fully booked or else Luo Qi would had definitely spent more money to arrange this room for his son.

Although the rooms are not big but what’s good is that they are single rooms. There’s a small bed and a small window. The windows are facing the direction of Sunset Lake and he could see the green rippling waves.

Li Muyang arranged his luggage and then checked the coins that his mother sewn into the inside of his underpants——This was firmly insisted by Luo Qi although Li Muyang strongly opposed.

Can you imagine the heavy feeling and the loud jingling sound from Li Muyang’s crotch?

Fortunately, Luo Qi also thought of the inconvenience when walking, so only a small amount is sewn in, the others were divided into small amounts and hid in various places. Even Li Muyang was worried he won’t be able to find them.

After sorting out his luggage, Li Muyang headed towards the front deck. The ship was about to set sail very soon. The ship’s deck was crowded with people shouting farewell to relatives and friends on the shore.

Li Shinian finally turned around and stood on the deck together with her parents, watching the ship leave the port.

Because she couldn’t see brother Li Muyang, she looked a little worried.

“Shinian, I’m here——-” Li Muyang stood behind a fat man, vigorously waving

to Li Shinian.

“Brother——-Brother——-” Li Shinian finally saw Li Muyang, she yelled at the top of her voice. “I can’t protect you anymore, you have to protect yourself.”

The mooring rope was untied and the ship with several decks began to move across the lake.

Li Muyang stood on the top deck, looking at his family gradually disappearing into the distance, watching their fresh faces turning into black dots, it felt as if a piece of his heart is being ripped off.

“Goodbye Jiangnan.”

074 – Iron-wall general!

The ship gradually drifted away. Maple Forest Crossing disappeared from view, the scenery turning into gloomy lights, and before Li Muyang knew it his eyes were misted with tears.

Li Muyang does not like to cry.

When he felt weak, when he was bullied, he would not shed tears even more so than normal.

If someone bullies you, it just proves you're weak.

But the moment your tears fall when you're bullied, you're just too cowardly.

So, Li Muyang always gritted his teeth and borne with the pain to persist, to endure.

However, when he saw his mother Luo Qi's eyes glistening with tears as she tried her best to smile and wave to him, and the reddened eyes of father Li Yan, a reserved man, at a loss for words, and also Li Shinian desperately leaping out of the crowd hoping to catch a glimpse of him——

Li Muyang could no longer endure.

Real men have tears that don't easily fall; but it's just that the moment of parting has not yet come.

"Muyang brother, men should have great ambition; going to Tiandu is a golden opportunity for you to spread your wings and fly, why are you so heart-broken? Weeping endlessly is just some little girl's attitude." A man in a blue-green scholar outfit cupped one hand in the other, looking at Li Muyang.

Li Muyang used his sleeves to wipe away the tears in the corner of his eyes, glanced over at the man and asked: "Do we know each other?"

"Jia County's Zhang Linpu, I think Muyang brother should have heard of it before. "Jia County is classified as a wealthy county of Jiangnan city. Although Zhang Linpu sat the exams in the county but he achieved exceptional results. Among the thousands of scholar in Jiangnan City, Zhang Linpu was able to rise

above the others and enter into West Wind University. This itself is already very impressive. The status of Zhang Linpu in Jia County is the same as Cui Xiaoxin's position in Jiangnan City.

So, he is confident that Li Muyang will certainly know who he is.

"No." Li Muyang said bluntly.

Before he never properly studied, so he's not aware of any secret beauties and gifted scholars in other provinces and county. Now that he's starting to learn, he pays no attention to outside matters and just wholeheartedly studies.

"———

Li Muyang also cupped his hand in greeting. "I'm still a little sad, I'll cry for a while. Please leave me."

With that, he turned and walked towards the cabins.

"So arrogant." Zhang Linpu pointed at Li Muyang from behind and flew into a rage, his face flushing with anger as he roared: "so arrogant, he doesn't take notice of us just because he obtained the first place in the exams and because he has the backing of the Lord of the City, he considers everyone else beneath him ———-"

"So what if he's first in the exams? Each year there's a first in the exam, but in the end how many people have a great future? Contrary to what everyone might expect those at the bottom of the list are much more promising——"

"Of those who'd met the government ministers how many were first place in the exams? Moreover, he's not even admitted into West Wind University but enrolled into Starry Sky Academy——"

——

Zhang Linpu seized the chance to launch an attack; the crowd also, one after another, echoed what he said, criticising the first place in the kingdom, Li Muyang.

The journey is long and boring, it's always good to have some sort of things to do. Since idle is idle, they might as well do something.

Then again, they indeed have a lot of complaints against Li Muyang. How did

he obtain first place in the exam? What makes him good enough for the lord of Jiangnan City to see him off?

So what if he's first in the exams?

They crowded together for warmth, pushing Li Muyang to the outside; when he reaches Tiandu he does not know even one fellow student and has no relatives or friends to help him. All alone, even if he did well on the tests, what's so good about him?

"A frog in a well, you do not know the vastness of Starry Sky?" A ridiculing voice echoed over.

Everyone turned around, at the corner of the deck was a short and chubby man dressed in a bright robe.

He did not try to hide his contempt, with a disdainful sneer he looked at the numerous scholars directly facing Li Muyang making cutting remarks.

"Who are you? What qualifications do you have to say that to us?"

"We are all scholars who passed the imperial exams, what's so extraordinary about you?"

"Jia county's Zhang Linpu. In this exam I was ranked 179th, what about brother——what did you achieve?"

———

"I'm not a scholar." The fat man said, smiling. "I always feel dizzy and fall asleep when I read, I really can't read. However, each person has different ambitions——-"

"So what high aims do you have, say it out loud for us?"

"I can't say. I can't say." The fat man in bright clothes said, shaking his head. "However, I do not agree with your attacks on Li Muyang. By fighting bravely on the battlefield one could become a famous general, but of those well-known people in the history of Starry Sky, who did not have a compassionate heart? Encountered kindness yet was not happy and not even sorrowful at a parting. Are the consciences of all you people eaten by a dog?"

"Nonsense. Who are you? What right do you have to criticise us?"

“Useless waste, you have the nerve to discuss about the big names in the history of Starry Sky?”

“Wait until you’re stronger than us before you be impudent and flippant in front of us——-”

———

The fat man chuckled: “No wonder Li Muyang is not willing to talk to you, we’re not even people of the same world——-Thinking about this makes me sad, they say it takes hundred years of good prayers to bring two people to travel together on the same ship, I’ve been doing good deeds for years but I met you trashes? I should have encountered a beauty instead——-”

Once the fat man finished talking, he simply ignored the scholars, turned around and headed towards the cabin.

“Don’t you dare leave, I’m not done with you———”

“This is too much, today I must let you experience my family’s secret technique, ‘Confuse Heart Fist’———”

“Eat my sword———”

——————

The third deck of the ship was a VIP class cabin. Before the students came on board the entire floor was already reserved by a mysterious person. To let her son live comfortably in a good room on his journey, Luo Qi raised the price but still she couldn’t do anything about it. In the end she won a room on the second floor.

The entire floor was heavily guarded; besides two men in black robes guarding the top of the flight of stairs not letting anyone through, each cabin was guarded by skilled masters.

With sentries posted every few yards, it was similar to the palace and official residences.

“Why is it so noisy downstairs?” A young man wearing a black robe on the third deck asked aloud.

“Young Lord, those students had a dispute on the ship.”

“Good-for-nothing scholars.” The young man sneered out loud. “Since ancient times, scholars could only do paperworks, write beautiful articles, what else are they capable of?”

“Young lord please speak cautiously.” A wise and knowledgeable middle-aged adviser hurriedly reminded him. All members of the kingdom’s Song family were scholars; seven generations of emperor’s teacher and six generations of imperial officials, they are known as the ‘Kingdom’s library’.

The key point is that the Song family and the Royal family are related by marriage, three successive emperors had married women of the Song family. In other words, there are three empresses from the Song family controlling the harem chambers of imperial concubines.

If young lord’s words were to spread, it might offend the Song family.

“Hmm.” The black-robed youngster also knew his words were too direct. He sneered coldly but had no intention of explaining himself and instead asked: “Is everything taken care of?”

“Everything has been handled.” His trusted adviser Su Rong bowed and replied. “No one would think that we would abandon the ship in Wu Xi, then arrive in Jiangnan on horses in advance with the detainee. We departed via a passenger ship today. The military vessel that was supposed to transport the detainee would dock at Jiangnan two days later——-When they realise, it would be too late already. Moreover, on the military vessel there’s a fake prisoner to cover for us, surely they won’t find out for quite some time.”

“Very well.” The man in black robe put down the tea in his hand. “Let’s go see the kingdom’s famous iron-wall general.”

In the middle of a tightly secured cabin was a black iron cage.

A big fellow with long hair was locked inside the cage, he was blindfolded and his mouth was blocked. He cannot speak or see.

The hefty fellow’s body was stained with blood, it seems he had suffered a series of torture before he boarded the ship.

Because his hair was draped over his face, one was only able to hear his heavy breathing like a wild beast.

Clang———

The solid cabin door was pushed open from the outside, a beam of light finally shined into the dark cabin.

The man in black robe stood in front of the prison vehicle, inspecting, then said aloud: “Xu general, I need to remind you that I had specially told people to make this cabin sound-proof, no matter how loud you yell, people outside will hear nothing at all——If you don’t believe me, you can give it a try.”

The prison man did not move in the slightest, as if he did not hear anything.

The man in black beckoned his hand and commanded loudly: “Remove the blindfold on the general.”

Guards stepped forward to remove the blindfold and untied the bridle chains on his lips.

“General Xu has been battling on land all along, and is a fierce tiger from the mountains. You should not get seasick, right?” The young master asked, grinning.

“Cui Zhaoren——-” The hefty guy in prisoner clothes suddenly raised his head, his eyes, as fierce as a wolf, glared at the black robe youngster and said in an angry tone: “Using baseless accusations to frame a faithful official, you should die.”

“Xu general, I treated you with respect, you are somewhat ungrateful?” The black-clothed youngster chuckled: “Besides, what do you mean by groundless accusation? I have conclusive testimony and material evidence, the emperor himself ordered the arrest——-Don’t tell me you want to defy the imperial decree?”

“All these so-called testimony and material evidence were intentionally fabricated by your monitoring department, you have immense manpower and resources, what can you not do——-”

“Since iron-wall general saw through everything, it’s really———” An evil and

stern expression emerged on Cui Zhaoren's face as he said with a smile: "I need you to cooperate with me? You just need to sign the confession statement and I can guarantee the lives of your whole family———"

"Pah!" Iron-wall general Xu Da suddenly spat out a mouthful of phlegm and let loose a torrent of abuse: "You despicable person, you commit all sorts of crimes just to attack an opponent, there's nothing you won't do——I would never make false charges against Lu—–I would rather die."

"You are indeed Lu Xingkong's hand-picked henchmen. Xu general, you're known by everyone as iron-wall general, you have been guarding crushed dragon pool for a decade, it's difficult for Dawu to even step into our borders——-A faithful official and loyal general like you–I know you're not afraid to die, but are you worried that your family may die? If you can help me pull down Lu Xingkong then I can guarantee the lives of your entire Xu family, don't you think that's already a huge bargain?"

075 – Make friend become famous!

“Ah, I can’t find my purse—-My purse is gone—-”

From the inside of one of the cabins came a sharp noise like the wailing of a pig.

The noise punctured the peace of the ship; countless guests were awakened from their sleep.

“Mines too, my purse is also gone——”

“There’s a thief on the ship, go report this to the authorities ——”

Sounds of doors being pushed open, disheveled students with face filled with anger were yelling across the ship.

“Boatman, boatman, hurry get the person in charge to come here——” Zhang Linpu hurriedly tied up his belt stumbling out of his room shouting: “The one-hundred gold coins inside my bag was stolen, you’ve got to retrieve it back for me. Otherwise—-I won’t let it go.”

“Exactly and my fifty gold coins——”

“My one hundred twenty——”

——-

Li Muyang opened his eyes, after listening and clearly understanding the commotion outside, the first thing he did was touch the crotch of his trousers.

Fortunately, the gold coins were still there.

So he closed his eye, preparing to go back to sleep. This was his first time to be away from home and the first time he left his family; last night he lied in bed thinking of all sorts of worries, it was not until the second half of the night that he eventually fell asleep for a short moment.

It was still dark outside, a faint shadow of the moon still hanging in the sky, but he was already awakened?

Suddenly, he leaped out of bed, pulled out his luggage from under the deck

and frantically searched for a while.

He couldn't find anything.

The hidden bags full of gold coins all vanished.

Luo Qi divided the gold coins into several smaller amounts; each bag was hidden inside his clothes, boxes of food or books. All of them have been taken, yet the luggage was still in the exact same place, just like no one has ever moved it at all.

A mysterious thief!

Li Muyang pushed open the door, outside was already a scene of noisy confusion.

Zhang Linpu and other scholars of Jiangnan who also lost their purse were all shouting across the ship, while a middle-aged man with a triangle hat was trying very hard to explain to them but they won't listen at all, instead pulled the middle-aged man's arm and lapel demanding the boatman to compensate their losses.

"Gentlemen, gentlemen——please hear me out, please listen to my words." The man with the triangle hat bowed incessantly. "Now the passenger ship had already entered into the fowl crying lake area, this is the most dangerous place and the most likely place for lake bandits to appear. Even if the thieves stole all the money it's highly unlikely they would disembark here."

"The ship would continue to sail and not dock at any place. So, I'm certain that damn thief must still be on the ship. If you give me some time, I can organise a group of people to search every cabins and each compartments. The money stolen is no small amount, even if the thieves want to hide it on the ship it's not an easy task. If we find the money, then would that not lead us to the thief? At that time I can give everyone an explanation."

After carefully listening, Zhang Linpu also thought it was reasonable. He loosened the boatman's collar, turned around to face his fellow scholars and asked: "What do you guys think?"

"Search. We must search." With grief and indignation across the crowd's face, they said in a loud voice. Money is just an object, but it's also an life saving

object. They just left home and all their money had been stolen. What would they live on in Tiandu?

Seeing Li Muyang walking out of the cabin, Zhang Linpu asked: “Li Muyang, were any of your stuff stolen?”

“My two hundred and ten gold coins were stolen.” Li Muyang said aloud.

Everyone was speechless; they had no idea that Li Muyang would bring such a large amount of money to study.

“Is this true?” Zhang Linpu was in disbelief.

“I was lucky to achieve first place in the exams, the lord of the city rewarded me with two thousand gold coins. Mother wanted me to take half of it to study, so I won’t suffer outside. I thought I wouldn’t use that much, so I only brought two-hundred and ten gold coins.” Li Muyang explained. He must not let anyone know of the little packet in his pants no matter what, this is his money to survive.

“＿＿＿”

The entire crowd stared at Li Muyang while pondering, how did this asshole achieve first in the exams?

The person in charge of the ship is called Chen Tao, the entire boat crew as well as all the guests on the first and second decks gathered on the top deck, organising a group of guards to search every compartment and cabin on the ship, one by one.

All scholars were standing behind watching closely, there is no way for anyone to escape under their noses.

Unfortunately, in the end everybody was left disappointed; all cabins has been searched but they did not see what they hoped for; the sight of a large heap of gold coins stacked in a hidden corner, glistening brightly.

“The thief must have hid the gold coins———”

“With no money, what can we do? When we go to Tiandu, are we going to die?”

“No, our money is lost on the ship, the ship will have to pay for our losses ——-”

————

Zhang Linpu pointed to the stairwell on the third deck “Manager Chen, it seems we haven’t searched the third floor, right?”

Chen Tao was incredibly anxious, repeatedly waving his hand in refusal: “We must not search the third floor. The third floor is for VIPs, they will not steal some student’s little money.”

Zhang Linpu’s little heart can’t stand this any longer, pointing at Chen Tao he shouted: “Manger Chen, what do you mean? Upstairs are for VIPs, so we are grassroots and dust? Now that the entire first floor, second floor and the crew’s cabins have been thoroughly searched yet we still can’t find the thief or the lost gold, then of course, we must search the third deck———”

“Exactly, even if the prince breaks the law, he must be punished like an ordinary person. What makes those on the third floor superior?”

“Even if there are some VIPs on the third floor, what about their servants and guards? Who can guarantee that they do not have sticky fingers?”

————-

Chen Tao still refuses. “It’s something that I can’t do, I must not. Beside’s this is not up to me——The guests on the third deck reserved the whole deck and we promised not to disturb them.”

“Then what about our stolen money?” Zhang Linpu was filled with anger. “If your ship will pay for all the money us scholars have lost then we won’t have to search the third floor. Otherwise, even if it’s the emperor we are still going up to see——-”

“Yes, we are going up to search——-” The crowd snarled.

“What’s with the yelling?” An arrogant voice resounded from the top of the stairs.

Accompanied by several men of his monitoring division, Cui Zhaoren, dressed in a black cape, walked out of the cabin with an irritated face; a beautiful dream

being disrupted is indeed frustrating. He said coldly: “just a few hundred gold coins, we won’t even take a glimpse at them. If you continue to make false accusations, watch if I would slap your mouths——get out of here.”

“You———” Zhang Linpu tried to stand firm but seeing the men in black, one after another, holding onto the shaft of their blade, with their eyes ferociously glaring at them, as if they were ready to pull out their blades at anytime, the words that had already reached his mouth wouldn’t come out no matter what.

“Let us go and have a look.” A clear voice echoed over.

Zhang Linpu, who was standing right in the front, swiftly leaped aside to make it clear to the group of men in black that he was not the man who said these words. This matter had nothing to do with him.

The crowd dispersed, at the back of the crowd was Li Muyang, who has been following the crowd all along, searching one cabin after another, with a somewhat leisurely expression, he was pushed right to the front of Cui Zhaoren like stars clustering around the moon.

“Turns out it’s that retard.” Everyone thought to themselves.

“What are you?” The corners of Cui Zhaoren’s mouth slightly raised as he said without a trace of politeness.

“I’m Li Muyang.” Li Muyang said, smiling.

“And what is Li Muyang?”

“Li Muyang is not a thing, he’s a living person.” Grinning from ear to ear, Li Muyang continued: “The lord of Jiangnan city Yan Bolai is my uncle. The lord’s son Yan Xiangma is my brother——Yan Xiangma is Jiangnan city’s most famous hedonistic young master, he is capable of doing anything. So, young master please be careful.”

Li Muyang played with their mind here. He thought that since the majority of these people boarded the ship at Maple Forest Crossing, then most of them are from Jiangnan. Who in Jiangnan would not know of the lord of the city, Yan Bolai? Who would not know of the famous hedonistic young master Yan Xiangma?

Just moments ago Yan Bolai rushed over to see him off; everyone on the ship should have witnessed this. No matter who they are, they will always give some respect to the lord of the city, right?

As for Yan Xiangma, since he often says he's capable of committing any crime, then as his close friend, Li Muyang did not hesitate to make him become more well known.

"＿＿＿＿"

076 – The bandits of Fowl Crying Lake!

Two hundred and ten gold coins is a large sum of money to Li Muyang.

With his parents' income even if they worked non-stop a year they would merely earn a dozen of gold coins. Leaving their previous living conditions aside, even after obtaining the large reward from being the first place in the exams, he still doesn't have that luxury to casually throw away more than two hundred gold coins.

This was the reason for Li Muyang for trailing behind the search team and refusing to leave.

Those scholars need to find their own gold coins otherwise it would be difficult for them to survive when they reach their new school.

Li Muyang also needs to find those coins, his hard-earned money that his parents carefully hid because they worry that he would suffer outside.

They wanted Li Muyang to eat as much as he wants, buy new clothes and invite friends to dinner without being laughed at. Luo Qi even indirectly told him that he must treat Cui Xiaoxin to a meal when he arrives in Tiandu, after all they were classmates and Li Muyang was able to become the first in the exam was all because of Cui Xiaoxin. 是

Li Muyang also was thinking of the same thing——If he has the chance, he should take Cui Xiaoxin to dinner to express his gratitude.

Of course, that's all.

If Cui Xiaoxin does not refuse.

Compared to the importance of these gold coins, being criticised by this handsome but arrogant-looking guy who's glaring at them like he's looking at a pile of dog shit, is not so important anymore.

Li Muyang still felt somewhat uncomfortable though, a slight feeling of being offended.

But he was baffled; he undoubtedly is an intelligent and cute little cat, where

did that high and mighty feeling that he was feeling stem from?

Cui Zhaoren remained silent.

Cui Zhaoren felt he just encountered the biggest idiot.

Someone actually ran over to him and threatened him with the power and prestige of the lord of Jiangnan city? Someone actually used the bad reputation of his younger cousin to scare him?

If he knew of the relationship between the Yan family and Cui family, and Yan Bolai's and Yan Xiangma's relationships to him——the expression on his face must be quite funny, right?

"Do you really want to search?" Cui Zhaoren became more and more interested. A grin surfaced on his face.

"Just now manager Chen said that people on the third floor are important people then you will naturally have a noble's breadth of mind and a nobles's manner. It's not necessary for everyone to come up, we will only send several representatives up, your people can also accompany them to search around——"

"If nothing is found, then that would be best. But if one of young master's underling is not clean and took our poor students' money, then young master please speak for us and give our gold coins back. We will remember this kindness in our heart and would spread young master's name all over the world."

Cui Zhaoren smiled even happier, his eyes curve as he watched Li Muyang. "If I don't want to?"

"Then in that case we also can't do anything. Young master comes from a noble family then your background is also not ordinary. You have numerous guards protecting you and admirable power, us scholars don't even have the strength to tie up a chicken, how could we compare with you——But scholars will more or less hold a grudge. During our free time we like to write poems and articles, in order to write new poems we force ourselves to feel the distress at that time. Any trivial matters that we experienced in our life would be exaggerated and magnified. For example, if someone slaps us, we would write a bully stabbed us several times. If someone touched a girl, we would write that a hooligan, along with several servants, harassed an innocent young woman in

public ——”

“If I don’t let you go up and search, then you would write in your article: ‘rogues use their strength to snatch off the money of scholars entering into the capital to study?” Cui Zhoaren asked with a smile, interrupting Li Muyang.

“That’s not a bad idea. It seems young master is also someone who has an interest in poetry and writing, tomorrow we can have a good discussion and learn from each other——”

“Nonsense.” Cui Zhaoren suddenly erupted in anger. The face full of smiles turned into an evil face in a split second, this was too fast for anyone to accept. “Who do you think we are?”

“You are?” Li Muyang asked. You better hurry and announce your background. Only when you announce your background could I see if the lord of Jiangnan City and that young master who ran off to Tiandu could suppress you.

Cui Zhaoren’s mouth opened wide but in the end, he did not say who they were.

Their whereabouts is extremely secretive, in order to complete a series of tasks how many people in total were involved?

If he exposed his identity because of some useless students and caused his plan to be widely known, then the Lu family or the Lu family’s minions would come along to rescue people; with the men currently around him it really is difficult for him to contend against them.

After much difficulty they finally managed to capture iron-wall general; he is the sword that will point at Lu Xingkong and also the boulder that will block Lu Xingkong’s path to the position of government minister. When compared to the major people in Tiandu, these students on the ship are nothing.

Restrain!

Must restrain himself!

“You said your name is Li Muyang?” Cui Zhaoren asked aloud. Now the timing is wrong but there will always be a chance. When he’s at Tiandu, he would make

his life worse than death.

“Yes.” Li Muyang cupped his hands together and asked: “What’s your name, please?”

“You don’t deserve to know.” Cui Zhaoren said in an icily arrogant voice. “You can’t get on the third floor and you also can’t search this deck—-go back.”

He stared coldly at the numerous scholars in front of him, then to the people around him he shouted: “If someone dares to push through, kill them.”

“——-”

The entire crowd was dead quiet.

The guys who were repeatedly uttering: ‘even if the prince violates the law he still must be punished as ordinary people’, were too scared to even say a word.

Fairness and justice are just something to be carried on the lips. Would anyone take it seriously?

“This is bullying.” Li Muyang said resentfully. I already announced my background, I said Yan Bolai is my uncle and Yan Xiangma is my brother, how could you be so rude? Could it be that their background is not that intimidating? “Uncle Yan often said he would rather be stabbed in the back than be slapped in public. What you did, is that not the same as slapping us directly in the face in public?”

“If you say it is——” Cui Zhaoren shrugged his shoulder.“Then it is.”

“——-”

“Pirates. There’s pirates—–” Someone yelled.

“Zhang Ergou, you damn fool, this is the Great Lakes, why would there be pirates—”

“Lake bandits, we discovered lake bandits in the Fowl Crying Lake area—–” The same voice echoed over once again.

Fowl Crying lake is the water where Qinghai, Red River and Taihu gathers, it is also close to the ancient Liangshan and Eighteen Son mountains. So there are countless lake bandits, the situation is also in a state of disorder. From time and

time they would come out to cause a commotion and then disappeared in the blink of an eye, into the midst of the Great Lakes.

The kingdom had sent out armed forces to obstruct and destroy the bandits and even though the soldiers won the battle time and time again, the bandits are still not wiped out.

At the sight of soldiers, they disperse and disguise as fishermen. Once the soldiers are gone, they group back together as lake bandits. This has caused headaches for many of the high officials of the kingdom.

“The lake bandits are here?” Someone exclaimed aloud.

The majority of these students are pampered and spoiled since childhood, and for many of these students, this was the first time they left home.

Their life has been smooth all along, they had no idea that just as they were ready to leave their home they would encounter lake bandits—-Although their gold coins were stolen, they would still find a way in the end. But if the bandits were to slash across their head, nothing could be done.

Li Muyang’s both legs trembled. Feeling the heavy bag in his trouser crotch, he felt slightly better.

He thought to himself that even if those lake bandits board the ship, he could use his gold coins to exchange for his life.

“Young lord, three large vessels belonging to the Fowl Crying Lake bandits are gathering towards here, it seems they are eyeing the passengers ship.” His adviser Su Rong hurriedly trotted towards his side.

Cui Zhaoren’s eyes were ice-cold and his voice carried a killing intent as he said: “All these scoundrels deserve to die.”

“But young lord——”

Cui Zhaoren abruptly turned around and yelled: “Look after the goods, it must not have any slip-ups.”

“Yes.” A group of people simultaneously bowed and replied.

077 – Grim faced bodhisattva!

On the ship there were twelve members of full-time security guards assigned to protect the guests on their journey.

Whether it's protecting their money or their safety, both are within the scope of their duties.

However, at this moment, these guests do not feel a sense of security at all.

Let alone their money had been completely stolen, now their life is also about to be taken away by the bandits——What would be left after all this?

Everyone assembled on the top deck, watching the ship being intercepted by three collision-type ships hanging various sorts of flag and laying their eyes on the bloodstained sail cloths and the hull of the ships, they let out a miserable shriek.

"What to do? What to do? Are we going to die?"

"Those bandits, they wouldn't kill us, right?"

"Bandits wouldn't kill people? I heard they even eat humans——"

——-

"That damn thief." Zhang Linpu's eyes reddened in rage as he yelled in exasperation.

"Linpu brother, the bandits are right in front of us now, how could you still care about the money?" A close friend asked aloud. "Life is what matters the most."

"Pingzhi brother, do you still not understand? What do bandits like? It's money. Our gold coins are completely gone, when the bandits come to attack this ship asking for money, we tell them that our gold was stolen last night—- Would they believe us? If they can't leave with any money, then they would leave with our lives."

"——" Niu Pingzhi also began to worry.

Li Muyang has a whole new level of respect for Zhang Linpu; no wonder this

guy obtained good results in the exams, he really is extraordinary. At least his head moves faster than most people.

Every time his legs trembled, feeling the weight of the bag of gold coins, Li Muyang felt much more at ease.

He has money!

If the lake bandits were to board the ship and began to rob, when his little companions next to him have no money to offer them, he then takes off his pants. With hundreds of gold coins in front of their eyes, what an impressive scene it would be?

Although the posture is not that graceful but at least it's sincere and laudable, right?

Manger Chen Tao forced himself to act calm but his pale face and his stuttering exposed his terrified heart.

He had encountered lake bandits before but at those times there were merely a dozen people or at most thirty bandits. They were easily sent away with some money.

What is it with today? There are too many people, right?

"Troops are trained for thousand of days for one day's battle. I always share good wine and good food with all of us, did I ever treat you poorly? Brave warriors, now that the ship is in trouble, we encountered—-Large groups of Fowl Crying Lake bandits, we're in a state of chaos. The flags are confusing, there may possibly be three different gangs——I hope that we can work together, please take out all your fighting spirit and courage——"

"Manager Chen, it's not that we don't want to help. You take a look at the three vessels, it's highly likely that there'll be hundreds of bandits on those ships, right? You want to send us twelve people to fight over hundreds of lake bandits —-Even if we are gods we still can't manage that, right?"

"Exactly. If we have to throw away our life, we still have to die in a worthwhile fashion——Even if we die on the spot, would you guys be able to escape?"

"It's better if we put all the valuables together——and sweet talk them away

—-”

———

The battle has not started, yet these brave guards already had cold feet.

On top of that, Li Muyang still thinks they’re being very reasonable.

Guards are also people, the guards also have parents and children, yet you send them out to fight to the death—-that’s just telling them to throw away their own life. No one would be willing to, right?

Chen Tao was incredibly anxious, he turned around and said to the scholars: “you are all talented people, now that we’ve encountered a disaster, we’re grasshoppers on a ship—-Can you give us some kind of plan?”

“We have no money.” Zhang Linpu yelled. “Even if we have to surrender, the ship has to pay them.”

“Exactly. We can’t just cut some flesh off our bodies and send it over, right?”

“Manager Chen, you must stand up and take responsibility. There’s no other way——”

——

Li Muyang’s mouth opened wide, yet in the end he did not say a word.

He felt that everyone does have a point.

Sure enough, at the critical moment, the wisdom of the group was boundless.

As for strength—-Who would even think of such a silly thing?

Chen Tao lips moved slightly. “Let me contact them first——see what they want.”

Three battered ships came rushing over, pulling apart the distance between them, they formed a direct intercepting stance.

Although the lake is wide and deep, there is not enough space for a ship to turn around.

Chen Tao commanded the crew to slow down, to avoid knocking against the other vessels, before they even attack us, we would fall overboard and be swept

away by giant waves.

The leader of one of the ships, a bronze bald big fellow, stood tall on the ship.

On the big fellow's face was a deep scar, his brows continued to the corners of his mouth and half of his eye was ripped open.

On his spectacles was a brass eye patch, looking closely he really does somewhat have the look of a pirate journeying freely across the oceans.

The big fellow watched the passenger ship gradually drifting near, then shouted: "Bring my chain."

Then, more than ten of his underlings laboriously dragged over a chain, as thick as an arm, with a copper hook at the front end of the chain.

"Move aside."

With the roar of the scarred-man, the chain was swung up and rotated around in the air a few times, before it suddenly pounded against the ship.

The copper hook is gigantic and incomparably heavy, letting out a howl of wind in the air.

Crash—-

The copper chain smashed against the top deck, the sharp hook clasped tightly deep onto the hull of the ship.

"Boss is amazing, no one can rival boss——"

"Hua Heshang is amazing, this time you set a record—-"

"Pull it over, pull it over——"

——

Seeing their boss displayed his remarkable skills, an enthusiastic burst of applause resounded on the bandit ships.

"You guys watch carefully." Hua Heshang laughed heartily, then with his body, he rolled up the chain two times and his arms suddenly exerted strength.

Whoosh—

The entire ship, which was completely under the control of Hua Heshang, swiftly came into their encirclement.

The faces of everyone on board were like dying embers and ashes.

This was too motherfucking scary, wasn't it?

It's bad enough that they came to rob, but they actually see it as performing acrobatics. The hook that thumped against the top of the ship created a gigantic hole. If this were to pound against someone's body, would they still be alive?

Li Muyang's face turned grave and stern.

He was worried that the little amount of gold inside his crotch would not meet their appetite.

The passenger ship was like a large fish biting onto a hook and dragged to the shore by a fisherman.

The instant the passenger ship entered into the encirclement of the three large vessels, the bandits all jumped aboard, and began to kill, rob and commit any imaginable crime.

Li Muyang's hand clenched into a fist, gathering qi in his dantian.

While secretly on the alert.

At the time of crisis, a black shadow floated across the air.

The figure of the man with a sword emerged in the sky; the sword, roaring across the horizon, like a sudden rainbow, emitted a burning flame of light as it chopped the chain as thick as an arm in half.

Snap——

The iron chain split into two chunks, the bandit Hua Heshang exerted too much strength too abruptly, with an unexpected error, his body suddenly stumbled back.

The man in black hovering in the air slowly descended to the ground, both his feet landed on the mast of the ship. The white sail was still fluttering and the black cape waving in the breeze, yet the drifting ship abruptly came to a stop.

Grim-faced bodhisattva Cui Zhaoren!

The dozen of men dressed in black quickly jumped to the top of the ship without the slightest sound, their hand clenching tightly onto the shaft of their blade, with a cold and unconcerned expression they glared across at the three ships.

“Who dares cut apart Hua grandpa’s iron chain?” Hua Heshang was fuming with rage, he angrily advanced towards the side shouting: “Come on, announce your name, let grandpa teach you how to be a person——”

Cui Zhaoren’s expression remained indifferent but his heart was burning with anger.

These assholes—they could have targeted anyone but they chose his ship.

If he stood aside, expecting this group of trash scholars on the ship to suppress these bandits, it’s impossible.

However, if they made a move, it would probably leak their location, the Lu family’s side will tail behind and come to the rescue——

During their brief moment of hesitation, the ship had already suffered Hua Heshang’s attack ‘Luohan Soul Hook’, dragging the entire passenger ship into their encirclement.

If they waited any longer, their whereabouts would be exposed.

Cui Zhaoren emitted a biting cold killing intent; he drew his sword in anger, slashing Hua Heshang’s copper hook in half.

“There’s a better path for you to choose but you chose one with difficulty.” Cui Zhaoren eyes were ice-cold as he thundered: “Kill every one of them.”

“Yes.” The dozen of men in black replied then immediately took action.

Clang—

More than ten swords were unsheathed, they then divided into three groups and leaped into the air, heading towards the three large vessels.

Immediately, on the three large ships a brutal battle had unfolded.

The skills of the men in black were impressive and their methods were merciless. Each time their sword aimed towards the pivotal parts of the body.

With the draw of every sword, it severed the head from the body.

Cui Zhaoren's attention was entirely on the foul-mouthed Hua Heshang, the corner of his mouth raise slightly, a charming smile emerged on his face. "You want to teach me how to behave as a person, I won't let you live as a person——"

As they talked, his body leaped into the air once again.

His long gown floated across the air, his body was like a giant bird hovering at a height in the vast sky.

Occupying the high position, he dived down, his sword aiming at Hua Heshang's bald forehead.

Hua Heshang wildly laughed out loud, then reached out to grab the chain broken in half and began to swing it up again, the long chain was like a long snake pouncing in mid-air, he yelled: "good timing, let grandpa——"

He can't continue his words anymore.

Because Cui Zhaoren suddenly accelerated.

His sword thrust into Hua Heshang's head.

His body sank, the long sword also descended.

Sword terrifying the spirit.

Sword forcibly taking away the soul.

The long blade pierced all the way to the hilt of the sword.

"These bandits have to read more; is gentle and refined robbing bad?" With his body upside down in mid-air, Cui Zhaoren said to Hua Heshang, whose head was dripping out large amounts of blood.

Then, his body swirled around before the long sword was yanked out.

Screech—-

Blood sprayed towards the blue sky, like spring water from a well.

078 – Crime of colluding with the enemies!

This was a one-sided massacre.

Led by Cui Zhaoren, his men of the Monitor Division killed hundreds of Fowl Crying Lake bandits.

They simply were not high-level opponents; after Cui Zhaoren used his sword to skewer Hua Heshang, he consecutively jumped to the other two ships and beheaded the bandit leaders Master of waves Li Xiaoer and Taihu's devil king Zhao Sijia.

At that point, without any fighting force the Fowl Crying Lake bandits quickly collapsed.

Some people howled in grief while some knelt down begging for mercy, but an even larger number of people tried to flee.

No matter how hard they tried to escape they still can't run.

Before Cui Zhaoren made his move he'd already commanded his subordinates to 'kill every one of them'.

The Monitor Division is the kingdom's Monitor Division, and also Cui Zhaoren's Monitor Division.

The men of the Monitor Division obeyed Cui Zhaoren's commands without question and regard his every order as a decree. If Cui Zhaoren ordered them to kill someone's whole family, they would kill the entire family. If Cui Zhaoren commanded them to obtain a strand of hair, they would take only one strand of hair.

They would return even a surplus strand of hair.

The men, in their powerful-looking uniform, leapt out, brandishing their swords and slashing in disorder, not allowing the opportunity for those bandits to beg for mercy.

Breaking limbs, snapping arms; fresh blood staining the surface of Fowl Crying Lake.

Although the passenger ship was saved from the fire of war, but seeing this scene the students still felt their throat choking and their stomach twitching badly. If they were any more cowardly or with a poor mental state they would throw up on the spot.

Most of them are from a rich and tranquil home, when have they ever laid their eyes on the scene of mass killings?

Li Muyang was incredibly calm.

Not sure why but he did not feel anxious at all. He even felt like he had nothing to fear.

Although that side was a bloodbath, he simply sighed to himself of how vicious and merciless those groups of men in black were.

Same as other scholars, this was also the first time he left home, the first time he experienced the cruelty of a ruthless battle.

Being bullied by classmates, being ridiculed by the teacher several few times, how could that compare to what he experienced today?

However, Li Muyang just does not feel a thing. As if everything did not happen right before his eyes.

Of course, Li Muyang knows his attitude is wrong. Zhang Linpu's body was trembling like a sieve and his penetrating eyes were sizing him up.

Li Muyang didn't want to look different from the others. Following Zhang Linpu's rhythm he began to quiver.

Zhang Linpu became very angry; I have my own rhythm, why did you imitate me?

And so Zhang Linpu's trembling intensified.

Li Muyang also felt very angry, why did you suddenly speed up? You want to make me look more 'odd'? You want to exclude me from the 'normal' category?

So, Li Muyang also speeded up following Zhang Linpu's speed.

If there were some heated music and powerful drumbeat, these two would look like dance masters competing in a dance battle.

Just as Li Muyang and Zhang Linpu were swaying incessantly, suddenly the ship rocked violently.

Thump——

A woman in colorful clothes like a butterfly was thrown to the top of the deck.

As the woman's body dropped from the sky, a sharp and clear sound of bones fracturing could be heard.

She let out a miserable cry, but before she had the time to crawl up from the deck to flee for her life, Cui Zhaoren's body gently moved to the side, the sword dripping with blood in his hand pressed against her throat.

His black clothes were without a trace of blood and his black cape fluttering in the breeze. His face, as beautiful as jade, was grave and gloomy, looking like the god of death from hell.

"Let me go, please let me go——I, Shui yuanyang, is willing to work for you like an ox and horse, I'll do whatever you tell me to——-" A quite pretty woman looked frightened, urgently pleaded.

"You only have one chance." Cui Zhaoren's voice was ice-cold, without the slightest emotion. "Who ordered you to attack this ship?"

"No one. No one ordered us——We work as Fowl Crying Lake bandits, whenever we see beautiful ships we naturally would want to work with other companions to fish up a sum of money——-"

Make the matter simple and not touch upon any complicated aspect. This is the way of saving your life.

Suk——-

The long sword thrust down, piercing through Shui Yuanyang's throat.

Fresh blood splattered out with the sword, instantly dyeing her neck and chest red.

Shui Yuanyang's eyes widened but did not dare to touch with her hands. She was afraid that with a slight pressure, not only her hands would be stained with blood, her windpipe would also be cut through.

“I don’t like to hear people talk rubbish, I dislike to hear lies eveb nire.” Cui Zhaoren’s eyes were even colder. “As I said, you only have one chance, I should have killed you just now——-but unfortunately your other companions had been killed by my people. Even if I wanted to find someone to replace you, I can’t. So, this is your luck and also your misfortune——-Who directed you here? Don’t worry, think before you answer.”

Just as Cui Zhaoren was interrogating bandit Shui Yuanyang, the battles on the other three ships have ended. These men of the Monitor Division cleanly wiped out the mobs.

Now, displaying a murderous-looking expression, they distributed around the deck, their eyes carrying a killing intent and their bodies giving off a strong whiff of blood, from their enemies and also of their own.

Looking like a group of wild beasts that had been let out of a cage.

“I’ll tell you——I’ll tell you, someone notified us in advance. They said a passenger ship would pass by Fowl Crying Lake today, the ship would be full of rich scholars, and also Jiangnan’s richest merchants would be delivering large quantities of jewels to Tiandu via this ship, and the painting <Emperor’s twelve scrolls> would be on board ——That person said he only wants that painting; all the gold, treasures and women we can split among our people——-”

“He also said the ship would be heavily guarded and skilled masters would be on board. And told us to bring more brothers, as to avoid our hopes and efforts come to nothing. So our Boss Hua made a deal with other lake bandits.

“There isn’t any rich merchants from Jiangnan nor any pearls and jewels, and the famous painting <Emperor’s twelve scrolls> is not on the ship——-” Cui Zhaoren watched this pitiful woman like he’s looking at an idiot.

“Not good.” Cui Zhaoren suddenly awakened, immediately yelled: “The goods are in danger.”

Hua———

Hearing Cui Zhaoren’s command, the dozen of men in black beside him instantly leapt towards the third floor.

When Cui Zhaoren reached the third floor, the door was still guarded; strategist Su Rong and several other guards were standing by the door of the cabin where the criminal was imprisoned.

“Congratulation on young lord’s great victory and return.” Strategist Su Rong said with a smile: “A group of rascals dared to obstruct the ship’s path, they deserve to die.”

“How are the goods?” Cui Zhaoren headed straight into the cabin.

“I was standing in the doorway all along, I’ve never left for even a moment.” Su Rong said. “Moreover, the areas around the cabin had were always guarded by someone, there’s also a prohibition spell, if someone touches it, the spell master should be aware, it should not——”

Su Rong did not continue his sentence.

Because when Cui Zhaoren opened the door, the cage in the room was missing.

The cage made out of gold, weighing thousand of pounds, disappeared before their eyes, and at the same time the wooden planks under the cage also vanished.

Someone was able to make a hole under their noses; the iron-wall general was rescued without anyone knowing.

This is completely unimaginable, really hard to believe.

Not only was the person able to break through the prohibition spell without the master being aware and cut through the floor without any noise, the cage, weighing thousand of pounds, along with a living person inside disappeared under the gaze of so many people and guards——-What kind of person did this?

Sha——-

The sword growled like a dragon!

Cui Zhaoren drew out his sword, as he stomped into the cabin he exerted strength and brandished his sword.

Crack—-

The aura of the sword instantly split the passenger ship down the middle

Rumble——

Then, an enormous and heavy roof slipped down towards Fowl Crying Lake, dropping into the water with a crash.

At this moment, the sun was illuminating every corner of the land, and because of the lack of cover for the ship, there were no longer any darkness on the entire third floor.

Cui Zhaoren stood under the scorching sun, his pale complexion was like a high quality piece of white paper from Xuan City.

His eyes were like a pair of ice blades, those who look him in the eye instantly felt they were sliced into pieces.

“Young Lord, this is my fault, I did not think———” Su Rong’s was dumbstruck, he quickly apologised. “I didn’t think they would rescue in that way, I will———”

“Chase.” Cui Zhoaren coldly issued a command.

“Yes. A group of black-clothes men bowed and replied, then instantly surge into the air, towards the area surrounding Fowl Crying Lake. “

Cui Zhaoren stared ahead at the mile-long river in front of him and remained silent for a long time.

Everyone gathered on the top deck, including the crewmembers and boatmen of the ship.

Teams of hundreds of people, but no one dared to make any sound. Even their eyes moved gently and cautiously.

It was quiet and solemn, the air seemed to be frozen.

Even if everyone was not satisfied with this conduct, but once they saw the youngster’s black robe fluttering in the breeze and his eyes coldly glaring at them, they could only suppress the grievance in their heart, then quickly bow their head and not look him eye to eye.

Seeing the massacre just now, who would dare to stroke the tiger’s whiskers?

After they witnessed the savage ways of the group of men in black, they

secretly questioned why did they suggested something so silly before——-search other people's cabin. Is this not the same as seeking their own death?

"Everyone on board are all here." Manager Chen Tao came close to Cui Zhaoren and cautiously reported.

"Missing anyone?"

"Just counted, we are missing one person." Chen Tao's head was almost as low as the crotch of his trouser.

"Who?"

"This——We don't know at the moment. Because there's a large number of guests, a lot of people's names and faces, I can't catch on——-"

"Call out their names."

"Yes." Chen Tao replied immediately, then without delay began to call out the names the guests left before boarding.

"Jiangnan's Li Yikun———"

"Jia County's Zhang Linpu———"

"Tin County's Chen Qingzhi———"

————

Every time a person's name was read out, they walked out of the assembling group, and came to an area the monitoring division was managing.

The list of names was very quickly called out. Chen Tao came over carrying the list of names and reported: "One person is missing, he's called Mu Qinghou."

"Qinghou?" Cui Zhaoren laughed grimly then said in a loud voice: "Anyone recognise this person?"

No one replied.

"Those who have seen this person can keep their lives and receive two hundred gold coins as reward."

"I've seen him—" A skinny scholar timidly raised his hand. "I met him before, he's a fat guy."

“Good, reward him two hundred gold coins.” Cui Zhoeren kept to his words; straight away someone threw a bag of gold coins into his arms.

“I’ve also seen him, I had an argument with him———”

Yes, he spoke for Li Muyang, he humiliated us——”

———-

Li Muyang?

Within all the yelling, Cui Zhaoren heard something he’s most concerned about.

“Li Muyang——-” Among the crowd he found a white-robed youngster who dares to contradict and threaten him, he glared at him with biting-cold eyes, his voice abnormally calm. “Do you know you just committed the crime of colluding with the enemies?”

079 – Under the sword of tribulation!

Who would not be terrified?!

Li Muyang was glad that the little amount of gold inside his crotch was untouched in the end; if he spends his money wisely, find a part-time job at school, deny himself of comforts and have thrifty meals, maybe he won't need to ask his parents for money. So that he can avoid explaining too much and making them suspicious, if they ran to the ship company only to find out that he encountered this they would be worrying all night, unable to sleep, right?

Li Muyang had always blamed himself for not doing something for his parents, so he tried his best not to give his parents any trouble.

He had no idea that in the blink of an eye he would be blamed for colluding with the enemies——this is not a joking matter, according to the West Wind Kingdom's law, if there is a collaborationist they are beheaded immediately.

In other words, if this group of black-robe men were unhappy with him, they could sever him into several chunks straight away and throw him into Fowl Crying Lake to feed the fish.

As for whether or not it was true, is it just according to what comes out of their mouth?

"Do you have evidence?" Li Muyang felt a strong hatred in his heart, an urge to slice this guy more than twenty times, but he tried his best to keep his emotions calm. The angrier he was, the more likely they'd think he's guilty.

What's most important now is that the enemies are strong and he's weak, if he provoked them, he would only be at a disadvantage and suffer a beating?

Li Muyang just now personally witnessed the way each of them soared into the air like they were treading on land, and with the draw of a sword the whole roof of the ship had disappeared. Cui Zhaoren made Li Muyang think of assassin Crow, he thought to himself that even assassin Crow may not escape easily from him.

He should be cautious of what he says. If he really can't endure it any longer,

then he could bring up Cui Xiaoxin's name and say he's Tiandu's Cui family's son-in-law——Li Shinian once vaguely mentioned Cui Xiaoxin's family background. Li Muyang was quite shocked after hearing it but at the same time also very distressed, yet he can only sigh aloud that fate is cruel. This time he could also use the Cui family's name to scare these damn black-robed idiots——

"Evidence?" Cui Zhaoren pointed his finger at the several scholars around Li Muyang. "What they say is evidence."

"You only listened to their side of the story and you firmly believe that I committed the crime of colluding with enemies?"

"There's so many people on this ship, why did he only speak for you?" An ice-cold smiling expression surface on Cui Zhaoren's face, his eyes sizing Li Muyang up, thinking to himself what is the possibility of Li Muyang colluding with enemies. "The kingdom's Monitor Division was escorting important criminals, our whereabouts are extremely secretive, it's almost impossible for anyone to know of, yet the enemy was able to drill a hole——Just now you also heard Shi Yuanyang's words, they had been deceived to come to rob this ship."

"Also, last night when your money were stolen you led a group of people to search our deck, did you intentionally tried to create chaos for those people, as to divert our attention? So many people also witnessed this, did I say anything wrong?"

"The person asked to search the ship wasn't me." Li Muyang hurriedly explained, then pointed to Zhang Linpu standing at the side. "He was the first to suggest to search the ship and he brought people to the stairwell of the third deck. Did you not see? If that's the case, are they not more suspicious of colluding with the enemies? Because the chaos was first created by them. I'm just a quiet follower."

"Li Muyang——" Zhang Linpu's little heart and liver was nearly frightened to the point of cracking, with the look of anger across his face, he lifted his finger, pointing to Li Muyang and lashed out: "You despicable person, don't try to pull me down. At that time I was arguing with the fat man and almost got into a fight. It was you——He was speaking for you. Also he scolded us 'frogs in a well' and not being aware of the vastness of Starry Sky. Could it be that you two knew

each other beforehand?”

“You see, as a matter of fact this even more proves that I have nothing to do with him? If you were to form a secret partnership with someone, shouldn’t you pretend not know each other, or create a number of fierce conflicts to emphasise that they have no relationship with each other——just like how you argued with him. If we knew each other, why would he speak for me in front of everyone? If we really did worked together, now that he’s successful, why am I still left on the ship?”

Li Muyang stood still looking dejected, then said with a face of injustice: “Because I achieved first place of the kingdom and I was commended. Also, because Jiangnan city’s lord Yan Bolai is my uncle and the lord’s son Yan Xiangma is my brother, so they discriminate me and tried to attack me with cutting remarks——I understand that it’s the taller trees in the woods that get their tops blown off. I also know that the gale always targets the towering trees with dense branches——but I can’t help it. I did not want to be the first, I also did not want the lord of Jiangnan to be my uncle, but I can’t choose my own background ——-”

“————” Cui Zhaoren felt the urge to sever this kid into two. Is the Tiandu’s Cui family for ignorant childrens like you to be compared to?

“I can swear on my uncle, Jiangnan city’s lord Yan Bolai’s, honour, I had never done that robbery or helped the enemy. If I did, let my uncle not die peacefully. If you wish to criminate someone, there will be no difficulty in finding a suitable pretext. The crime of colluding with the enemy, I, Li Muyang really cannot carry it.”

“————” Cui Zhaoren’s sword was swaying non-stop in his hand, he felt he had lost control of the righteousness within his body. Must do something that suppress the evil and give peace to the good people to resolve this.

“Whether or not you colluded with the enemies, you and I can’t decide——” The murderous spirit within Cui Zhaoren’s eyes began to saturate the air as he glared coldly at Li Muyang. “Come with us to the Monitor Department and everything will be made clear.”

Monitor Division is known as the kingdom's iron prison, it is said that life is no better than death in there. Even if celestial beings entered they would also be stripped of their layer of gold and their strength of faith taken away.

Li Muyang obviously would not go.

He can't go.

He does not possess the nature of rather die than to surrender nor does he have the moral character to sacrifice for justice, and moreover he would not let you torture him in every possible ways to just wait for a sea of fire to throw himself into and reborn into Nirvana——his mouth is not very tight and his bones are not very strong. And he's only just turned a little whiter, more handsome, he doesn't want to be thrown into the prison and become a ghost or a useless person.

"I can't go." Li Muyang said. "I've been enrolled into Starry Sky Academy, a senior personally came down to Jiangnan on a crane to announce the good news to me, he also repeatedly told me to be present during the period of enrolment."

"Starry Sky Academy?" Cui Zhaoren's eyes widen with a gleaming radiance, looking at Li Muyang in disbelief.

"Yes." Li Muyang said proudly. Thank heavens! Finally found a strong backer. When he mentioned Jiangnan City's Yan Bolai and his Son Yan Xiangma this guy did not pay any attention——It seems Yan Bolai's power were not that impressive.

Cui Zhaoren's eyes were flashing, once again inspected Li Muyang seriously from top to bottom.

The situation became much more complicated.

This guy was actually admitted into Starry Sky Academy, this is indeed beyond belief.

"You say you've been enrolled into Starry Sky Academy?"

"Yes."

"You were selected based on the results of first place in the exam?"

"Yes."

“Hah———–” Cui Zhaoren sneered out loud.

Each year, there is someone who achieves first in the exam. As long as there’s an exam, there will always be a first place.

However, not every first place could be admitted to Starry Sky Academy.

Also, to be admitted into Starry Sky Academy with the results of the first place in the imperial exams———–besides Li Muyang, only the ‘immortal poet’ Li Qiubai thousand years ago achieved this.

Assuming Li Muyang did not tell any lies.

He wanted him to lie, because it’s very easy to find out if he was first place in the exam or if he was actually enrolled into Starry Sky Academy.

However, if he’s not lying, then there must be someone powerful behind him ——

Cui Zhaoren suddenly started to believe that Li Muyang had indeed colluded with the enemy.

Cui Zhaoren slowly walked towards Li Muyang and said with a smile: “It seems you need to take a trip with us———-Don’t worry, you won’t miss the enrolment period.”

As he spoke, Cui Zhaoren pulled out his sword, thrusting towards Li Muyang’s head.

Kill!

No matter if you’re the first place in the kingdom or you’re a student of Starry Sky Academy, now that you’re on this ship and treaded on muddy water, don’t expect to escape in one piece.

If someone died, so what if they were first in the exam, so what if they were admitted into Starry Sky Academy.

As long as you’re charged with the crime of colluding with the enemy, even if Starry Sky is unhappy, they still have to respect the kingdom’s decision—— Monitor Department is acting on behalf of the emperor, would they retaliate just because a student did not enroll?

Moreover it’s a dead student.

As for the person behind helping Li Muyang, Cui Zhaoren’s simply does not care at all.

Since he’s not able to confirm Li Muyang’s background and can’t determine if he’s on his side——at this critical juncture, if he’s not one of his people then he’s an enemy.

If he’s dead, he’s dead, what can they do?

Grim-faced bodhisattva, bodhisattva protecting the country, cold-hearted killing.

This matter was too abrupt; nobody thought Cui Zhaoren would suddenly draw his sword to kill.

The sword sprung up like a sudden clap of thunder, then like a shooting star streaked across the sky.

The scene passed by in a twinkling; no one was able to react.

This is one of the top masters in the kingdom. Those who encountered grim-faced bodhisattva Cui Zhaoren’s ‘Sword of tribulation’ that could change endlessly would have countless thoughts and inspiration.

Facing the ‘Sword of tribulation’, it is hard to pass your tribulation. This was a common phrase in West Wind Kingdom. What it complimented on was the compatibility and fearsomeness between the technique ‘Sword of tribulation’ and the [Secrets of the hundred and eight thousand heaven’s will].

As for Li Muyang——

The moment the long sword was unsheathed, Cui Zhaoren already regarded him as a dead person.

080 – Turtle Drake protecting it’s master

Cui Zhaoren extremely liked this folk song, which is widely known throughout the kingdom: hate is like a gust of wind, it will leave after cutting through everything. By using this sort of pace, who would not be helpless.

After killing Li Muyang in one strike, he would pin him with the crime of colluding with the enemy. Nobody would be able to reverse his verdict.

He already took it to heart when Li Muyang challenged his authority, now that he knows Li Muyang is enrolled into Starry Sky Academy, he could no longer restrain himself.

Cui Zhaoren knows clearly about the special existence of Starry Sky Academy. Li Muyang was admitted with the results of the first place in the imperial exam, with some time, he probably would also become a famous person of the divine continent just like Li Qiubai.

Even if that possibility is next to nothing, he still absolutely cannot stand aside and allow him to become stronger.

Get rid of the weed before it’s too late; eliminate the worm while it’s still small.

If he waited till Li Muyang entered Starry Sky Academy, waited till he had some accomplishment or met a major person, it would be too late at that time.

So, that’s why he suddenly attacked.

Cui Zhaoren had already stepped into the higher stages of the Free Clouds realm. If he diligently practices, sharpens his skills, with a lucky chance, he may also reach the Withering Glory stage, and be able to decide life and death with just one thought.

Entering the state of Withering Glory at this age, how many people in the entire West Wind Kingdom would be able to compare to him?

With the power of the high level of the free clouds to kill a frail scholar who achieved first in the exam, the result is obvious.

Others were unguarded, but Li Muyang was on the alert all along.

From the very first moment he laid his eyes on Cui Zhaoren, Li Muyang felt danger.

This man's facial features is difficult to get annoyed by, even if he'd always put on a serious face and his smile also ice-cold—-but at those times he's still considered as a handsome guy, right?

This is a world that only takes notice of someone's face. No matter what bad things a good-looking person does, it's always easier to accept. If some ugly person were involved in a scandal, there's no reason to forgive them.

However, Li Muyang sensed a dark aura from his body.

Like rotting corpse inside ancient tombs or vipers hiding in the grass, those who met his gaze would instantly think of death or a feeling of despair would come to mind.

Li Muyang could clearly feel the hostility he has towards himself, although he does not know where this hostility came from exactly.

He did not show his desire to kill but from his smile, Li Muyang was able to feel his murderous intent.

So, Li Muyang has been secretly keeping his guard up.

Accumulating qi in his dantian, gathering power.

This is the foundation of the 'Art of Breaking Body'.

Quietly waiting.

Just as Cui Zhaoren drew out his sword without any warning, Li Muyang also punched out.

This is the punch he has long prepared.

This was the explosive punch he waited to throw out after having stored up power.

With one punch out, all living things would be annihilated.

Breaking fist!

Biting-cold, penetrating, distressing, this was the sword.

Domineering, powerful, blast of heat, this was the punch.

Long sword against heavy fist; intentionally mounting a sneak attack versus vigilant counterattack.

The aura from the sword flashed across the sky, much more dazzling that the rays of light from the scorching sun shining upon the earth.

The heavy punch was like clap of thunder, rumbling loudly, its vibration causing immense pain in the eardrum that's difficult to return back to usual.

There were hundreds of people on the deck, but no one could see what was happening.

Except for the two parties.

Before their eyes was only a cloud of white light, a vast expanse of whiteness.

As if a fireball suddenly exploded in front of them.

Bang——

The fist and sword collided against each other.

Like a landslide and tsunami, a source of violent energy vigorously engulfed everything.

Cui Zhaoren can no longer withstand this force, his body stumbled back again and again. As his legs lurch back his heels exerted strength to try and firmly remain on the plank to stop his momentum from declining, unfortunately that force was indeed too strong, pieces of plank flew into the air while Cui Zhaoren's body continuously fall back to the edge of the vessel.

Crash—-

The railing fractured; the part struck by his body plummeted into Fowl Crying Lake.

Li Muyang was even worse off.

Although he has been painstakingly practicing 'The Art of the Breaking Body' for several months, but according to the growth ring of the cultivators in the vast Starry Sky he does not even have the qualification to get started, he can't even state the true meaning of 'start'.

What position do you stand? Where are you heading to? What is your path? You have to go through which method to arrive there?

Li Muyang does not even know how to answer a single one of these questions, how could he talk about getting started?

He just relied on the original scroll, a little basic knowledge from Li Shinian's memory and the method of training that's hidden deep inside his mind to conduct a series of reasoning and systematically formulate a suitable method for himself to practice——-

There was nobody to tell him whether his ways of practice was in the right direction.

Of course, Li Shinian did praise him several times that he's smart.

His mind is adequately prepared but his body was caught off guard.

A trash youngster who had only trained for merely less than a year, the moment he made his move he encountered a famous genius swordsman who'd already set foot on the high level of the free clouds——-

The answer really has no suspense.

Li Muyang's body was sent flying into the air. The moment the force of his breaking fist collided against Cui Zhaoren's 'Sword of Tribulation', the two extreme brutal powers exploded and he lost consciousness.

His body was blown away with a blast, he hovered in the air for a long time before he plunged into the river of Fowl Crying Lake.

Once he came into contact with the water he immediately plummeted to the riverbed.

Like a falling rock, all the nearby fish, prawns and insects were all frightened off at once.

The river water was muddy and the currents were flowing rapidly, Li Muyang's body was mixed in with silt.

And then he was washed by the river current and completely covered by water

plants, which tightly wrapped around him not allowing him to be flushed away again, though his body surfaced once again.

Unable to see light in the water, it's also difficult to be aware of the time.

The body, which still remains fresh, was bundled with water plants, but very soon it will began to smell bad and turn into rotten meat. This sort of meat, are what fish and prawns like to eat the most.

After they crowded around and devoured till they're satisfied, only several white bones would remain down there.

The same ending as the countless people who had drowned.

For many people, this signifies the end of life.

The moment Li Muyang fell into water, his sudden large movement scared away all the fish and prawns nearby.

After some time, those fish and prawns once again gathered together, wanting to take a glimpse at what startled them.

They wanted to know the truth but did not dare to be the first to come close.

Fear is the nature of each species.

Moreover, this 'something' gave off a dangerous odour that makes people hoped to become stronger.

Eventually, a small herring waiting impatiently could not resist the urge any longer; he was the first to flex his body and tail back and forth, pushing through the water towards Li Muyang.

He bit Li Muyang's arm, kissed Li Muyang's face, yet Li Muyang still did not made any movements at all.

"Mum, it's a monster." The small herring blew bubbles as he shouted to his mother.

"Kid run, monsters like to eat fish——-" Mama fish hurriedly swayed her tail, desperately making eye contact with her child to warn him to stay out of danger. As you age, the sense of smell is also more keen and sharp. She sensed that this 'monster' is dangerous, even if there isn't any movement, they still can't provoke

it without thinking.

“Look it’s not scary at all. Mum, can I have a bite? It looks delicious.”

“Silly boy, it doesn’t taste good now, let it rot for a while———”

“Mum, then lets bring the monster home———”

———

He opened his mouth to tear through the water plants, trying to save Li Muyang from the weeds.

But there were too many plants that were also too tough. Relying solely on one’s strength it is hard to accomplish.

While the small herring was having difficulty, another small herring swam over.

Then, more and more fishes and prawns gathered, they used their mouth to nip, their claws to tear, getting rid of all the water plants wrapped around Li Muyang, trying their best to help him escape.

Rumble——

The currents at the river bottom suddenly began to sweep violently.

Whenever there was this sound of activity, it indicated a giant of the water have came to hunt.

Fish and prawns escaped in panic, in the blink of an eye everyone vanished.

Rumble—-

With a muscular flat head, protruding mouth and stubby limbs, a gigantic turtle dragon of several hundred metres long slowly swam over.

It was not impatient at all, instead approached gently and warily.

Just as it swam over to Li Muyang and were no more than ten meters away, it glanced cautiously left and right, and then circled around him four more times.

The moment it sensed no danger, it leisurely swam over to Li Muyang.

Its sharp snout slowly moved close to Li Muyang’s face, before it greedily took a whiff of him.

Its skin were armoured with embedded bony plates making it look ugly and

savage. As long as it opens its mouth, it seemed it could swallow Li Muyang, together with all the water plants, in one gulp.

Before, this kind of thing was what he enjoyed the most.

However, this time he did not do so, and also did not dare to do so.

He dived down under Li Muyang's body and used his broad strong back to slowly bring Li Muyang to the surface of the water.

At first glance, the thousand-year-old turtle dragon of several hundred meters long became Li Muyang's horse.

It seems that the turtle dragon king of this water district is not here to feast on Li Muyang, but to save Li Muyang. All those fishes that hid and escape into the distance once again crowded around, they joyfully followed behind the alligator. They seemed like guards escorting the Emperor.

"Puu——" Only after Cui Zhaoren spurted out a mouthful of blood, did he feel a lot better.

This blow made him extremely shocked, even until now he still can't calm himself.

This guy whom he couldn't sense anything turned out to be a hidden expert?

Fortunately his attack just now wasn't too careless, if he struck him treating him as an ordinary person, then most likely he would be the person who's dead right now———

This feeling of almost suffering a defeat made Cui Zhaoren unable to suppress his fury, he turned around, swept his eyes over the river and commanded in a cold voice: "Deploy staff to search the river, bring him here, dead or alive."

"Yes." The group of men of the Monitor Division replied loudly.

Just then, someone suddenly pointed and shouted at the same time: "Hurry look, what the hell is that?"

Everybody was awakened by this cry, and then in front of them was a shocking sight.

The river water tumbling down while wading birds rocket into the sky, as a

giant alligator of hundreds meters long held his head high, circling above the river.

On top of its head was Li Muyang, sitting upright like a king.

081 – Extort a confession by torture!

“Is that a water dragon? Oh heavens it’s a water dragon? Li Muyang is on the dragon’s head, he’s not dead——”

“Li Muyang was eaten by a monster, after devouring Li Muyang it came to eat us——”

“Hurry run, the monster is coming——what monster is that? We’re all going to be eaten—-”

——-

Everyone above the ship raised their heads and their eyes widen in unison, their line of sight was entirely on the majestic dragon circling above the river.

It resembled a mountain standing tall in the middle of the river and also looked like a shroud of black mist.

It’s so magnificent and at the same time so ugly.

The scales on its body were like indestructible armour and the raised plates were like the spikes on armours.

Black patterns densely covered its whole body, adding a funny and naive look.

However, the moment it opened its mouth the river overflowed its bank, it seems like with just a little effort, it would be able to suck in all the people on board including the entire ship into his mouth.

He only revealed part of its body, due to the need to support his powerful body. The long tail dragged along the water surface.

Even so, it’s already enough to stun everyone’s eyes and soul.

“My life is over.” This was the first time Zhang Linpu and the other scholars laid their eyes on such a gigantic dragon, it’s a million times more frightening that Cui Zhaoren leaping into the sky and killing everyone. No matter how vicious people are, you can always try to reason with them. But if you were dealing with an animal, would they listen?” It’s over, it’s over we’re dead. Everyone on the ship would be buried in the beast’s mouth——-”

“How could it be? How could it be?” Chen Tao, the manager of the ship, often traveled through this water route. He had encountered lake bandits before, river snakes, various poisonous insects and fish, but had never seen this kind of alligator. “When I went out, I checked the almanac, it clearly said this journey would be extremely lucky——-?”

“Young Lord, it’s a river Turtle drake on a rampage——From its size and the marks on its body it seems he has lived for thousands of years——-” Strategist Su Rong said, his face filled with worries. “This monster moves surprisingly fast, in one day it can travel up to thousand miles through water. It’s known for its cruel and aggressive nature, but it always hides in the deep waters of the Dead Sea, it’s usually very hard to see them at normal times, why did it suddenly appear in Fowl Crying Lake?”

“Why did it suddenly appear in Fowl Crying Lake is not important.” Cui Zhaoren grasp tightly onto his long sword, the other hand reached into his sleeve for a silk handkerchief and gently wiped the bloodstain on his lips. He’s extremely shocked that his sudden sword attack did not kill Li Muyang; however, Li Muyang being saved by a Turtle Drae after plunging into the river was even more unexpected. “It’s just a fake dragon, not a real dragon. Leave it, if it doesn’t come over to bother us. If it dares to come here, kill it.”

“Then, we’ll hold back the troops and see what happens.” Su Rong said in a deep voice. “If they don’t come over, we shall steer the ship and pass through the left tributary. If they dart towards this side, we shall surround and kill them.”

“It’s a pity——” Cui Zhaoren said regretfully, his eyes observing Li Muyang on the Turtle Drake’s head.

Because the Turtle Drake’’s build was too enormous, Li Muyang’s body was like a little black spot.

An ordinary person could only see a rough outline and a fuzzy shadow.

Unfortunately, Cui Zhaoren is not an ordinary person, not only could he see the Turtle Drake breathing heavily but also the food remains between its teeth.

So, he was able to clearly see Li Muyang and his every expression.

Li Muyang’s eyes were tightly closed; he was still in an unconscious state.

His face was peaceful and did not look like he was just sent flying into the air by his sword, instead seemed more like he had entered into a deep slumber.

Li Muyang's body was wrapped in a bundle of water plants, as if those water plants were protecting a baby.

The sun was blazing fiercely overhead, searing the surface of the limitless river.

Li Muyang's cheeks were illuminated by the golden rays of sunshine, turning him into a nearly translucent pale yellow colour.

Everyone was waiting, waiting for the Drake's next move or for Li Muyang to wake up.

Li Muyang really couldn't bear the aura of the 'Sword of Tribulation', the moment the colliding force exploded, he instantly passed out on the spot.

As Li Muyang submerged into the river, he was awakened.

However, when he tried to open his eyes, he found that his body was not under his control.

The state Li Muyang was in was indeed bizarre, he felt he entered into another world entirely.

There was a remote desert, a city set into flames, a dragon roaring in the sky and some strong humans who could slash the mountains and rivers in half with their swords.

Fighting, killing, screaming, as well as the wrath of the dragon's breath were widely seen throughout the divine continent——

The earth was in flames; humans were dying.

A gigantic black dragon came into the world, it soared up into the Ninth Heaven, dived down to the Yellow Springs. Nearly covered the entire sky. It was majestic and powerful, his black eyes biting-cold as he watched this tragedy happening before his eyes.

"Stupid humans." From his mouth came a voice that resounded throughout the sky.

Those strong humans discovered his existence, armed with swords and

mysterious weapons that could destroy the world, they came racing towards the black dragon.

Everyone has one ultimate goal: to slay the dragon.

———

The scene suddenly changed drastically.

Li Muyang once again saw the black gigantic dragon; it came rushing towards him.

He flew close to him but did not slow down at all, instead collided directly against his body.

Boom——

Li Muyang felt a throbbing pain in his chest, as if a knife severed him in half.

The gigantic black dragon vanished. Li Muyang saw his own pitch black ink-eyes.

He could see his own eyes.

As if there was another him standing on the opposite side, they were able to clearly see each other's eyes.

Li Muyang was able to feel it, a black dragon had entered his body; he and the black dragon became one.

———

Li Muyang saw everything clearly but he had no way to distinguish if this was a dream or reality.

If this was the reality, then this is a world he had never understood before.

The gigantic dragon hovering at height, the city destroyed by the dragon's breath, those strong humans that could cut through the mountain range with their sword and destroy the river with their fist—-did they really exist?

However, if it's a dream, how could this dream be so real?

He certainly saw the black dragon's eyes, he clearly felt his pain.

That feeling of being torn apart flashed away, but what about the grief and distress penetrating deep inside?

He was a majestic dragon, how did he suffer the pain and the anguish that comes with being betrayed by the world?

Li Muyang desperately struggled.

He wants to open his eyes, escape from this ridiculous world.

He wants to go back, return to the ship, return back to his parents and sister Li Shinian's side.

That's his normal life.

That's the reality.

His body was warm and cozy, as if he's bathing under the sun.

"Huff——"

A heavy breathing sound resonating in his ears.

"What is this? Where am I?" Li Muyang thought to himself.

He suddenly opened his eyes, then a stinging pain instantly followed due to the intense light in front of him.

He immediately closed his eyes, after having adapted he then gradually tried to open his eyes again.

Without delay he reached out to feel his crotch; the heavy gold coins were untouched.

Li Muyang once again was able to relax.

"Hey, why am I lying high above on a rock?" Li Muyang thought to himself.

His body wrapped in water plants, Li Muyang chaotically pulled and tore, all those water plants came loose without any trouble.

Too terrifying, Cui Zhaoren's strength is too amazing.

The power of his sword simply gave off the incredible feeling of able to split a mountain into two.

Li Muyang remembered what happened before, Cui Zhaoren suddenly drew

out his sword and attacked, at the same time Li Muyang threw out the breaking fist he had prepared——

What happened after, he simply does not know.

“Hey, below—-is a ship?” Li Muyang cried out in surprise.

The moment he noticed that the stone under him moved, he bounced up and sat with his back straight.

Then, his body started to shudder, frightened to the point that he nearly wet his pants.

What mountain peak or gigantic boulder was he lying on, it’s clearly a giant monster’s head———

What’s most scary was that the monster is too big, he actually reached into the midair.

No wonder he felt the sunlight was too strong, no wonder that everything around him seemed so small.

Because he was close to the sun, because he was level with the mountain peaks and in the clouds.

“It’s over, it’s over——I’m going to die.” Li Muyang sat still, his face filled with horror and fear. Li Muyang wanted to shout aloud several times, but he was afraid that any major movements would startle the monster under his butt.

“Those Monitor Department lackeys——-” Li Muyang scolded incessantly in his mind. “The rumors are true, they indeed could do any evil deeds. Even heard that in order to receive certain confidential information or to obtain a confession they would resort to threatening and any torture——too vicious, too ruthless. Without humanity. Those bunch of lackeys are a group of animals.”

“Fuck their mothers, to frame me with the crime of colluding with the enemy they made me confess my ‘crimes’ by throwing me onto the monster’s head ———”

Li Muyang was indignant, he felt wronged and frustrated.

“Help——-help———” Li Muyang yelled. He waved desperately to attract the attention of Cui Zhaoren and other people on the ship to let them know that he’s

still alive.

No one on the ship answered him.

“I confess———” Li Muyang’s eyes reddened. He knew that once he confesses, there is only one way for him–death, and he would forever part from his parents and family.

But he would rather be put on trial than die in the mouth of this monster.

In Li Muyang’s mind, the Monitor Department of the Kingdom is the most evil place on earth.

He believes that his family would not trust the fact that he colluded with the enemy. He also firmly believes that someday the public would know of the crimes of the Monitor Division.

At that time, it would also become clear to the world that he’s innocent.

“I confess———–” Li Muyang broke down in tears.

082 – Millions of brave soldiers!

The distance was too far, they could not hear what Li Muyang shouted.

However, seeing him standing above the Turtle Drae like he's dancing, it seemed like he's showing off and provoking them——-

"You come on, come fight me if you don't come here fight me, you're my grandson. You—-are——a——big——idiot——"

This was Cui Zhaoren's and everyone on the ship interpretation of Li Muyang's actions.

"What's that bastard doing? He wants us to go beat him?"

"Why did the monster help him? Could it be he and the monster are together?"

"Li Muyang not just only colluded with the enemies, he also joined with monsters, his crimes can not be forgiven——-"

———-

"Young Lord———" Su Rong was worried that Cui Zhaoren would do something impulsive under his rage, quickly reminded: "We have more important business to attend to. Why don't I tell them to speed up the ship so we arrive in Tiandu earlier? Compared to that Li Muyang, our business are much more important. The goods are lost, that side would definitely counterattack, if we return a day earlier, then we could make some preparations——please think twice about it."

"More important things———" Cui Zhaoren eyes shifted over to Li Muyang on the Drake's head, his face suddenly became cold: "You think——Li Muyang is not important enough?"

"Even if he was first in the exam, even if he's admitted into Starry Sky——-When we return to Tiandu, we still have plenty of opportunity——Would he actually achieve instant success?"

"The sword just now didn't hack him to death." Cui Zhaoren said.

"That's only because young lord was deceived by his appearance and did not

understand his skills so was careless———”

“There is no deceit in this world, also no carelessness. No luck or misfortune ——-my sword did not sever his head is the fact that everyone witnessed.”

“But———”

“Also, look at that Turtle Drake————–Do you see its eyes—what do you see?”

Su Rong tried his best to take a look: “Gunk in his eyes——-and docileness.”

Su Rong was astonished, looked as Cui Zhaoren and asked: “Young Lord, you mean———Li Muyang made the Drake surrender and obey him? During the time he fell into the river, in that short amount of time?”

“Besides that, do you have any other explanation for what we see?” A shivering coldness surfaced on the corner of Cui Zhaoren’s mouth: “you said earlier that this type of Drake moves fast and could travel up to thousand of miles a day. They are also cruel and aggressive by nature, they like to kill—–but it rescued Li Muyang from the river.”

“He used a mysterious power with his fist to block my ‘Sword of Tribulation’ and after being serious wounded and plummeted into the river he was saved by the Drake——-First in the imperial exam and admitted to Starry Sky Academy ——-a man like him, do you still think he’s not important enough?”

“Young lord—-”

“If we don’t get rid of him, I will never be at ease.” Cui Zhaoren clenched his sword tightly, yelled: “Kill.”

The instant the men of the Monitor Division, who were guarding the surroundings, received the order they immediately unsheathed their long swords, one by one rose into the air by putting forth strength in one leg and flew over to the Drake in the middle of the river that was as tall as the clouds.

Dang———

Dang———

Dang——-

Most of the men of the Monitor Division avoided attacking the parts of the body that could potentially strike back such as the Drake's head, instead aimed for the thick and broad abdomen and back like the mountains.

Even if the alligator's body was protected by its scaly armour, but when the men of the Monitor Division intentionally stopped over at its body, both their hands grasping the shaft firmly, lifting high above the top of their head and thrust down with immense strength, it is difficult to not feel the pain.

"Ahhhh——"

The Turtle let out a chilling bawl.

It's body began to sway, but worried that the master on the top of his head with the aura of a king would fling into the river, he tried to keep his balance as much as possible. 。

One sword after the other, each sword cruel and ruthless, each sword was fatal.

The Drake's body moved up and down in the river, trying his best to get rid of those small insignificant humans by bringing them into the river, because like those lice who deserves to die they brought him pain and suffering.

Li Muyang was stunned.

What is happening?

This monster was not a tool the Monitor Department used to torture him? They now want to——kill it?

The enemy's friend is my enemy; by the same logic, the enemy of my enemies is my friend.

In other words, the ugly and savage-looking big guy is his friend?

Li Muyang was thrilled.

He found an opportunity to live. He felt his life would be saved.

No wonder that the monster did not hurt him and instead let him lie on his head just like he's obediently became his horse. It turns out they were good friends.

However, his friend is being killed, being bullied.

Li Muyang was fuming with rage.

He stared at the nearest man in black, then began to accumulate qi in his dantian and instantly released it.

He threw out his fist.

Bang—-

The Art of the Breaking Body's Breaking Fist!

Before the men in black even had the time to let out a cry, their body suddenly ruptured, bursts into a sea of blood and broken limbs plummeted down Fowl Crying Lake.

Their comrade was injured. Other men of the Monitor Division obviously felt an endless hatred that they could not bear.

As a Special Department of the Kingdom, it's only them who bullied others, who dares to bully them?

The men in black gave each other at meaningful glance and then began to attack from three sides, crowding around Li Muyang who was standing on Drake's head.

They have already experienced Li Muyang's power, but if they simultaneously attacked from three sides, even if Li Muyang punched out and killed one of them, the two other comrades would still have the time to draw out their sword, with that chance they could sever his body into three hundred sections.

"Ah—"

The Drake detected danger, suddenly opened his mouth to spit out large volumes of yellow and green juices.

The man in front could not evade in time, completely covered by the yellow dirty liquid. The thick and dense substance made it difficult for him to breathe at all, his body tumbled into the river.

The Turtle Drake swayed his head, his sharp teeth clenched onto the long sword in the hands of one of the men in black.

There was still one more man in black advancing from behind Li Muyang, his long sword pouring out energy, letting out a blazing bright light, blue light flashed across, the entire sword including the handle was buzzing and vibrating throughout, looking like it's about to escape from his hand.

He neared.

The man continued to dart along the alligator's body, after several consecutive leaps, the area enveloped by the long sword's light was precisely aimed at Li Muyang's head.

"Die." With a loud yell, the sword firmly in his hand aimed to sever Li Muyang's head.

Bang——

The body of the man in black ruptured without any warning, turning into rain of blood.

Behind him was a raised long tail like pillars supporting the heaven, slowly retracting, stirring up thousand-foot waves.

"Useless." Cui Zhaoren said quietly. His body slightly jerked forward, then instantly disappeared from the ship.

When he showed up again, he was already standing on the back of the Drake.

Gripping tightly the heaven sword in his hand, he thrust into the alligator's abdomen.

Blood wildly splattered everywhere, a big chunk of flesh on the Turtle Drake's back was sliced off.

"Ahh———" The Drake's twisting and swaying was even more frantic. Cui Zhaoren attack did too much damage.

Thump–

The drake began slamming his tail into the water, he flung it as menacingly as he could, beating only his own body.

Because once Cui Zhaoren succeeded in a single blow, he had already fled.

Following the alligator's huge body he circled around, one round after another, lap after lap. With each round a piece of flesh from the alligator was slashed off.

After dozens of laps, the alligator's huge body was badly mangled, many wounds were deep that the bones were clearly visible.

Although the alligator is gigantic but this makes his movements extremely inconvenient. It was also because of this, that Cui Zhaoren avoided its sharp snout and nimble tail so he could attack at will.

Even with the scaly armour protecting its body, it's still difficult to withstand the sharpness of the 'Sword of Tribulation'.

More importantly, he needed to protect Li Muyang from any harm, so he did not dive into the river to escape——

He looked like a simple-minded idiot letting his enemy cut his flesh and peel his bones, but could not make any strong counterattack.

Ao———-

Ao———

Ao———

———

The sound was more painful each time, more tragic than the one before.

Li Muyang's eyes reddened, flashing with rage. 李牧羊眼眶泛紅，目眥盡裂。

These men of the Monitor Division not only kill humans, they even tries to kill such a cute monster——-because this monster saved him and risked his life to protect him. Because he has connection with him, so they also want to frame the monster of colluding with enemies?

This was his brother, his partner he could rely on.

Li Muyang would not allow anyone to hurt this Drake, although he does not know his name yet.

"Asshole——you came for me." Li Muyang's tightly clenched fist was vibrating with sounds of rupturing. Facing Cui Zhaoren, who's body was as nimble as forest birds when he flew, he roared: "you're a coward, kill me. If you have the

ability then kill me———-”

“As you wish.” Cui Zhaoren’s biting-cold voice echoed over.

His sword aiming towards the back of the Drake’s head, just as the Drake swung his tail up, preparing to slam down, his body disappeared.

At the same time his body vanished, countless Cui Zhaoren appeared in the air. Several Cui Zhaoren and several heaven swords thrust towards every part of the alligator’s body.

The giant alligator was entirely surrounded by the numerous Cui Zhaoren

[Secrets of the hundred thousand heaven’s will and eight desolate lands], his body could transform into a hundred thousand images, rampaging throughout the eight desolate lands. Without will, without heart, without restrictions, without signs.

Heaven’s will was the greatest, everything in the world could be killed.

—-Ao———

A clear and crisp noise resounded.

And then, as far as the eye could see the sky became bloody, a gigantic head plunged down the river.

Splash—-

The river water splashed everywhere and then a stretch of the river was stained red from the blood of the gigantic head.

The animal that dominated this body of water for thousands of years, the Drake that finally understood human nature and tried to protect his master.

His head was severed by Cui Zhaoren’s sword.

Originally the Drake did not have to die, yet during the most dangerous and the most crucial time Li Muyang was flung away.

Because he was able to sense that the attack was really targeted at Li Muyang.

He used his own life to exchange for Li Muyang’s life.

The Drake’s headless body floated across the river for quite a while, before it

unwillingly submerged into the water.

Puk——-

The river overflowed its bank onto trees and fields, the whole earth trembling.

“You deserve to die.” Li Muyang’s body descended from high above and then floated across the air.

Li Muyang eyes were blood-red, his pitch-black pupil was wrapped in red fog.

As if the black scales on the back of his right hand were alive, it surfaced away from his body, frantically rotated on the top of his head.

Rumble—

Overhead was the scorching sun but a sudden clap of thunder could be heard.

Ka-cha———

A fine sunny day, yet lightning flashed across and thunder roared above the river.

River surged over the banks, rapidly thickening black clouds rolled in from the distance.

The white clouds overhead were expelled away as masses of black clouds began to envelop, extensively covering the sky and blocking the sun.

Rain began to fall, tiny raindrops at first suddenly developed into rain showers, then to heavy rain and to torrential rain.

It seemed as if the whole world was drowned by the rainstorm like it was the end of the world.

A natural extraordinary scene, this unlucky passenger ship was being tossed in this stormy weather and bumpy waves, looking like it may capsize and sink into the river at any time.

Someone was wailing, someone was pleading and some were praying to the heavens.

They closely held onto their belongings, hoping the heavens would hear their cry for help and grant them assistance.

Cui Zhaoren's attack came to a stop.

He felt pressure.

The feeling of his body stiffening and the sword slow in reaction, that almost life-threatening pressure, made him nearly unable to breathe.

His body also suspended in midair, directly facing Li Muyang in the distance.

"What——what monster is that?" Cui Zhaoren realised the situation he's in was far from good, like an ocean swallow within the torrential rain he flew straight towards the ship.

His body descended on the top of the ship and then instantly turned around, his eyes locked in the direction of the Drake.

An astonishing scene appeared before his eyes.

In the midst of the torrential storm, countless fish and prawns came to the surface.

In large numbers and closely crowded together, they looked like a wave set off by the violent storm.

They leaped up from the water and then dived down. Jumped up again and swooped back down.

As if they've gone crazy, they threw themselves over in the direction of the ship.

Pa—

The water snake in the front line of the group pounded against the top of the ship. Knocked dizzy it drowned into the water, and them more and more water snakes lunged forward.

Crash—

A crab as large as a millstone collided against the top of the ship, the crab's solid shell was smashed to pieces but at the same time caused fatal damage to the passenger ship. In the area that suffered the impact was a gigantic crack.

A small herring leaped over, his head instantly split into pieces. Then, a big wave crashed down, sweeping away the small fish. More herrings, unafraid of

death, knocked against the ship.

Millions of brave soldiers protecting the real dragon. Once the dragon king was furious, even heaven itself would fear.

083 – Torrential rain and sword!

A breathtaking scene

The fish and crabs in the river seemed to have grudges against the passenger ship. They unrelentingly and crazily rammed against the hull of the ship.

Firstly, one by one, they pounced over, using their head or body to launch suicide attacks.

Using their heads to collide, their skulls cracked and blood gushed out.

Using their bodies, their bones smashed to pieces.

Several fishes knocked unconscious from the impact were instantly engulfed by the river waves.

PA—

PA—

PA—

——

At that time, they were not quite organised nor experienced the sounds were still disordered and chaotic.

As more and more fish and crabs died, an even more overwhelming number of fish and crabs rushed over.

When a succession of waves rolled in, it seemed like the river itself was boiling.

They formed a tall wall, formed a gigantic wave.

They grouped into a colorful gigantic long line to knock against the passenger ship.

Bang—-

Bang—-

Bang—-

——

Now that they had gained experienced from crashing into the ship, the sound became orderly and grand.

They displayed a kind of drive to fight until they die.

Bang—-

Millions united.

Bang—-

Ear-splitting sound.

Bang—-

Vibrations shuddered throughout the air.

———

Over and over again. The ship was still not destroyed, though the collisions never once stopped.

Rain bucketed down, getting heavier every second. The entire river was clouded by raining arrows.

The ship jolted up and down the great river, looking like it could be destroyed and the passengers would drown at any time.

The scholars and travelers on board were terrified, a number of people breaking and crying from terror.

“Oh heavens, these fish and crabs are here to eat us——I don’t want to die, I don’t want to die—-”

“The wrath of heaven, this must be the wrath of heaven——they just killed that gigantic dragon moments ago and now we’re going to be punished——”

“That drake must have gained intelligence, these fish and crabs are his people —-they want to avenge him ——”

——

That fear spread rapidly, the sounds of screaming and wailing rose and fell in succession forming into one gigantic clamour.

At this time, Cui Zhaoren had no mood to discipline what was said around him.

His eyes never stopped staring at Li Muyang suspended in the air, now that the rain became too heavy and the black clouds were too dense, even with his eyes

he could only see a vague fuzzy shadow high up in the sky.

It's also precisely because he only saw an outline that made him felt increasingly anxious.

Things he could clearly see he knows where to draw the line, it is those that he could not see that are unfathomable and impossible to predict.

When he first saw Li Muyang, nothing seemed to be special about him.

Among the many scholars, the Jia county's Zhang Linpu looked much more outstanding. 在

It was only when the lord of Jiangnan City, Yan Bolai, personally came to see him off and he heard people yelling Li Muyang to wait while he was already on the passenger ship, that made him a bit curious about this guy.

Recently, he has been working at the frontier region, far away from the bustling Tiandu. He was unaware of the announcement of the exam results and Li Muyang being praised by Yan Xiangma as 'Jiangnan's Famous Colt', he also does not know that Li Muyang has been enrolled into the 'diploma mill' Starry Sky Academy.

However, from Yan Bolai and Li Muyang's conversation, he's clear that this uncle does not like Li Muyang——If he really did like Li Muyang, he would not rush over to see him off at that time.

The people who are close to you and the ones you like, the more you want to make them understand the importance of acting low-key. Only with a low profile you would be able to live safely for longer.

If the lord of Jiangnan city dislikes someone, he could easily kill them and be done with. Or perhaps command his men to stuff them into a sack to be thrown into the river or into the forest of beasts are also good choices. Is there a need to bring trouble to himself and make himself unhappy?

Cui Zhaoren has been entrusted with an important task, he also shouldn't bring more trouble to himself. But at the same time he thought that, if given the chance, he might as well help uncle settle this matter.

After all, this time the only reason he was able to forgo using the military vessel

and bring the criminal to Jiangnan on horse, then set out to Tiandu via the ship at Maple Forest Crossing, was all thanks to the help from the lord of Jiangnan city. Since he owes him a great debt, then he should do him a small favour.

Perhaps even Cui Zhaoren is not aware himself, his heart had already listed the insignificant Li Muyang as an object that should be killed.

Later, theft happened on the passenger ship, Li Muyang closely followed behind the scholars demanding to go upstairs and search, he also brought up Yan Xiangma's and Yan Bolai's names, which made Cui Zhaoren furious——He felt as if his family clan was being humiliated.

A beautiful flower – how could it be linked to a piece of shit?

For this reason, he's also even displeased with the father and son, Yan Bolai and Yan Xiangma. How could they have anything to do with a nobody?

Don't tell me that they don't know that those of a lower social status than ordinary people are shameless, as long as you give them a little bit of dye, they could open a large dyehouse outside. If they were to swindle and mislead the public and use the Yan family's or the Cui family's name to break the law, then wouldn't that lower the reputation of these two families?

Rogues like him, should not be held close.

However, in his mind, Li Muyang is still just an insignificant little person——so small that he could not see him at all before.

First place in the imperial exam. Every year there's a first in the exam, but in the end how many of them would achieve success?

Cui Zhaoren did not achieve first in the exam but he does not attach importance to those so-called first in the imperial exam.

Until he heard that the other person was admitted to Starry Sky Academy, he had a bad premonition——This guy pretended to be a pig to prey on the tiger.

He disguised himself as a pig, so which tiger does he wants to eat？

The answer is self-evident.

Cui Zhaoren does not want to be the tiger eaten by the pig, so he decided to make the pig become a dead pig.

A sudden attack, his sword struck down.

Most dangerous, and also most ruthless.

According to his thinking, this sword is what he needed to settle everything.

A criminal is on the run, it also happens that he could vent the anger in his heart.

What he did not expect was that his sword failed, not only did he not sever Li Muyang's neck, he was also wounded by his punch and stumbled back continuously, losing face in front of all his subordinates and the scholars.

Then, things got out of hand, Li Muyang plunged into the river, a Turtle drake appeared, the Drake was killed, and now——an extraordinary scene before his eyes: fish soldiers and crab commanders causing chaos in the river.

Could it be, this is what's special about Li Muyang?

Starry Sky Academy knows this——so they granted him special admission?

If that's the case, what realm is this guy in?

He himself is already at the high level of the Free Clouds, he's the most famous skilled expert of the younger generation, even the lord of Jiangnan city Yan Bolai is not the same level as him.

Could it be that Li Muyang had already reached the Withered Glory state? Or, the higher levels of Starry Sky or perhaps Astral Projection?

That's impossible!

In the entire kingdom there's only a dozen of people in the Withered Glory altogether,

——If Li Muyang were in the Withered Glory stage, would there be a need to send such a genius to Starry Sky Academy?

As to whether he's in Starry Sky or Astral Projection realms, he would already be one of the strongest people in the entire divine continent. Should such a person's name not already resonate throughout the starry sky?

Dragon Slayer realm?

In tens of thousands of years no one had laid their eyes on any real dragons, it's also unheard of that anyone is in the Dragon Slayer realm.

"Young Lord——" Su Rong's hand tightly clutched onto the ship's railing, his black robe drenched by the heavy rain, his long hair disheveled by the wind and his head and face soaked with rainwater. "The rain is too heavy, there's no way for us to divert into the tributary now. The impact from the fish and crabs are too strong, I'm afraid that the ship won't be able to withstand for too long——In moments, even the ship would fall apart and a ship of people would drown into the river. "

Cui Zhaoren was still handsome, his hair tied into a bun remained undisturbed and his black robe was untainted by even a speck of dust.

The gale howled and the heavy downpour ruined the city. Yet it seemed like he's still situated in a sunny place. As if the wind and rain had eyes, the moment it reached several feet around him, they automatically bounced away; it's impossible to touch him at all.

"Strategist do you have any good suggestions?" Cui Zhaoren pursed his lips slightly, with a cold smile on his face.

"I advise urge young lord to not fight with them. Me and all the men of the Monitor Division shall stall this person, young lord should get away as soon as possible——" Su Rong struggled to explain his proposal. He knew that his master is a very vain man, while his advice is for him to flee early—-This is the same as giving him a slap in the face telling him that he cannot win before they even began their batel.

If he were to get mad and blame him, he fears that there won't be a good outcome for him.

However, with the urgency of the matter, since it's already been said, there's also no need to soften his words anymore.

Su Rong looked over at the men in black who were on the alert, their eyes locked on the same position all along. "Even if we do die, we must protect young lord."

“To withdraw and leave?” The cold smile on Cui Zhaoren’s face faded away, his expression showed a glimmer of warmth as he glanced over at Su Rong. After all, this is an elderly in the family who’s also loyal to him. Although the proposal somewhat grates on his ears, but he was still sincerely thinking for him. “I could run away. The Cui family could run away. But, the Kingdom’s Monitor Division ——when have they ever ran away?”

“Young Lord—–” Su Rong was worried, tried to persuade him: “Just a temporary expedient. After today, would young lord not have the chance to cross swords with Li Muyang again?”

“It’s too late.” Cui Zhaoren shook his head. “Even if I wished to escape, I’m afraid that person won’t allow me to—–”

Cui Zhaoren raised his head to take a glimpse at the figure floating in mid-air, the uncomfortable feeling was even stronger.

When he glanced at that person, that person also looked over at him.

What a pair of eyes, blood-red, just like an artist painted a layer of red paint over them.

“Brothers of the Monitor Division——-” Su Rong shouted: “Will you accompany me to fight?”

“We’re all willing.” The men of the Monitor Division all replied in chorus.

“Kill.” Su Rong abruptly yelled, his black robe suddenly began to vibrate.

As far as his essential qi could reach, drenched clothes immediately dried and the rainwater evaporated into the air.

His right hand pressed and pushed against the side of the ship, his body leaped up, with both his feet high in the sky he advanced towards Li Muyang who was situated at a high altitude.

Chong———–

With their long swords unsheathed, the several men of the Monitor Division bowed and salute to Cui Zhaoren, preparing to kill that monster high up in the air.

Thump—

The deck beneath their feet suddenly vibrated, snapping sounds resounded across the solid decks of the ship.

Like attacked by a massive meteorite.

The rainwater accumulated on the deck became crimson red with a stench of blood.

It wasn’t a rock, but the first to rush out. It was strategist Su Rong.

084 – Solemn killing

Su Rong flew out, Su Rong flew back.

An alive Su Rong flew away, a dead Su Rong flew back.

In the split of a second.

In this course of events, the men of the Monitor Division intended to head out and fight with Su Rong only just unsheathed their sword and salute to Cui Zhaoren, which also considered as their farewell——

However, Su Rong died.

Killed with one move.

They did not even see Li Muyang make his move, but Su Rong had already died. They did not even had the chance to go provide assistance, Su Rong died.

The men of the Monitor Division, although they were prepared to die, they were stil inl somewhat of a little dilemma. They were not sure whether they should advance or retreat.

Advance? Don't advance? This was the problem.

Su Rong is an intelligent person that the Cui family placed by Cui Zhaoren's side, although Cui Zhaoren rarely listens to his advice. Because Cui Zhaoren thinks he's hundred times smarter than Su Rong.

However, in order to not embarrass his family, to show his modesty and demonstrate that he's a prudent person he was willing to leave Su Rong by his side. Because whenever he has some business he could not take care of, he could entrust Su Rong to handle. After all, the men of the Mointor Division are mostly good at brandishing swords and killing, they really are not fit to handle some delicate matters.

Su Rong, who's at the higher stages of the high mountains, could be considered a skilled expert in a small town, but in Tiandu, where there's a mix of good and evil, he could only be regarded as weak.

However, someone with the strength of the high stage of the high mountain

was killed by Li Muyang with one punch——Those men of the Monitor Division who can't even be compared to Su Rong, how many punches of Li Muyang could they endure?

Cui Zhaoren saw Li Muyang make his move.

He was the only one at the scene able to accurately capture Li Muyang's presence and movements under the conditions of torrential rain and with dark clouds densely covering the sky.

Su Rong leaped towards Li Muyang at great speed and used his most adept technique 'Move Mountain Fist'.

A fist thrown out, mountains are moved.

Several shadow fists, six Su Rong at the same time threw out their fists at Li Muyang.

Su Rong could only create five shadows at that time, five fakes and one real constituted his attack formation.

Su Rong fought with his life, his will to battle was obviously at his strongest at that time.

Even with Cui Zhaoren's critical eye he could also tell that his punch exceeded his usual standard.

This was Su Rong's most brilliant and most deadly blow.

Surely at that time, Su Rong himself was also emotionally moved, excited and with immense self-confidence as if the world was within his hand——

Six Su Rong rushed over to Li Muyang's side, his assault divided into upper, middle and lower angles of attack.

Li Muyang fought back.

His right hand that was always hanging down suddenly clenched into a fist and punched out, as if he had been preparing this punch for some time.

He merely threw out one punch.

Then, Su Rong was sent flying.

The real Su Rong was sent flying.

Li Muyang was completely unaffected by those fake shadows; from the very beginning his eyes were locked onto Su Rong's real body.

Su Rong was destined to end in a tragedy from the beginning.

"Unfathomable." This was Cui Zhaoren's evaluation of Li Muyang.

"Not breathing." A man of the Monitor Division crouched down to check Su Rong's breathing. "Brothers we must fight to avenge strategist."

Cui Zhaoren reached out to obstruct them and said in a low voice: "You are no match for him."

"We are willing to die in battle."

"It would only be pointless death." Cui Zhaoren clutched the hilt of his sword, said aloud: "you're all my trusted aide, stay alive, consider it as leaving some seeds for the Monitor Division——"

Snap—-

Just as those fish and prawns were continuously ramming against the ship, the bottom of the passenger ship was chipped.

Water began to seep into the lower cabin, the ship started to tilt to one side.

The fish and prawns continued to collide against the ship without stopping, using the little gap as their target of attack, they more forcefully knocked against the ship.

Creak—-

More and more areas were cracked, the original gap also increased in size.

Rumble—-

A tremendous loud noise echoed over.

The passenger ship splintered into several pieces and came crashing down.

"Help, I'm dying—-help——"

"Heavens, hurry please stop the rain——put away your remarkable powers—-"

"Don't steal my plank, I held onto this plank first——"

——

The scholars and travelers on board were weeping bitter tears, some pleading, some cursing, while those more intelligent, had already selected their object to float before the ship had even collapsed. Once the ship collapses, they could hold onto this and drift along the river, and avoid drowning along with the ship.

Even if it's hard to stay alive in this river that's shrouded in torrential rain, but ——they would still have a chance to live after all, right?

The moment the ship collapses, Cui Zhaoren clothes were already fluttering in the air, his body soared and once again appeared opposite of Li Muyang.

A white-robed youngster, a black-robed bodhisattva.

One with pupils that was black as ink, one with pupils as red as blood.

It seemed as if they were meant to be opponents from the very beginning.

What they had the same were their biting-cold eyes.

Li Muyang's eyes were ice-cold, changed drastically and carried a killing intent that could not be concealed easily.

Cui Zhaoren's eyes, although also ice-cold, but this was his standard manner all along.

Other than the coldness, there's also doubt and——killing intent.

Enemies met face to face on a narrow path, the brave would become victorious.

Cui Zhaoren could tell that he and Li Muyang would fight until one dies.

"You're Li Muyang?" Cui Zhaoren asked in a low voice. This was not the first time he asked this, he had asked this question countless number of times in his mind.

He already has the answer in his mind: yes, he's Li Muyang.

But why is he Li Muyang?

If a freshman in the kingdom has this sort of strength, then why would he travel all the way to Starry Sky Academy?

He firmly believes that this is not the real Li Muyang, or perhaps the Li Muyang now is being controlled by a monster—-only that could explain everything that's happening before his eyes.

Does that mean within his body there's a noble creature living inside that was suddenly awakened after he plunged into the river?

"I'm Li Muyang." Li Muyang answered calmly. Neither too fast nor too slow, nor displayed any emotions. It sounded like——Cui Zhaoren's voice before.

The Li Muyang now much more resembled the Cui Zhaoren before than the Cui Zhaoren now.

"It seems you're not willing to reveal your background?" The corner of Cui Zhaoren's mouth rose slightly, revealing a cruel and grim smile.

"So what if I say it? So what if I don't say it?" Li Muyang's gaze was full of pity and sympathy as he looked at Cui Zhaoren.

He unexpectedly took pity on Cui Zhaoren, a direct descendant of one of the most powerful clan in the kingdom.

Cui Zhaoren did not like the look in his eyes, so much that he felt somewhat provoked.

"Since you are going to die anyway." Li Muyang added, coldly uttered each word.

"What——" Cui Zhaoren hid away the slight smiling expression on his lips. He's a solemn man and also a serious man, in a solemn situation everything needs to be treated seriously. For example here right now. For example, when he killed. "I think so too.",

Pak——

The sound of a sword being unsheathed.

However, the moment this sound was heard, Cui Zhaoren had already transformed into hundred thousand shadows advancing towards Li Muyang suspended in mid-air to split him into two.

085 – Second sword severs karma!

Chapter 85: Second sword severs karma!

[Secrets of the hundred and eight thousand heaven's will] is one of the best technique in the world. It is the foundation that the Cui family used to stand at the top of all the noble families in the kingdom for thousands of years.

Facing the 'Sword of Tribulation', it is difficult to pass your tribulation. This describes the fearsomeness and power of the Cui family's 'Sword of Tribulation.

However, 'Sword of Tribulation' is only a branch, a flower, the fruit that is borned at the end.

[Secrets of the hundred and eight thousand heaven's will] is the backbone, is the soul, is the important foundation that penetrates deep into the soil to constantly deliver nutrients to the branches and tree trunk.

[Secrets of the hundred and eight thousand heaven's will] is divided into nine stages, Cui Zhaoren only trained up to the fifth stage. Yet even at the fifth stage he's one of the strongest in West Wind Kingdom. After taking over the Monitor Department of the kingdom for merely three years, he has impressive achievements in military service, thus is highly favored by the West Wind Royal family.

He's only at his twenties but is at a height that many people would never be able to reach in their life. In the Cui family, there are also quite a number of people who's in their forties, fifties or approaching old age that still have difficulties in passing the third stage to step into the more advanced and mysterious intermediate stages.

Li Muyang wants Cui Zhaoren dead, Cui Zhaoren also has the same thought.

Before he finished his words, his body already transformed into a hundred thousand images

The instant the sound of his sword could be head, the heaven sword in his hands had already duplicated into countless numbers aiming to completely envelop Li Muyang.

Cui Zhaoren is not Su Rong; with Su Rong's 'Move Mountain Fist' there's five fake and one real, with only one punch that could be fatal.

With Cui Zhaoren's hundred thousand figures, every one of them is fake but everyone of them was also real.

You have to obstruct each sword, even if a single sword were not blocked, you would be slashed into dust.

One person to withstand hundred thousands enemy; one person to block hundred thousand swords. How could someone be able to?

Hundred thousand of figures joined together into one, covering over half the sky. The qi of the hundred thousand of long swords, able to move unhindered, unexpectedly blocked the rainstorm and thunder.

Heavy rains could not enter, thunders could not rumble. The entire area became a vacuum-packed zone.

In other areas dark clouds were still rolling in, lightning streaked across and thunder crackling. Whereas, the inside was in a state of darkness, tranquility, without any noise or disturbance at all.

The power of his sword could dazzle the Starry Sky.

Sword of Tribulation severs the bonds of the world!

'Sword of Tribulation' is one of the most elite sword techniques, also the one that Cui Zhaoren was most skilled in controlling.

Li Muyang's body was still suspended in the air, emitting an aura as if he had experienced great change iin his life and coldness that seemed to be from the ice age.

His blood-red eyes staring at the hundred thousand shadows with a slight puzzled expression why is there a familiar feeling?

He tried his best to think, but still can't identify where that feeling came from.

That feeling was an incredibly wonderful feeling, but at the same time also brought distress to Li Muyang.

Because it had the ability to make Li Muyang feel confused——as if he does not

know who he really was.

Li Muyang felt the oppression, from the inside to the outside, also from the inside to the outside.

Outside was the power of the sword, inside was fear.

Li Muyang felt this sword is terrifying, a sword which is able to cut off his past.

He was turned into a sphere inside the tornado – either he would be turned into patty or torn to pieces by the two powerful forces at any time.

Black hair flutters, white robe surges.

The charcoal trash a few months ago now have the ability to duel with one of the strongest person in the kingdom.

Li Muyang closed his eyes.

The scales that surfaced away from the body, suspended on the top of Li Muyang's head were like the corners of black ink stones.

Outside they emitted a glamorous luster, sparkling and dazzling.

On closer look, was a tiny bolt of lightning tightly bound inside. It dashed around in all directions, yet was still difficult for it to break through.

The black robe and the shadows of sword completely shrouded Li Muyang, Li Muyang disappeared completely in the midst of the sky.

Looking up, Cui Zhaoren already transformed into countless deities. As far as the eye could see, the sky was covered with his silhouette.

Rumble—

Golden brilliance flashed across.

A beam of light rocketed into the sky, the entire river was shining as bright as day.

No, at this time of the day the sun was still blazing, just because the weather changed drastically, rain bucketing down, so day and night were reversed, a bright day turned into a dark night.

Because of the tremendous sound of activity, the scene also too shocking and

terrifying, even those scholars and travelers swimming away for their life with their wooden planks in the river raised their head, stared with astonishment across their faces. They don't know what the hell happened.

Since the luminescence was too dazzling, the entire area became a golden colour.

As far as the eye could see, half the sky became golden.

Li Muyang disappeared; Cui Zhaoren who transformed into hundred thousand images also disappeared.

The gold colour was like solidified paint, it did not disappear even in the beating of the wind and rain.

Only time is able to completely erase it.

As time goes by, the golden luminescence gradually faded and then finally vanished.

The sky once again resumed its darkness, with heavy rain and dark clouds rolling across the sky.

Li Muyang was missing, Cui Zhaoren also disappeared.

Pok——

Movements and noise appeared on the surface of the river, Cui Zhaoren wearing a black robe covering his whole body and tightly grasping a sword in his hand leapt up from the depths of the river.

He once again at a standstill in the sky, his cheeks as cold as iceberg and his face as beautiful as jade, with wisps of blood at the corner of his mouth.

Cui Zhaoren pulled out a white handkerchief from his pocket, carefully wiped the bloodstain on the corner of his mouth.

Then, he released the silk handkerchief in his hand, the white silk handkerchief was immediately drenched by the heavy rain and then swept away by the violent winds to some unknown place.

The area where Li Muyang was located was also unknown to him.

Li Muyang is gone, this outcome made Cui Zhaoren extremely worried.

He did not disappear because he's dead, but vanished when he was still alive.

Cui Zhaoren could feel it, Li Muyang is not dead.

Just as his sword severed the bonds of the world, squeezing Li Muyang into a small white dot from all sides, he thought his sword had dissolved all his concern, henceforth he would have no more worries.

However, when his sword came into contact with Li Muyang's body, as the power of his swords joined forces to destroy Li Muyang and crush him into dust, the black stone suspended in front of Li Muyang suddenly sped up spinning and abruptly exploded.

A bolt of lightning broke out, bringing along with it an explosive force towards Cui Zhaoren.

Regardless, the power was overwhelming and astonishing; an irresistible force.

Overbearing, it pierced through the gap between the numerous figures, like a rogue lightning it collided against the countless Cui Zhaoren, causing them to scatter and smash into nothing in a flash.

It ravaged the sky, the swords that Cui Zhaoren managed to connect together after much difficulty were utterly destroyed.

It came abruptly, yet was mighty and powerful.

Cui Zhaoren fully exerted the power of his sword yet still found it difficult to resist this force, he intended on avoiding the sharp points, but the collision between the qi of his sword and the lightning caused an explosion and the aftermath was that he was beaten to the bottom of the great river.

However, where did Li Muyang go?

Cui Zhaoren remained on the alert, waiting for Li Muyang to reappear.

He knew he would return.

Li Muyang fell from a great height.

He slowly descended from the distance and the high altitude.

He once again stopped over in front of Cui Zhaoren.

This sort of way of appearance made Cui Zhaoren, a person who's sensitive about losing face, extremely discontent, it even made him felt a strong awareness of crisis.

He's the person who's most clear of the power of the big explosion, yet that person was able to calmly rise to the sky and not be affected by the aftermath?

Only with this point, it is clear he's higher than him by more than one realm.

"But, what realm is he in?" Cui Zhaoren wanted to curse. Can't nicely talk? Can't nicely answer my question? You don't know what realm you're in——Don't tell me ghost would know?

"I remembered." Li Muyang looked at Cui Zhaoren. His voice biting-cold and differed greatly, but also with a touch of joy from remembering. "You killed me before."

"When? Where?" Cui Zhaoren's expression was full of doubt. In all honesty, this was the first time he talked with Li Muyang, the first time he met him. When did he kill him?

If he was not successful in killing him last time, would he do such a stupid thing this time?

At least he would bring together an assemblage of talented individuals or some of the strongest in his clan to ambush him.

"You did not succeed." The corner of Li Muyang's mouth slightly raised, gave a mocking smile.

"＿＿＿＿"

Cui Zhaoren was infuriated.

He does not like to be sneered at, although he often ridiculed others. If the Monitor Department did not frame an innocent person, would they still be called the Monitor Department? Is there a need for them to exist?

He does not like to be looked down on. As a young master of the Cui family, a prestigious family, his eyes are usually on the top of his head, he only looks at the moon, stars and the milky way, who would wish to take notice of those dirt?

Li Muyang did two of his most hated actions.

“I must kill him.” Cui Zhaoren thought to himself.

“I think you must be mistaken.” Cui Zhaoren said aloud. He felt a discomfort in his throat, a feeling of wanting to cough but he was not willing to, instead forced himself to endure. Because he thought that would be somewhat inelegant and most likely be laughed at by Li Muyang, who’s social stratum is below the level of ordinary people. He’s seen it before, this bastard has a sharp mouth, he only knows how to ridicule others. “If I had killed you once before, then you would definitely not have this chance now. I did not kill you the first time, I would have realised that there is a gap between me and you, and would think of someone better suited to destroy you——or another method. I never fall into the same pit twice. This has nothing to do with honour, but a person’s intelligence.”#

“In my mind, there is no definition of good or bad, but only the difference between a smart person and a fool———” A tired and fed up expression passed by Cui Zhaoren’s face, he then continued: “compared with the bad guys, I even more dislike stupid people——So, don’t put me and them into the same group.”

“Not you.” Li Muyang said. “It’s this sword technique——-what is it called?”

“Sword of Tribulation.” Cui Zhaoren answered.

“‘Sword of Tribulation’——Facing the ‘Sword of Tribulation’, it is hard to pass your tribulation.” Li Muyang mumbled to himself with a face deep in thought. “I don’t know which ancient scroll I had seen this in before——-I’ve lived for far too long, read too many books, so I’m really not sure.”

“—————” Cui Zhaoren was on the verge of snapping.

Stop acting like a pretentious prick, there’s no way for us to be opponents if you continue doing so.

Just how old are you? You have the nerve to say you lived for too long, read too many books?

Do you think I’m a mentally handicapped child?

“A wise choice would be to leave immediately.” Cui Zhaoren said aloud. “If I wished to run away, you also can’t stop me.”

“I can’t stop you. from leaving” Li Muyang sighed.

“But I chose to stay.” A smile surfaced on Cui Zhaoren’s face. “Because I’m curious, what realm are you in———My first sword attack, sever the bonds of the world, was broken by your lightning. Now I present you my second sword technique called ‘Sever karma’. So please, enlighten me.”

086 – Black fire burning

Clever all his life but stupid this once.

This was Cui Zhaoren's analysis of his actions right now.

Cui Zhaoren decided to do something stupid this once, and become a crazy man.

It's not the first time Cui Zhaoren killed someone. It could even be said that, because he was situated in a position like that, killing to him is nothing out of the ordinary.

He has killed for power, for his own benefit, for his superior and his family. He has killed because of some schemes and plots, to please someone, killed those not on good terms with him, and killed because he wants to kill——

This time, it was not for anything else but to test out his skills.

There is an ancient saying: those who cultivate to slay dragons, sells themselves to the royal family.

This phrase naturally has a self-interest element in it; it was as if everyone cultivates so they can sell themselves.

However, people cultivate because of various reasons.

Some seek longevity; some seek to be almighty. Some people ask to be remembered through all the years and some seek what their heart desires.

Looking at the history of the Starry Sky, only those who practice martial arts because they enjoy it could truly stand at the top of the Starry Sky and become the supreme ruler of the entire world.

For example, Li Qiubai and Du Ruofu.

Cui Zhaoren is an extremely proud man; he has confidence in his knowledge, has confidence in his intelligence and immense confidence in his family's secret techniques.

This time, he's also fighting for the 'Sword of Tribulation' and also for the 'Secrets of the hundred and eight thousand heaven's will'.

He’s fighting for his many years of painstaking training.

He gave it his all to fight with Li Muyang once again.

You die or I die.

This situation seems fair.

Li Muyang understands Cui Zhaoren’s intention. “I really don’t like you.”

“Me too.”

“But now—–I actually have some respect for you.” Li Muyang said in a deep voice. “As a son of a noble family, you did not run away, instead faced danger without any fear and did not hesitate to fight to the death. Contrary to what I expect, there’s an air of bravery around you.”

“Me too.” Cui Zhaoren looked across at Li Muyang floating in the sky. “You’re from an ordinary background, yet you’re able to summon the rain and wind and show your great powers—-Although I don’t know what the hell happened here. However, I still have considerable respect for those with amazing skills. The sharpness of a sword comes from practicing, although the word practice is simple enough but not everyone would be able to persist in continuing.”

Outstanding people are always only able to receive recognition from outstanding people, stupid people would only point at them from behind and utter: that they only relied on luck.

After exchanging few words with Cui Zhaoren, Li Muyang felt as if they are well acquainted with each other.

They finally found a trace of light on each other.

“So, let me see your second sword technique.” Li Muyang said aloud: “The name is called ‘Sever Karma’”

“Yes. ‘Sever Karma’, in order to reach Paramita.” Cui Zhaoren said with a smile: “ I have not mastered this sword technique well yet, this will be the first time the complete form is used. Therefore, I hope I won’t let you down.”

“Okay, I’ll remember the name.” Li Muyang said. “If someone was to use this sword against me in the future, I will remember this name, and will also remember you.”

Cui Zhaoren felt somewhat uncomfortable. What does these words mean?

The battle has not started, yet he said he would remember me——like I would surely die this time.

“I’ll remember you too, in my mind.”

Cui Zhaoren no longer said anything else; strength is the best language.

His face was calm and peaceful, he raised his right arm and held the long sword up high.

The black-robed on his body began to surge, as if the underlying qi and force was too powerful to bear.

Hiss—-

A ripping noise could be heard, the hem of Cui Zhaoren’s black robe was torn apart.

But that torn piece of cloth did not leave, rather floated in the air along with Cui Zhaoren.

With Cui Zhaoren in the core, it formed a tornado, that same piece of cloth was also situated within the tornado.

Cui Zhaoren transformed into hundred thousand shadows. The sky was densely packed with images of Cui Zhaoren’s swords and bodies. 。

Then, the hundred thousand shadows instantly transformed back into one, hundred thousand of Cui Zhaoren return to one Cui Zhaoren.

Cui Zhaoren pinched all fingers on his left hand together, his five fingertips instantly transformed into a dozen of hand seals. It looked complicated but still amazing, making people dazzled and thrown into confusion.

The long sword held high up was flashing with light, black rays of light. It’s the underworld fire from hell, the colour of death.

Rumour is that after witnessing the suffering of hell-beings, Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva felt sympathy for them as if it had happened to himself and vowed to go to hell to save them: ‘If I don’t go to hell, who will. If hell is not emptied, I vow to not attain enlightenment’. Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva has the heart of

Bodhi. Retrieving the underworld fire from hell, along with his great wisdom and knowledge, he created the ‘Sword of Tribulation’. He taught it to the world to help them cut off karma, abandon their body and attain enlightenment.

Following the rise of the internal force, the intensity of the fire incessantly increased and spread rapidly, like a single spark starting a prairie fire.

Using the long sword as the torch, the sky around was set into flames.

Black flames were blazing fiercely, but no heat could be felt at all, instead they send a chill down the spine.

Biting-cold!

Coldness penetrating down into the bone!

Kacha Kacha——

The air were frozen into layers of fog, and every living thing in the sky including the heavy rain incinerated by the underworld fire were frozen in a flash. The moment it dropped into the river it became black ice spheres.

Pa Pa Pa——

Ice pellets hitting against the river; to those scholars and traveling merchants drifting along the river this was a devastating scene.

The surface of the river was wide and open, and the boundary could not be seen at all. It’s almost impossible to rely on their physical strength to swim to the shore.

Now they could only patiently wait for the sky to clear up and other ships to rescue them.

But they had no idea that before a ship comes to their rescue, there would be a sudden hailstorm.

Zhang Linpu had already begun to rage inside.

“Dear heavens, myriad deities, one second the sun is shining brightly while in the next there were rainstorm and thunder, then fish and prawns knocked against the ship, and now it’s hailstorm—— Do you want to kill us? I’m not going

to Tiandu anymore, I want to go home——“

——

Li Muyang also felt the coldness.

That coldness was not just cold but gloomy cold.

Someone had asked Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva which objects in the entire world are the coldest, hottest and most domineering?

Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva answered: fire is the hottest, underworld’s fire is the coldest and heaven’s fire is the most domineering.

Underworld fire is the coldest object on earth, able to freeze the limbs and body, freeze the blood vessels and freeze all thoughts——

It could also freeze karma.

With the sky as a fabric, the black underworld fire as the dye, it spread throughout the fabric, rapidly blazing across in the direction of Li Muyang.

Kacha Kacha——

Underworld fire had yet to arrive, but a chill already begun to invade over.

Li Muyang did not hide nor evade, but met the enemy head-on.

He knew that Cui Zhaoren’s sword has formed fully; the moment he makes any slight movement it’s also the instant Cui Zhaoren would strike out with his sword.

Ready and waiting for action, it was just that he hasn’t found flaws yet.

If someone does not move, of course there’s no flaw. But with any minor actions, flaws would also automatically emerge.

Of course, that’s only because both sides are exceptional experts. If one side was weak, even if they did not move, they would be slaughtered in a split second.

Li Muyang’s hair was wrapped by the white mist, his wet clothes were instantly frozen solid.

Even the drop of rain on his lashes and the bloodstain on the corner of his

mouth solidified.

Kacha Kacha—-

Li Muyang's body became rigid and lifeless, just like an ice sculpture.

Before the underworld fire stopped burning, Cui Zhaoren's left hand in the process of forming hand seals and invoking the sword spell abruptly came to a stop.

With his left clutching the hilt of the sword, the sword was held high up with both his hands.

Then, the black flames held high above blazed across in the direction of Li Muyang.

A simple sword stroke.

A casual sword stroke.

An ordinary sword stroke.

However, for Cui Zhaoren, this was the highest sword achievement in his entire life.

His pace was not fast nor slow, his strength also not too strong nor too light.

Everything was just right.

Looking at it, it warms the heart and delights the eye. Everything seemed to be in aesthetic harmony.

Harmony, harmony is the supreme law in the world.

Cui Zhaoren attacked with his sword, to behead Li Muyang frozen by the black underworld fire.

Kacha——-

Black flames emerged in the sky, the flames were like a fiery dragon piercing through the sky towards the other side.

Rumble—

The entire sky was shrouded in underworld fire, the black fire was burning strongly, the world became blind, as if a giant black cloth was covering the sun

and moon overhead.

———

The sky sank into darkness for some time, the rainstorm was still battering down but it did not seem like the black underworld fire would go out anytime soon.

Within the darkness, there was a melancholy voice.

“Why is it like this?” This was Cui Zhaoren’s voice. Cui Zhaoren was still alive, but his voice seemed exhausted and saturated with infinite regret.

From listening to his voice, it’s clear that there were many problems he could not understand.

“I told you, you killed me before.” Li Muyang’s voice echoed through from within the darkness. “Of course, it was not you, it was this sword technique. However, the person did not use this sword technique; not ‘Sever the bonds of the earth’ nor ‘Sever Karma’ but a different sword technique——-”

“Sever Heaven.” Cui Zhaoren laughed wryly.“There are three major techniques of the “Sword of Tribulation”, Sever Heaven is the highest level, for thousand of years no one in the family has been able to fully understand it——I had no idea you would know of ‘Sever Heaven’. And also ‘Sever Heaven’ did not kill you—— Who the hell are you?”

“That sword didn’t kill me, but I discovered a secret.” Li Muyang said.

“What secret?”

“There are flaws in both your first two sword techniques that you used—— Only ‘Sever Heaven’ is perfect. I’ve seen it’s perfect state before, so I discovered a flaw in the sword move you drew out just now.”

“This is really———” Cui Zhaoren coughed violently, a pain as if his chest is tearing and his lungs cracking.

This time, he could no longer maintain his aristocratic grace, his dignified image.

Black flames were dispelled, the sky once again returned back to usual.

Heavy rain stopped, black clouds scattered.

The sun once again illuminated the earth, the sky resumed its exciting blue colour.

The little companions swimming away in the river glanced up, before the smile on their face had the chance to bloom into full, they already fell into a state of panic.

It came and goes very quickly, all this was controlled by someone?

“Stop trying to be clever.” Cui Zhaoren coughed up a big gulp of blood, then said aloud.

“Far from it.” Li Muyang said. “Just that I remembered a period of the past.”

“You said you have seen ‘Sever Heaven’?”

“That’s right.”

“I have a request, although I’m in no position to ask this——but I will never have this chance if I don’t. Could you, please, let me see the third sword technique?”

“I only know the form and not the spirit. ”

“I am already very satisfied with only the form. Please show me.”

Li Muyang hesitated slightly. “Fine, I could show you the moves by imitating it.”

“Thank you.” Cui Zhaoren said with immense gratitude: “Use my good-for-nothing body to feed the sword.”

087 – Willing to die after hearing the right path!

Chapter 87: Willing to die after hearing the right path！

With a flick of his finger, the sword in Cui Zhaoren's hand hovered across in front of Li Muyang.

Li Muyang reached out. The sword fell right into his hand.

The handle of the sword was pitch-black, the edge of the blade was silver-white.

Under the scorching sun, a stream of light from reflections was flickering on it.

A good sword.

"This sword is called Understand Heaven, it's made from mysterious metal from overseas and was created by the famous sword master in Tiandu Cao Yezi. This name was given to it hoping for the early understanding of the heavens at that time and for the mastery of the third sword technique of the 'Sword of Tribulation': "Sever Heaven'——Now looking at it, it seems I'm bringing humiliation to myself." Cui Zhaoren's voice carried infinite regret.

The divine continent is vast, the world is bustling, and there are countless people with extraordinary talent. If we could live for another day, we would be able to see more. It's a pity, it's a pity—-

"If brother Muyang don't mind, please take this Understand Heaven sword as thanks. Although the present is not much but it is a token of my appreciation. If such a good sword was to submerge into the river, it's not an elegant thing." Cui Zhaoren's face was full of sincerity looking at Li Muyang: "I see Muyang brother has no sword, so please carry this with you until you secure a good sword, at that time please give this to a good owner as well. It will definitely have its day."

Li Muyang felt Cui Zhaoren's reluctance to part with life, as well as felt his sadness and pity for this sword. He thought to himself: If you knew this would happen, you would not have done what you did.

However, this is asking too much given Cui Zhaoren's personality. He asked aloud: "I have not yet asked your name."

“Cui Zhaoren.” Cui Zhaoren was slightly glad inside; for someone to ask his name at this time proves that the other party is trying to remember him. ‘Remember’, this word has a special meaning to cultivators. Because it indicates you have received the opponent’s respect, otherwise, why would they need to remember your name? They often said: ‘give your name, this sword does not kill a nobody’. Thus it had always been.

“Cui clan, Cui Zhaoren.”

“Cui Zhaoren?” Li Muyang’s brow knit into a slight frown, pondered for a long time, before he asked: “Cui is your last name?”

“Yes.” Cui Zhaoren did not understand why Li Muyang’s face suddenly changed and why he revealed such a difficult expression. “The Cui family of Tiandu.”

This time, Li Muyang’s was in deep thought for much longer this time.

“Is there a problem?” Cui Zhaoren was somewhat worried. Don’t tell me this guy doesn’t dare to show him the sword technique after hearing his background? If that’s the case, then he would never witness ‘Sever Heaven’. Not only that he won’t be able to see it today, he might not live to see it. It is indeed a big regret in life.

“No.” Li Muyang said aloud. “Have you thought about it, if I use your body to feed the sword, you will be mutilated instantly and most likely won’t survive.”

“If I don’t personally use my body to feed the sword, would you let me go?” Cui Zhaoren asked with a smile.

Li Muyang this time bluntly replied: “I would not.”

On the ship, Cui Zhaoren did not give Li Muyang any opportunity to prepare, he simply drew out his sword to kill him.

Fortunately, Li Muyang has been practising the ‘Art of the Breaking Body’, and was on guard all along, even after plunging into the river he was saved by the dragon turtle. Otherwise, Li Muyang would had been gobbled up by the fishes and prawns leaving behind only his skeleton——

In that case, would Li Muyang have the chance to fight with Cui Zhaoren? Would he have the opportunity to see his martial arts and his love for swords?

Dead people are not qualified to ask for leniency.

The same as Cui Zhaoren's second sword, with kindness, there will be good karma. With evil, there will be retribution like now.

Li Muyang would never forgive Cui Zhaoren, regardless of who he is.

"So——" Cui Zhaoren is not shocked in the slightest with Li Muyang's answer. Smiling, he continued: "To be able to die for a good cause, moreover it is the 'Sever Heaven' sword technique that no one in the Cui family had seen for thousands of years—I will die with no regrets."

Li Muyang nodded. "Then watch carefully."

Cui Zhaoren closed his eyes.

For a skilled expert like him, he is able to 'perceive' his opponents each moves. If he paid careful attention, he was even able to sense their every breath.

The eyes sometimes carry a deceptive nature, which may not allow him to clearly see and directly feel the power and the mysteriousness of the amazing technique.

Li Muyang moved.

The sword in his hand was raised high into the air, a golden lightning leaped on top of edge of the blade.

The same force and gesture as when Cui Zhaoren lifted his sword, but mid-way the changes happened.

Cui Zhaoren's 'Sever Karma' first accumulated power before releasing, and then used his own body and the 'Secrets of the hundred and eight thousand heaven's will' to invoke the underworld fire as the source of attack.

Powerful and formidable, incinerating everything, everything fading into space.

However, at the same time also loses the energy and qi within the body, and destroys the foundation.

The sword of karma does somewhat desires to kill. It first kills then sever all relations.

Of course, most people were killed in one blow by this incomparably fearsome

sword. So it could fulfill it wish in such a way.

Moreover, with the myriad of complicated hand seals, it is simply impossible for an average person to grasp.

Li Muyang's sword did not show any unnecessary changes, merely raised high into air, looking as if he's about to attack while ready and waiting for action.

Besides the lightning leaping in between, it simply looked like an ordinary sword stroke.

In the distance was muffled thunder, like it was as far as beyond the ninth-heaven, but also seemed as close as right in front of the eyes like sounds tapping against the eardrum.

However, this way of lifting a sword broadened Cui Zhaoren's horizon; he understood straight way.

"Separate the wheat from the chaff, complexity into simplicity." Cui Zhaoren mumbled. "Second sword is more complex than the first sword is tricky, so my family thought the third sword would be even more complex than the second sword. The notes for "Sword of Tribulation' also only showed one way to lift a sword, my family also thought it was some rubbish notes——It also did not describe clearly. Actually, what's most important are the words: 'ready and waiting for action' which indicates how the sword should be held."

"Rumors said that the 'Sword of Tribulation' was granted to the world by Ksitigarbha Bodhisattva, then, of course, the third sword technique should obviously include the supreme wisdom of Buddhism. Buddhism has the fable of the smile of Nianhua. It was that the Emperor of Daifan invited the Sakyamuni Budhha to expound buddhist teachings. The Emperor of Daifan commanded everyone to give a golden Luo blossom to Buddha. Buddha lifted this golden flower, his expression calm and at ease, not saying one word. Everyone did not know what he meant by this, and looked at each other. Only great Nianhua face broke into a smile, and then Buddha instnatly announced: "I have profound buddhist teachings that encompasses everything in the universe, that reverse life and death, mantras that are able to conquer reincarnation. You are able to cast away everything false and achieve true cultivation, the intricacies are hard to

describe. I'm not writing it down, and will pass it down heart to heart. Right now, I have already taught it to Great Nianhua. Give Nianhua the golden stranded Kasaya and alms bowl." [1]

"Bodhisattva is naturally well versed in Buddhism. His teachings turns the complicated into uncomplicated, the traceable to untraceable. Without any trace there won't be any flaws. Without flaws it's impossible to guard against. So, this is the perfect 'Sword of Tribulation' that Li Muyang said he has seen before."

Cui Zhaoren felt agitated inside; he knew he was too impatient. The more anxious he was, the more he regressed. The third sword technique is not perfected through practice but from understanding. Sever heaven, is to first arrive in heaven and then sever heaven.

What is Heaven? It could be known as passion, it could be known as desire, it could be known as benefit, and even known as profound cultivation.

It was not to obtain but rather to give up.

It is hard to reach such a state of great wisdom and knowledge.

Only when you're free from human desires and passions, then one could attain enlightenment. This is the most basic and simple law of Buddhism, but was ignored by all.

"I understand." A relieved smile passed by Cui Zhaoren's face; that smile was pure and noble, even displayed the kindness and face of a Buddhist. "I understand."

Li Muyang drew his sword.

No sign of wind or thunder, also no force behind it.

Without sword qi or the slightest sound.

Just like an ordinary sword.

However, beyond the ninth heaven were thunder crackling, rumbling towards Cui Zhaoren.

"With Underworld fire, it will be even better." Cui Zhaoren sighed.

Although Li Muyang remembered ‘Sword of Tribulations’ moves but he does not know the sword mantra. Most importantly, he could not invoke the underworld fire or cast out the ‘Secrets of the hundred and eight thousand heaven’s will’, so this sword only carried its form and had no divine soul. Its powers were also greatly reduced to only ten percent of its usual.

“Thank you.” Cui Zhaoren whispered.

White light concealed the horizon of the sky, the lightning was much more intense and dazzling than the fierce sun.

The power and light of the sword even blocked the rays of the sun; only the white light could be seen, hiding away the sunshine that illuminates the world

A white channel surfaced in the midst of the sky, the channel divided the sky into two halves, also split the white clouds into two.

White clouds swept across, the moment it encounters the edge of the channel they also could not cross over.

Like it really existed.

Before the white light dispelled, Cui Zhaoren had already vanished.

Li Muyang floated in the air, still and calm, and did not utter a single sound.

——-

“Young Lord——” A man of the Monitor Division clenching tightly onto a wooden plank to survive glanced up, the instant he witnessed Cui Zhaoren disappearing into the air, his eyes redden, he suddenly roared. “Brothers, you quickly report back, Xingye will avenge chief——”

When speaking, his body had leaped up from the river. Standing on top of the ship, he tiptoed and soared into the sky with ease.

With his body in mid-air, the long sword was unsheathed.

Clank—-

He slowly and carefully thrust out his sword at Li Muyang.

Bang——

Li Muyang forcefully punched out, the man of the Monitor Division instantly

ruptured in mid-air.

“Qingfeng will avenge chief, brothers hurry and leave——”

Another man jumped forward, within one second he was punched to death by Li Muyang.

“Take care of my family, Mochao will fight with the enemy——”

——

The hefty men in black looked like strong puppets, one after the other, rising into the air holding a broad sword aiming at Li Muyang.

Seeing their comrades’ bodies exploding in the mid-air was still not enough to stop their desire for vengeance.

Fight to the death！

And so, the twenty-one men of the Kingdom’s Monitor Division all died in battle, including the Chief of the Monitor Department, Cui Zhaoren.

088 – Nowhere to go!

Pain!

As if all the bones in his body were broken.

In his ears, there were sounds of waves hitting against the shore and the babble of water. There was a wet earthy smell that assaulted his nose.

Li Muyang opened his eyes only to discover he was lying on the grassy shore by the riverbank. High reeds as tall as a man swept over by the breeze isolated him from the outside world; it was one of the best hideouts.

The sky was clear, proud and bright like a fire.

It seems today is a good day. 看起來今天是一個好天氣

“How did I get here?” Li Muyang was puzzled.

He felt dizzy, he felt like he just had a long, vivid dream.

In his dream were a gigantic demonic dragon, fish and shrimps colliding against the ship, a sword’s power covering the entire sky and——-he killed Cui Zhaoren?

Li Muyang remembered the enmity between him and Cui Zhaoren, he also knows that he was suddenly attacked by his sword, plunged into the great river and fainted on the spot. But what happened after was too surreal and bizarre?

In the dream, Li Muyang did many things, had incredible powers——recalling what happened he could still feel his heart pounding and his blood racing.

However, that feeling did not feel real, as if someone was controlling his body.

Because Li Muyang have a clear understanding of himself; although he was no longer that trash constantly sneered at and looked down on, but for him to stand opposite and confront a strong opponent like Cui Zhaoren and finally kill him, it’s impossible——

Take for instance the simplest matter, to be able to suspend himself in the air for almost half a day——it’s not something Li Muyang could do, right?

Even if he was to stride over from one side of the riverbank to the other side, if

the distance is too great or the brook is too deep, there is no way he could do it.

So the questions was: did he kill Cui Zhaoren? And Cui Zhaoren is from the Cui family of Tiandu, just what is his relationship with Cui Xiaoxin?

If Cui Zhaoren is Cui Xiaoxin's brother——or even his cousin or a distant relative, and he killed Cui Zhaoren, Cui Xiaoxin would most likely harbor hard feelings towards him, right?

"You're awake." A delighted voice resounded in his ears; in front of his eyes was a chubby face.

"Who are you?" Startled, Li Muyang abruptly crawled up from the ground, staring at the chubby face while on the alert.

He had no idea that someone else was here, and he was actually lost in thought in front of the stranger for so long, it was inexcusable.

His parents repeatedly told him before he left Jiangnan to not talk to strangers. Not that everyone out there is bad person but you can't guarantee every person you encounter is a good person.

But then he noticed that he just woke up from unconsciousness and that person who had watched him for a good while did not cut off his flesh or tied him up. This proves that the other party has no intention of hurting him.

He reached out and touched the crotch of his trousers; the gold was still there. Li Muyang now think even more highly of this fat man's character.

Those not stirred by beauty and not confused by money are an unyielding heroic man.

Li Muyang's excessive reaction also frightened the fat man, squatting down by Li Muyang's side he recoiled in fear, with both his hands in front of himself, he cried: "Don't be agitated, don't be agitated, stay calm——you don't recognise me?"

He feared that Li Muyang might suddenly exert his strength and treat him like how he treated Cui Zhaoren.

Li Muyang carefully scanned up and down at the fat man. "You do look kind of familiar."

The fat man cupped his hand in greeting, smiled and said: “I am Gongsun Yuan, when I boarded the ship at Maple Forest Crossing I saw the Lord of Jiangnan City Yan Bolai personally came to see you off. When Muyang was having a dispute with someone, I also spoke out in support. But at that time you had already returned to your cabin, so you do not know about this.”

“I remember—-we have seen each other before.” Li Muyang said pointing at Gongsun Yuan. He saw this fat man when he was boarded the ship, he thought he must be a scholar like him or a merchant travelling to Tiandu. But at that time he was saying farewell to his family, seeing Li Shinian bouncing up and down waving goodbye to him, he burst into tears and was in no mood to think about other things. How could he care about the identity of the other people on board in such a state.

“Young master Muyang remembered?” Fat guy was thrilled; smiling, his eyes disappeared into squinty crevices.

“Come to think of it.” Li Muyang nodded. “How did I get here? Why are you here? Where are the other people?”

“—-”

Li Muyang stared at the fat guy watching him with a strange expression: “what’s the matter? Why are you looking at me like that?”

“What happened before, young master Muyang does not remember?” A look of astonishment crossed his face. He had always thought that he’s good at pretending, but now that guy appears to be much better than himself by hundred times. Look at his facial expression, look at his movements, look at his eyes, inside and outside, it was a complete act.

“I don’t remember.” Li Muyang said.

“You had a dispute with someone, plummeted into the river—-Do you remember this?”

Li Muyang nodded as he answered: “I remember.”

“Dragon turtle protecting his master—–” The fat guy opened his arms as wide

as he could. “Such a gigantic dragon turtle brought you up to the surface of the river, do you remember?”

“I remember.”

“The raging river, armies of millions of fish and prawn frantically attacked the ship, causing the ship to split and sink into the river——-do you remember?”

“I remember.”

“You and the chief of the kingdom’s Monitor Department had a frightening battle, thunder, lightning, an extraordinary scene—-” The longer the fat man carried on the more and more exaggerated it became, and the more and more excited he was.

What kind of monster is this guy? By witnessing everything with his own eyes, the fat man did not feel too good.

How could this be an ordinary person? This was absolutely a miracle.

During the time when Li Muyang was unconscious, he wanted to dissect him several times, just like how he dissects wood. He wanted to carefully study the structure and composition of this guy.

“Wait wait wait wait.” Li Muyang interrupted the fat man’s questioning, his face ashen staring at the fat man: “You mean—-this is all true?”

“Absolutely true.” Fat man answered seriously: “I saw everything with my own eyes. I Gongsun Yuan is knowledgeable and has seen many things, but this was the first time I saw something so brave——-” ”

He patted his sturdy fat chest: “I was so scared.”

“———-” Li Muyang was dumbstruck.

“Young master Muyang——what’s wrong? ”

“I killed Cui Zhaoren?”

“Yes.” Fat man flushed with excitement. “Cui Zhaoren is at the high stage of the free clouds and is one of the most famous and strongest of the younger generation in the kingdom. At such a young age he assumed direct control of the kingdom’s royal family Monitor Department. Someone who’s of such high

ranking and with great power, and could control the life and death of the majority of people in the world—was killed by you in the end.”

Fat man stared at Li Muyang with adoration, itching to pull open his shirt and make him sign his fair chest. He could tell that this is not an ordinary person, and in the future he would certainly become remarkable.

No, no, no, now he is already shining brightly and could possibly blind the eyes of many people. “If this matter was to spread over to Tiandu, Muyang’s name would definitely shock the entire West Wind, or you even may directly ascend onto the Windborne list, the list of names of the strongest people——”

Li Muyang forehead was dripping with sweat, yet he still forced himself to maintain calm, looking at the fat man in the face he whispered: “Brother Gongsun——do you think this matter will spread to Tiandu?”

“I think——it will?” Gongsun Yuan considered his wording before he continued: When you and Cui Zhaoren were fighting, many scholars and merchants witnessed it. Especially the last scene when you kill those men of the Monitor Division, also many onlookers on the river gathered and watched. After the weather improved and a ship passed by the river, the drowning scholars and businessmen were all rescued, most likely what happened had already spread ——Although I didn’t see it, but I can imagine the scholars giving a vivid account of what happened before. Of course, if they still have the energy and spirit.”

“————”

“Muyang—-”

“————”

“Muyang, what’s going on with you?”

Li Muyang’s voice began to tremble: “if this was to spread to Tiandu, what will be the consequences?”

“Can’t you guess?” Fat guy blinked his big eyes.

“———” Li Muyang really wanted to punch this man’s face. At such a critical time, he still can’t answer his question seriously? What are you acting cute for at this time? Do you know that you are not cute at all but stupid———

The righteousness within Li Muyang's body wanting to break out again.

There are too many bad people in the world, from time to time one just want to return to barbaric roots.

"You killed Cui Zhaoren, the Cui family of Tiandu will not leave you alone until you die." Fat man said with a smile. He could still laugh so happily at this time. "The Cui family is a tremendous and powerful clan in the kingdom, with many fierce warriors and people under their command throughout the kingdom. Usually they are the ones bullying others, they have never been bullied before."

"——–"

"You slew dozens of men of the kingdom's Monitor Division, the kingdom will not forgive you." The fat man said. "The Monitor Division supervises hundreds of government officials, they can be considered as a treasured sword of the royal family. You destroyed the sword of the emperor, what would the emperor think of you? "

"——-"

Li Muyang's complexion grew deathly pale. He said sorrowfully: "The world is so big, yet there's no place for me to go——"

89 – Armour to have audience with the Emperor!

Chapter 89: Armour to have an audience with the emperor!

Li Muyang was well aware of the changes within his body.

Or perhaps he could say with extreme uncertainty: there was a huge dragon hiding within his body!

However, would people believe this?

“I didn’t kill Cui Zhaoren, the dragon in my body killed him——”

If he gave that explanation, others would only think there’s something wrong with his brain, right?

Li Muyang wanted to rip open his chest, pull out the black dragon that he encountered countless number of times in his dreams, then pat his head and say: Brother Dragon, by following me——you cause me to suffer to many times.

After listening to this annoying fat man’s analysis, Li Muyang already felt there’s no hope anymore.

What’s most important is that he knew that each word the fat man said made sense, and was not just said to frighten him.

After killing Cui Zhaoren and the dozens of men of the Monitor Department, it would be hard for him to find a place where he could fit in the entire West Wind Kingdom.

“It doesn’t matter if I die.” Li Muyang grasped firmly onto the fat man’s arm: “But would my family be affected by this? Are they going to be okay?”

“The kingdom does not have the crime guilt by association” The fat man explained. “But if the Cui family was to secretly retaliate——-choke to death while eating, fall to death while climbing or suddenly tumble while walking, all these things may happen to them.”

“I have to go back immediately.” Li Muyang crawled up from the ground, wanting to hurry back to protect his family.

Even if they die, he would die together with them.

However, under the vast sky and the sea of clouds, he does not even know where he was, let alone where his house was. How could he rush back?

“If you go back now it will only be a road that leads to death.” The fat man looked at Li Muyang and did not try to obstruct him.

“How could I live without going back?” Li Muyang no longer had any mood to talk to this guy. He has more important things to do.

He wants to transform.

Transform into the gigantic dragon.

He tried and tried.

Damn, still no success.

He is still Li Muyang, although he’s not a trash anymore but he is still the Li Muyang who could not soar into the air.

“Many people may say that after committing such a serious crime like you, there really is no place for you to go in the entire world. You angered both the Cui family and the royal family of the West Wind kingdom at the same time, how many heads do you have for them to behead?”

Li Muyang’s eyes lit up, grabbed tightly onto the fat man’s arm: “do you mean I still have a chance to live? ”

“Naturally.” Fat man said with a smile. “It was originally a situation where you must die, but it happens that you had found a small gap out———Within the vast world, only Starry Sky is able to accept you.”

“Starry Sky Academy is not the Starry Sky Academy of West Wind kingdom?”

“Starry Sky Academy is the Starry Sky Academy of the divine continent. Your only way out now is to immediately rush to Starry Sky Academy, then if possible, quickly latch onto large thighs [1]——-In that case, you will be saved. Your family will also be saved.”

[1] Powerful people with great influence. Translated as large thighs as its going to be a running joke later on in the series

“As long as I enter Starry Sky Academy I will be fine?”

“I have never heard of any forces that dared to go to Starry Sky Academy to make arrests.” Fat man said with a hopeful face: “It’s a pity, I didn’t get a chance to enter and study, it is indeed a big regret in my life.”

“You’re still young, don’t be disheartened——-” Li Muyang said comfortingly.

After listening to the fat guy’s explanation, Li Muyang finally regained some spirit; he felt there’s a trace of hope for him.

Never give up hope; as long as there is a chance, he was willing to try his best.

Not only for him to live but also to keep his family alive.

Li Muyang turned to face the fat man, cupped his hand together and said: “Brother Gongsun, since you were always by my side protecting me and willing to tell me about all this——-it proves you’re not a bad person.”

“Of course I’m not a bad guy———” Fat man said smilingly: “But you will soon become a bad person, you are about to become the worst guy in the entire kingdom.”

“_____”

Li Muyang felt there’s no way he could talk with this guy anymore.

“I know what you mean, you helped me a lot before so I owe you one. Otherwise, I wouldn’t fish you out from the river.”

“I helped you?” A puzzled look came across Li Muyang’s face, he asked: “This is the first time we met, when did I ever help you? Also, you fished me out of the river?”

“You exhausted yourself from fighting, then your body submerged into the river. I jumped into the river and dragged you out. As for when you helped me, I think it’s better for you to not know, after all, you have enough trouble right now ———”

The chubby man glanced up at the sky: “Don’t worry, I will take you to Starry Sky Academy at the fastest rate. Now, we begin a race against death.”

“Thank you.” Li Muyang bowed deeply. This was the most urgent matter for him right now.

———-

———-

Lu Family.

Inside Bird Park, there was a group of white-robe youngster tending various rare birds inside the cages.

There was the common black and white doves, the Sand Ostrich with their sharp head and heavy body, the incomparably large bear bird, the pure white Bailu, eagles that are commonly found in the desert, and Wind Sparrow, which are as nimble as lightning——-

Just then, a colorful Wind Sparrow descended from high up. It abruptly came to a stop on the tree trunk.

A white robe youngster hurried over, holding the Wind Sparrow in his arms as he untied a bamboo tube from its leg.

He quickly placed the bamboo tube onto a tray to one side, then with both hands carrying the tray he urgently dashed towards the front courtyard.

General information is passed on using black and white doves. Although these birds travel much slower but there are a large number of them to meet demand. Also, these doves are relatively easy to tame, if there was any damage, the costs won't be too high.

Wind Sparrows are different, these strong and spirited birds are not easy to capture at all, you need to squat down on a cliff for a long period of time to discover their whereabouts.

As to how to capture them after discovering their whereabouts, also requires a lot of mental capacity.

It is already difficult for ordinary people to reach the cliffs, and even if they reached there how could they capture the birds——–But which unordinary person would be willing to go to the efforts to catch these birds?

Therefore, only the rich and powerful families such as the Lu family use Wind Sparrow to pass on information. The information passed by Wind Sparrows is of

the utmost importance, there's no need for additional screening or any procedures, and instead is directly delivered to the house butler of the Lu mansion.

"Wind Sparrow came to deliver a letter, is the butler here?" Before the white robe youngster reached the Plum Garden, he greeted the guards at the gate.

"He's planting trees inside." The guards answered, then allowed the white-robe teenager to run past them.

The vigorous old man was bending his body down to plant a plum tree, this was what he often did. Seeing the white-robe youngster running over at a fast pace, he could not help but stop what he's doing.

"A wind sparrow came to deliver a letter." The white-robe youngster bowed as he handed over the tray.

The old man used the towel wrapped around his neck to wipe the sweat on his hand, and then retrieved the note carefully rolled up inside.

After taking a glimpse, he immediately trotted towards the house at the other side.

Lu Xingkong was reading the military reports in his study, although he no longer directly controls the army, but he still likes to keep track of military affairs.

"Master." Old Butler hurried inside carrying the note and cried anxiously: "Young master Muyang's life is grim."

Lu Xingkong took a glance at the note, his eyes immediately become as cold as frost.

After serving this old man for decades, the old butler knew he was really furious at this moment.

He encountered such a thing, how could he not be angry?

Lu Xingkong pushed away the empty chairs, stomped around in his study.

"Is General Xu fine?"

"The Monitor Department tried to steer clear of military forces, but still fell into the eyes of our spy. They disguised someone as General Xu then brought the

real General Xu to the shore on horses. After they arrived in Jiangnan they left on the ship arranged by the lord of Jiangnan City—- General Xu was rescued by our people and is now under protection, soon he will arrive in Tiandu.”

“Send Mr Li to provide support, we must ensure the safety of General Xu.”

“Yes. I’ll arrange it.” Old butler respectfully replied. Mr Li is loyal to the Lu family and is one of the skilled experts in the Lu family. By appointing him to collect Xu General, it will guarantee he’s absolutely safe. “Master, I’m afraid this time the Lu family will have no choice but to help——-Young master Muyang is in the largest disaster of his life this time. If the Lu family does not come forward to help him block the wind and rain, I’m afraid young master would be dead before he arrives in Starry Sky. Cui Zhaoren was someone that the Cui family spent a lot of effort to cultivate, and the Monitor Division was the weapon the Royal family used to control the government officials. But now both of them were destroyed by Young master Muyang, would they not do anything?”

“The world really is mysterious.” Lu Xingkong’s voice was as normal and his eyes were distant and deep like the thousand years old icy pond, unable to see the end with just one glance. He raised his eyebrows, it is clear that what happened was beyond his expectation “I originally wanted to pluck him away from any incidents, but it seems there is an invisible gigantic hand that constantly throws him into the situation. This is the act of the heavens. It’s difficult to disobey heaven’s will.”

“Master—”

“Have the other families received the news?”

“They shouldn’t have.” Old butler muttered. “After General Xu was saved by our people, they immediately contacted us via Wind Sparrow——-After Cui Zhaoren died in battle, the entire Monitor Division supposed to handle an official business were all wiped out, the news should not be passed on so quickly.”

“Very well. This is our chance to prevail over our opponents.” Lu Xingkong said in a confident voice. As if everything was under his control.

“Master already has countermeasures?”

“This is Court battle, but they are already brandishing their blades thousands

of miles away———The Cui family has gone too far.” Lu Xingkong looked as fierce as a sword, as powerful and domineering as the undefeated God of War.
“Prepare the fearsome dragon armour, I want to wear it into the palace to have an audience with the emperor.”

90 – Heroic young man!

Chapter 90: Heroic young man!

Cang Mountain.

The mountain breeze brushed past, white mist rolled in.

Above the overhanging cliff was a pavilion known as the Moon Pavilion.

Under the pavilion was an old man wearing an embroidered robe playing chess with an old Taoist.

“Old Taoist Sanchi, you are crazy for tea, crazy for medicine, and also crazy for chess. Yet you hide deep in the mountains and never go out and play chess with others. The name ‘Chess Craze’ really doesn’t live up to its reputation.” Just as the embroidered robe old man was talking, he forcefully placed down a black piece at the corner of the chessboard.”

The hanging horn of an antelope, no signs at all. This move known as the three pronged thorn was the famous technique of the old man.

“When old Taoist, I, tries to find someone to play chess with, I don’t always find a player. Instead it wastes my time and effort but also destroys my good mood for the day. However, as long as I stay up in the deep mountains, chess players might come to find me——I’ve been unwilling to leave the mountains even one step because I’m worried that I will miss the opponents who are not afraid of the long climb up the mountain to come here. Those are the true crazy chess people.” Old Taoist Sanchi said with a smiling face while placing down a white piece at the middle empty position part, quietly setting the formation of a big dragon.

“Old Taoist found a unique excuse for your laziness, I admire such ingenuity greatly.” The old man laughed.

Just then, a colorful butterfly flew down from the sky.

A general wearing a green outer garment standing guard outside the pavilion clenched tightly onto his broad sword, glaring at the butterfly circling in the air.

The butterfly recognised its master, it flew straight in front of Cui Xichen.

A butterfly urgently came to report, it's obvious that an unusual thing happened.

He allowed the butterfly to fly over to his ears. After it whispered something to him, it then turned into a ball of white light and burned into ashes.

This was just a spirit and will destruct immediately afterwards and can't be reused.

Cui Xichen's face became somber, his eyes glowering, and his beard and hair were all standing on their ends.

Thump—-

The embroidered robe old man slammed the table with his palm, the stone tabletop supporting the chessboard along with the four stone legs instantly turned into clouds of dust.

"Muyang, I definitely will crush your bones into dust and dismember your body into a thousand pieces."

The mountain wind swept past, the powder scattered all around disappeared without a trace.

The stone table under also vanished; seeing that the chessboard was on the verge of falling over, old Taoist Sanchi brushed his sleeves, the chessboard once again leaped into the air. Each of the chess pieces persisted in their original positions like they were embedded onto the stone board by a strong force.

"My grandson died tragically, our family is in a disastrous situation. Brother Sanchi, I can't continue this game anymore." Cui Xichen apologised, his eyes saturated with a strong killing intent.

"Mr Cui please don't be upset, life and death are determined by the heavens. You must take care of your body." Old Taoist Sanchi cast his sleeves lightly, the chess board instantly slid down towards the mountain stream. "I will hold onto this match for now and wait for you to return."

Cui Xichen cupped one hand in the other: "Goodbye."

His arms opened out like a giant bird spreading its wings and leaped down the

bottomless cliff of Cang Mountain.

The swordsmen wearing green garments standing guard outside the pavilion respectfully bowed and said farewell before they quickly followed and jumped down.

Old Taoist Sanchi walked over to the edge of the cliff. He stared at the numerous chessboards floating in the midst of the mountain stream.

These numerous chessboards were all unfinished matches; some started a game and left and some started a game then died. He has sealed these chess boards waiting for these opponents to return or new opponents to start another game.

These chessboards have to bear the mountain gale and scorching sun overhead, yet it have not lost its solemn atmosphere and still carries the faint sounds of shining spears and armoured horses.

“All good games.” Old Taoist Sanchi mumbled to himself.

———

———

West Wind Palace.

Just as the emperor of West Wind Kingdom Chu Xianda was admiring the painting of his beloved concubine, Concubine Ling, called the ‘Sovereign King Banquet’ the chamberlain Li Fu rushed over and disturbed him at the most unsuitable time: “Your majesty, the Defence Minister requests to see you.”

“Lu Xingkong?” Chu Xianda was at the prime of his life, giving rise to his refined appearance. He wholeheartedly tried to emulate the achievements of his ancestors by opening up new territories and expanding their empire and so he diligently handled daily affairs. Hearing that the most senior and experienced elder came, he said with a smile: “Nothing major happened in the country, why is he here?”

“The Defence Minister did not specify.” Chamberlain Li Fu bowed and replied.

Chu Xianda glanced over at Ling concubine’s drawing board, in a short while the painting will be completed, he wanted to be the first to feast his eyes and did

not want to leave at this time. “Go tell Defence Minister that I have something important to attend to, I’m too busy to see him.”

“Your Majesty———” Chamberlain Li Fu looked distressed, he stood at the door refusing to leave, then cautiously persuaded: “Your majesty, you should see Defence Minister ——-”

Chu Xianda was enraged, he thundered: “you old dog, you dare to teach the emperor what to do?”

“I don’t dare to.” Li Fu immediately knelt down, hesitated slightly: “Defence Minister is wearing the Dragon armour and holding the Heavenly Emperor Sword at the Hall of Supreme Harmony.”

“You old dog——” Chu Xianda’s face looked like he can’t bear it any longer, he muttered: “you old dog———”

The moment Ling concubine heard what Li Fu said, her little hand holding the paintbrush began to tremble, pressing a great black mark onto the piece of paper.

“Ahh——-” Ling concubine exclaimed, her few days of hard work was destroyed within seconds. “The painting is ruined.”

Chu Xianda glanced over, he was even more furious. “Living to be so old is so troublesome, you old dog bring so much trouble to me——-We’ll head to the Hall of Supreme Harmony.”

Chu Xianda along with a group of guards rushed to the Hall of Supreme Harmony where Lu Xingkong was standing in the middle of the Hall wearing the Dragon Armour and his hand grasping tightly onto the Heavenly Emperor Spear; when meeting the emperor how could someone bring a weapon into the Hall?

Lu Xingkong stood up tall with dignity.

This made Chu Xianda even angrier, this old man’s power and influence is too strong, does he even take notice of the emperor?

However, what Chu Xianda showed was a different story.

He looked at Lu Xingkong in astonishment, then asked with concern in his

voice: “What is the meaning of this Defence Minister? You’re wearing heavy armour, could there be people who wants to harm the Defence Minister?”

“Your majesty, I came to bid farewell.” Lu Xingkong fell to his knees in front of the emperor Chu Xianda and said in a low voice.

“Farewell?” Chu Xianda hastened to pull up Lu Xingkong, frowning, he asked: “Where will you be going?”

“I volunteer myself for military service, I am willing to stand guard at the Broken Dragon Pool. I won’t return until I die.” Lu Xingkong said in a clear and loud voice.

“Defence Minister, what are you talking about? Defence Minister has been fighting for this country for many years, now is the time for you to enjoy and rest, why run to the frontier region to suffer? Broken Dragon Pool is guarded by Xu Da, he is Defence Minister’s hand-picked general and is known as ‘iron wall’ along with Zhou Dong of red river valley. Since we have them standing guard there, what does Defence Minister has to worry about?”

Lu Xingkong carefully observed Chu Xianda’s facial expression, he then said with indignation and grief: “Your majesty, Xu Da was harmed, I’m worried that we will lose Broken Dragon Pool——Broken Dragon Pool is the region between West Wind Kingdom and Wu Country, both sides have sent massive military force to stand guard. If the Wu Country discovered that the commander-in-chief on our side is missing and that our army is unstable, they would attack us immediately and Broken Dragon Pool will most likely fall into the hands of the Wu Country.”

“If Broken Dragon Pool was occupied by the Wu Country, our West Wind Kingdom’s gate would be widely opened and the Wu Army can directly march in, take the three towns Qingyuan, Xinkou and Changdi. At that time, even if we wanted to force them out it will be extremely difficult, we will most likely have to pay a heavy price. ”

“Defence Minister————-defence minister—-” Chu Xianda interrupted Lu Xingkong’s ‘deduction’. “What do you mean? Why is the commander-in-chief missing? Why would the army in Broken Dragon Pool be unstable? Where is Xu Da? What happened to Xu Da? He was entrusted with heavy responsibility, he

was ordered to defend the frontier, he dares to desert?”

“Your Majesty——-” Lu Xingkong’s face looked shocked as he stared at Chu Xianda: “Don’t tell me the arrestment of Xu Da was not commanded by your majesty? ”

“When did I send people to arrest Xu Da? What crime did General Xu commit?”

“———” Lu Xingkong’s face turned crimson from anger as he said in a fierce voice: “Don’t tell me the Monitor Division made the decision by themselves and decided to detain the main commander-in-chief of the frontier region?”

“Defence Minister, what is the matter?” Chu Xianda slowed down his manner of speaking, stared at Lu Xingkong and asked.

Lu Xingkong was indignant as he once again gave an account of the arrestment of Xu Da and how he was framed.

“General Xu Da is my hand-picked general, he started as a soldier and then step-by-step achieved outstanding military service and is now known as ‘Iron Wall’. General Xu has been guarding Broken Dragon Pool for a decade; he had fought in several hundred battles to ensure stability in the border regions. The Dawu nation could hardly step into our West Wind Kingdom thanks to his efforts.”

“Your Majesty, what crime did Xu Da committed? Why was he suddenly arrested by the Monitor Department? And also they subjected him to all kinds of torture to obtain a false confession——-I don’t care if they’re against me but they used such unlawful acts to destabilise the country.”

“If the commander-in-chief broke the law, then the Monitor Division should investigate first and gather evidence. The final judgment should be made by the emperor——However, the Monitor Department made the arrest and faked evidence to force him to confess. Your majesty did not know about this so did not make any appropriate arrangements and did not send another general to replace him. All the military officers over at Broken Dragon Pool also does not know what happened, they are all in a state of panic and the morale is low. If a spy from the Wu Country probed into this matter, it will definitely lead to a battle, the consequences are unthinkable———”

“Where is General Xu?”

“When General Xu was secretly imprisoned on an ordinary passenger ship by the Monitor Department, brave young man Li Muyang found out and rescued him——Otherwise General Xu’s life would have ended.”

91 – Confrontation in front of the Emperor!

“Li Muyang?” West Wind Kingdom’s monarch Chu Xianda felt that this name sounded familiar, as if he had heard it somewhere before.

Each year there’s a first in the exam, every year it needs to be approved by the imperial court. Sometimes it is approved by Chu Xianda himself but more often by the department that handles the emperor’s government affairs.

Perhaps he had seen it somewhere but that memory was not deep enough.

“Yes, it’s Li Muyang.” Lu Xingkong cupped his hand in front of Chu Xianda and said in a low voice: “Congratulations your majesty.” “

Chu Xianda’s eyebrows raised slightly, he asked: “Defence Minister, what are you congratulating?”

“Congratulate that the country has such talent, is this not something that should be congratulated? The first place in the kingdom personally approved by your majesty is indeed remarkable. He’s brave, loyal and righteous. He stands up against injustice.”

“If it wasn’t for Li Muyang risking his life to save Xu General, our West Wind Kingdom would have lost a brave general. Therefore, I ask your majesty to reward the young hero. ”

Chu Xianda pondered for quite a while before he looked at Lu Xingkong and said: “Defence Minister, you say the Monitor Department framed a loyal person, tortured the commander in chief——-You do know that the Monitor Department is my Monitor Department, right? It is the Monitor Department of West Wind Kingdom?”

“I know.” Lu Xingkong bowed.

“Now I only heard your side of the story, I have no way to determine exactly what the truth is. Let’s wait until the chief of the Monitor Department Cui Zhaoren returns, I will personally ask him. If the facts are as Defence Minister said, I would make sure justice is served, as for Li Muyang——I will commend this brave young man who rescued Xu General.”

“Your majesty——”

Chu Xianda gestured with his hand: “Defence Minister, you are an important Minister of the kingdom, what would other people think when they see you wearing a heavy armour to see the emperor? What would all the civilian and military officers at the imperial court think? Defence Minister, you are slapping me in the face.”

Lu Xingkong immediately bowed and apologised: “I know I was wrong. I was just worried of the military situation at Broken Dragon Pool and that we will lose our country’s territory. I ask your majesty to punish me.”

“Defence Minister is simply thinking for the country and the people, how could I punish you? In that case, would I not become a fatuous ruler?” Chu Xianda smiled kindly at Lu Xingkong: “Why don’t Defence Minister head back for now and wait till I find out the truth then I will make a fair ruling.” “

“Yes, your majesty———” Having achieved his purpose in coming here, Lu Xingkong was ready to turn and leave.

“Your Majesty, Minister Cui is outside———” Chamberlain Li Fu stood at the entrance of the Hall of Supreme Harmony, bowed and reported.

“Huh?” Chu Xianda took a quick glimpse at Lu Xingkong before he smiled and said: “Did he and Defence Minister arranged this together? Why would he come at this time?”

Chu Xianda gestured with his hand and said to Li Fu: “The timing is just right, it’s more lively with more people, tell Minister Cui to come in.”

Cui Xichen entered into the Hall in big strides, his eyes immediately caught notice of Lu Xingkong standing at one side, he yelled in an angry tone: “Lu Xingkong, you’re so vicious, are you not afraid of retribution?”

“I don’t know what you mean Minister Cui——-but speaking of vicious, no one dares to be on equal level with Minister Cui?” Lu Xingkong said without any expression at all.

“I really disagree with your political views, but that does not mean you should strike vicious blows to the younger generation of my family——Lu Xingkong, do you not have any children or grandchildren? Are you not afraid you will die

without any descendants?”

“He who never wrong others does not fear the knock in the night.” Lu Xingkong said proudly.

“Well, I want to see if you really have a good conscience, see if you’re afraid of ghosts knocking at night———” Cui Xichen’s eyes revealed a strong killing intent. His grandson was killed, of course he would pursue justice from Lu Xingkong’s family.

“Ministers———” Chu Xianda interrupted their quarreling: “Arguing at the imperial court tarnishes the honour of the country. Also, who can tell me, what is going on?”

Cui Xichen dropped to his knees, sorrowfully asked: “I request your majesty to be the judge of this matter.”

“Cui, what grievance do you have to complain?”

“West Wind Kingdom’s Monitor Division chief Cui Zhaoren was robbed and killed while he was escorting the criminal Xu Da back to the capital. Dozens of men of the Monitor Division also died unfortunately in battle.” Cui Xichen bowed his head deeply, his sorrow flowing like a river.

“How dare they.” Cui Xianda flew into a rage, he marched up and down the Hall of Supreme Harmony, then cried in a stern voice: “Completely no regards for the law———-The Monitor Division is my Monitor Division, is the Monitor Division of the Kingdom. The men of the Monitor Division are my men. Who dares to rob and kill them? Who dares lay murderous hands on them?”

Cui Xichen lifted his head, his eyes viciously stared at Lu Xingkong: “It was that person.”

“Lu Xingkong———” Chu Xianda glared angrily: “What Minister Cui said is true?”

“Minister Cui speaks not the truth, he is committing the crime of deceiving the emperor.” Lu Xingkong sneered: “I have just reported the specific details to the Emperor, every word I said was true. Your majesty simply needs to send the Imperial Court Secretary to investigate, then the truth will come to light.”

“Lu Xingkong, don’t tell me the chief of the Monitor Department Cui Zhaoren was not killed by one of your people? Were the dozen of men of the Monitor Division not massacred by your people?”

“No.” Lu Xingkong refuted instantly. “The person who killed Cui Zhaoren was a brave young man called Li Muyang, Li Muyang was the first place in the imperial exam personally approved by your majesty——-Li Muyang coincidentally encountered all this during his travel to his new school, how could he be someone sent by me?”

“Besides, Cui Zhaoren is the chief of the Monitor Department of the kingdom, yet he did not wait for orders and did not follow the country’s system, instead he framed a loyal person, slandered the main commander-in-chief of the frontier region Xu Da——-” Lu Xingkong suddenly turned around, looked at Chu Xianda and asked: “Did your majesty grant Cui Zhaoren the official imperial edict? ”

“About that—-no. ”

“Was your majesty aware that Cui Zhaoren would detain Xu Da, resulting in the instability of Broken Dragon Pool?”

“I——did not know.”

“An outstandingly able individual of the country became some tool to attack other political opponents, is that not the crime of deceiving the emperor?”

“Lu Xingkong——”

“Minister Cui, did I say something wrong?”

“That’s enough.” Chu Xianda yelled for them stop. His line of sight swept between Lu Xingkong and Cui Xichen. “The chief of the Monitor Department and the dozen of men of the Division were killed, this is no small matter. We must investigate the truth. But now I only listened to your sides of the story, I can’t make a judgment right now. Defence Minister, when will General Xu Da arrive at the capital?” “

Lu Xingkong took a quick glimpse at Cui Xichen before he answered: “He will arrive in Tiandu in a few days.”

“What about that Li Muyang?”

“It is said that after a fierce battle with Cui Zhaoren, this young hero was seriously injured. His whereabouts is unknown, we are also trying to find him.” Lu Xingkong said with a worried face. “This is the young hero personally approved by your majesty, if he was implicated in the conspiracy plot against me ——I would feel really guilty.”

Cui Xichen was about to retort but was interrupted by Chu Xianda: “It must be hard for you Defence Minister. When General Xu Da returns to the capital, bring him to see me at once——and that Li Muyang, once you find him bring him over too. I want to personally ask him some questions.”

“Yes.” Lu Xingkong replied. “Old minister will leave now.”

The moment Lu Xingkong left, Cui Xichen walked in front of Chu Xianda: “Your majesty, this matter can’t be left like that——”

“Useless.” Chu Xianda furiously scolded before he flung his sleeve and left.

Cui Xichen stood with his back straight, a ruthless smile gradually surfaced onto his face.

“Lu Xingkong you——-You killed one of mines, I’ll destroy your whole family.”

————

————-

The Cui family’s backyard.

Yan Xiangma hastilyy ran over, banging loudly on the door.

The little maid inside stomped over and asked: “Who is it? What’s the hurry?”

“It’s me, Yan Xiangma——Is Xiaoxin here?”

“Xiangma young master——-” The little maid hastened to open the door, she knew that the young lady of the family had lived in Jiangnan for years so she and Yan Xiangma have a very close relationship like siblings. “Miss is reading in the yard.””

“I’m going to find her.” As Yan Xiangma spoke, he dashed towards the small courtyard.

Cui Xiaoxin was dressed in a pale pink long dress with Tiandu's cherry blossom pattern, her hair was rolled up in a pure and beautiful bun, an ancient scroll was held between her hands and the gentle mist was rising from the fragrant tea on the table in front of her.

Pure and elegant, the Three Bright Moons of the kingdom are really out of the ordinary.

Hearing the conversation between Yan Xiangma and the maid, and then watching him coming over in a hurry, she closed the scroll in her hand and asked aloud: "Cousin, did something happen?"

"Xiaoxin, have you heard?" Yan Xiangma immediately took a seat opposite Cui Xiaoxin, poured himself a cup of tea and gulped it down.

After hearing the news, he came here instantly. The Cui family's house is too big, making him incredibly thirsty after all the running.

"Heard what?" Cui Xiaoxin looked confused.

"Cousin Zhaoren was killed." Yan Xiangma said, lowering his voice.

"What?" Cui Xiaoxin was stunned, her little face turned deathly pale: "Big brother Zhaoren——how was he killed?"

"I don't know how he was killed. But I know who killed him." Yan Xiangma said worriedly. Seeing his cousin's beautiful face, he thought to himself that the Cui family would most likely form a strong hatred towards that charcoal. Let alone that he and his cousin can't be together, they can't even be friends.

After some more thinking, he suddenly remembered——not just his cousin, he also can't be his friend.

He suddenly felt somewhat depressed.

"Who killed him?" Cui Xiaoxin saw her older cousin hastily ran over, she knows for certain that this matter is not that simple.

Moreover, this matter should be closely linked to her, otherwise, why would he rush over to tell her?

"Li Muyang." Yan Xiangma said in a muffled voice.

“How is this possible?” Cui Xiaoxin was just about to take a sip of the tea to calm her emotions. The teacup had not even touched the side of her lips, the moment she heard the shocking answer, her wrist trembled, the cup between her hands dropped to the green brick floor.

Crash—

A beautiful porcelain teacup shattered to pieces.

092 – Being chased for the whole journey!

Chapter 92: Being chased for the whole journey!

“Miss——-” The moment the maid heard the sound of porcelain being smashed to pieces, she dashed over and anxiously asked: “Miss, are you alright?”

“I’m fine.” Cui Xiaoxin said softly, preventing the maid to check the movements of her palm, then in a frail voice she continued: “Please pick up the fragments on the ground, be careful not to cut yourself.”

“Xiaoxin, are you hurt?” Yan Xiangma never thought Cui Xiaoxin would react this strongly, he quickly said: “You don’t have to worry, Li Muyang is fine for the time being—–”

Yan Xiangma thought to himself that when he mentioned Li Muyang’s name, Cui Xiaoxin was worried to the extent she broke the teacup in her hand, which means the feelings between the two of them must be quite strong. It’s unfortunate that charcoal Li Muyang could never be his brother-in-law.

What’s even more unfortunate is that he himself had no way of ever becoming Li Muyang’s brother-in-law.

The Cui and Yan families are one family; when the Cui family is successful, the Yan family is also successful. When the Cui family fails, the Yan family would also fail. Even if he wanted to marry Li Shinian in the future it would be impossible.

“I’m fine.” Cui Xiaoxin shook her head. “I’m well aware of Zhaoren brother’s strength, he’s at the high stage of the free clouds, how many people of the younger generation in Tiandu could win against him? How could Li Muyang—-kill him? How could he die? Where did you hear this? Is it reliable?”

“I also find it strange, when I heard the news I was even more shock than you.” Yan Xiangma’s expression grew more confused. “But I heard it at home, grandpa and others were discussing a strategy to deal with this situation. I wasn’t allowed to attend so I could only eavesdrop—-they said it was not just Zhaoren cousin who met with a mishap, all the men of the Monitor Division died in battle. It did

not sound true but they were discussing seriously and the atmosphere was quite miserable. I think——it's ninety percent real?"

"——-" Cui Xiaoxin's brow wrinkled with worry, she got up and circled around in the courtyard.

"That Li Muyang is indeed quite strange, if we say he's strong, most of the time he just looks like he doesn't even have the energy to tie up a chicken. If we say he's weak, every now and then he would do or say something amazing that would startle us all. When I investigated him before I found that he was always the last place in the exams at school. With just a few months of studying, he achieved the first place in the imperial exam. If we say his skills are bad, he killed Crow and even Zhaoren cousin——"

What Yan Xiangma puzzled over was the same questions that occurred to Cui Xiaoxin; she was more familiar with Li Muyang than Yan Xiangma and since they were classmates for several years, she was well aware what kind of man he really is.

She practically watched Li Muyang grow and excel and witnessed his never-ending changes and improvements. The speed in which he absorbed knowledge and his strengths were simply astonishing.

Today, she was blown away by him once again.

"Big brother Zhaoren—-where is he now?"

"I don't know." Yan Xiangma shook his head. "They say his corpse has not been found yet."

"Cousin, I feel tired. "

"Ah? Tired?" Yan Xiangma did not want to leave. "Stay for another minute, I still have other things to discuss with you. Something like this had happened, you and Li Muyang are impossible. It could even be said that whether or not he could live is unknown——–What is our standpoint? Do we help Li Muyang or not——"

"Yan Xiangma." Cui Xiaoxin said in a stern voice, the biting-cold expression on her face interrupted Yan Xiangma's words.

Yan Xiangma knew his cousin was really angry right now, he raised his hands in

surrender and said: “fine, fine, don’t be angry——if you want to hit me, I’ll let you.”

“———”

Yan Xiangma sighed lightly, looked at Cui Xiaoxin and said: “I know you’re upset. I’m sad too. On one side is one of my life sword brothers, the other side is your brother——Now I can only hope the news I heard is not true. Even if we can’t be friends, there’s no need to become enemies.”

Cui Xiaoxin stood still below the Tiandu’s Sakura tree in the courtyard, stared at the blood-red petals for a long time in silence.

Yan Xiangma let out a deep sigh, turned and walked away.

“Li Muyang———this is definitely not true, right?” Cui Xiaoxin’s mind was in a whirl.

———-

———

Huu——

A heavy object fell from the sky, like a meteorite smashing down.

A horse-faced man was hidden in the gorge of the Red River, waiting for a carriage to pass by to launch a sudden attack.

It happened too quick, giving almost no time for thought.

“Jump off.” The fat man yelled; the incomparably fat body already rolled under the carriage.

The horse-drawn carriage wildly ran forward while his body frantically rolled back.

Li Muyang also reacted sharply, before the fat man yelled he had already sensed the strong killing intent in the atmosphere. He tried to kick the fat man out of the carriage, only to find he was just kicking the air——

The foot he kicked out was made used of by borrowing the force of the carriage to help his body make its way out of the window.

Crash——

The carriage was smashed to pieces by the tremendous ‘Mother and Son Meteor Hammer’. The wooden boards of the carriage were scattered all over the place.

Even the two fierce horses pulling the carriage in front also could not bear the sudden force of the hammer, their body lurched forward and took a tumble, turned several times in a row before they came to a halt.

The horses lying on the ground neighed miserably but still could not get back up. As if all the bones in their bodies were broken.

After Li Muyang jumped off the carriage, his body also rolled over several times on the ground.

He rolled and rolled, until he noticed something was advancing in his direction.

It was the assassin’s ‘Mother and Son Meteor’ Hammer.

He threw out his Meteor Hammer as a hidden weapon in the direction of Li Muyang to crush him completely.

Rumble—-

The large heavy hammer dragged along the small hammer, the spikes at the front of the hammer constantly digging up fresh red soil, destroying all obstacles in its way like sweeping up withered leaves.

Li Muyang began to worry, his body really can’t compete with such a tremendous weapon.

If this gigantic hammer was to slam against him, not only his body would be flattened, it would pierce countless holes in his body.

Hu Hu Hu—-

There was a loud sound of wind spinning.

He saw the fat man dashed across to remove a loosened wheel from the carriage; the steel wheel was pushed in the direction of the Mother and Son Meteor Hammer.

Clang—

The wheel bounced away, the Mother and Son Meteor Hammer also rebounded towards another direction.

Li Muyang did not run away, he could not escape at this time.

He got up from the floor, and lunged out with the long sword in his hand at the horse-faced man.

The horse-faced man's attack failed twice consecutively, he was infuriated.

Seeing that the little reptile Li Muyang actually dares to turn around and counterattack, he flicked his wrist, the gold loop around his hand transformed his right arm into an indestructible 'golden arm'.

Clang—

The 'Understand Heaven' Sword thrust at his golden arm.

"Ignorant child, seeking your own death. Hurry hand over your head for grandpa to claim the reward." Horse-faced man used his golden arm to block Li Muyang's sword, then punched out towards Li Muyang's face.

He wants to smash Li Muyang's head.

Li Muyang also threw out his fist at the same time.

Gathering strength in dantian then suddenly release.

Bang—-

The 'Breaking Fist' of 'The Art of the Breaking Body'.

Li Muyang's body was sent flying.

He felt as if all the bones in his fist had snapped.

Horse-faced assassin trained in brute force like martial arts. His cultivation technique, [Golden metal overthrow] was extremely deep. His palm strikes were like a blade, his fists like a mountain. He could not be underestimated.

Horse-faced assassin also stumbled back two steps, he laughed loudly: "this kid's skills are not too bad——"

He could not continue his words anymore.

On his chest, there was a sharp sword dripping with blood.

It was the sword Li Muyang threw out moments ago.

The fat man stood behind the horse-faced assassin, and forcefully yanked out the long sword in his hand.

Plop！

The Horse-faced assassin took a fall to the ground, disbelief and anger across his face.

The fat man also collapsed to the ground, he glanced over at Li Muyang who was sent flying into the distance and shouted: “are you alright?”

“I’m alright.” Li Muyang climbed up from the ground. By just uttering two words, gulps of blood spurted out of his mouth.

If he knew that the fist of the horse-faced assassin was that solid and strong, he would not have withstood it with his fist alone.

But if he did not throw out his fist at that moment to attract his attention, there was no way he would have coordinated perfectly with the fat man to allow him to stab the man in the chest——-

The saying ‘To kill one thousand but lose eight hundred’ is talking about him right now.

The chubby man fumbled around in his pockets until he located a small grey bottle, he threw it over: “it’s a qi-tonifying pill, there should be one left. If you eat it, it relaxes your muscles, improves blood circulation and also regulates qi along the veins.”

Li Muyang caught the medicine bottle and asked: “what about you?”

“Hey———” Fat man slapped his chest with some force and shouted: “Fat grandpa’s body——-cough cough———“

Fat man clutched his throat as he coughed violently, it almost looked like his liver and lung was about to be coughed out.

Li Muyang got up from the ground and walked over to the fatty’s side. He took out the qi-tonifying pill inside the bottle and used his fingernails to break it into two halves. One half was stuffed into the fatty’s mouth while the other half he ate himself: “We’ll split it.

The fat man spat out his half of the pill and placed it into Li Muyang's palm. "There's no use in eating half, there wont be any medicinal effect——-you eat my half. "

Li Muyang watched the half of the black pill dripping with saliva for a long time, he was determined to not feed it into his mouth no matter what.

He returned the pill and said: "when I was a kid, my mother often taught me that I have to share good things with others——-both you and I are injured now, how can I eat the qi-tonifying pill all by myself and you get nothing? This is not the way to get along. Even if there's no effects with just half of the qi-tonifying pill, I would still like to share it with you."

Fat man swallowed the half in his hand, emotions welled up in his eyes: "my brother——In the future as long as I take a bite of something, I would also give you a bite. If I have a qi-tonifying pill, you will definitely have half of it. "

Li Muyang really did not wish to share a qi-tonifying pill with this fat man again; besides the unusual bitterness, it did not seemed to be any useful effects. He changed the subject: "let's hurry and leave——how far do we still have to go?"

093 – Bullying to the extreme!

Chapter 93: Bullying to the extreme!

After escaping from Fowl Crying Lake, Li Muyang and the fat man Gongshu Yuan bought a carriage to travel to Starry Sky Academy.

This journey was full of danger and the air was full of killing intent.

It seems that the news of the death of Cui Zhaoren and the dozen of men of the Monitor Department had already spread across. This was most likely the counterattacks launched by the Cui family or other beneficial parties.

What Li Muyang was most puzzled about was that this fat man had never abandoned him once.

He simply said he owes Li Muyang a big favor but he did not say how he owed Li Muyang.

Li Muyang felt apprehensive; he felt that after he became handsome—-boys suddenly start to like him.

It is said that some nobles of the kingdom like handsome boys. Li Muyang secretly took glimpses of his own face several times in the river, he realised he belonged to that type.

So, along the way although he closely worked together with the fat man but he also deliberately kept a distance.

For example, just now when the fat man gave half of the pill from his mouth for Li Muyang to eat, Li Muyang discovered his ruse—–if he accepted, is that not an indirect kiss with the fat man？

He obviously did not fall for it. His first kiss is for—–

Li Muyang thought seriously for a long time, yet still had no idea who he should give his first kiss to.

“There must be a person.” Li Muyang thought to himself. “That loves me like her life.”

When he thought of this sentence, Li Shinian’s giggling cute face suddenly

popped into his mind.

Li Muyang nearly jumped out of his skin, he desperately shook his head to get rid of the image of Li Shinian's face in his mind. Pah Pah Pah, he spat several times—– This was his sister, how could he give her his first kiss? What a beast.

No, even worst than a beast.

Li Muyang discovered an even more tragic fact. A woman who loves him like her life but is also a young woman—–besides Li Shinian there really isn't anyone else.

"We're nearly there." Fat man climbed up from the ground, looked at the horse-faced assassin not that far away from him, the fear still lingering in his heart. "How many assassins has it been? "

"Six?" Li Muyang answered after some thought: "it's a pity we don't have our carriage anymore, now we can only travel on our two legs. You and I are both hurt, it may even delay the journey."

"Hang on a little longer. As long as we arrive at Starry Sky Academy we will be safe. No one can hurt you anymore." Fat man encouraged Li Muyang but also himself.

"Brother Gongshu, if it wasn't for you taking care of me, I would have been killed. I wouldn't have reach this far."

Gongshu Yuan waved his fat hand and said: "Are you kidding me? Even Cui Zhaoren could not kill you, how could those trash? But we better get out of here fast, the Cui family offered a bounty of one hundred gold coins for your head. Those assassins are coming like crazy. Only unknown assassins have been attacking us but if they asked the top ten assassins of the kingdom, even if you and I work together we would still die. Your skills are only sometimes effective, it really does not give a sense of security, every time we encountered an enemy I don't know whether to fight or run——"

"——-"

The two continued the long trudge once again, travelling at a swift pace towards their intended target.

After passing through the gorge of the Red River, there was a pleasing green plain.

Above the plain were large birds swooping down, bucks drinking water, wolves howling, and vultures enjoying a several metres long skeleton of an unknown creature—-

Seeing travelers passing by, they simply looked up and took a glance, and then lowered their head and continued eating. They were not afraid of life and not afraid of people. Watching them devouring carrion in large numbers was enough to send shivers down Li Muyang's spine.

"This is the Flower Language plain." Fat man said aloud. "The name is poetic, right? "

"The name is not bad." Li Muyang nodded.

"But nevertheless this is one of the top ten places where most people are killed in the entire divine continent. It's in the sixth place." Fat man said with an unfathomable face.

Li Muyang instantly glanced around. "No way? These large birds and wolves?"

Fat man rolled his eyes. "Do you know how big is Flower Language plain? It's ten times larger than the entire Jiangnan. Also, it's daytime now and we're walking along the 'public path'. "

"Public path?" Li Muyang stared at the slobbering wolves not that far away from him, a look of astonishment appeared on his face: "There isn't even a road, what public path?"

"That's why I said it is one of the top ten places where most people die." Fat man glanced around warily and said: "Be careful."

Li Muyang also scanned around, the area was entirely empty without a single soul, he asked: "Starry Sky Academy won't just be enrolling me this year, right? The registration date is approaching, why don't I see other students?"

Fat man curled his lips and said: "Starry Sky Academy is the most mysterious school in the entire divine continent, the number of students admitted obviously can't be you alone—–the students come from various regions of the divine

continent, some far and some close, some are late and some are early——Most important of all, which of them is chased all the way here like us?”

“Admitted into Starry Sky Academy but being bullied like this——Li Muyang, you must be the most pitiful freshmen in the history of Starry Sky? ”

“＿＿”

They continued to chat and hasten on with their journey but they did not encounter any danger or assassination on their way.

Just as they were sleeping peacefully at night, a pack of wolves came over. The fat man was sleeping soundly when the howling noise disturbed him, he rushed out for a while, when he returned the sound had stopped. But there were two wolf’s legs slowly roasting above the fire. The next day they woke up, it became his and Li Muyang’s delicious breakfast.

They trekked across the Flower Language plain for another two days, the terrain became more and more steep and a cloud-capped mountain covered by mist could be seen in the distance.。

Li Muyang turn pale with fear: “did we went the wrong way? Why is it more desolate and colder?”

As he spoke, Li Muyang had already took out the map to Starry Sky Academy from his pockets. This was gifted to him by the senior travelled down on a crane. The map was drawn on ancient brocade, so it was not damaged when he plunged into the river.

“Nearly there.” Fat man said pointing in front. “See the highest mountain over there? It’s there.”

“——Starry Sky Academy is not a school?” Li Muyang felt uneasy. Where is the school? Is this not the place where celestial beings train?”

“If they did not establish a school here, how could they be called Starry Sky Academy? Where is their impressiveness? Where is their unique characteristic? And how would they differ from other schools? ”

“＿＿”

Hearing the fat man refute his words, Li Muyang was secretly quite happy.

After all, Starry Sky Academy is the school he is about to enter. He was able to enrol into such a prestigious school; this means he must be quite outstanding, right?

What's most critical is that Li Muyang's current situation is grim, assassins came in droves and his head may be taken at any time to exchange for money.

A school like that gives him a sense of security

The only trouble is: the journey back home is difficult and far.

However, if this could keep his parents and sister safe, even if he would never return he was still willing—– Li Muyang finally understood what it means to be 'so close yet so far'—before he always thought this sentence was to describe girls that he likes, such as Cui Xiaoxin .

He knows now, he understood the meaning of these words itself.

They had already seen this high mountain early on but Li Muyang had no idea he has to walk for another two days.

He felt that during all this time the distance his feet had walked was more than how much he had walked in ten years.

The further he advanced, the more he felt a surge of cold air.

When he walked to the bottom of the mountain that was towering into the clouds, there was already a bone-chilling coldness.

Li Muyang felt the coldness.

There wasn't any cold wind; the coldness was not from the outside to the inside but from the inside to the outside.

First was coldness in his heart, then the coldness penetrated into the bones, and finally felt on the skin of his face and body.

The fat man also felt cold, the fat on his body uncontrollably shivering: "a place like this—–I'm glad Starry Sky Academy did not recruit me. Even if they did I wouldn't come."

"—_—-"

Fat man pointed at the tall mountain and said: “This mountain is known as nameless mountain, Starry Sky Academy is above. Here, we’re safe——“

Before the sound of his voice had died away, groups of people walked out from the midst of the clouds and fog.

First was an ugly old woman dressed in a black robe and holding a walking stick with the head of a snake.

The second group were two monks. There were nine ring scars on each of their heads, one monk was holding a shovel and the other holding a ceremonial tool The third group were seven men clenching tightly onto double swords, some tall and some short, some fat and some thin, their hair were full of braids and they were wearing brightly-coloured clothes.

Fourth was a man in a green shirt, all by himself, holding a broad sword.

——

Fat man’s body trembled more severely, he yelled without restraint: “They disappeared like mice these past days, I thought we escaped from them——so they actually ran ahead of us to completely kill us off. ”

Li Muyang’s heart sank, but he cannot escape at this time, there’s also no chance for him to turn back.

Blocking the road in front were four groups of people, but how many came behind them because of the smell of blood?

Li Muyang bravely took one step forward, shielding the fat man in front. “Brother Gongshu, the saying goes: sending Buddha to the west; you have already helped me reach the bottom of the school, we should part here——-

Fat man snarled: “Li Muyang, who do you think fat grandpa is? At such a critical time, how could I leave my brother by himself and escape?”

“———” Li Muyang’s eyes were brimming with tears, he was deeply touched. At the critical moment of life and death, he did not leave; fatty really is a good brother.

“Besides, even if I tried to escape, they won’t let me—-your head is worth one hundred thousand gold coins—-my head is also worth fifty thousand gold coins,

okay? Fifty thousand gold coins is also money, how would they not want money after seeing it? ”

Li Muyang was stunned: “your head was also offered a bounty, too? Why did you not mention this before?”

Fatty’s face became crimson red from anger, he hissed: “I did not want to say it——your head is worth one hundred thousand but my head is only worth fifty thousand? Is this not looking down on me?”

Li Muyang’s mouth opened wide and he nodded in agreement: “This is looking down upon you to the extreme.”

094 – Swordsman Gu Mo!

Chapter 94: Swordsman Gu Mo!

A brave warrior prefers death to humiliation.

Li Muyang sympathises with the fat man's situation. They were both at the lower levels, how could his head be worth one hundred thousand when the fat man's head was only worth fifty thousand gold coins?

Moreover, if it's determined by size, then the fat man's head is larger than Li Muyang's by more than half—-this is simply bullying people to death.

Li Muyang patted the fat man on the shoulder and comforted him: "don't take it to heart, someday they will understand what you're worth."

"I'm going to let them know now." Fat man stared fiercely at the assassins who crowded around them and growled: "Fat grandpa does not display his power so you take him as a sick cat. We just got rid of the previous six groups, so obviously we could get rid of you four groups——"

Li Muyang quietly reminded him: "Those six came one at a time, this time these four groups are here all at once——is it really not a problem?"

Like a balloon been pricked, the fat man said in a weak voice: "Can you not transform now? Just like when you killed Cui Zhaoren—–"

"How many times have I explained to you, I didn't kill Cui Zhaoren—-" Li Muyang was very sensitive to this matter. Why did the fat man always say he killed Cui Zhaoren? There must be some misunderstanding, a big misunderstanding——-

"I know, I know. You're afraid of bearing the responsibility, if I were you I would also try my best to distance myself with this matter—but this is not something that we could act like nothing happened because you don't admit it. Counting on my fingers, everyone should know of this matter already, right?"

"——"

This time it was the fat man's turn to comfort Li Muyang, he patted him on the

shoulder. “It’s okay. If you killed, you killed there’s no use in regretting anyway ——whether you admit it or not, they are still going to kill you.”

“＿＿＿”

“That kid is Li Muyang, right?” The ugly woman asked, smiling and staring at Li Muyang, whose robe had turned from a pure white colour into a black robe. Her voice was as hoarse as a crow’s caw: “I want to borrow something from you.”

Li Muyang felt this line was extremely familiar, as if he had seen it in some bizarre novels.

Then, staring at that woman in disdain he said: “You just want my head?”

“That’s right. I just want to borrow your head for something.”

“I only have one head——give me a price.” Li Muyang said. “If the price is appropriate, I’ll buy it myself.”

“Hahaha, is that so? Someone offered one hundred thousand gold coins, if you can pay a higher price, I wouldn’t mind letting you off today—-”

“You see.” Li Muyang turned to face the fat man: “Money makes the world go around, ancient people truly did not deceive me. People could do anything for money, they don’t have any moral integrity.”

He then said to the ugly old woman: “I only have ninety seven gold coins.”

“Interesting. Really interesting.” The smile on the ugly woman’s face froze, she vehemently said: “In so many years no one ever dared to tease me, the Ghost Widow. Boy, the head on your shoulder is mine.”

“Even though you’re ugly but you have good taste—-this nickname is also not bad, it really suits your appearance.” Li Muyang said with a smile: “People don’t dare to joke with you because your face is too scary——”

“She is Ghost Widow——” The fat man grabbed Li Muyang’s shoulders and reminded him quietly: “She is the disciple of the Tang Clan of Chuan province, her whole body is covered with poison, she kills without a trace. No one dares to offend her.”

“So what?” Li Muyang said snappily. “If she let me go, I can even call her mum —-If I did not offend her, would she not kill me?”

The fat man paused for a moment and nodded in agreement: “Right, we’re going to die anyway, we must insult them——you ugly old witch, pigs are better looking than you, calling you a pig is insulting the pigs. Do you not look in the mirror? If you did look in the mirror, how would you shamelessly come out to kill? No wonder your name is Ghost Widow—-definitely no one would want to marry you. Your husband must not want to see your ugly face so he chose to commit suicide. I respect your husband who was brave enough to commit suicide, even though he was blind but he was courageous. You must have lived miserably, if I were you I would have knock my head against a boulder and die early, hurry go knock your head.”

“You fat pig—-you fat pig—-” Ghost widow was stamping with rage. Panting heavily, she glared at the fat man and shouted in an angry voice: “Even if I die, I would bring you along with me——”

As she spoke, her body suddenly flew over in the fat man’s direction.

Although it seemed like she moved, she actually shrank into few inches.

More than ten meters of distance between them instantly shortened, the frightening snake’s head on the walking stick in her hand suddenly pounced towards the fat man’s head.

The fat man did not care about his image, he immediately fell to the ground and rolled away.

Being round has an advantage, at least when he rolls he is much faster than others.

Ghost widow was furious, would she let off someone who insulted her so much?

Her two feet scurried along, only her silhouette and not her footsteps could be seen.

The snake’s head on the walking stick continually pounced towards the fat man rolling away the ground.

“My life is over——you ugly woman, you wicked woman, go take a look in the mirror———after looking in the mirror you would also commit suicide!”

The fat man rolled away while yelling insults. Although he is no match for this malicious widow, at least his mouth won't let her off easily.

The fat man used suicidal taunting to attract the attention of the old wicked woman, the line of sight of the other three groups was fixed on Li Muyang all along.

"Merciful Buddha! Buddhism is destitute but honest, we must borrow Li Muyang's head." The monk with a shovel said as he bowed to Li Muayng with one hand in front.

"That's right. No wine, no meat, we could not even afford lamp-oil——If Muyang could donate your head to us, the rest of our lives would be much better." The monk holding the ceremonial tool added: "Buddha once said that if he does not enter hell who would? Muyang looks like someone with great wisdom, you would grant us your head, right?"

"Monks don't steal. This head belongs to us seven demons of the Chong Valley ——If you want to take that head to exchange for lamp-oil money, you have to ask permission from the double swords of us seven brothers." The big demon with pigtails and dressed gorgeously yelled proudly.

"Where did this bunch of clowns come from?" The monk holding the shovel snapped.

"Brothers, make those monks bleed——I want to try the monk's blood and see if there's any difference with ordinary people———-"

Li Muyang stood there in silence.

He thought to himself: fight, fight, it would be best if you guys fight to death.

Now Li Muyang was the same as the Tang dynasty Buddhist monk in the story 'Journey to the West'; countless demons and ghosts wanted his head.

However, he and the Buddhist monk of the Tang dynasty were different. The Buddhist monk was long-winded throughout the whole journey like an old man not afraid of demons and immortals and he frequently drove away his strong disciple Sun Wukong——Li Muyang was much smarter than him, he did not help

old people and did not touch any women. He also often pleased and flattered his only brother, fatty, along the journey to avoid saying harsh words that could make him leave.

“Brave warriors stay calm.” The man wearing the green shirt riding the red horse finally spoke up. He looked at the two fake monks and seven transvestites. “We must not underestimate this child’s power, we have to work together. We must not let him escape or head up the mountains——- this is the moment to shine. Those who cut off an arm would be rewarded thirty thousand gold coins. Those who sever his head would be rewarded with one hundred thousand gold coins. ”

The price!

The price is being revealed now!

Before boarding the passenger ship, Li Muyang never thought his head would be that valuable——

“Who are you?” Li Muyang stared at the swordsman in green shirt and asked.

Although he remained silent from the beginning till now and only coldly watched everything happening in front of him, Li Muyang could feel he is the most dangerous person here.

A barking dog does not bite, a dog that doesn’t bark is the most vicious.

This green shirt swordsman did not carry any killing intent, did not display any anger, yet still sends a chill down Li Muyang’s spine, like he was being watched by a poisonous snake or ferocious beast.

“Swordsman Gu Mo.” The man with the green shirt said without any emotion.

The horse’s mouth was spewing out large amounts of hot air and the horse’s legs were shivering from the coldness.

Because its internal strength was being controlled, although the horse was terrified of this place it still could not escape.

“I don’t know you.” Li Muyang said while shaking his head. He could see the man was glaring at him with hatred and was not like the other people, where only joy could be seen——like they were looking at a golden mountain.

“Could it be he is of Cui Zhaoren’s family?” Li Muyang thought to himself.

“Li Muyang, today you must die.” As Gu Mo spoke, he applied gentle inward pressure with both his feet, both him and the horse soared into the sky.

The fine horse was startled, all four of its hooves were waving chaotically in the air.

The horse’s abdomen was squashing down in the direction of Li Muyang’s head, at the same time, the long sword in Gu Mo’s hand, which was as long as three metres, was unsheathed to behead Li Muyang.

The heavy sword did not have a sharp tip. Although Gu Mo’s long sword was not sharp but the edge of the blade was flashing with red lights, like blazing red flames.

Sisss——

Sounds of crackling fire echoed from the air.

The heat from the heavy sword ignited some flammable gases in the air.

Li Muyang’s whole body began to sweat heavily, his clothes nearly drenched.

He stood still at his original position and did not dare to budge in the slightest, but also because he was unable to move.

He would die whether he advanced or retreated.

Escape was even more impossible for him.

Let alone it was impossible from him to evade the strong hooves of the heavy horse, the giant sword attack was also within the range of a few metres.

No matter how Li Muyang maneuvers out of the way, he still could not evade the force of the sword.

What made him even more desperate was that the two Buddhist monks and the seven demons of the Chong Valley saw the man with the green shirt to be the first to make a move so they were worried that he would snatch the arm and head first so they immediately unleashed their brilliant skills and began to attack Li Muyang one after the other.

Surrounded on all sides, it was a life or death crisis.

Chapter 95: Get lost!

If he was his previous self then wouldn't his life be much easier and relaxing now?

Along the way, Li Muyang could not help but think about this question.

If that fight by Sunset Lake did not happen, if he did not have that conversation with Cui Xiaoxin, if he did not kill Crow and if he did not achieve first place in the imperial exam—-

He would still be that weak and cowardly charcoal teenager who would fall asleep every lesson, then go home and listen to Li Shinian sing and throw tantrums, eat and wait to die, without accomplishing anything in his life.

The greatest accomplishment in his life would be taking over his family business to become the owner of a small shop——That was a life he would be extremely satisfied with, right?

This period of time Li Muyang felt his life was very tiring. It was the first time he realised that it is incredibly difficult to just stay alive.

Along the way, he and the fat man fought off a total of six groups of assassins. After much difficulty they finally arrived at the bottom of Starry Sky but he had no idea they would be encircled by enemies like this.

Li Muyang felt indignant and furious.

In all those heroic novels he read, all the skilled masters have their own character and pride. When they kill they never allowed other people to help them.

The skilled masters would each throw out a white glove and then draw out their swords together. Both equally matched in skill and strength, it would a fair and close battle.

Li Muyang looked up at swordsman Gu Mo riding on the tremendous horse that was landing in his direction, then glanced over at the two monks, one holding a shovel and the other a ceremonial tool, rushing towards him from both sides, and the seven idiotic middle-aged men in gorgeous dresses and with pigtails swinging from side to side dashing towards him——What the hell? Do

they not know about Jianghu's morality and righteousness?

Those stories were all lies.

"Hahaha, Li Muyang————eat my shovel." The fat monk wielding the shovel was the first to arrive despite being the last to take action, he leaped out brandishing his thousand-kilogram crescent-moon shovel with the vigour of a tiger. The shovel able to shatter gold and break stones, and even split mountains in half.

The fat monk wanted to snatch the bounty of one hundred thousand gold coins so the shovel was aimed at Li Muyang's head.

As the shovel was swung down, Li Muyang's head was raised high up. The one hundred thousand gold coins are his.

The skinny monk with the ceremonial tl in his hand slightly slowed down his pace and avoided running straight towards Li Muyang, rather he circled around the crowd. In the course of running he pounded a wooden hammer against the ceremonial tool.

Thud—-

Thud—

Thud—

———-

With every hit, Li Muyang felt dizzy.

His body felt weak and he was unable to stand perfectly straight.

"Li Muyang, this is the wooden fish drum——-it's a strong attack of sound waves, hurry block your ears." Fat man Gongshu Yuan sharply avoided Ghost Widow's snake walking stick, and without delay warned his little companion to not be confused by the noise.

The seven idiotic middle-aged men came screaming over, because there were too many of them, it was impossible for them to spread out in an orderly fashion so instead they lined up in a queue.

The eldest wielding a double sword was the first to attack Li Muyang. His

attack failed and he immediately dodged out of the way, the double sword of the second eldest was already thrusting over

Their pace was bizarre and their sword skills were piercingly cold but they were perfectly coordinated.

No place to hide and no time to avoid.

Li Muyang's only choice was to attack head-on——-

Li Muyang clenched his teeth and punched out.

Bang—-

The fist that had accumulated power for some time was punched out at the horse's stomach.

Bang—-

A thud echoed throughout.

Where the stomach of the red horse directly suffered the blow, a large hole was ripped out of the leather protecting its body and scarlet-red blood began to seep out of the hole.

Li Muyang threw out that fist with all his strength; he actually punched a hole in Gu Mo's saddle.

Ao——

The horse felt the pain and cried miserably like crazy.

Its body struggled desperately, trying to escape the battlefield to a safer place.

But its body was clamped by Gu Mo's legs, and attached to the horse's bit was the rein that was controlling its destiny. Even if it wanted to escape, it couldn't move a single step.

Gu Mo firmly attached himself to the saddle so that it would become a part of his body.

He used the large horse as his shield and controlled the horse's body to land in the direction of Li Muyang's head while the giant sword in his hand began to buzz and the surrounding red flames headed over to harvest Li Muyang's head.

He and the fat monk's target was the same: to snatch the head——-

Of course, his sword was strike down diagonally from high up, if it did slash Li Muyang, the loss would be more than just a head, his body would also be severed in half.

"Die." Gu Mo's eyes were like lightning and his voice was bitingly-cold.

He was raised by the Cui family and received training from the Cui family. He is the bodyguard of the old grandfather of the Cui family, Cui Xichen.

Because he was always by Cui Xichen's side, so he knew what important position Cui Zhaoren had in the Cui family. Cui Zhaoren had always played a pivotal role, particularly in the fight for the key position of Left Minister—-He was the vanguard of the army to assassinate Lu Xingkong, he was the signal to defeat the Lu family.

Once Xu Da was transported back to Tiandu and successfully accused Lu Xingkong. It would be fine even if did not speak up as long as he commits suicide and leave behind a written testimony, their strategy would still go to plan. Thereby, directly sending the Lu family to the bottom of the abyss

The 'eye of the starry sky' of the Song family also does not like Lu Xingkong, when the time comes for the Cui family to launch an attack, surely other families would not just sit at the side and do nothing, right?

What was the result?

The Tiandu's Lu family did not have to do anything but Cui Zhaoren, an important person of the Cui family, was killed by the kid in front of him.

The situation has changed; the result has changed.

Now the Lu family made a false countercharge. Lu Xingkong brought an accusation against the Cui family before the emperor. The Cui family has to pay a double penalty and also have no choice but to suffer in silence. After seeing the emperor, the old grandfather of the Cui family returned home and smashed various rare and valuable porcelains and jewels———

Even the emperor was violently slapped in the face by Li Muyang. Several men

of his Monitor Division had been killed. Let alone he can't find who to be held responsible, he could not say any cruel words.

Being a monarch, how could he not be choking with resentment?

Therefore, no matter whether its for his clan or for the West Wind royal family, he needs to kill Li Muyang.

This was the main reason the old grandfather of the Cui family sent him here to be in charge of this attack.

Li Muyang knows he's in imminent danger but during all this time he had already participated consecutively in several strenuous battle. His body is tired and injured, that one punch just now has already exhausted all his physical strength.

Next to him was also the loud beat of the wooden fish drum, each sound drilling deep into his head, like an awl piercing into his brain.

Li Muyang felt his head splitting and his eyes reddened; he was about to pass out.

"I need to transform." Li Muyang shouted in his mind.

Black dragon brother, you should come out———hurry back here, I can't fight by myself——-

When to transform or how to transform was a completely unknown territory to Li Muyang.

He exerted all his strength to transform but at this critical situation of life and dead———why was there no reaction at all?

Li Muyang did not want to die.

He did not want to leave his parents or his little sister.

The world is so big, he wants to explore even more.

Starry Sky Academy is so cool, he wants to experience it for himself.

He wants to live.

"You guys go and die."

Li Muyang once again clenched his fist, the painful and even trembling fist.

He forged towards those assassins like he was unafraid of death.

No matter who wants to take his head, he will make them pay.

To the limits of his ability!

Hu—-

A gust of wind swept across.

Dust swirled in the air, the colour of the sky began to change.

Everyone was unable to see clearly.

Ao———

And then the sharp and loud cry of a crane was heard.

The gale came to a stop, the dust dispersed, light once again resumed in front of their eyes.

All these skilled masters have only came to realise that Li Muyang who was closely surrounded by them had disappeared under their nose.

“Li Muyang? Where did Li Muyang go?”

“Li Muyang is gone? That little thief knows teleporting magic?”

“Boss, do we give chase———”

————

Because of the vast movement over there, Ghost Window, who was in the act of hunting down the fat man, was also blinded by the strong gale blowing over.

She stopped, her eyes looking puzzled as they swept over to the other side. She immediately asked in a hoarse voice: “Li Muyang? Where did that Li Muyang go? You bunch of famous skilled masters actually let a nameless boy escape from your hands——-Do you not feel ashamed to stay in this business?”

Ghost Widow was furious.

Everyone is here to take the head to exchange for money but in the end the side supplying the head had disappeared out of sight.

Without his head, what do they use to exchange for money?

But then her eyes shifted away, the head of this fat man who she has been chasing around also has a bounty of fifty thousand gold coins. She quickly turned back around, her eyes glaring intently.

Thinking to herself that although this guy is not worth as much but fifty thousand gold coins could easily be obtained with his head. In any case, this fifty thousand gold coins is hers. No others could snatch it from her.

Whoosh—

A huge white crane swooped down from the highest of the heavens, then temporarily stopped over in front of everyone.

The target of everybody, Li Muyang, was riding on the crane's back.

No one spoke, their attention was entirely fixed on the handsome man wearing a beautiful robe with a white cloud pattern standing still on the back of the crane.

The man on the crane's back showed no intention to come to the ground. His clothes were elegant and beautiful, and his shoes were untainted by even a speck of dust, he looked like a celestial being descended to the world.

"Get lost." The man looked up at the sky and said without any expression.

Chapter 96: Wuyou helps out!

Some people are modest and prudent, and some are weak and incompetent. Some people are fierce and vengeful, and some are ruthless.

Who has the heavier fist then speaks with more weight. This is what the real world is like.

The handsome man dressed in a robe with a white cloud pattern stood tall on the crane's back, facing the sky. He did not pay any attention to the four groups of assassins, he simply uttered the words: 'get lost'.

What is arrogant and egotistical?

What is considering everyone else beneath them?

What is a model example of a pretentious prick?

Everyone was able to see for themselves today.

Language, manner, clothes, appearance, and most importantly the attitude of consider oneself a world above others——added all together, this made the others feel inferior.

Wuzhi monk was enraged, just now his shovel nearly cut off Li Muyang's head, the one hundred thousand gold coins was waving at him, but in the end it was snatched off by this bastard. He was robbed of his gold coins, blocking the road to money is the same as murdering his parents—-he did not care whether his parents were killed because he did not know who his parents are. However, his road for gaining money must absolutely not be blocked off.

This guy right now did not even take a glance at them, instead kept a straight face and commanded them to get out of here.

If they were to leave now, then that means they wasted time and effort in travelling thousands of miles here to lie in ambush?

If they were to walk away and this matter was to spread all over the divine continent, how can monk Wuzhi have the face to stand in this business again?

"If you have the nerve then battle with me for three hundred rounds, today I will take your dog's head to feed the wolf——"

Monk Wuzhi hurled all kinds of abuse, his language crude and extremely humiliating.

Whoosh!

Xie Wuyou vanished from the back of the crane.

And then instantly reappeared again.

Although Li Muyang was riding on top of the crane's back but he almost did not notice Xie Wuyou had left, even the moment his feet landed back on the crane's back he could not feel a breeze.

However, monk Wuzhi's cursing came to a stopped.

His eyes were swollen, his expression was of panic and fear, and his face in disbelief.

His mouth remained open as if he had something to say but only kakaka noises came from his throat.

Kakaka—

This sort of sound resonated across, like broken bones being rubbed together that make hair stand on its end.

"Senior——" Monk Wuzui dashed over in large strides wielding the wooden fish. "Senior, how are you doing? Senior, are you alright? Don't scare me—-"

Worried that something happened to his senior, he reached out and touched monk Wuzhi's shoulder.

Plop！

Monk Wuzhi's body fell forward to the ground; he had died already.

Everyone stared at the gorgeously dressed handsome young man in shock, it is difficult to believe that he killed a top expert in a split second.

Everyone present did not even see how he moved, except swordsman Gu Mo. Most likely the others did not know when he made his move.

His attacking style, whether he used his hands or weapons——

Were all unknown.

But the brave and fierce monk Wuzhi wielding a thousand-kilogram crescent-moon shovel was killed in the twinkling of an eye.

Cruel and merciless but unfathomable.

Xie Wuyou pulled out a white handkerchief from his sleeves, gently and carefully wiped his stained fingers.

“Our skin and hair are given by our parents. I was not by my mother’s side everyday and unable do my duty as children. Wuyou is already ashamed and guilty. When I established myself by practicing The Way, as to spread the fame of my name to posterity and thereby glorify my parents, it is my demonstration of filial piety. Wuyou failed to become famous, instead attracted notoriety for my mother, it really is difficult to forgive.” Wuyou said calmly, it seemed he was explaining why he killed him, but even more like he wanted to relieve the regret in his heart.

Establishing oneself, practicing The Way, and making his name famous in future generations, he still has a long way to go.

“You——” Monk Wuzui checked the breathing of his senior, only to discover he had died. It is difficult for him to accept this fact. The brothers had never separated from each other. One would attack enemies directly and closely with his shovel while the other harasses enemies using sound waves with his wooden fish drum. The brothers coordinate perfectly and countless famous masters have died in their hands. But today, before they even had the chance to launch their attack, this hateful pretty boy had already killed his brother.

What made him even more ashamed was that he wanted to let loose a torrent of abuse, but just as he was on the verge of saying what’s on his mind, he can’t help but hold back his words.

He did not dare!

Monk Wuzhi was killed after saying a few words, if he opened his mouth and began to scold at him, then wouldn’t he have the same fate as his senior?

“Why did you kill him?” Monk Wuzui finally thought of an excuse. “We brothers are in the business of doing things for people who give us money and we have no enmity against you, why did you suddenly join in?”

“You dare to commit violent acts at the bottom of Starry Sky?” Xie Wuyou looked like he was watching idiots when he stared at this group of people. “He deserved to die.”

“You’ve pushed me too far, today I have to repay senior——” Monk Wuzui clenched tightly onto the wooden fish drum, preparing to beat it forcefully.

“Troublesome.” Xie Wuyou simply took a glimpse of him and said: “I just wiped my neck clean. I have to get dirty again.”

“——” Monk Wuzui’s forehead was dripping with sweat. He was unable to swing down the wooden hammer he lifted it high up no matter what.

This pretentious prick———-How could his pretentiousness be so hateful.

The men with the terrifying names Wuzhi and Wuzui, one was killed in a flash, while the other——did not even have the courage to say something to the enemy who killed his brother.

“Brothers, our partner was killed by this boy——” The fourth eldest of the seven demons was simple-minded. Since Xie Wuyou was all by himself, he thought they could work together to kill him. How strong could one person be? There was a whole bunch of people on his side.

Pa–

The eldest turned and slapped his face, he scolded: “Shut up.”

“———”

Swordsman Gu Mo’s face blanched, his eyes stared at the handsome young man wiping his fingers on the crane’s back without blinking.

When they were preparing an ambush here, the possibility that they might alert people of Starry Sky did pass their mind.

However, the vision of people of the Starry Sky is unusually high, they generally will not take notice of the mundane world.

More importantly, he felt that with their present strengths, killing Li Muyang would be as easy as reaching into one’s pocket and it would only require one

round of battle.

But they had no idea that before they kill Li Muyang, they have attracted the attention of the Starry Sky, and also one valiant member of his party was killed with one move.

Now that they are in a dilemma, what should they do?

Gu Mo cupped his hand in the other and asked in a deep voice: “What is young master’s name?”

“Xie Wuyou.” Xie Wuyou bluntly answered. He does not care if people would come and reliate against him if they knew his name.

“Young master Xie, I know the rules of Starry Sky—-but we are at the bottom of the mountain.” Gu Mo pointed to Li Muyang, said: “This kid killed my young lord, he’s escaping from his crime. I cannot share the same sky with my enemy. If young master Xie can step aside, we will be very grateful. ”

“The rules has changed.” Xie Wuyou said without any expression. “No one is allowed to kill at the bottom of Starry Sky.”

“When did it change?”

“When I just said those words.”

“__ __-”

Xie Wuyou’s beautiful eyes swept across the audience, smiled and said: “You guys are not going to leave, right?”

“__ __”

Everyone’s line of sight was on Gu Mo. Gu Mo can be considered as their leader in this loose organisation. If Gu Mo said leave, they obviously would leave. If Gu Mo said attack, they definitely would advance——If Gu Mo did not say the words, they also would feel embarrassed to escape by themselves. If they ran over before the battle, how can they face other people of Jianghu.

Gu Mo glanced over at monk Wuzhi’s body, gestured with his big hand and roared: “Withdraw.”

His fierce eyes glaring at Li Muyang as he growled: “You can escape today, but

you can't escape your whole life—-I will remember this, your head can also stay attached to your body for now."

With that, he was the first to march towards Flower language plain.

Li Muyang jumped down from the crane's back, the white crane stared at him unhappily.

The crane likes cleanliness but Li Muyang's body gave off an unpleasant smell.

Li Muyang walked over to Xie Wuyou and bowed deeply: "Wuyou senior, I do not know how to repay your kindness——if you did not help out—I'm afraid, I won't be here anymore."

The fat man crawled up from the ground up, one arm wrapped around Li Muyang's shoulder: "Not 'I'm afraid', if he did not help out, you definitely and most certainly would have died——that Gu Mo's strength could be compared to those at the high stages of the free clouds. And his accomplishments in sword is simply too amazing, there is no way you could have withstood the power of his sword. "

The fat man cupped his hand in greeting at Xie Wuyou: "Gongshu Yuan. Li Muyang's brother."

"Huh?" Xie Wuyou pensively looked at Gongshu Yuan as he asked: "Gongshu clan?"

"Haha——" Fatty said with a blushing red face full of embarrassment: "I failed to establish myself, I have not made my name famous so that my parents become renowned, my family history and background are best not to be mentioned—-Li Muyang is a good brother that I watched growing up, I now leave him to you. He angered some of the most important people in the entire kingdom, he was chased all the way here. As long as he enters into Starry Sky Academy he should be fine, right?"

A smile surfaced on Xie Wuyou's face: "Starry Sky is the most simple and the most complicated, you will know when you arrive there."

Gong Shuyuan nodded, it's obvious he also knows about Starry Sky Academy.

"Muyang, my worthy little brother, you finally reached the foot of Starry Sky,

there shouldn’t be any danger from here—-Us brothers should also part at this point. I will go back and put in more efforts, hoping that one day I will also be able to climb to Starry Sky. Us brothers could be together, travel between heaven and earth. ”

“Thank you, big brother Gongshu.” This time Li Muyang sincerely called Gong Shuyuan big brother. If this fat man was not by his side and helped him along the way, he would never reach the foot of Starry Sky. “After today, I don’t know when I will see you again. ”

He picked up the Understand Heaven sword from the ground and cried: “Your little brother, I, have nothing precious with me, only this Understand Heaven Sword is valuable—-The owner of this sword told me to give this sword to a suitable owner, I think brother Gongshu is a good owner. As they say: a sword matches well with a hero——well, brother Gongshu, don’t run——”

Chapter 97: Wine, women, avarice and temper – the four cardinal vices!

Gongshu Yuan ran off like a rabbit.

A big and plump rabbit.

Li Muyang's face was full of regret, clenching onto the Understand Heaven Sword that he was unable to give away. "Why did brother Gongshu run off? It's fine that he don't want the present but I still have many parting words to say to him."

However, from this small matter, Li Muyang values fatty's character even more.

He was not subdued by force. In this journey, there were dangers after dangers, and attacks came one after the other. The two of them worked together and stood together in times of need, and now they finally arrived at the foot of Starry Sky. No matter how hard times were, or even in life-threatening situations he never once said he wanted to leave.

Neither riches nor honours can corrupt him. He clearly knew that Li Muyang's head was worth one hundred thousand gold coins, and as long as he beheads him while he was fast asleep or unguarded, he could have lived comfortably for the rest of his life. Even if his own head was also offered a bounty of fifty thousand gold coins, he had never thought of selling his own head—-

Also the Understand Heaven Sword was made by smelting meteoric ores and was created by a famous master, its value is no less than one hundred thousand gold. But from the beginning to the end, he did not even glance at it twice.

A good brother like that is rare.

Li Muyang secretly decided that this is his brother.

Xie Wuyou looked at Li Muyang and said comfortingly: "The divine continent is vast, there will definitely be a chance to see each other again."

"I hope so." Li Muyang watched fatty's silhouette in the far distance, he sighed slightly. Along the way, the two have shared hardships together and also faced numerous enemies together. They ate, slept, laughed and joked together, and built a very strong friendship. Seeing his friend disappear into the distance, Li

Muyang found it difficult to bear.

“Fatty, the divine continent is vast, we will see each other again.” Li Muyang thought of Xie Wuyou’s word and repeated softly to himself: “I’ll wait for you at Starry Sky.”

Xie Wuyou knew that Li Muyang was sad to part from fatty, he tried to change the subject: “Junior Muyang do you know the name of this mountain?”

“Nameless mountain.” Li Muyang answered. Fatty had told him a short while ago that this mountain is known as nameless mountain. It really is strange that such a large mountain does not have a name.

“So junior Muyang already knew.” Xie Wuyou chuckled aloud: “The outside world calls this mountain ‘nameless mountain’ because no one has given it a name. But students and teacher of the school like to call this mountain ‘broken mountain’. ”

“Broken mountain?” Li Muyang’s face looked confused, he raised his head to see what the mountain actually looks like.

But the mountain is huge, stretching over thousands of miles. It towers into the clouds like pillars extending to the heavens. Since only a corner of the mountain can be seen, it was difficult to know the true face of the mountain.

“That’s right. This mountain was originally nameless so it was called nameless mountain. But a dragon slayer immortal travelled here and was extremely happy when he saw this mountainous region. He soared high into the sky, drew out his sword, and slashed off the mountaintop. After levelling the dome-shaped top, he asked the nine nations to build Starry Sky Academy at the top. The dragon slayer was the first president of Starry Sky Academy.” Xie Wuyou’s face was full of admiration when he talked about this dragon slayer sage, an expression of praise and worship. “Because the mountain was cut off, so the mountain is also known as ‘broken mountain’.”

Li Muyang was dumbstruck after hearing this.

A sword could break off a mountain into a cliff and he could ask financial help from the nine nations to build Starry Sky Academy—–How remarkable was he?

Dragon slayer sage, he was the celestial beings in legends right, right?

In Li Muyang's mind, only celestial beings were able to do something like this that makes the blood racing.

Li Muyang was excited to the extent that he could not control himself, he was proud of himself to become a part of Starry Sky Academy, he wished he could immediately climb to the top of the mountain and kneel down in front of the Dean and take him as his teacher.

He did not want to ask to have the ability to break off half of the mountain with his sword, he just hoped he could behead his enemies.

If he had the power of a dragon slayer, would he still be worrying about assassins attacking him?

"Broken mountain—-so this is the origin of the broken mountain." Li Muyang's face flushed, his eyes shining. "Wuyou senior, as long as I enter Starry Sky Academy, I will also have the opportunity to be a dragon slayer like the Dean of the school?"

"Naturally." Xie Wuyou loftily replied. "Starry Sky Academy exists to train people to become elites."

"In that case——" Li Muyang pursed his lips and smiled. At this very moment he was bursting with joy, if he was not worried that Wuyou senior would look down on him and that people would think that he has not seen much of the world, he would already grinned and rolled across the ground laughing happily. "I have a question for Wuyou senior, how often does a dragon slayer sage appears in Starry Sky Academy? On average, how many years will it take for someone to become like that? "

"Ten thousand years." Xie Wuyou once again lifted his head to look at the sky.

"——" The smile on Li Muyang's face froze. This world isn't as wonderful as he imagined.

Worried that his answer will deal a blow to the young little junior, Xie Wuyou then hurriedly encouraged Li Muyang: "Become a deity is easy but become a dragon slayer is difficult. Even if you can't become a dragon slayer, you could still set foot in the astral projection realm and also proudly roam the Starry Sky, and be able to move unhindered throughout the divine continent. Among the heaven

and earth, where could you not go at that time? ”

“—Of course, as long as Muyang junior try your best and never give up. It’s possible you would also become a dragon slayer sage of Starry Sky Academy. After all, some things are not about age but in terms of talent. Several dragon slayer sages in a year were also common. Perhaps the miracle will happen with you?”

Li Muyang is a very simple person but someone easily swayed, after listening to Xie Wuyou encouragement his blood was racing again and his eyes filled with determination. He clenched his fist and said: “Thank you senior Wuyou, I will work hard. For myself and for my family——”

After he mentioned his family, Li Muyang began to worry again. He deeply bowed at Xie Wuyou once again. “Wuyou senior, Muyang has a request. I want to ask Wuyou senior for help.”

He can’t help it; fatty said that Li Muyang would be fine as long as he enters into Starry Sky Academy. And when the moment comes he has to cling to someone powerful and request the skilled master for protection. Only then, will his family far away in Jiangnan would be safe.

Li Muyang has not entered through the doors of Starry Sky Academy but he already found someone powerful—-no, the only person from Starry Sky that he knew was Xie Wuyou. If he did not hold onto him then who?

Since he just helped him drive off some strong enemies and also saved his life, asking him for help again would be quite shameless.

However, even if he is branded as a rogue, this was something he must deal with.

“Just say what is on your mind.” Xie Wuyou bluntly said.

“As Wuyou senior have seen already, I have angered a very powerful family so they repeatedly sent people to hunt me down. I finally arrived at the foot of Starry Sky after much difficulty, and in the future I have senior and many fellow schoolmates to protect me, I obviously can sleep with ease of mind now. But I’m worried about my family far away in Jiangnan, since those enemies can’t find me,

they might seek revenge from my family—-Every time I think about this, I feel my heart is torn with anxiety. If my family is not safe, I'm afraid there is no way I could concentrate in learning. Wuyou senior can you help me take care of my family? Please."

Li Muyang bowed deeply to Xie Wuyou once again. His words were sincere and his manner was urgent.

This matter can't be ignored any longer. If anything were to happen to his family, he could never forgive himself. So what if he becomes a dragon slayer sage?

Xie Wuyou slightly raised his brows: "Logically speaking, we usually do not care about ordinary affairs——However, since Muyang brother have asked me, I will ask someone to help take care of them. This is because of our friendship, you must not tell other teachers and students."

"Muyang understand." Li Muyang was thrilled, he immediately answered in a cheerful voice. As long as he has help from Wuyou senior or even if Wuyou senior found someone to look after them, no matter who it is, his family will certainly be safe.

Although Li Muyang did not know what realm Wuyou brother was actually in, but his skills was simply too astonishing when he killed the monk just now. He will never be as good as him.

"Then let's head up the mountain." Xie Wuyou said with a smile. To this junior he really gives preferential treatment.

Li Muyang looked up at the unapproachable mountain peak, then headed towards the back of the crane: "I have to trouble senior Wuyou again."

He thought to himself: the mountain is high and the path is dangerous, senior Wuyou came here on a crane. If he gave me a ride, then I would be able to climb to the top of the mountain within minutes. He could also quickly reach the mountaintop to complete the school registration.

Xie Wuyou stayed still in his original position, smiled at Li Muyang on the crane's back.

A puzzled expression formed on Li Muyang's face, he looked at Xie Wuyou and

asked: “Senior Wuyou, what’s going on?”

“Junior brother Muyang, you need to climb the mountain by yourself.” Xie Wuyou said, smiling. “Other people can’t help.”

Li Muyang’s face was flushing bright red, he immediately got up on the crane’s back, and repeatedly apologised to Xie Wuyou: “I’m sorry, I’m sorry I thought ————–senior could give me a ride.”

“The mountain breaks off easily and the road is difficult.” Just as Xie Wuyou spread out his robe, he was already standing on the back of the crane. The crane lifted its head high and seemed very tame, completely different to the disgusted face it displayed when Li Muayng climbed on its back. “You’re unaware of the true face of Broken Mountain because you’re here. Muyang junior, ahead of you are the four obstacles of the four cardinal vices, wine, women, avarice and temper——-I wish you luck.”

Ao———–

With a loud and clear cry the white crane flapped its huge wings and leaped into the air, entering into the midst of the clouds.

Blown by the strong wind, Li Muyang staggered back and nearly fell over, his clothes stained with grass and his hair covered in dirt. His dusty hair and face looked extremely pathetic.

“Starry Sky Academy———–” Li Muyang gritted his teeth thinking to himself: “Would I ever reached there in my lifetime? If I managed to climb the mountain, only to find that all my hair and beard are completely white and I’m approaching old age——I most likely won’t find a wife or girlfriend?”

Li Muyang felt worried.

Chapter 98: Rich and tough!

Once Wuyou senior was gone, trouble came.

Li Muyang gazed at Nameless Mountain, also known as Broken Mountain. It stretched almost perfectly straight into the clouds. He began to worry to the extent that his hair was almost turning grey.

Hearing the story of the dragon slayer sage splitting Broken Mountain with his sword does get one's blood racing, but to journey step-by-step to achieve that kind of achievement is incredibly difficult.

Li Muyang trudged along the foot of the mountain; there were neither roads nor any stepping-stones. Everything was in a primitive state.

The surface of the rocks was rugged and uneven, and covered densely with thistles and thorns. The mountain was high and steep, and seemed difficult even for apes and monkeys to climb.

Li Muyang scanned the surroundings. Everywhere was empty wilderness with no human beings to be seen. There were several unknown colourful birds in the distance looking over at Li Muyang's side but he had no intentions at all to scare them off.

Li Muyang discovered a remote corner at the bottom of the mountain where he could take off his trousers to throw out the dozens of gold coins in his trousers crotch.

Beneath his trousers were the pants his mother specifically sewed for him. Under the pants was yet another layer. If he did not take off his trousers, ordinary people would never be able to steal the coins that were hidden deep inside his pants.

"Sew stitch by stitch before he leaves, for fear his return be delayed." While Li Muyang took off his pants, he sang the song 'The Wandering Son'. As he thought of his mother's proud face when she took his hand and gave a toast at the party she hosted after finding out that he was admitted into Starry Sky Academy, and

when she stayed up late at night to make new clothes for him because she was worried he won't have enough changes of clothes, and also her red eyes when she said farewell to him but she still desperately squeezed out a smile, Li Muyang felt a lump came into his throat. There was a strong urge to burst into tears.

"Son is disobedient, I just left the house but I've got into so much trouble already——" Since no one else could hear him, Li Muyang mumbled to himself as he took off his trousers, pouring out his fears and grievances. These were words he had not even confessed to Fatty before. "I didn't mean it, I just think—– people should not bully others. Everyone is away from home, people should be reasonable, right? Say something nice and be good, this is what you always taught me. Mum, dad and Shinian——you must stay well. I will learn martial arts, you have to wait for me to come back—-I will borrow Wuyou senior's crane to visit you guys. Nothing must happen to you—-"

Li Muyang planned to tear away the bag filled with gold coins tightly sewn to the crotch of his pants but he tried several times without success. His mother was worried that the bag would rip easily, so the stitches were closely sewn.

He once again turned around to sneak a peek at the surroundings, it looked deserted and dark, even the several coloured birds have disappeared to somewhere else.

Li Muyang finally felt at ease, he squatted down to remove his underwear.

The weather was gloomy and cold. Li Muyang felt the full effects of the cold air attacking him. Streams of chilly air headed towards his crotch——and spreading to his more private area. It was the first time he experienced the funny feeling of wind blowing against his butt.

Even with his pants held in his hand, he still was unable to pull out the coins inside.

If he did not remove those coins, they would rub against the inside of his thigh as he clambered up the mountain

He can't tear it apart with his hand and it was too dirty to use his teeth. Li Muyang had no choice but to use the Understand Heaven Sword to tear it open, then immediately the gold coins came crashing to the ground.

Li Muyang was delighted, it was the first time he was thankful for Cui Zhaoren's gift.

Valuables should not be revealed inadvertently, this is the irrefutable truth throughout all ages.

Just as Li Muyang squatted down, getting ready to pick up the gold coins, he suddenly felt a little uncomfortable.

He glanced left and right, but only noticed grass rustling in the breeze and mist enveloping the mountain, there were no signs of humans or animals.

He looked ahead and behind. In front of him was the tall mountain and behind was Flower Language Plain, it also did not seem like someone would come out here at this time. After all, Li Muyang has trekked across Flower Language Plain for a few days already, but still has not come across anyone.

He looked up and down.

Li Muyang's eyes suddenly widen, his mouth forming into an O shape.

Above his head was a large stone bulging out.

On the big rock stood a few tremendous Kunlun Hummingbirds. On those hummingbirds sat their finely dressed owners.

The boys and girls reaction was the same as Li Muyang's, their mouths stretched into O shape as they stared back, wide-eyed, at him squatting down naked while digging up gold.

Both sides looked at each other eye-to-eye, sending out fiery sparks into the air.

"You——-" Li Muyang's face muscles twitched, he almost cried out loud. "Perverts."

"——–"

Kunlun Hummingbird is a type of bird native to the Kunlun mountain range, they are shaped like a bee but their figure resembles a big bird. Their feathers are brown and white in colour, and their body is slender yet they possess incredible strength. They are able to carry people on their backs and their mental capacity is similar to the Dove.

These Hummingbirds can move through the air silently at a tremendous pace. So many officials and nobles used them to travel afar.

Of course, only if your family was rich enough. Such a hummingbird costs over one hundred thousand gold coins but they have a short lifespan. They are likely to die after one year, so the gains do not make up for the losses.

“Did we come to the wrong place?” Sitting on one of the giant hummingbird was a handsome black-robed youngster. He looked surprised to see Li Muyang: “I have never heard of something like this happened before at the bottom of Starry Sky Academy. I heard from one of the teacher back at home that while trekking up the mountains we will have to withstand the test of the four cardinals vices, wine, women, avarice and temper———Is this the women obstacle? Why isn’t it a beautiful woman? ”

“Yes, I also thought it would be a woman with big breasts and big butt, that would test my soft spot, I did not expect it to be naked man——I do not have this preference.” Another round-faced youngster said jokingly. “Chu Xun, I heard you royalty are attracted to this type, aren’t you?”

“There is an uncle in the family with this preference but he likes handsome men with delicate pale skin—-” The black-robe youngster said with a smile.

In the middle, being surrounding by everyone was a beautiful girl in a white Chinese dress, her enchanting purple-red hair was extremely dazzling. She sat silently on one of the hummingbird’s back and stared at Li Muyang, without blinking, covering his crotch area with his pants and squatting on the floor.

“Hey———” Li Muyang yelled at them: “Are you guys done? It’s very rude to stare at others as they change.”

The round-faced teenager let out a loud and deep laugh, his fingers pointing at Li Muyang: “he’s naked in public but he’s complaining about us sneaking peeks at him——-if it wasn’t because the hummingbirds happened to land on this large stone, who would even look at you? What’s so good about you? ”

“Exactly. Seeing you dirty our eyes.” A girl with pigtails thundered.

“Who are you?” The purple-hair girl finally spoke up. There was no expression

on her face and her voice was without emotions.

“Who are you?” Li Muyang asked back.

“Lu Qiji.” The purple hair girl coldly answered.

“Lu Qiji?” Li Muyang quietly repeated the name, thinking to himself that this girl has a very nice name, it’s comparable to his name. So, he did not want to give any impression of weakness. “I’m Li Muyang.”

These people were dressed beautiful and emitted a noble aura. Also, they were heading up Broken Mountain on Hummingbirds meaning they are also students here to register for Starry Sky Academy.

These people would be his schoolmates, Li Muyang felt it was necessary to improve the relationship between them.

Of course, if they could make things easier for him——By turning around for a moment or by closing their eyes, it would have been much better.

Give him a little time to put on his trousers, it’s really cold for him to squat naked. His butt was nearly frozen.

“It really is him.” The purple within Lu Qiji’s eyes was flashing, the hummingbird she was riding on also felt uneasy. These birds are incredibly sensitive, able to clearly sense their owner’s mood.

Li Muyang tried his best to squeeze out a smile: “schoolmates——you guys are also freshmen of Starry Sky Academy, right? ”

“Of course we are. Round-faced youngster chuckled: Don’t tell me a butt naked guy like you is too–?”

“I am—”

Li Muyang thought this guy was extremely annoying. What do you mean by ‘don’t tell me a butt naked gu like you is too–?”

“The mountain is high and the roads are dangerous, I just want to tidy up and prepare myself so it would be easier to make my way up the mountain.” Li Muyang explained.

“So you took off your pants?” A faint smile emerged on the black-robe

youngster's face, there were neither contempt nor anger, instead it seemed like he sees this as a good show. Before entering in Starry Sky he encountered such a funny guy, it really is a joy.

"——-"

"Li Muyang." Lu Qiji looked at Li Muyang with a calm expression. "I'll wait for you up the mountain."

With that, she jumped down from the hummingbird's back and climbed towards the top of the mountain.

Her body was as nimble as the wind, with a few maneuvers she was already several dozens of meters up the mountain. And then disappeared in the blink of an eye in front of Li Muyang.

The hummingbird that she rode here chirped loudly before it sprung high into the air and flew away.

Li Muyang was secretly rejoicing in his mind. Could it be that this beautiful little fairy likes him?

Otherwise, why did she pay special attention to him the first time they met, and she also said: 'I'll wait for you at the top of the mountain?'

Li Muyang once read in a book that the criterion to be a popular man is 'rich and tough[1]'.

Li Muyang took a glimpse at the scattered coins around his feet and then his eyes shifted down at his crotch, he suddenly understood the meaning of that sentence.

A book holds a house of gold, a book also shares important philosophies on life.

"Lu Qiji wait for me." The round-faced youngster shouted to Lu Qiji in the distance, then quickly hopped off the back of a hummingbird and headed up Broken Mountain at a rapid pace.

The black robe youngster did not leave, his pair of pretty phoenix eyes looked at Li Muyang pensively as he asked: "you two know each other?"

[1] Literally translates to big wealth and thick tool (°5°)

99 – Overestimating your ability!

The role Chu Xun gave himself was a free and leisurely prince. Just like his father.

His father is the cousin of the emperor of West Wind Kingdom, Chu Xianda. But due to the fact he had no prospect of succeeding the throne, he gave his attention to dog walking, cock fighting and drinking everyday. His days were free and unfettered, like the celestial beings themselves.

According to Chu Xun's plan before, he was going to study at West Wind University for a few years with the woman he loves. After his father goes up to the heaven, he shall ascend to take over his position. At that time he could expect a lifetime of wealth.

What he did not expect was that Lu Qiji had a change of heart, she now wants to study at Starry Sky Academy.

Chu Xun knows of the existence of Starry Sky Academy, he also knows it is the most mysterious institution in the world.

Since Lu Qiji wants to study at Starry Sky Academy, he must also go to Starry Sky Academy.

Because Lu Qiji is the woman he loves.

Even in his heart, he already sees Lu Qiji as his woman.

Besides her, no other women could enter his vision or touch his heart.

Starry Sky Academy was established from the financial help of the nine countries, so the first Dean agreed that every king could appoint twenty outstanding members of the royal family to enroll into Starry Sky Academy.

In addition, the school is completely independent to the nine countries and not subjected to the jurisdiction or sanctions of any one country.

Chu Xun had begged his father but his father immediately refused.

Within his father's eyes, he saw fear and worry. He understood clearly what his father was afraid and worried about.

Being the younger generation of the Royal family, he is inherently one big step closer to that position than ordinary people.

He was already good enough, if he was to pursue study at Starry Sky Academy ——what does he really want in the end – just what kind of position was it that he sought?

They have to consider the opinion of the emperor, the crown prince, but also the opinion of the other princes—-

Chu Xun was not willing to give up so he asked his uncle, the emperor. Chu Xianda readily agreed, he stated that men should study at Starry Sky Academy. It is only at Starry Sky that people could become elites.

Therefore, Chu Xun has the chance to be schoolmates with Lu Qiji again.

This was also the reason for them to arrive at the foot of Nameless Mountain at the same time.

What they did not expect to see was—-a naked guy desperately trying to rip his pants with his own hands and gritting his teeth as if he bore a deep grudge against the pants.

This was originally thought to be a funny scene but a completely different reaction was seen on Lu Qiji's face.

He knows Lu Qiji too well; he knew that she was a very proud woman.

She never pays any attention to the majority of people, even with himself—– he was treated a little special because of the several years they spent together. But she took the initiative to talk to this guy and say 'I'll wait for you at Starry Sky Academy'—-this is not the Lu Qiji he knows.

There must be something weird!

What was weird? Naturally, it must be that Li Muyang crouching on the floor naked covering himself with pants.

Chu Xun had to understand this problem thoroughly himself. Otherwise, he will never have peace of mind.

"Do you know each other?" Chu Xun asked Li Muyang, his voice full of hostility.

“What?” Li Muyang was still squatting in the corner, thinking to himself that why won’t this guy leave? If you don’t leave I can’t wear my trousers, and without trousers I can’t stand up gracefully and greet people politely.

“I said—-have you and Lu Qiji met before?” Chu Xun became impatient. He does not like to repeat himself because it makes people think he’s stupid.

“No.” Li Muyang shook his head. “Fellow schoolmate, can you turn around and let me put on my trousers—-I look indecent.”

Of course Chu Xun knows Li Muyang looked indecent but he did not care. No matter how he looks he will never be as good as him.

His eyes remained firmly fixed on Li Muyang: “Qiji knows you?”

“Whether she knows me or not, you should ask her—-” Li Muyang felt somewhat uncomfortable. This brother is too cold, right? Did he even listen to what was said? “Anyway, this is the first time I saw her.”

Before he met Lu Qiji, the most beautiful girl Li Muyang has seen was Cui Xiaoxin ——No, Li Shinian. No, It’s Cui Xiaoxin. Anyway they are both the most beautiful women he has ever seen.

After meeting Lu Qiji, he still thinks the most beautiful women are Cui Xiaoxin and Li Shinian—After all, these two are real people. One of them is his lively and cute little sister and the other was his first crush.

As to this Lu Qiji, her beauty is too strong just like the overhead sun. Although the sun shines brightly, people are unable to fully open their eyes.

Li Muyang liked a beauty that brought with it a hint of liveliness. It was something touchable by the hand, something that had the warmth of a normal body ———– Lu Qiji’s fiercely concentrated intense beauty, was like a scalding heat that would burn anyone just by touching her.

Even though she likes him because of his money and toughness, Li Muyang did not like her.

Be true to your inner heart.

Li Muyang thought to himself, if she approaches him or confesses to him—-his words must be firm. If he did not like a woman, then he can’t waste her time.

Chu Xun caught notice of Li Muyang's unpleased face, Li Muyang's unpleased face made him even more displeased.

This little prince is usually praised highly by everyone but this naked guy looked at him in disgust, this was very difficult for him to accept.

"Look after yourself." Chu Xun said coldly, within his eyes was a dangerous light. "Starry Sky is vast, the journey is long——I advise you to take care of yourself."

"I know what you're worried about." Li Muyang said aloud.

That was too much, Li Muyang was ready to stand up and fight back. Squatting on the ground all along, what was that all about? This was something that really made one angry.

His body only risen slightly but he immediately bowed down again.

It can't be helped, his bottom half was still butt naked.

"What?" Chu Xun coldly glared at Li Muyang and asked loudly.

"You're worried that Lu Qiji likes me, right?" Li Muyang's voice sounded colder. First, he met Cui Zhaoren and now he encountered Chu Xun, he had learned many things from them, such as pretending to be cool.

"You're overestimating your strengths."

"You don't have to worry about it." Li Muyang said, raising his voice. "I don't like this kind of non-mainstream bizarre clothing. The West Wind Kingdom sees dark hair as beauty, intentionally dying hair purple is a sign of immaturity——I like sensible girls. "

"—-Die." Chu Xun thundered, his sword flashed out of its sheath.

This idiot has no idea of death or danger, he dares to insult the woman he loves. Today he must be killed.

"Chu Xun——" The pigtail girl by his side stopped him without hesitation. It was clear that this girl was extremely concerned about the black-robe prince, she looked worried as she dissuade him: "Starry Sky has their own rules, you must

not act rashly——this guy is really hateful, but he is still a student of Starry Sky, wait until we enter the school. Only at that time we could teach him a lesson."

Chu Xun slowly calmed down again, knowing that Zhang Wanting was right.

Starry Sky Academy has its own set of rules that even the royal family can't interfere. If he killed Li Muyang at the foot of Starry Sky, no one even knows how those old monsters of the Academy would deal with him—Though it is certain the West Wind Royal family could hardly influence the end result.

"If you were in Tiandu, you would be a dead man already." Chu Xun pushed the sword back into its sheath and said with a cold hard voice.

He did not want to hear Li Muyang's remarks anymore, he leaped down from the hummingbird and quickly climbed towards the top of the mountains to catch up with Lu Qiji. On the way up the mountain they will encounter obstacles of the four cardinal vices, he was afraid Lu Qiji would fail—-even though he thinks Lu Qiji is the most outstanding woman in the entire kingdom.

Zhang Wanting's delicate eyebrows slightly raised, looking annoyed at Li Muyang. "When you're away from home, it's best to sharpen your vigilance, otherwise before you have the chance to clamber up to Starry Sky you would already be killed—-"

"You deliberately stayed behind to take another look at me?" Li Muyang extremely disliked this girl with pigtails. Who did I provoke? Did you not see I was bullied? She told me to sharpen my vigilance——is there no longer any truth, goodness and beauty in this world?

"You——" Zhang Wanting's pretty face turned crimson-red, clenching tightly onto the sword in her hand, she snapped: "Li Muyang, I'll remember you. Wait until we enter into the Academy and see how I deal with you——"

With that, her feet on the back of the bird stretched slightly and her body immediately soared high into the air, climbing towards Nameless Mountain.

Li Muyang breathed a sigh of relief. He hurriedly put on his pants to cover his butt.

It wasn't until now that he became aware the skin of his inner thigh area had peeled off. When his mother hid those gold coins, she never thought his journey

would be so tough and he would encounter so many problems along the way.

Then, he put on his trousers, and felt instantly much warmer.

He picked up the dozens of pieces of gold scattered around the ground into his arms. Then clutching onto the Understand Heaven Sword he was unable to give away he began to make his way up Nameless Mountain.

He has no hummingbird or white crane, he also did not know how to soar into the air.

He can only rely on his own legs and the strength of his body.

Climbing over rocks and crossing over thistles and thorns, poisonous snakes and strange insects may catch you off guard.

Li Muyang's clothes were ripped, and across his face and body were several red marks. Just as a blood-sucking locust was scuttling across his body he used the Understand Heaven Sword to split it into two pieces. The blood-sucking locust did not die, jumping up from his body again it was split into two again——

He thanked Cui Zhaoren again, with all his heart.

Ahead of him was an old Cedar tree and under the tree was a drunkard. The drunkard exposed his chest and shouted to Li Muyang: "Boy, come drink with me. Then, I'll let you up the mountain."

100 – Six taboos for drinkers

The drunkard's age could not be determined, even his face was not clearly visible. His long hair was disheveled and his beard was full and grew long past his face, concealing almost half his face, only his muddy eyes and his alcohol-stained mouth could be seen.

He was clad in a long gown that its original colour was not distinguishable, only its current ash-grey colour was seen.

With a huge bottle of wine in his arms, he did not show any celebrity like style or looked like a skilled expert, reclining on a large stone with tiger stripes.

Drunkard's eyes blearily looked at Li Muyang as he pointed with his fingers and said: "Boy, come and drink with me. I'll let you up the mountain.""

Li Muyang instantly understood that this is the wine obstacle of the four cardinal vices that senior Wuyou mentioned to him.

Li Muyang felt as if his dreams were shattered, in his mind, a school like Starry Sky Academy——although is not well-known, there should still be a skilled master like Li Taibai or Du Ruofu, showing up at this time. Performing sword dances amid blossoming flowers while reciting the famous piece of writing 'Drink up': Throughout time sages and saints will be forgotten, only those who drink leave behind a reputation next to their name——

Why did they find a sloppy lazy guy here for? Do you know he is destroying the ambience and downgrading the Academy?

Also, this test is not that difficult, it's easily understood with one glance.

Li Muyang trotted over to the drunkard, looked at him in the eye and said: "I don't want to drink, how can I head up the mountain? "

Li Muyang's heart condition was not too good when he was young. He was not allowed to eat any irritating food. Let alone wine, he was rarely allowed to drink tea.

Therefore, he was not good at drinking.

“This is the alcohol test, then it obviously it’s alcohol-related. If you don’t drink how could you pass? Absurd. Absolutely absurd.” The drunkard was unimpressed with Li Muyang’s attitude.

“Wine, women, avarice, and temper, these four walls, everyone is hiding within; whoever can jump out will live a long and happy life.” Li Muyang bowed deeply at the drunkard: “I ask you to allow me to pass, I will be very grateful.”

In order to deceive him to let himself pass this test, he copied a verse from a classic poem that people from ancient times used to urge others to drink.

“You don’t have to drink, but you can’t insult alcohol. What would you know about wine? Drunk but suddenly overcome at a sudden stroke, recovering wide-awake, listening quietly to try to hear a sound of thunder, looking steadily he does not see the mountain’s towering majesty in the sunshine. He did not feel the burning heat and biting cold, or the lust of desires or the greed for gain. Overlooking everything of the world and the rivers bearing up the duckweeds. This is the supreme state. Only those at this state can then travel without restraint at Starry Sky. The drunkard’s emotions become more intense, he did not like Li Muyang describing the ‘wine, women, avarice and temper’ as four walls. “Wine is an oar that determines whether life is long or short. How could wealth or other sort of filth be compared to it?”

The drunkard gulped down most of wine before reciting in a loud voice: “To drink but not be drunk is heroic, to be in love but not be controlled by it is highly disciplined, if ill-gotten gains is taken, don’t take it, and to have feelings yet not be angry. Boy, you follow the rules too much, which causes you to fail instead. This method does not work, go elsewhere and think of other ways.”

Li Muyang’s brows furrowed.

Senior Wuyou only told him he will need to pass the four cardinal vices tests but he did not mention what exactly would be tested.

Is it assessing the students’ drinking capacity or assessing the students’ ability in adapting to changes?

Or is it assessing the accumulation of knowledge or evaluating the quality of wine or the personality of the student?

It is said that the quality of wine is the same as the character of a person. Does that mean the drunkard was able to determine his character from his attitude towards drinking?

He did not want to drink, so in his eyes he has a bad personality?

After he borrowed a verse of Buddhist Monk Fo Yin's poem, that old man immediately struck back with a poem by Su Dongpo, Fo Yin's close friend. This proves the man was not only not sober but also extremely knowledgeable——

Li Muyang was deep in thought, looking blank for a moment.

The drunkard took another mouthful of wine and muttered to himself, looking confident and at ease.

His lips smacking loudly, it seemed he was enjoying this bottle of wine.

After a short moment, the drunkard looked at Li Muyang sideways out of the corners of his eyes, shouting: "Boy, are you going to drink or not? If not then get out of here, don't stand in front me blocking my view. You think too much, it makes me sick. Starry Sky Academy is getting worse, now they recruit anyone. It damages the school's reputation."

"It's not that I won't drink, but I don't want to drink." Li Muyang let out a light sigh. "I have six taboos with drinking."

The drunkard also has a desire to learn. Especially any knowledge to do with wine, he was willing to understand more. He calls himself a wine immortal, how would he not know of everything about wine?

The drunkard's bleary eyes immediately regain brightness, watching Li Muyang intently: "There are six taboos?"

"First, the people-taboo for drinkers. When drinking, we first have to look at what kind of people we're drinking with. Elegant, brave, frank, free of worldly concerns, friends, old friends, beautiful people, and capable people. These eight types of people are all acceptable to drink with. Not just to drink but to get drunk with. But wine elder——-You are sloppy and not elegant, you do not have the characteristic of a hero, you attempted to conspire and is not direct, and as to the other categories: free of worldly concerns, close friends, old friends, a beautiful or capable person, you are also neither of them. We have nothing to do

with each other, why should we drink together? Even if we drink there's no joy, so what's the point? ”

“Wonderful.” The drunkard applauded greatly, after pouring a big mouthful of wine into his mouth he then continued: “Wonderful. This is wonderful, what are the other five taboos?”

“The place-taboo for drinkers. When we drink, we must first take a look at the surrounding. Being surrounded by flowers, bamboo groves, high rooms, decorated boats, quiet buildings, and pavilions are all good places to drink at. A couple of friends, reciting poems or simply talking are all wonderful things while drinking wine. ”

The drunkard's eyes scanned around the surroundings, it was lush greenery all around, simple and unsophisticated. Suddenly he became a little restless as he stared at Li Muyang: “Kid you know something. Continue, please continue, what are the other taboos? Tell me them one by one.”

“The time-taboo for drinkers. Springtime, flowers in bloom, crisp autumn, inches of fog, winter snow, under the crescent moon, and cool evenings. What is it now? Where are we now? Are there spring flowers? Winter snow? Are there layers of fog or crescent moon? It is cold, gloomy and wet, we can't drink here.”

“Kid——” The drunkard felt the wine bottle in his hand was as heavy as thousand kilograms, the wine inside also seemed tasteless to him. Staring at Li Muyang, he said: “Kid you are the real wine immortal, please go on——What are the other taboos with drinking?”

“To drink because of a test, it would only be a glass of bitter wine. If we drink now it would spoil the good wine inside. If the first drunkard of the world Liu Ling knows that a good bottle of wine was wasted like that, how would he not be stamping with rage? ”

Drunkard discarded the wine bottle in his hand, stood up and straightened his clothes. With a serious expression, he bowed to Li Muyang and repeatedly said: “Thank you Sir for dragging me back from the wrong path. You helped me get back on the right path to become a wine immortal. No boy——Sir you did not fail, but I did.”

Li Muyang was rejoicing secretly, the knowledge that came rushing out deep inside his head became really useful.

Then, he glanced at the drunkard and asked: “Wine elder, in that case, can I head up the mountain?”

“Of course.” The drunkard answered without hesitation. But then, he quickly stopped. “No, no. You can’t now.”

Li Muyang looked puzzled, asking: “Mister, can I go or not?”

In front of the magic mirror of the Water Moon Cave, were several men and women clad in robes with wide sleeves watching this scene with great interest.

“Such a spectacle I never seen before, it’s unheard of.” The man wearing a tall hat said.

“When have the wine elder ever called someone else ‘Sir’? This is the first time I heard him.” A man in a robe whiter than snow said with a look of astonishment.

“It has happened before. I’ve seen it in ancient books——” A fat man with triangular-shaped eyes added, sitting in the corner. He finally found an opportunity to talk.

“Bookworm, you’re the most knowledgeable——-” A voice interrupted.

“———”

—————

Li Muyang obviously was unaware that he was being closely watched through a magic mirror as he was tested. He just thought this drunkard regretted allowing him up the mountain because he sees him as a friend that knows about wine, so he kept him behind to drink with him for a lifetime.

“No, no.” Drunkard repeatedly waved his hand. “Sir it’s not that you’re not allowed up the mountain. Sir you have passed the examination, of course you can make your way up the mountain. Sir you have profound knowledge regarding wine, I have come to realise that you are way above me. So I just want to—-hear you talk about a few other taboos before I send you up the mountain.”

“Is that so.”

Li Muyang pondered carefully for a while. “ Just now wine elder adopted a tough stance and would not budge. The taboos of drinking, forcing one to drink, losing oneself in alcohol, incoherent talk, feigning drunkeness, escaping from reality, pretending to feign admiration. You forced me to drink so I did not drink.”

“__ __”

Where is the fun in drinking? Where is the mood? Drinking some unknown wine with some people you do not know, no matter how good the wine it will only taste like bitter medicine. Wine elder, why force someone?”

“Wonderful.” The drunkard applauded enthusiastically. Turning around in circles was the same as drinking a big bowl of fine wine. “Too wonderful for words.”

He again brushed his clothes and bowed deeply at Li Muyang: “Listening to your words was better than drinking for ten years. No, no, no, better than drinking good wine for decades.”

He straightened his back and made a gesture of invitation: “I hope I can learn from you in the future. Sir, please go ahead.”

After he finished talking, the scene suddenly changed.

The drunkard disappeared; the big stone and the Cedar tree also vanished. All the scenery before was nowhere to be seen, as if nothing happened. Was it all a dream?

Li Muyang stood still at the steep dangerous dark mountain path, it was the route he passed by before.

He once again embarked on the long journey.

101 – Qiji greedy for wine!

Lu Qiji climbed the mountain at a tremendous speed.

Her pace brisk and her body light and graceful. With little effort, the dangerous, rugged rocks that seemed difficult to tread across passed under her feet.

Forest birds flew off in alarm, flapping their wings wildly and screeching as they gained height. Venomous snakes and insects came scuttling out of the dense thicket and the crevices of rocks to attack, to punish her for intruding their territory—-The sword in her hand flashed with almost no clear trajectory, sectioning the venomous snakes, toads and poisonous centipedes into countless pieces.

There was a strong anger in her heart so the moment she drew out her sword she did not show any mercy or forgiveness.

“Sister Qiji—-sister Qiji wait for me——” Shouting from behind was a rounded-face chubby boy. Lu Qiji ascended the mountain too fast, no matter how hard he tried it was still impossible for him to keep up.

Lu Qiji did not care, continuing to dash towards the peak of Nameless Mountain without stopping.

She needs to summit the mountain at the fastest rate.

At least she has to reach the top before that stupid Li Muyang.

As the eldest daughter of the powerful Lu clan, she had already heard that she would encounter the four cardinal vices obstacles along the way. However, she did not take this to heart.

To ordinary people, the four cardinal vices are four walls; how many irresolute people have been kept outside of these four walls? But to Lu Qiji, how could this even be considered a test?

The scene in front abruptly changed, Lu Qiji entered into a different world.

A lonely pavilion hiding inside a bamboo forest.

An old man stood by himself with a bottle of spirit in his hand.

Clad in a gray robe, the kind-looking old man was enjoying a bowl of wine all by himself. As if he was startled by Lu Qiji's footsteps, he glanced up and waved to her: "Girl, come drink with grandpa. The wine is called Bamboo Heart, bamboo does not have a heart, but after drinking my wine everyone will have no more worries. Drown our sorrows in wine and feel free—-what do you say?"

Lu Qiji walked over, confident and calmly settled herself on the stone bench opposite the old man.

From her side she reached for a wine bowl, placing it down in front of the old man, she said: "Pour the wine."

Smiling, the old man carefully poured the wine into the bowl. "The wine, Bamboo Heart, is pure but strong, and is famously known as 'one cup collapse'. You should start off with half a bowl and try it first."

Old man filled only half the bowl with wine, then pushed the bowl towards Lu Qiji.

Lu Qiji wrapped her fingers around the bowl of wine and finished it off without pausing, she set down the empty bowl in front of the old man again and said: "Fill it to the brim."

His smile became even warmer: "Girl you are a good drinker."

He once again picked up the wine jar, filling the bowl to the brim with the Bamboo Heart wine, then pushed the bowl over to Lu Qiji.

Lu Qiji lifted the bowl and gulped down the wine, letting the wine trickle down and stain her lips. "Fill it again."

The old man looked at Lu Qiji's face. He then proceeded to pour a bowl of wine to the brim once again.

Lu Qiji lifted up the big bowl, without the slightest hesitation chugged down the strong alcohol.

Placing the bowl on the stone table, she said once again: "Fill it to the brim."

Old man tightly held onto the wine jar in his hand and did not move, he looked at Lu Qiji and said: "Girl, although this is a test but if you fail this test, you also

fail in reality. You're drunk in the test—-then in reality you also won't be conscious. I am not the real me, but you are the real you. This is not an unrealistic rosy view, not a dream. It's fantasy and also real life at the same time."

"Garrulous like an old woman, so annoying." Lu Qiji snatched the bamboo wine from the old man's hand, tilted her head and glugged down the entire jar.

In one breath, Lu Qiji finished more than half of the jar of bamboo wine that's left.

She threw the empty jar onto the table. "Bring more drinks."

The old man picked up the empty jar and cradled it in his arms looking distress, his eyes welled up with tears: "it's wasted. So much wasted. Bamboo Wine is brewed with one hundred thousand bamboos, but you wolfed it down—-"

"The wine is pretty good. Do you have anymore? Hurry and bring it out." Lu Qiji ignored the old man's lament, she looked at the old man and asked.

"No. Not even one. Leave, get out of here." The old man began to drive her away from here. "Don't let me see you again. Too bad, it is too bad—– I wasted me a good jar of bamboo wine. That was my one month of supply."

"Stingy." Lu Qiji used her sleeve to wipe her mouth, flicking her purple hair back over her shoulders she turned away and walked out of the bamboo forest.

Cold and arrogant, like a spoiled little princess.

——-

——-

Chu Xun is arrogant and did as he pleases, although he wholeheartedly wanted to catch up to Lu Qiji but possibly because he headed in the wrong direction, no matter how fast he ran, he still could not catch a glimpse of Lu Qiji's figure. Even the chubby boy who ran in front of him was nowhere to be seen, it seemed everyone had suddenly vanished.

As if he was the only person exerting effort, the only one still climbing up the huge mountain. In the eyes of strong people, they simply looked like ants on the mountainside. Ants that want to conquer the tall mountain.

Chu Xun is an extremely proud man. He doesn't like to be an ant, but he even more dislike others seeing him as an ant.

So, Chu Xun was in a bad mood.

Just as he was very much preoccupied with his thoughts, Chu Xun misstepped.

Before, it was still at the height of the summer season but now it was winter, wind and snow were howling around in the air.

He found himself in a desolate land, overlooking a vast expanse of darkness; only at the foot of the mountain was a brightly lit thatched cottage with smoke billowing from the chimney, it looked like the owner of the house was cooking.

Chu Xun hesitated slightly, but in the end decided to walk towards the cottage.

He knocked on the door and cried aloud: "Is anybody in?"

A few moments later, a young man clad in a head-to-toe green outfit brimming with a scholarly appearance pulled open the door, his eyes quizzically looked at Chu Xun standing in front of the door as he asked: "Are you heading up the mountain?"

"That's right. I'm exhausted from walking and it is snowing outside, so I came to ask for a bowl of wine to warm my body." Chu Xun answered. He knew what was ahead of him so it would be better make things clear.

"Please come in." The green shirt scholar stepped aside, letting Chu Xun walk past him.

Once Chu Xun stepped through the door, he hurriedly closed and locked the door to keep the snow and cold wind out.

The house looked simple and humble, with only a few pieces of furniture scattered around the room.

This was the poorest family prince Chu Xun had ever seen before.

A big pot was merrily bubbling away on the back of the stove, sending across a pleasant aroma of sweet potatoes mixed with rice. Chu Xun's stomach rumbled, he found himself suddenly hungry.

The green shirt young man also felt a little embarrassed, he explained: “It’s sweet potato porridge, we only have this in the house—-if you don’t mind, we can eat it together? ”

“Sounds good.” Chu Xun replied.

The green-shirt young man ladled out bowls of the steaming, aromatic sweet potato porridge, set them down on the table and proceeded to wash two pairs of chopsticks. He and Chu Xun both took a seat, hunched over, they slurped down the bowl of hot porridge.,

The green shirt youngster’s eyes ran across the four walls of his house, he noticed even the pickled radish in his house was finished yesterday.

His gaze swept around the corner to where a dusty earthen jar was situated.

His eyes lit up. “Big brother, I have no dish to accompany the rice porridge, it really is no way to treat a guest——There’s a bottle of sweet potato wine that I personally made. We could have it with our dinner?”

Chu Xun nodded. “I came here for a drink late at night and in the midst of a snowstorm. Being able to enjoy sweet potato porridge while drinking sweet potato wine in the snow is good enough.”

“That’s wonderful.” The green shirt young man scurried over to the wine jar, cleaned the surface of the jar and washed two teacups, one of which was chipped.

Then, he filled the pitch-black cups with wine.

The liquor was strong, a strong alcoholic aroma hits the nose even before tasting.

Chu Xun inhaled deeply and exclaimed: “Good wine.”

Bring praised by a guest, the green shirt youngster face was flushing in embarrassment, he said in a cheerful mood: “it really is a good wine. Usually I won’t drink it unless I have guests.”

The two toasted and drank together. Chu Xun complimented: “Although the sweet potato is the most common wine and has a slightly rough feeling in the mouth but what’s good is its fresh and clean taste, it is best accompanied with

food. However, it is inferior to the palace's Taibai wine."

"Ah? Brother you have drunk Taibai wine before?"

"Correct. Taibai wine is a sorghum liquor, it is made from suxi rice crops. The mature and plump rice kernels are harvested and the hulls are peeled off, then they are repeatedly sieved and fried. After, they are soaked in spring water. After a series of cumbersome procedures, it is sealed and allowed to ferment, eventually it will become an excellent wine." Chu Xun carefully explained.

The green shirt youngster listened attentively, swallowing saliva in his mouth. "Although I have not personally tasted myself, but from what I hear it must be the best wine in the world."

"Although the wine is good but it is not the best wine in the world." Chu Xun said: "the best wine is called Drunk Beauty. In the snow season, the flowers in the garden are stained with dew or snow—-the snow and dew are collected with a beauty's lips, and then brewed together with hundreds of flowers, the taste is fresh and clean but intense. That is the best wine in the world."

The green-shirt youngster said with a hopeful face: "if only I could have a taste of Drunk Beauty sometime in my life."

"There will be an opportunity." A hint of a smile played across Chu Xun's lips, watching the green shirt young man he continued: "I see books on the table, are you going to sit the imperial exams?"

"One can find a beauty as good as a jade in books, and also find a house of treasure among them. Rich and honour is obtained from books, for this reason I am willing to work hard." The young man in green answered in a clear, bright voice.

"What about after passing the imperial exams?"

"I hope I can taste fine wines around the world." The green shirt young man said with a glistening and hopeful face.

"I am the little prince of West Wind Kingdom, I am Chu Xun, a member of the royal family—-if I recommend you into the palace for wine tasting and to taste fine wine around the world, would you be willing?"

The young man's cheeks were flushed with excitement, without delay he rose from his chair and brushed his clothes before he knelt down: "I am willing to follow little prince for leadership. As long as little prince has any commands, I am willing to risk my life and limb to help out."

"Stand up." Chu Xun sat upright on the chair, raising the cup and gazing out at the snowstorm.

He knew that he had already passed this wine obstacle.

Temptation is a double-edged sword, it might hurt you or injure me. It only depends which side is stronger or which side is richer.

102 – Piercing the soul!

Having smoothly passed the wine obstacle, Li Muyang was in a happy mood.

He came to understand that these four tests were not to determine their cultivation level, but to assess each climber's mind and willpower.

If in each test he needed to show his power and ability in order to succeed, Li Muyang would have failed and returned home at the foot of the mountain.

Senior Wuyou has said before that Starry Sky Academy is a mysterious school that exist to cultivate outstanding talent, but besides the outstanding students like him who depend on their own hard work and talent to be admitted into the school—- there were the second generations of the rich and powerful families rely on their family's background and connections to enrol into the school.

At any time, in any country, these kinds of shady transactions that make people give up hope still exist.

For example, today at the foot of the mountain he encountered that purple hair, odd girl and also that callous young man clad in a black gown who looked more arrogant than the Lord of Jiangnan City, as if he was telling others to not provoke him because there's nothing he can't do. Also, there's that simple-minded round face fat boy——Oh, that's purely prejudiced against the fat boy. Li Muyang has seen a clever and quick-witted chubby man before, for example, Gongshu Yuan who parted from him moments ago. Although he carries a body of fat around he was still able to roll around amidst the forest of blades and arrows. Li Muyang was dumbstruck watching him; the word miracle cannot even be used to describe what he witnessed.

Li Muyang secretly came to a decision that when he enters into Starry Sky Academy and become a great Star Cultivator, he must speak up for the millions of people in the world, to wash this dark world and to restore the clarity of the earth and the brightness of the moon and sun.

Li Muyang clenched his fist; he felt his burden was even heavier.

李牧羊握了握拳頭，覺得自己身上的擔子更加沉重了。

Wine, women, avarice and temper, these four walls, whether or not he could break through these walls and withstand the temptation——Li Muyang has confidence in himself.

Li Muyang slashed off a suitable sized branch with the Understand Heaven Sword, and sharpened the end of the branch to be used as a walking stick to aid his strenuous climb up the mountain.

Li Muyang used the 'Understand Heaven' sword to chop off a branch. He then pulled off the leaves, using the sharp end as a walking stick to climb upwards.

The higher he climbed, the colder it was.

The higher he climbed, the more difficult it was.

Li Muyang felt his breathing was laboured and more rapid, and his steps heavier than the one before. Each step grew slower and he felt it was draining all the strength of his body.

He was situated deep in the mountains, unable to see the plain below or the peak of the mountain above.

He did not know how long he still had to climb, but he knew he must continue to climb.

This was his only way out, and also his family's only way out.

Li Muyang has no choice.

"Snap—-"

As he shifted his weight forward, the branch in his hand snapped into two.

Li Muyang was caught off guard, his body jerked forward, stumbled and fell to the ground.

He settled himself on top of a large rock and took off his shoes. Several blisters of various sizes were on both his feet, he grimaced in pain as his fingers gently touched them.

His crotch area was also very uncomfortable; layers of skin had already been peeled off by the gold coins. Although he already removed the gold coins at the foot of the mountain but the wound has not healed yet. After a series of

struggle, blood was seeping out.

Li Muyang felt an indescribable pain, could this be considered as the toughest admission into a school in the entire history?

“Li Muyang—”

A clear and sharp sound fell distinctly on his ears.

The voice was very familiar, like it often surrounded his ears.

Li Muyang flung back and saw Cui Xiaoxin dressed in a blue outfit standing among the green trees and red flowers with a slight smile on her face.

“Cui Xiaoxin?” Li Muyang’s eyes hurriedly scanned around, he noticed he was still situated in the middle of the mountain and the scenery remained the same.

That crooked tree was still crooked, the broken tree was still lying on the ground, and the shoes that he took off were still emitting a stench of dead fish —-

An intersection between fantasy and reality, Li Muyang did not know whether this was fantasy or reality.

“Li Muyang, long time no see.” Cui Xiaoxin said with a smile.

“Yes. Long time no see—-” Li Muyang was still unsure whether the person in front of him was indeed Cui Xiaoxin, so he hesitated when speaking. “What are you doing here?”

“I came to study.” Cui Xiaoxin answered.

“Ah?” Li Muyang was thrilled. “You’re also going to Starry Sky? Are you not going to West Wind University? I thought you were going to study at West Wind University.”

“I did say that——” Cui Xiaoxin nodded, her delicate eyebrows perked up slightly, there was a hint of joy and pride when she answered: “I changed my mind. Can I not?”

“Yes, of course.” Li Muyang was smiling from ear to ear. To be able to meet an old friend and not only that, the only female friend he has—-it really felt wonderful. Before, he was still regretting that he went to Starry Sky; he thought

he would never have the chance to see Cui Xiaoxin. And when they finally meet again after many years, only to discover Cui Xiaoxin is married and that their lives will never intersect anymore——He hid this melancholy in his heart all along. Although they accidently met deep in the mountain and he knows he won't have any chance, Li Muyang still felt very happy.

At least, she is not married to someone else yet. They could still read together, study together, watch the sunrise and sunset together, and be good friends.

"That's too good. I was worried it would be boring at Starry Sky since I don't know anyone there, I did not expect to meet you here—-Let's head up the mountain together?"

"Alright." Cui Xiaoxin readily agreed: "We can look after each other."

Cui Xiaoxin's gaze shifted over to Li Muyang's feet, her brows ruffled: "Is your feet injured?"

Li Muyang's feet immediately shrink back into the pile of clothes, he urgently tried to slide his feet back into his shoes, ashamed to show his ugly and unrefined side to the girl he likes.

"Nothing's wrong, we can go after I put my shoes back on." Li Muyang said aloud.

"Don't move." Cui Xiaoxin said aloud.

Li Muyang's hand stopped, asking: "What's the matter?"

Cui Xiaoxin walked over to Li Muyang, Li Muyang scuffled his feet into the clothes.

Cui Xiaoxin crouched down in front of Li Muyang, her soft delicate white hand pulled his feet out from buried under the clothes.

Li Muyang stared at his smelly feet full of blisters, he felt very ashamed. His crimson face hurriedly explained: "I wash my feet every day, just that I sweated a lot from climbing, so it's like this——ignore it, I will be better when I reached the top of the mountain."

"Does it hurt?" Cui Xiaoxin looked up at Li Muyang and asked.

Her worried face stirred Li Muyang's heart, like the pleasant surprise of when the iron tree blooms.

"It doesn't hurt." Li Muyang said, shaking his head.

Then, he felt he said something wrong; he abruptly cut off the conversation so how does he expect a girl to continue the conversation? Li Shinian said before this is something to avoid when talking to girls.

"It's okay." Li Muyang added. "I can't feel the pain when walking, I only came to realise it's a little sore after I took off my shoes."

"You need to pop those blisters or else it would hurt every time you walk." Cui Xiaoxin said. "There is still a long way to go."

"Okay. I'll burst them." From his waist Li Muyang drew out the Understand Heaven Sword, preparing to puncture those blisters one by one with his sword.

Cui Xiaoxin reached out to stop him: "not with that—-"

"Are you going to cut off your foot?" Cui Xiaoxin said, her voice full of sternness.

"Then with what?" Li Muyang asked.

Cui Xiaoxin pulled a pearl hairpin from her hair: "With this."

She clamped the thin end of the pearl hairpin in her mouth, her captivating red lips opened slightly and then the corners slightly curled.

The pose was too attractive, but also ambiguous, like a picture he saw in a magazine he stole from Li Shinian's room. Li Muyang's heart pounded faster and his body increasing in warmth.

Worried that he would have the same reaction as other boys, he immediately lowered his head, avoiding Cui Xiaoxin's stunning pose.

Cui Xiaoxin lifted Li Muyang's foot until it rested on her lap, although separated by the layers of clothes, Li Muyang could still feel the heat of Cui Xiaoxin's body and the soft feel of her skin.

This was the first time he came into such a close distance with a girl, except Li Shinian—-Li Shinian often placed her smelly feet on his lap and forced him to cut

her toenails. But Li Muyang never saw her as a woman.

“Don’t move.” Cui Xiaoxin carefully held Li Muyang’s quivering right foot: “relax your body.”

“I can’t relax my body—” Li Muyang said.

Realising he just said something wrong, he at once corrected himself: “I’m not nervous, I just feel a little cold—-hahaha——”

After chuckling aloud awkwardly a few times, the redness on his face also faded slightly.

Cui Xiaoxin looked up at Li Muyang and said: “It may hurt a little but you have to endure it, it will heal soon——”

She pulled out a white handkerchief from her sleeves, using that white handkerchief as a mat for Li Muyang’s foot.

Li Muyang’s felt it was wasted, such a fine handkerchief, he wanted to permanently carry this around with him.

With the pearl hairpin in her hand Cui Xiaoxin swiftly used the tapered end to pop one blister at a time, then, with the handkerchief wiped away the yellow fluid seeping out from Li Muyang’s foot.

Li Muyang’s body flinched back, but he pretended to act calm.

“Does it hurt?” Cui Xiaoxin asked worriedly.

“It doesn’t hurt. It doesn’t hurt at all.” Li Muyang said with a smile. Seeing Cui Xiaoxin’s fingers coming into contact with the pus dripping down his foot, he tried to stretch his foot away. “Xiaoxin, let me do it——I know how to do it.”

Cui Xiaoxin restrained Li Muyang’s foot, preventing him from moving further, and said with a stern voice: “You, I have started already, why are you nagging? If I were to get hurt, would you leave me aside and not care about me? ”

“Of course not.” Li Muyang said with assurance. “If you’re hurt, I’ll definitely take care of you.”

“Me, too.” Cui Xiaoxin said. As she talked, her hand deftly punctured another blister.

Each time Cui Xiaoxin poked him with the pin, Li Muyang could feel his body and mind trembling, a numb and tingling sensation.

It seemed like she not only pierced his foot, but his soul.

103 – Go through fire and water!

Cui Xiaoxin movements were skillful, quick and neat.

While one hand used the pearl hairpin as a needle to puncture the blisters, her other hand gently and cleanly wiped off the blood and pus leaking out from within using the white handkerchief.

After all the blisters on Li Muyang's foot were punctured, she wrapped the handkerchief around the pearl hairpin, then from her bag pulled out a small white porcelain bottle, removed the cork, and evenly sprinkled the medicinal powder on the soles of Li Muyang's feet.

She then took the Understand Heaven Sword from Li Muyang's hand, cut two blue pieces of fabric from her clothes and used as medical gauze to wrap around Li Muyang's feet, she finished by playfully tying a beautiful bow.

"Better." Cui Xiaoxin said with a smile on her face. "I have not done this for a long time, so my skills are out of practice. It's not that good, I hope you don't mind."

"You did this kind of thing before?" Li Muyang looked at Cui Xiaoxin with a face full with gratitude. He saw the fear and concern between this girl's eyes and her seriousness when she wrapped the bandage.

Beautiful, excellent temperament, studious, and a good family background, a good girl like her did not mind how dirty he looked and was not disgusted by the strong stench of his feet. She used her pearl hairpin as a needle to pierce the blisters on his feet and her slender lily-white hand attentively bandaged his feet, Li Muyang was emotionally moved.

If he could, he wants to marry her on the spot—-of course, Cui Xiaoxin would have some objections.

"I learnt it before." Cui Xiaoxin gave a soft smile, looked down and picked up the handkerchief and pearl hairpin: "My mother always wanted me to learn many things, literature, economics, painting, calligraphy, sewing, applying medical bandage, as well as the treatments for some common illnesses——After

learning about the common illnesses, I had very little opportunity to practice. I never thought it would be put to use today.”

Cui Xiaoxin wrapped the handkerchief around the pus-stained pearl hairpin and buried into the ground. Then, she washed her hands in the nearby stream.

When she returned, she brought back a huge leaf contained with water and held it in front of Li Muyang. “Drink it. Your lips are dry.”

Li Muyang took the leaf filled with water and drank it in one breath.

Cui Xiaoxin then drew from her pocket a handkerchief to wipe Li Muyang’s sweat, which was raining down his face: “You will be more comfortable like this ——-”

“Xiaoxin——” The muscles in Li Muyang’s throat moved up and down, constantly swallowing saliva, and his voice hoarse when he said: “I can do it myself.”

“Why be so polite with me?” Cui Xiaoxin said, pouting. While busying herself, her cheeks were a rosy red and beads of sweat formed like dew on her forehead. Her facial features were like a painting and her every movement delights the eye.

“Then I won’t.” Li Muyang giggled foolishly. “You’re so nice to me, I don’t know whether this is real or fake——even if it’s fake, I’m still very happy.”

“Fool. I’m standing right here in front of you, how could it be fake?” Cui Xiaoxin chuckled, the corners of her lips curled into a smile as she looked at Li Muyang.

“Yes. It’s real.” Li Muyang repeatedly nodded. “I was worried it would be fake ——”

Cui Xiaoxin’s gaze wondered over Li Muyang’s body: “Do you have other injuries?”

“Yes.”

“Where?”

Li Muyang glanced at his crotch. “I am ashamed to say——I bandaged there myself. “

Cui Xiaoxin also noticed Li Muyang's line of sight, a faint blush came to her face, then crept down her neck as she said in a low voice:"Pervert."

"———" Li Muyang thought to himself, just how was he a pervert? He didn't ask her to help him bandage there.

Li Muyang slipped into his shoes, then borrowed the little white porcelain bottle from Cui Xiaoxin and threaded his way through the woods to treat himself.

After he came out, he returned the little bottle of medicine to Cui Xiaoxin but Cui Xiaoxin did not accept. "You can keep it with you."

Since the blisters on his feet have been punctured he was able to walk much more comfortably now.

Li Muyang drew his sword and with one slashing stroke severed off two branches of a tree, leaning heavily on the branch, he and Cui Xiaoxin walked up the mountain.

Boy and girl walking together, the journey became less exhausting.

His heavy steps before became easier and effortless, not only did he walk faster, he also could turn around to look at Cui Xiaoxin closely following behind him from time to time.

The majority of the time, they lowered their head, hastening on with the journey, but occasionally when they said a word to each other, they felt a long-lost understanding, like they were able to understand each other's mind.

Even though they did not talk, looking at each other, face to face, was enough to fill their lungs and hearts with joy.

"Ah——" Cui Xiaoxin suddenly exclaimed aloud.

Li Muyang quickly twisted around and saw Cui Xiaoxin knelt on the ground.

Li Muyang dashed to the front of Cui Xiaoxin, anxiously asked: "Xiaoxin, what's wrong?"

"Foot. I've sprained my foot." Cui Xiaoxin's brow wrinkled, her little face grew pale from the pain.

“Let me see.” Li Muyang said. He reached out to take off Cui Xiaoxin’s boot.

“Don’t.” Cui Xiaoxin stopped him. She was a girl, how could she let a guy take off her shoe?

“Let me see.” Li Muyang insisted. From the painful expression on Cui Xiaoxin’s face, he knew that she was severely injured, he had to examine her before he could relax.

Cui Xiaoxin nibbled on thin lower lip, eventually let go after some hesitation.

Li Muyang took off Cui Xiaoxin’s shoe and sock. Cui Xiaoxin’s delicate and fair foot was now right before Li Muyang’s eyes.

Li Muyang had no time to admire this beautiful foot, instead was focussed on examining the swelling of the ankle. He reached out and gently touched it.

“Ahh——” Cui Xiaoxin cried in a low voice: “Hurts. It hurts.”

“The ankle joint is injured.” Li Muyang drew his brows together and said: “Let me help you to massage it——do you have any medicine?”

“No.” Cui Xiaoxin answered, shaking her head.

Li Muyang swept his eyes all around, then ran into the woods and teared off a fiery-red dog bone grass. He rubbed the dog bone grass in between the palm of his hand until a red paste formed. Then, gently and carefully applied it on the swollen ankle.

“Cold.” Cui Xiaoxin spring back, trying to dodge.

“Dog-bone grass exerts an anti-inflammatory effect, although it has a fiery nature but its juices are ice-cold, it eases and relaxes your meridians, strengthens the bones and muscles and work wonders on sprained joints.”

“How do you use dog bone grass to heal my bones?” Cui Xiaoxin said coquettishly.

“———-” Li Muyang remained silent. He did not know how to answer this question.

“So you also know about medicines too?” Cui Xiaoxin asked, looking at Li

Muyang's eyes.

"Long illness makes the patient into a good doctor, I was often ill as a child, so I read many medical books——-" Li Muyang explained while slipping the sock back on Cui Xiaoxin's foot and helped her put on her shoe. "Your joints are injured, you should not walk for a while——"

"You can go first." Cui Xiaoxin said. "My foot won't get better for some time and the date for enrolment can't be delayed."

"I can't do that." Li Muyang said firmly: "We'll go together, if you don't go, I'll stay behind with you. How can I leave you all alone here?"

"But—-"

"No buts." Li Muyang supported Cui Xiaoxin up and then squatted in front of Cui Xiaoxin, turning his back towards her: "I will carry you."

"Li Muyang—-"

"Without you, I would never wake up from that state of lethargy. Without you, I would never be the first place in the imperial exams. Without you, I won't be here——-" Li Muyang said with a smile. "Come on, I'll carry you."

Cui Xiaoxin's eyes glistened, she gently laid her head against his back and wrapped her arms around Li Muyang's neck.

Li Muyang rose and hoisted Cui Xiaoxin up piggyback onto him.

Climbing up the mountain was already strenuous; carrying a person on his back was hundred times more difficult. Every step felt as heavy as thousand pounds, without walking far he was already dripping with sweat.

However, Li Muyang did not look like he minded at all.

It was his responsibility and was something he was willing to do.

"Li Muyang." Cui Xiaoxin leaned forward, resting her head on Li Muyang's shoulders. When her soft voice and her sweet breath murmured in Li Muyang's ears, Li Muyang felt he was going crazy.

This was a scene that only appeared in his dream. He did not expect today he would fulfil his wish.

“Huh?” Li Muyang answered softly. He felt his heart was melting.

“Your clothes are drenched with sweat.”

“Oh.” Li Muyang said.

“You can let me down. I will rest for a while until my foot is better then I will walk again.”

“No.”

“Then you should stop for a moment, sit down and rest.”

Li Muyang thought for a while before he said: “Your injury won’t get better for quite some time, even though I applied a layer of the juice of the dog bone grass, it will be at least one week before you could walk again. Rest is an option, in that case it would take at least ten days before we reach the top of the mountain——When I have the strength I will carry you, when I’m tired I’ll let you down and take a rest. If I’m by your side, I can take care of you.”

“But in that case it would be half a month before you reach the top of the mountain, and that’s only if everything go smoothly.” Cui Xiaoxin said worriedly: “What if you miss the date for enrolment?”

“It’s alright.” Li Muyang said with a smile: “Although the school told us the period of time to report to the school but they did not specify when we must climb the mountain. We’ll walk slowly together and then report to the school ——-Starry Sky won’t decline us because we’re late. That won’t make sense?”

“But—”

“Xiaoxin, it’s okay.” Li Muyang said eloquently: “Let alone carrying you up the mountain, I will carry you through water and fire, regardless of the sacrifice——”

Before the sound of his voice had died away, a loud rumbling noise fell on Li Muyang’s ears.

Li Muyang listened carefully and asked: “Thunder?”

“No——” Cui Xiaoxin cried, her voice trembling.

Her finger extending out, pointed in front where brutish giant waves came roaring down the mountain.

Flooding the sky and engulfing everything.

104 – Love trial is difficult!

Li Muyang stood aghast at the sight.

I just mentioned it casually, heavens you're not serious, right? It's just a joke, okay? Do you not have any sense of humour?

"I said I'm willing to carry Cui Xiaoxin through water and fire buy you don't have to immediately let torrents of water gush down the mountain——do you not know that a man's promise can't be put to test?"

LI Muyang even wanted to commit suicide.

The deep booming noise came closer and closer until it sounded like a constant crash of thunder in the ears.

A wave of white surged down the mountainside.

As if charging and breaking through the enemy lines, it came crashing down in the direction of Li Muyang and Cui Xiaoxin, sweeping away obstacles, eroding the mountain and breaking off trees along its way.

Li Muyang's mouth widened slightly to say something but nothing came out in the end.

Cui Xiaoxin was frantic with worry, screaming: "Li Muyang run——hurry run ——"

Li Muyang finally reacted, his limbs unfroze, tossing the branch in his hand aside. He dashed down the slopes.

This was the mountain road he managed to climb up after much difficulty, but now he has to head back down and at a much more rapid pace.

Crackle——

The incessant sound of the breaking branches grew closer.

Behind, were torrents of water grumbling and growling like a pack of mad dogs chasing after them.

"Put me down—-put me down——" Cui Xiaoxin's voice sounded increasingly

anxious. “You can’t run with me on your back——Li Muyang, you can’t run faster than the torrents. Hurry let me down.”

“I can’t.” Li Muyang said firmly. “No matter what happens, I will not leave you behind. If we leave, we leave together; if we die, we die together——”

“Li Muyang.” Cui Xiaoxin anxiously cried: “do you have any idea you’re going to die. The torrents will drown you. You’re an idiot, let me down——”

“I know that. If I let you down, you would also die——” Li Muyang said.

He is not a fool, how would he not know of the current situation?

Gallons of water came crashing down from above, this was most likely because a levee had collapsed.

Nameless Mountain rears into the clouds and the torrents thundered down from its summit, then the force and weight won’t be less than ten thousand pounds? How could Li Muyang’s ordinary body withstand its power?

Besides, he was carrying Cui Xiaoxin on his back; if he left Cui Xiaoxin and fled himself, she would definitely die, but if he tries to escape with Cui Xiaoxin on his back then they would die together——under such desperate circumstances, how could Li Muyang make a decision?

The incessant rumbling got louder as the waves slapped at his legs.

The explosive rumble of water got closer and closer, the water lapping at their buttocks.

The floodwaters had reached Li Muyang’s ankle, with the slightest mistake he will be engulfed by the wave behind.

“Li Muyang, put me down, I need to come down——” Cui Xiaoxin screamed. Cui Xiaoxin who was always quiet and calm became anxious and her voice was shrill and loud.

Li Muyang ignored her, continued to wade through the ankle-deep water with her on his back.

“Li Muyang, put me down, put me down——” Cui Xiaoxin desperately smacked Li Muyang’s shoulder.

Li Muyang clenched his teeth and did not utter a word.

He would never let Cui Xiaoxin down and escape by himself, even if it means he would die.

“Li Muyang———-” Cui Xiaoxin eyes reddened and her voice began to choke with sobbing. “Put me down, put me down———”

Crash—

A huge wave crashed over them. Li Muyang’s body was pushed over by the force of the raging torrents.

The mighty torrents engulfed them completely, sweeping away Li Muyang and Cui Xiaoxin from the surface of the floodwater.

Rumble——

Torrents of water continued to pour down at a terrifying speed.

Birds flew off and animals tried to escape.

Boulders were sliding down, forming deep cracks in the mountain. It looked as if the water from the heavens was trying to erode Nameless Mountain itself.

“Ah———–” Li Muyang’s head suddenly broke the surface and he rose up out of the water. His body drifted forward by the swirling currents, and his eyes frantically darted back and forth: “Cui Xiaoxin—-Cui Xiaoxin——-Cui Xiaoxin where you are? Cui Xiaoxin, say something———–”

Waves slapped against his back, causing him to lose his balance, he stumbled and fell to the ground. Without the chance to crawl up from the ground, the torrents beat him down again.

His body plunged underwater. He made a concerted effort to finally rise from the ground and managed to finally make his head surface out of the water. But only to find that Cui Xiaoxin has disappeared.

Presumably during that split second he fell to the ground he did not hold on tight so he lost Cui Xiaoxin.

Li Muyang’s eyes brimmed and his lids turned red. He shouted until his voice had gone hoarse: “Cui Xiaoxin——Cui Xiaoxin say something. Cui Xiaoxin———–”

Bang——

Engrossed in searching, Li Muyang was unaware of his surroundings, knocked right into the rough bark of a thousand-years old tree.

He was struck dizzy, his face deeply scratched and his nose bleeding.

Li Muyang did not care about his face, clasping onto the trunk of the big tree with both hands he repeatedly yelled: “Cui Xiaoxin—-Cui Xiaoxin—pah—-”

He spat out a mouthful of blood because the blood from his nose had flowed into his mouth.

The torrents gushed down, showing no intention to stop at all.

Li Muyang was torn with anxiety not knowing whether Cui Xiaoxin knows how to swim or her current situation. If something happens to her, he would never forgive himself.

“Li Muyang———-” A weak and faint voice cried from somewhere in the distance.

Li Muyang listened carefully, then yelled at the top of his voice: “Cui Xiaoxin, is that you? Cui Xiaoxin, where are you?”

“Li Muyang———–” It was the familiar voice again.

This time, Li Muyang was certain of the direction.

He took several deep breaths before he released his hold on the tree and hastily swam to the edge of the cliff.

The powerful torrents thrust Li Muyang ever forward.

Very soon, Li Muyang was shoved to the corner of the cliff, he clung fast onto some vines to prevent himself from falling off.

“Cui Xiaoxin———-” Li Muyang yelled again. Next to him was the bottomless abyss, but Cui Xiaoxin was nowhere to be found.

“Li Muyang———–” Cui Xiaoxin’s voice echoed from below.

Li Muyang’s lowered his head, glancing around carefully until he caught sight

of Cui Xiaoxin, who was pushed off the cliff and was caught by the thick and dense branches.

Both her hands were tightly clenching onto a large bulky tree trunk, it looked like with the slightest mistake she would fall down.

Li Muyang was worried to death but his face was calm and collected: “Cui Xiaoxin, are you alright? Are you injured?”

“Li Muyang, I’m fine——I’m going to die.” Cui Xiaoxin said, her voice lacking strength. As a pampered girl since childhood, this ordeal had really made her go through too much hardship.

“You won’t. You’re not going to die, I will never let you die.” Li Muyang grinned foolishly. “I’ll throw the vines down, then you tie them around your body——I will drag you up——”

“Li Muyang, I have no energy, I have little strength left, I’m afraid I can’t catch them———”

“It doesn’t matter if you can’t. Wait there, I’ll come down and save you.”

“Li Muyang, don’t come down——” Cui Xiaoxin quickly shouted. “Don’t come down. If you come down, I will jump——-”

“What are you talking about? If I don’t climb down, are you going to lie down there forever?” Li Muyang said with a smile. He kept twisting his body and wrapping the vines around his waist. “Wait there, I’ll come down and drag you up——I just carried you so I know you’re not heavy at all, the vines are very strong, it can pull both of us up———”

“Li Muyang, don’t come down, you must not come down——” Cui Xiaoxin dissuade him repeatedly. “After coming down you won’t be able to climb back up. Don’t tell me you don’t know?”

Torrents of water sluice down at the side; Li Muyang’s body was swung side to side by the force, looking like he may fall into the abyss at any time.

Li Muyang grinned: “I know, but I want to try——if I don’t come down, you can’t climb up. When you can’t hold onto the trunk any longer, you will fall——-”

“Li Muyang, why are you so foolish?”

“I just don’t want you to die.” Li Muyang began to climb down. He had to climb down; if he does not climb down, there is no way he could pull Cui Xiaoxin back up.

Cui Xiaoxin was losing grip, if he did not climb down in time and secure her with him, he was afraid Cui Xiaoxin would fall down midway.

However, there was still a very important problem——if he smoothly reached down and successfully tied him to Cui Xiaoxin. How could he haul both of them back up the edge of the cliff?

Is his strength enough to support the weight of both their bodies?

There was no time to think too much. Li Muyang made his way down the edge of the mountain, slowly and cautiously lowering his body to a place that can support the weight of him and Cui Xiaoxin.

Then, grabbing the tip of the tree, he swung over to the tree Cui Xiaoxin was clinging onto.

“Xiaoxin——” Li Muyang’s face was dripping with blood. The streams of blood dripping from his face and nose were mixed together with the floodwater as he splashed through. “It’s okay, I’m here to save you.”

“Li Muyang———-” Tears welled up in Cui Xiaoxin’s eyes and ran down her cheeks as she said: “How can you be so stupid? How can you be so stupid? You know it——you know this is just a test. This is not real, this is only a test——I’m not Cui Xiaoxin, I just——transformed to look like Cui Xiaoxin.”

Li Muyang wiped the blood and sweat on his face, so he could see a bit more clearly.

After listening to Cui Xiaoxin, there was no expression of disappointment on his face. He said in a nonchalant tone: “I know. I know you’re not Cui Xiaoxin, I also know that this may be just a test———but, you look exactly like Cui Xiaoxin, I’m afraid——What if you’re really Cui Xiaoxin?”

He lowered himself step by step on the vines down to Cui Xiaoxin and then fastened the vines around Cui Xiaoxin’s body.

“No matter who you are, since you look like Cui Xiaoxin, I have to help you up

—I cannot let anything happen to you—-” A smile spread across Li Muyang’s face, revealing his two rows of sparkly white teeth. He looked like a handsome boy with a positive outlook.

“Li Muyang——-” Cui Xiaoxin grasped onto Li Muyang’s body, murmuring his name: “Li Muyang——-”

Cui Xiaoxin’s body suddenly leaped, dragging onto Li Muyang’s body, they dropped down into the bottomless cliff that is enveloped by thick mists and clouds throughout the year, and wind whistling coldly across the weathered cliff faces.

105 – Teachers fight over a student!

Standing in front of the magic mirror in Water Moon Cave, teachers of Starry Sky stared in astonishment.

Reflected on top of the cascading waterfall was the scene of Cui Xiaoxin holding Li Muyang as they dropped down the bottomless cliff.

“Have you seen something like this before?” A man with a tall hat crowning his head asked. “Bravery with no thought of personal safety, not willing to abandon the word ‘love’——is this a success or a failure?”

“He knew it was a test, he knew that Cui Xiaoxin is not real, and he knew that if he dies he really will die—-but he still made that decision. Stupid, so stupid.” A handsome man clad in a robe whiter than snow said with his eyes blazing with anger. “Someone like him does not deserve to be your disciple, I will take him in and teach him properly. So that he knows that he needs to give up something along the road of cultivation to have the chance to stand at the peak of Starry Sky. He will never be successful the way he is now.”

“Brother Qianbai, I don’t agree.” The man with a tall hat immediately refuted: “Education is for everyone, irrespective of background. This was the purpose for the first Dean of Starry Sky to establish the school. No matter who, they can be educated, not because they are rich or poor, high or low status, foolish or smart, good or evil that we exclude them from education. As a disciple deeply influenced by the first Dean’s teachings, I have the responsibility and obligation to carry forward his principles. Although Li Muyang is stupid and stubborn but he cares about friendship and is righteous, he is somewhat cute. This student can be put under my name. When you lecture, you’re boring, students don’t like listening to you. Whereas I’m informative and witty. Many students come to listen to my lectures.”

“Kong Li, you went too far. You attacked my professionalism and tried to snatch my students—-I will not let you get away with it.” Xiahou Qinbai flew into a rage, his handsome face on the verge of turning into a transparent colour.

“What do you mean by snatch your students? Xiahou Qianbai when did you

become so bossy? Whatever you glance at become yours?—-So if I look at you, you will become mine? “Kong Li said, as he raised his head, the tall hat teetered atop his head.

“I said I will take this student as disciple first, but you have to snatch the students off me—-There are so many new students, don’t tell me there aren’t any students you Kong Li has his eyes on?”

“There is. That Li Muyang—–”

“Do you want a fight?”

“Let’s fight, do you think I’m afraid of you?”

“Teachers—–” A triangular-shaped eyes chubby guy nervously watched the two teachers of Starry Sky rolling up their sleeves ready to fight. If they were really to start a fight again, the walls of this cave might collapse again. He was worried that although several teachers of Starry Sky have gathered together to cast countless number of protection spells on this ‘Water Moon Paradise’ it may still be useless, the cave may still shatter. “Starry Sky established the rules that all students are free to choose their teachers, and free to select their classes—-Even us, we cannot force them.”

The tense situation between Kong Li and Xiahou Qianbai immediately came to an end as Kong Li pinned the chubby guy with a cold glare and said: “Bookworm, you know a lot—–”

“Bookworm, don’t tell me you also want to steal my students?” Xiahou Qianbai’s eyes slowly panned his face, trying to pierce the complacent face of the chubby man: “Fatty, don’t think I don’t know what you’re thinking. You’re just waiting for us to stop, then you secretly take advantage of the chance——”

The chubby guy awkwardly smiled. “I’m a junior, standing in front of two senior teachers—-I don’t dare to. However, that Li Muyang does have his good points. The so-called four walls of the four cardinal vices are, in fact, the mirrors of your heart. Whatever you look forward to will happen. Li Muyang likes that Cui Xiaoxin, so Cui Xiaoxin appeared. He knew it was a test and knew that Cui Xiaoxin is fake but he did not choose to pass the obstacle—-or handled it in a more straightforward and simple manner instead. He chose to accept.”

“He accepts all his fantasy. He gladly endured hardship, even if his life was at risk. Such students are stupid and foolish, but those who are able to stand at the top of Starry Sky, is it not only because they have a firm belief and unwavering dedication, right?”

Xiahou Qianbai pursed his lips and said with lofty disdain: “Bookworm, you’re referring to yourself? You only read mechanically your whole life but you managed to train here—-Hey, there’s only you who’s like that in this world.”

“Not like that——” Bookworm’s face reddened in angry as he retorted: “The immortal poet Li Qiu is crazy for poetry, the immortal swordsman Ximen Chuixue is crazy for sword, because they have this passion so they became well-respected and admired——I—-I’m just crazy for books. ”

“Do you want that student under you or not?” Kong Li interrupted.

“Yes.” Bookworm replied bluntly.

“——”

Seeing the two teachers ready to strike a blow, bookworm hastily said: “But we have to take into account the student’s own choice. We must respect the student’s wishes——Only this way, we can bring out the student’s strengths and skills, and develop their interest and full potential.”

Xiahou Qianbai grinned: “No matter what they choose, they will not take your Dragon slayer class—-Is there still dragons in this world? There’s no dragons, so what is the use in learning dragon slaying skills?”

“——-” Bookworm looked dull and sad. There is a well-known proverb in the kingdom: women are afraid to marry the wrong man and men fear of choosing the wrong profession. He is the atypical example of this.

——

——

Coming into sight were seemingly endless rows of peach trees, right now was the peak season of peach blossoms. Pink blossom trees spreading across a vast grassy field make people feel as if they were situated in a mysterious but

wonderful fairytale world.

In the centre of the peach grove stood a handsome boy clad in a white robe performing sword stances.

The youngster's scythe-shaped eyebrows and his fine and flawless facial features were similar to a painting of a celestial being.

The young man's sword strokes were charming and confident, and his sword style was biting-cold and full of killing intent. However, it was clear it is a high-level of sword technique.

Upon closer look, the youngster bears a remarkable resemblance to Lu Qiji's good fried Chu Xun.

A handsome boy flourishing his swords amid the expansive sea of pink peach blossoms, really is a beautiful picture that makes people feel relaxed and happy.

Lu Qiji stood there with a cold expression, without blinking, watching the young man's every move, his jump and his every turn.

A gust of wind came suddenly, sweeping petals from their slender stems.

Flowers fell from the sky like rain.

As if the youngster only became aware of Lu Qiji's presence, his body leapt high into the air abruptly turned around, the long sword in his hand instigating peach blossoms to flutter over to Lu Qiji not that far in the distance.

As if the petals had their own eyes, one by one wafted down onto Qiji's white dress. Her white dress adorned with pink-red peach blossom petals, highlighted the owner's grace and beauty even more.

Lu Qiji stood still, letting the handsome young man dress her with petals.

Seeing that Lu Qiji did not resist his attentiveness, the young man swung his sword up in the air.

Snap—-

A peach blossom covered branch was cut off.

He inserted the sword back into its sheath and held out his hand, welcoming the peach blossom petals into his hand before he walked over to Lu Qiji.

The man bowed, said with a smiling face: “Last year at this doorway on the same day, your pretty, blushed face outshone the peach blossom. Miss is more beautiful than the flowers, so I plucked up courage to present you with a couple of peach blossoms to express my admiration—-I can’t control my feelings, Miss, please forgive me. ”

“You’re fake.” Lu Qiji looked at him, emotionless.

“What is real? What is fake? I stand before you, I have warmth, I can talk. I am within reach. Of course I am real.” As the handsome boy smiled, his eyes were full of tender affection and two charming little dimples formed on his cheeks.

This was indeed the number one man in the world, even the most cold-hearted woman in the world would be melted by his smile and dimples, and fall into his arms.

Lu Qiji is also a woman.

Seeing his impressive sword skills and this sort of mannered but romantic way of approaching girls, is it not easy to fall in love at first sight?

“A fake is a fake.” Lu Qiji turned to leave.

“Miss, how can you be so heartless?” The man said with sadness in his voice. “After seeing you today, I am stunned by your beauty. Miss if you turn and walk away, I fear I can’t concentrate in practicing sword for the rest of my life.”

“What does that have to do with me?”

“I hope I can keep guard with you at this peach grove; write poems, sword dance, pick flowers and brew wine together. We will never separate from each other. Miss if you wish, we could live here forever——Life is short, the mountain road is dangerous, and the human heart is unpredictable. Miss is as beautiful as jade, why bother looking for trouble and hatred?” As the youngster said with a sincere face, he slowly approached Lu Qiji, trying to pull her back over. He was unwilling to see her leave.

“None of your business.” Lu Qiji said, looking at the young man.

“As long as miss nods——” The young man still has not given up, hoping that his love and persistence would touch and move Lu Qiji’s heart.

Women are softhearted, as long as you praise them and sweet-talk them, then it’s easy to reach a compromise with them.

Screech—-

The sword in Lu Qiji’s hand flashed out of its sheath.

Countless images of sword advanced towards the white-robe youngster to sever him.

The white-robe youngster could not able to evade in time, stood aghast, watching Lu Qiji’s unexpected attack.

He did not think that this woman would say nothing and kill.

Screech—

Struck at his waist, the white-robe youngster was severed into two.

No blood splattered, no limbs slashed off.

Just as his body split into two halves, transforming into light and shadow, it was immediately followed by a loud explosion.

Petals drifted down to the ground, their sweet aroma filling the air.

The peach grove was still here but the white-robe youngster disappeared without a trace, as if he never existed.

Screech—

Lu Qiji inserted the sword back into its sheath and muttered coldly: “Pesky.”

106 – Encountering desert bandits!

Chapter 106: Encountering desert bandits!

When Li Muyang opened his eyes, his first thought was that he was still alive.

He thought he would definitely die.

When he dropped from such a high place, the sound of wind howling in his ears seemed to have lasted for several centuries. The most realistic image was that his body would be torn and his bones crushed to pieces.

“Cui Xiaoxin?” Li Muyang suddenly sprung up, his eyes scanning around.

Cui Xiaoxin’s figure was nowhere in sight, instead before his eyes was an inhospitable, cold desert.

The red limestone soil looked like the post-sunset afterglow, and the barren emptiness pierced the heart with sadness.

His body incessantly swayed side-to-side and jolted up and down from time to time.

People shouting, horses neighing, and wheels rumbling.

Li Muyang came to realise he was lying on top of a carriage of goods. Dozens of carts formed a motorcade that spread into long, snake-like formation.

With his head dizzy and heavy, Li Muyang was unable to respond to what was happening.

Was he not climbing the mountain? Did he not fall from the mountain? Why did he wake up in a desert?

Fantasy and reality constantly intersecting, Li Muyang felt he was suffering from a mental disorder.

No wonder Starry Sky Academy is the most mysterious school in the divine continent, even the admission into the school is too difficult, right? It plays with the metal state of students.

“Young man, are you awake?” A burly man came over on a horse, drew back

the corners of his mouth and smiled fatuously.

His voice carried a strong accent of the Guanzhong province, which differed greatly from the dialect of Jiangnan but was still easily understood.

He was wearing a light armour with a large, blue sword hanging at his waist. His eyes were bright and keen, it seems he is of no ordinary talent.

“Why am I here? Where am I?” Li Muyang hastily asked.

“This is the Valley of the Red Devils.” The man said, smiling. Pointing at the grotesquely shaped red sand dunes in the distance with his fingers, he continued: “You see those slopes, they look like red devils, right?”

“Yes.” Li Muyang answered, nodding his head. He did not care what red sand dunes look like, he was more concerned with how he arrived here. “Then I—– how did I get to the Valley of the Red Devils?”

“We saved you.” The stout man gave a hearty laugh. “You were lying unconscious on the road, so we brought you with us.”

“You were at Flower Language Plains?”

“Flower Language Plain? Of course not. We don’t dare to go to that place. We found you in Mangrove Forest—-” The burly man said with a smile.

Li Muyang had the feeling of wanting to die.

Where is Mangrove Forest? If he was to return to Nameless Mountain then how many more days would it be? Will he encounter numerous assassinations along the way like last time—-Li Muyang could feel strength draining from his body.

“Why is my life so hard?”

“I have a companion—-When you found me, did you see a girl? A beautiful girl.” Li Muyang quickly asked.

“No.” The burly man said, shaking his head. “We just found you alone, we never saw any beautiful girl.”

Li Muyang sighed deeply in disappointment, he felt he was on the verge of a mental breakdown.

He was worried that before he has the chance to enter Starry Sky Academy, he would be admitted into a mental hospital that specifically treats a variety of mental illnesses in the kingdom.

“I have not yet asked for big brother’s name——”

“You flatter me.” The burly man laughed loudly. “My name is Gan Yang, I am the head of the Wan Li escorting establishment in Guanzhong province, I am here to deliver some goods with my brothers—-“

Li Muyang took a quick glimpse at the front of the long carriage, asking: “Brother Gan, where is this cargo headed?”

“To Shimen town. We unload the cargo there and someone will come to receive the goods.” Gan Yang is an honest person, directly spoke out their destination.

“Shimen town——” Li Muyang gently murmured the name, it left a bitter taste in his mouth. This was not a name or place he was familiar with. He wants to go to Flower Language plain, he wants to go to Nameless Mountain, he wants to enroll into Starry Sky Academy—-If he was to follow them then, just when will he reach there?

“Brother Gan, I want to know, how far is it to Flower Language Plain? Roughly how many days?”

“What?” Gan Yang turned pale with shock: “Little brother, don’t say big brother didn’t warn you, that Flower Language plain is one of the top ten most dangerous place in the divine continent, it is uninhabited and abandoned. Even hearing its name sends a chill down the spine, you really want to go to that place?”

“I don’t have to go—-I just asked casually.” Li Muyang said perfunctorily. He did not want to explain since it won’t help the situation and will only cause kind-hearted people to worry about him for no reason.

Gan Yang still felt uneasy. “Little brother, I know you’re young and bold but there are some things that you better not try. Stay alive and live well, why play with your life?”

He pointed at the men in black standing guard on either side of the motorcade:

“Our brothers are most afraid of passing the Valley of the Red Devils, why? There’s a high possibility of encountering desert bandits. Those bandits are ruthless, not only they rob goods but they also kill people. They have seized many goods and killed countless bodyguards before—but do we have a choice to not come here? Everyone has a large family to feed. If they don’t come here, what will their wife and kids eat? What will they wear?”

“They’re putting their lives on the line to feed their families. Your living well so why go to Flower Language Plain to seek your own death—-We met because of fate. I rescued you from Mangrove Forest so you owe big brother. I don’t ask for much, just for you to stay alive. Live for a long, long time. Promise big brother, don’t go to Flower Language Plain, okay?”

“I—–” Li Muyang stared at his simple and sincere expression and his worried eyes, he nodded solemnly: “Fine, I promise you—-”

Of course he must go to Flower Language Plain but he will protect himself. He will keep himself alive and live for a long, long time.

“My good brother.” Gan Yang patted Li Muyang on the shoulder. His large palm almost broke Li Muyang’s skeleton apart.

Li Muyang grimaced with pain but immediately transformed his twisted mouth into a chuckle.

Gan Yang lashed his horse into walking beside Li Muyang. “What’s little brother’s name? ”

“My name is Li Muyang.”

“Li Muyang? Muyang, a good name. We also have wranglers at our escorting establishment—-they help us take care of the horses.” Gan Yang said with a cheerful smile.

Hearing the loud laughter over at this side, several young guards crowded over and laughed along.

A teenager named Gan Liang, around the same age as Li Muyang, proudly said he has been a guard for three years already. In other words, Li Muyang was still

at school when he was travelling all over the place with these strong men under the scorching sun to support his family.

Gan Liang's complexion was dark red but he possessed the pure, dark eyes of a youngster.

He was fond of Li Muyang and kept asking him various questions

Li Muyang said to him that at his age he should be studying, why did he become a guard of an Escort company?

Gan Liang replied that he would never get a chance to study in his life, but he will save lots of money for his son to go to school——if he can find someone to marry.

After he was aware that Li Muyang's home is in Jiangnan city, he said with a hopeful and glistening face: "My father has been to Jiangnan City, he said it is a prosperous and the most beautiful city in the kingdom——one day I also want to go to Jiangnan city, with the entire team."

Hearing Gan Liang's words, Gan Yang looked a bit sad.

Taking the chance of when Gan Liang left to roundup the horses, Gan Quan explained to Li Muyang in a low voice: "Gan Liang's father was also a guard of this escorting establishment but he was killed by bandits on his way to deliver goods——It was here at the Valley of the Red Devils. There's a rule in this business: when the father pass away, the son takes his place. Gan Liang was very small when he came to escort goods with us—-It can't be help, his mum is not well. She needs to drink two bowls of medicine a day, if he does not come here there's no other way he can support her."

Li Muyang's heart was aching after listening. He reached out and touched his gold coins, thinking to himself that when he leaves he would give half of it to Gan Liang. That way it can reduce his burden. At least the money can be used to purchase medicine to treat his mother. When he arrives at Starry Sky Academy, he should not need that much money anyway.

Just then, thick clouds of smoke rolled up in front, then very quickly enveloped over.

"Not good." Gan Yang looked frightened, watching the direction of where the

dense smoke was coming from he yelled: “Desert bandits———There’s a large number of desert bandits.”

It was not smoke but desert bandits whirling up blinding clouds of sand and dust as they charged over.

“Desert bandits—-”

“Desert bandits are here—”

Hearing Gan Yang’s warning, the guards immediately became busy.

The group in front came to a stop, them almost immediately the group behind caught up with them and together they assembled, forming into a small circle. The horses’ heads faced towards the inside of the circle and the goods were in the outermost position, blocked from enemy’s attacks. Some management staffs were hiding in the most central area of the circle, their face ashen and trembling with fear.

Gan Yang commanded dozens of guards to line up into two rows and to stand at the forefront. Directly facing the desert bandits charging over. Their movements were rapid and smooth, without

They were to guard the goods and protect the staffs. This was the time for them to contribute with their lives.

The weak and thin Gan Liang was also standing amongst them, shorter than most of the men, he looked like a little chick crowded around by hens.

Li Muyang’s heart suddenly constricted, he cried aloud: “Gan Liang——-”

Gan Liang turned, his thin dark face was full of determination and anger.

At the same time he looked very nervous, his hand clasping the blade was trembling slightly. Yet he still tried his best to smile and shout at the top of his voice to Li Muyang: “Don’t be afraid, we’ll protect you——-”

Chapter 107: Unable to control hate!

Clip-clop—-

Clip-clop—

The muffled noise of horses' hooves pounding against the sand sounded rhythmic and hypnotising.

Lifting up and setting down simultaneously, they charged ahead like a storm.

The group was evidently a gang of bandits but from plundering and being on the battlefield for a long time, they looked as powerful, determined and courageous as regular troops

They were clad in tight black clothes with a black robe draped over.

Looking like a black tornado sweeping up dense clouds of smoke and dust.

There were neither disorganised yelling nor threatening cries, and even their hurried breathing was silent.

Sitting atop horses, they avoided creating any sounds as much as possible.

Only their slender sabres were raised high into the air, blatantly exposing the identity of the reapers of death.

They all showed extraordinary equestrian skill, their bodies rocking with the saddle motion. No hands but just their legs were required to steer the horse.

They approached from the distance in the twinkling of an eye.

The faded black figures moments ago became much clearer; right now every unfamiliar faces were visible, along with the ferocious look that accompanied each unfamiliar face——

More terrifying than Blood Wolf and more evil than the devil.

Gan Yang's face looked grave and stern, constantly licking his chapped lips with his tongue. This was one of his habits; every time he encountered a dangerous situation or felt tense he would do this action naturally.

Desert bandits have devastated these lands for thousands of years. Their profession is the same as escorting guards in that it is inherited.

The saying goes if you live by the water, you profit from the water. If you live on a mountain, you live off the mountain. The people who lives in the desert, lives on nothing. It is only through robbing and killing that they could accumulate wealth for their future generations. As a result, robbing and murdering became a fair and essential means for them to earn a living.

For desert bandits to survive, they have to rob and kill.

Escort guards also have to survive, so they must protect the goods, must sacrifice themselves.

Since ancient times, these two groups have been rivals.

There is no enmity between them but they won't give up until they die.

Gan Yang had encountered desert bandits a number of times before; many brothers of his have also been killed by bandits on their way of delivering goods. They were killed in front of his eyes——including Gan Liang's father.

That kind of frustration and powerlessness he felt makes him cry his heart out at night over and over again.

However, those were small gangs of desert bandits before. Twenty or thirty people usually, and at most fifty people. They would charge ahead, kill, rob goods and then turn around to leave.

This time it was different, this time the bandits came in their hundreds.

He did not know what goods they were asked to escort, but he remembered the serious atmosphere during the conversation the herbal tycoon of Guanzhong, Bai Feng, had with their elderly leader. After that, the elderly leader invited him into his room to explain the seriousness of this matter and repeatedly said that the brothers must guarantee the safety of this batch of goods. When they return, the escorting establishment would be able to make an unexpected recovery and the families of the brothers who passed away could also live an easy and comfortable life.

It was obvious, this batch of goods is worth a lot of money. These bandits must have sniffed out the taste of blood so they gathered here to prepare for a big transaction.

This cargo cannot be lost, they can't afford to, otherwise the escorting establishment would be over and also the livese of their brothers.

"Brothers, we came here for what?" Gan Yang's deep sharp voice bellowed across the desert. He also does not know why his voice suddenly became like this. As if he was scalded. "We're not doing this to defend the country nor to protect the goods—-we only want to earn a living for our families. If the cargo is safe, everything will be fine. If the goods are lost, the business is over and we are finished."

Gan Yang drew out the sword hanging at his waist, hissing: "There's nothing to say anymore, just as before—-attack."

"Attack them." The numerous guards gathered around Gan Yang drew their sword and cried raucously. Although they were lacking in numbers but the momentum was just as strong.

"Kill." Gan Yang led the way, with a sword tight in his hand he charged ahead on horse.

"Kill." Many escorting guards also commanded their horse to charge forth.

Blocking the road to wealth is the same as killing their parents. How could they not do their best to attack?

Of course, the desert bandits also felt the same way.

They showed no intention to slow down; the moment the team of escorting guards, led by Gan Yang, was charging forth, the bandits once again speeded up. Bringing out the horses' potential to its fullest.

"Kill." The leader's face was biting-cold as he muttered between clenched teeth.

"Kill." Grasping onto their sabres, the black-robed men charged towards Gan Yang and the others.

Sha—–

Gan Yang and the man in black lunged their sword at each other, missing only by inches.

Gan Yang felt the power of the tiger, his chest constricted. But the man in

black had already rushed into their camp and consecutively beheaded Gan Chao and Wang Xiaode.

His opponent was a skilled master, his strength was not on the same level as him.

The other black-robed bandits also penetrated into the team of escort guards like wolves mauling a flock of sheep. The guards who only know a few basic martial moves or simply have a sturdy body hoping to rely on their strength to earn a bowl of rice were hacked to death and dropped from their horses one after the other.

Gan Yang's eyes became blazing with anger. With a loud roar, he once again turned his horse towards the black-clad bandits.

Capture the leader first in order to capture all his followers. As long as he was able to decapitate the leader first, it will certainly destroy their morale and lead them to return back from where they came from empty-handed.

"Die." Gan Yang clenched his teeth and hissed. The feeling of despair came once again, he exerted his utmost strength to kill the opponents but no matter how hard he tried he could never drive people into that hysterical state of madness.

Whoosh—

They once again staggered past each other.

Gan Yang thrust his crescent blade at the chest of the man in black, the sabre of the man in black also swung down at his head.

Fighting with their lives.

Gan Yang knows he is no match for the man in black, but he was willing to exchange his life for others. Hoping that it will give his people and his brothers the chance to live.

Screech—

Gan Yang flew into the air, he saw his horse and also saw his body.

His claret-coloured horse continued to gallop ahead, dragging along his huge body; it completely did not notice that something has fallen off.

Flying across the air was his head; his big head was severed off by the sabre and sent into the air.

He watched his horse galloped faster and farther and finally disappeared out of view.

Plop–

His head dropped to the ground, his eyes showing everlasting regret

“Uncle Gan——” Gan Liang was still fighting with another bandit. Witnessing Gan Yang’s tragic death, he abruptly came to a standstill and yelled.

Only because of this stagnation, the desert bandits were able to take advantage to lunge a sword at his back.

As if he was being bitten by an ant he felt no pain at all.

“Uncle Gan——uncle Gan—-” He was screaming and yelling as he turned his horse toward Gan Yang’s head. This simple and kind boy had forgotten the danger of the battlefield and the horror of the bloody fight. He only wanted to rush over, pick up his uncle’s head and burst into tears.

After his father died, uncle Gan was the hope of his family. He was the only shoulder he could lean on, he was the one closest to him. In his heart, he was the man who replaced his father.

But he died in front of his eyes, he was decapitated in one stroke——

The expressions of the desert bandits, although covered with bloodstains, were cruel and ruthless. They thought that Gan Liang tried to run away, immediately clench tight onto their sabres that was still dripping with blood and gave chase on horses.

“Gan Liang, run—-hurry run——” Li Muyang was worried to the point he almost turned crazy.

He leaped down from the carriage, then fumbled around on the ground.

He found the Understand Heaven Sword.

What’s strange was that no matter where he drops it, the Understand Heaven Sword was always at his side, tightly strapped just above his belt.

He drew his sword and dashed at full speed over to the bandit who was chasing Gan Liang without stopping.

It was only just one round, only a brief moment, but these damn desert bandits, these butchers who deserves to go to hell, nearly slaughtered the entire friendly escort guards.

That burly man said to him with a worried face: I rescued you from the Mangrove Forest so you owe me one. I don’t ask for anything else, just stay alive. Live for a long, long time.

That big brother covered with pimples on the face is called Huang Xuan, he gave him a tin kettle and said to him: Drink it to wet your throat, this pot of water is clean, I haven’t drank it——

That bright dark-eyed young man proudly said to him: one day I want to go to Jiangnan city, along with the team of escorting guards.

Also, there were some other people he talked to, when they did not know what to say to him they would just kindly smile at him.

They have a wife, children and families who need their care and support. They have flesh and blood; they’re living people.

However, they were hacked to death one by one by the devils of the desert, their body dismembered.

In the blink of an eye, also the time to drink a mouthful of water.

They were all dead.

Li Muyang felt he was going crazy.

Hate!

Hate!

Hate to the point that his blood was racing around his body, his body was trembling badly.

He ran with all his strength.

He ran faster and faster, faster than any horse.

As he caught up with the man in black, his body soared high into the air.

And then the Understand Heaven Sword in his hand lunged at his back.

The black-clad bandit felt the danger behind him, he twisted around with his face ashen with fear, wanting to repel the attack with his sabre.

Clang—-

His sabre was cut into two pieces, like a branch was being snapped.

Chi——

His body severed in half, like cutting a block of tofu.

Both sides of his face was the expression of fear, he finally understood the feeling of despair when death descends.

Chapter 108: Cry out against injustice！

Li Muyang’s heart became filled with hostility and hatred.

He wanted to explode, he wanted to resort to violence and bloodshed, he wanted to exert his utmost strength to kill these desert bandits who treat people’s lives like dirt.

He must do something for those lives, or it will drive him crazy.

His body was entirely in a state of violence, dark-red blood once again wrapped his pupils.

Scales, not seen for a long time, surfaced on the back of his hand, like pitch black-angled diamonds emitting a brilliant luster.

Above the scales were blinding bolts of lightning, accompanied by booming claps of thunder. They were tiny, and unable to break through the binding of the scales. Just like a miniature black dragon confined into a glass bottle.

Li Muyang unexpectedly caught up with a horse, his body soared into the air and his sword swung down, splitting a bandit into two halves.

The horrified expression of the desert bandit was engraved into Li Muyang’s head, the bandit’s body sitting astride the horse slipped down from both sides of the horse’s back. His feet were still in the stirrups as his body was being dragged by the horse surging forward at a full gallop trying to escape.

Gan Liang turned, his face in shock watching Li Muyang’s bloodied face and body descending from midair.

“You——” Gan Liang pointed to Li Muyang’s face, shocked to even say any words clearly. “You—you—-be careful.”

His pupils suddenly constricted, an expression of sheer terror twisting his features, then he pounced forward from the horse’s back in the direction of Li Muyang.

Behind Li Muyang stood two desert bandits, one left and one right, launching an attack.

With their sabers held high in their hands, roaring hot wind began to wrap

around Li Muyang's neck and back.

This stupid guy, he killed one of their clansmen——Blood must atone for blood.

You see, desert bandits are also loyal.

Li Muyang did not turn around, from Gan Liang's pupils he was able to witness everything happening behind him.

Bright red rays of light flashed from the Understand Heaven Sword in his hand, like a fire snake was circling above the blade.

Li Muyang's body rotated one hundred and eighty degrees, the Understand Heaven Sword in his hand fiercely swung out. The fire snake surged out of the sword, towards the two desert bandits.

Screech—-

The expression of the two bandits became lifeless.

At the same time, their body, still on the back of horses, kept their charging posture.

As the horse galloped, their upper body suddenly dropped to the ground, while their lower body was still sitting atop the horses charging over in the direction of Li Muyang.

From the waist area, they were sectioned into two.

Blood sprouted out like a fountain, spraying in every direction.

Gan Liang's body finally pounced over.

Thump—-

He pushed Li Muyang to the ground from behind and then his body heavily fell on Li Muyang's back.

"Li Muyang——" Gan Liang cried.

Li Muyang suddenly rolled over, trying to free himself. Although his body was still beneath, the Understand Heaven Sword in his hand thrust above into the sky.

Screech—

The sword swung down by the bandit leader appeared out of nowhere was blocked by Li Muyang.

Not only did it not kill Li Muyang, instead a huge hole was strike into his precious sabre that had fought in hundred battles.

The bandit leader flew into the air, upside down, his face filled with shock watching Li Muyang standing up from the ground in the distance.

“Who are you?” The red-bearded face stared warily at Li Muyang and asked in an extremely weird accent.

Li Muyang’s eyes remained blood red, without a word, he marched towards the bandit leader once again.

“Li Muyang, be careful—–” Gan Liang shouted, lying down on the ground. He knows how powerful the red-bearded man is, the gang of desert bandits led by him had killed countless people before, how many heroes have died in his hands.

He was not aware of Li Muyang’s background but as his friend, at least that’s what he thought in his heart, he did not want anything to happen to Li Muyang.

As if Li Muyang has not heard of his reputation, wielding the Understand Heaven Sword he stepped toward the red-bearded man in large strides.

“Seeking your own death.” The red bearded man was also furious. Having dominated this land for more than ten years, the Valley of the Red Devils was his back garden he used to kill and steal goods from. Which escort guards would not drop to their knees, beg for forgiveness and automatically hand over their goods and women when they encountered them. But this kid not only fiercely resists, he also killed three people of his—-Slashing his head three times is not even enough to compensate for what he did.

The red-bearded man clenched the hilt of his sabre tight, then with an enraged roar, he raced towards Li Muyang.

Li Muyang increased his pace and then thrust out his sword.

Chi—-

The two brushed past each other.

Before the sabre held high into the air dropped to the ground, a bleeding hole

was seen in the abdomen of the red-bearded man. Understand Heaven Sword was pierced into his chest, blood gushed out, bringing with the warmth of his body.

Red bearded man's eyes widen looking at his chest, looking at the sword tainted with his own blood, still in disbelief as he was stabbed to death.

A bandit who dominated these lands half his life, a demon who killed countless people, his life came to such a tragic end?

He refused to accept this!

"Leader." A heavily built bandit intercepting other escort guards caught sight of the tragic death of Red Beard. With a loud roar he came sprinting towards Li Muyang.

His horse neighed madly, a bright light flashing from his sabre.

Li Muyang stood motionless, until the sabre was about to scratch his head, he suddenly punched out.

The Art of the Breaking Body 'Breaking Fist'!

His fist directly hit against the horse's stomach, the horse let out a tragic neigh before its body along with the bandit flew into the air.

Bang—

Bang—-

The horse dropped to the ground with a loud crash, the bandits clad in black also vomited blood and died. His internal organs have been shattered.

The other black-robe bandits brandishing their blade and attacking other guards finally shifted their attention onto Li Muyang, they saw Red Beard drowned in blood behind and Li Muyang sending a horse and a clansman flying with his fist, their eyes suddenly became filled with fear.

They took a brief glimpse at each other before they bolted into a full speed dash.

They tried to escape.

Li Muyang's gaze wandered across the ground full of corpses, how would he just let them run away?

He yanked out the Understand Heaven Sword from Red Beard, ignoring the blood flooding into all directions. He soared into the air, giving chase to those bandits who were desperately pressing the spurs into the horse's side wanting to escape.

The sword in his hand flashed repeatedly, then one after the other, heads dropped to the ground.

As the horse galloped away, heads lined up in a straight line across the red sand.

Plop—撲通——-

The bandit fleeing in the most front position took a fall to the ground from his horse. His body uncontrollably trembled and was unable to utter a single word.

The black cloth on his head was torn off, revealing a man as young as Gan Liang but with a darker face.

He knelt on the ground kowtow to Li Muyang, his head banging loudly against the sandy ground as he cried in a tremulous voice: "Don't kill me, don't kill me ——please, don't kill me, I'll do anything, I'm willing to be your slave———"

Li Muyang displayed no emotion on his face, his blood-red eyes stared at the young bandit without blinking.

The young bandit became even more afraid, knocked his head against the ground more frantically, his head was mangled beyond recognition. He said imploringly: "I didn't kill anyone, I just followed people over——looking for some food. My mother is ill, I need money to buy medicine for her. I didn't kill anyone, please let me off, I don't know anything———"

"So is he." Li Muyang said in a hoarse voice.

Gan Liang too, his father was killed by desert bandits and his mother is ill, so he came with the grown-ups to escort goods at a young age.

In order to support his family, to treat his mother. However, this was not a reason that should be used to justify his killing.

Li Muyang's sword that was clenched in his hand flashed. The young bandit's head was thrown into the air.

Even until now, he still found it difficult to accept the fact: they just wanted to support their family——that's all. Why did they kill people?

By the time Li Muyang returned, corpses were piled all over the ground. The bodies of escorting guards and also bandits.

Some heads were severed off, some arms hacked off, some people cut in half, and some people dismembered into many pieces——

Almost everyone had died!

Li Muyang opened his eyes only to see the team, the vigorous yet kind-hearted escort guards and some management staffs who only greeted him with kind glances, were almost all dead. 李

Gan Liang was the only left alive.

He sat there hugging Gan Yang's head, no sobbing, no sorrowful yell. Just silent tears.

Even in his sorrow he could not cry.

Blood gushed from his back, drenching his clothes in red. The knife pierced deep into his back was long and extremely lethal.

Li Muyang fumbled around the corpse and found some medicine and gauze. He knew escorting guards take these with them anywhere and anytime.

He walked up behind Gan Liang and without saying a word, bandaged up his wounds. He poured the entire medicine bottle of MIlitary medicinal powder onto his wound, but it still could not stop the blood pouring out.

"I won't live." Gan Liang cried, looking at Li Muyang.

"You will. " Li Muyang said.

"I won't."

"You will."

"I know——-" Gan Liang looked at Li Muyang's eyes and replied with a serious expression on his face: "I know I won't survive. I am going to die. But I'm not

afraid, uncle Gan is with me, there are also other uncles and brothers with me, I am not afraid, I grew up with them——”

“I’m just worried about my mum, what would she do when I’m not with her? She is also not well, rheumatoid arthritis, body pain, she can’t get out of bed——what would she eat? What would she do? She would die.”

“I also have an auntie, she’s blind. She relies on uncle’s monthly salary to survive. Also uncle Genzi, his legs were cut off, he depends on brother Genzi to give him money to buy food——but if we can’t return, how would they survive?”

A gust of wind came, drowning the teenager’s sorrowful voice.

Chapter 109: Kill bandits under fury!

Valley of the Red Devils. Sha Village.

The name Sha Village sounds ordinary and simple, but to escorting guards passing by and traveling merchant it seems like thunder piercing the ear.

Because it is also one of the main bases of desert bandits.

Not sure when it started, the people from all regions of the desert began to gather at this side. The population grew rapidly but because of the limited resources and infertile land, they began to drain their mind to solve this huge population issue.

When a highly intelligent rogue focused on the merchant road in the Valley of the Red Demons and he proposed his plan to his people, the clan members were briefly short of breath and their face flushed.

“Yes, let’s do it—-those living on a mountain live off the mountain, those living near the water live off the water, we rely on the Valley of the Red Devils, Valley of the Red Devils is our territory——”

“Those merchants are unscrupulous businessman; they are extremely rich but they never thought of sharing their wealth——”

“We’re not going to kill them, just steal their goods—-For my children, I’m willing to commit any sins——”

——

As a result, an organisation of bandits with the catchphrases ‘fairness and justice’ and ‘to rob the rich to help the poor’ was born.

The guy first to propose the plan served as their leader, other people also responded enthusiastically to become a member of the organisation.

Riding stolen horses and brandishing sabres purchased from foreign lands, they have scourge the trading of the kingdom for thousands of years.

Li Muyang stood atop the lookout tower high above the center of the village, staring coldly at the lively and bustling atmosphere within Sha Village.

Teams of bandits clad in black clothing and draped with a black robe were

dragging in both large and small bloodstained carts; without the time to clean the carts, some carts were still carrying parts of the heads or ears. There were also groups of bandits cloaked in a black robe wiping their sabres ready to head out. They are the most experienced hunters of the Valley of the Red Devils, preparing to go to their familiar hunting ground.

They laughed, talked cheerfully, and greeted each other affectionately.

“Hey, not bad harvest today—-is there any wine? I’ll exchange some of the finest silks for it.”

“Zhao Sifang, you son of a dog-you took a woman again—-how many wives do you have? Today I will pay you fifty gold coins for this one—What? One hundred? The dog ate your conscience? What woman is worth so much money? Is she made of gold?”

“Boss Meng Ji, you are so generous every time, our team can never be compared to you——”

——

Inside Sha Village were old men smoking tobacco with a long-stemmed pipe, healthy middle-aged men, and teenagers of a similar age to Gan Liang.

They did not have any feelings of guilt, they saw robbing as a legitimate business, an occupation that had been passed on for thousands of years.

They need to stay alive!

To stay alive, is the most primitive justification to resort to evil.

“Boss Red Beard brought hundreds of people out today, most likely they would bring back many batches of goods——Brothers, we may have to work hard today. Or they would laugh at us.” A scar-faced man yelled from the back of a horse, smiling and encouraging his brothers.

“Don’t worry boss Hu, we may not be as good as boss Red Beard but other teams are not as good as us——” A black-robed young man enthusiastically replied.

The moment Li Muyang caught sight of a group of men in black turning and mounting their horse in one lithe movement and then under the command of

their leader pushed through the door, Li Muyang also moved.

He leaped down from the lookout tower, then in midair his sword was pulled free of its sheath.

Chi——

In one slashing stroke he severed the railings of the lookout tower.

The heavy railing fell forward, crushing the gate of Sha Village.

Crash—

The wooden door was smashed into little fragments, causing bandits sitting atop horses to flee in panic.

A deep heavy sound echoed across the lands, everyone in the village became startled.

An old man smoking tobacco tossed aside the long pipe, grasped the hilt of a sabre and raced towards Li Muyang.

The middle-aged man haggling with a clan member to buy a woman for sixty coins, stared with a dangerous gleam in his eye and then also dashed over in the direction of Li Muyang.

Some young children immediately grabbed a dagger from some place and scampered towards Li Muyang, grinding their teeth and clenching their jaw tight.

There were also some women and girls who looked like they lack the strength to truss up a chicken—-but they all have a hidden pair of scissors and some grabbed hold of a bow and arrow.

They were also of the Sha Village and accomplices of the desert bandits.

Flowing through their body was the blood of bandits. They were fed and grew up on human blood and stolen goods

Li Muyang stood in Sha Village Central Square, the place where bandits divide up the stolen goods or women and sort out equipment to prepare to go into ‘battle’.

His cold gaze wandered across the crowd, people gathering from all sides.

“If you guys don’t enter hell, who will?”

In a flash, his sword had already sectioned the old man dashing over into two halves. Although he was severed into two but his arms still held tight onto his tobacco pipe.

The middle-aged man looking to purchase a wife came full speed over was decapitated by Li Muyang in one swift movement. His head flew across the sky, his expression was of terror and reluctance to part with the world.

The young kids possessed a young and pure face but their attacks were just as ruthless and vicious.

Li Muyang, without the slightest hesitation, thrust the Understand Heaven Sword dripping with blood at their chest and then lunged forth, piercing the heart of other children of similar age—-

——

Silence.

A deathly quiet.

Apart from the fluttering sound of the village flag blowing in the wind, the entire Sha Village fell into silence.

Li Muyang stood still in the middle of the crowd.

The entire body of the long blade was stained with blood and his clothes were also dripping with blood, looking like Ashura demon crawled up from hell.

It was a bloodbath underfoot, dead corpses piling over one another.

Some people were decapitated, some dismembered, and some were pierced right through the heart——

The ones still alive dropped to their knees, the sabre in their hand became uncontrollable and as heavy as thousands of kilograms.

They stared at Li Muyang, wide-eyed. Looking at Li Muyang drenched with blood all over, looking at his red eyes that resembled more of a demon than theirs.

They could not believe that they have provoked the god of death? How is it that so many people's lives were taken away so easily?

He is a devil, a demon in the desert.

Men begged for mercy, women were wailing and children were screaming——

Li Muyang was still emotionless, once again lunging out with his sword.

————

————

In front of the magic mirror in Water Moon Cave, the atmosphere was heavy, and everyone looked serious.

Even the two famous teachers of Starry Sky who like to quarrel, Kong Li and Xiahou Qianbai remained silent, wide-eyed watching everything that happened.

Until he saw Li Muyang's sword thrust at the toddler, Kong Li's expression turned abnormally distressed: "This is too much. This student went to far——-Elderly, women and young children, how could he be so ruthless? Is there kindness in his heart? If Starry Sky recruited such a student into the school, and he becomes as strong as Li Ruobai and Du Ruofu, I'm afraid he would harm the entire Starry Sky and become the disgrace of the school——-"

"Kill bandit under fury, wipe out the clan of thieves at one go. The source of evil of the bandits stem from their heart, flesh and bones——What Li Muyang did was a good way to solve the problem once and for all. His means of doing so is cruel to some but his motive is good——-After all, he witnessed his saviour and innocent escort guards killed in front of his eyes, he must be very irritated and upset. They destroyed the families of the guards, why can't he destroy those bandits' home?" As expected, Xiahou Qianbai will not allow Kong Li to have his way. As long as Kong Li supports it, he would object; when Kong Li objects he would support it.

"Having said so, from what we could see, this student's mind is uncontrollable and not bound by laws and rules. If he was to acquire remarkable power and someone angered him, then would he destroy their whole family? What about when a country angers him? He would wipe out their entire country?"

“That is an assumption. Not an established fact. As far as I know, when brother Kong Li was put into this assessment, you also killed many, right?”

“I only killed those who deserved it.”

“The people Li Muyang killed don’t deserve to be killed?”

“Those were women and children; those children have not grown up yet——What sin did they commit?”

“They will become a bandit when they grow up.”

“Aren’t you assuming? If you want to find fault with someone, there is no need to worry about finding a suitable pretext. When those children grow up, they may also be admitted to Starry Sky and become our students?”

“In any case I think what Li Muyang did was satisfying in every respect, even more satisfying than when I did in the assessment back then.”

“I firmly oppose this student entering the school. Even if he was admitted he can only be part-time and not allowed to enter the Water Moon Cave——”

“Teachers——-” Bookworm gingerly tried to calm things down, a scene like this was already a common occurrence to him: “Li Muyang was personally recruited by the dean of the academy.”

“————”

Kong Li and Xiahou Qianbai exchanged a meaningful glance at each other, and then, together stared at Bookworm.

“Li Muyang was enrolled into Starry Sky based on the results of first place in the imperial exam, it can be said that his qualification is the worst of all the students and also the worst of all the students over the years, even the students who were rejected are better than him——In which year there wasn’t a first in the imperial exam? Which state does not have a first in the exam? And how many people was admitted?”

Looking puzzled, Kong Li nodded and said: “I also find it strange. This student’s skills are unbearable to look at, when he climbed the mountain he was battered and exhausted, even the servants of the other students were more outstanding than him——but now he is demonstrating such skill. What is going on? Dress like

a pig to eat the tiger? He wants to deceive the world?”

“Why would the dean recruit him to the school?” Xiahou Qianbai’s concern was obviously not the same. “What is his relationship with the dean? Would he be an illegitimate child of the dean?”

Bookworm shook his head: “About that, I do not know.”

Kong Li and Xiahou Qianbai simultaneously glared at Bookworm with ferocity and said: “Why did the headmaster told you this secret——why don’t we know?”

Chapter 110: Either give money or..!

Shimen Town.

An important town in the outskirts, which is convenient for merchants from West Wind Kingdom to trade with desert nomads or other foreign nations. All goods shipped from the country are unloaded here for their business partners to collect. The safe and successful delivery of goods to Shimen Town is the job of escorting guards.

“A walk around Shimen Town, you will be wearing gold and silver, and drinking shark fin soup.”

The saying is enough to illustrate the volume of business transactions in Shimen Town and the amount of profits gained.

Shimen Town is an independent town in the middle of nowhere. It is isolated and stands alone in the desert.

Although it belongs to the West Wind Kingdom but it is neither managed nor protected by the Kingdom’s army. Businessmen from all around the world gather here so this isolated town remains a thriving and flourishing centre. There are people from all trades and crooks mixed in with the honest folk. It’s hard to imagine that the sleepy old man sitting in the corner was a serious criminal, and you certainly would not know that the smart boy strumming an abacus was a rapist—-

The entrance to Shimen Village is a giant stone arch formed from three simple boulders stacked together.

It is said that several hundred years ago General Lui Jian who was appointed to defend at the frontier region built the entrance. Lui Jian, being at the higher stage of the free clouds realm was assigned to stand guard at the frontier, and while he was there, enemies invaded the territory. Therefore, he slashed Qingming Mountain with his sword to retrieve three large stone to build a stone arch and said: if the enemy troops dare to take one step through, I will kill every one of them.

The desert cavalry saw the imposing atmosphere of this arch built from three simple boulders, which straddles the road at the entrance to the village, they

hesitated many times and finally retreated in the end.

As a result, the entrance was named Shimen, and the small town of Shimen was established shortly after.

Today was not a good day; cold autumn wind blew across, whipping up dense clouds of dust and sand.

Between the layers of dust was a long convoy of carts struggling to advance.

The long convoy contained dozens of carts, it looked neither small nor big, but to the people of Shimen Town this was a common occurrence and did not looked like any big business.

However, what made their eyes widen in surprise was that only the goods and horses could seen in this convoy of dozen carts, and housekeepers, escort guards or staffs were nowhere in sight.

“What is going on? Why is there not a single person?”

“Hahaha, I have only seen human sellers, I have never seen horse merchants before——Could it be the horses could charge money after it delivered the goods?”

“Must have stumbled into desert bandits on their way, and not one of them escaped——wait but the bandits did not take the goods? Did they change their character? ”

——

The first horse pulled the convoy of carts through Shimen pass, then the train of dozens of carts, one after another, entered.

At the very back of convoy, a black horse bolted out.

Riding the horse was a young man wielding a sword, hastening to escort the convoy of carts of goods.

The young man has black hair and a dark face, and looked fatigued and worn out by the journey. His clothes were dirty and sweat stained.

Several men wanted to come closer and find out more but before they approached, they recoiled and looked aghast.

The stench of blood from the young man was overwhelming, the unbearable smell made them retch.

Li Muyang pulled on the reins of the leading horse, bringing the entire convoy of carts into Shimen Town's Square.

His gaze swept around, ignoring other people's widespread discussions and pointing, and hoarsely shouted: "Delivery from Wanli Escorting establishment, who's here to collect it?"

Within the crowd, came a few men dressed in fur-lined robes with a fur hat tightly wrapped around their head.

They were riding on large horses, carrying bow and arrow and sabres; it was clear these people were nomads.

Led by a bearded man, they stared at Li Muyang warily, then the man asked aloud: "Who are you? Where are the guards of Wanli escorting establishment?"

"I'm Li Muyang, I'm a friend of the head of Wanli Gan Yang——who are you?"

"This batch of medicine is what we want." The bearded man replied in a deep, rumbling voice. "You're a friend of Gan Yang, where is Gan Yang? Where are all the staffs? Without the documents, how do we handle this transaction?"

Li Muyang reached into his pockets, pulled out a piece of paper, saying: "I'll give the goods to you and you give me the money. After both parties are satisfied then we will sign this contract——I retrieved this from one of the staff."

The bearded man glanced over at the contract, asking: "Where are they?"

"They died." Li Muyang said.

"How?"

"Killed by bandits."

"——-"

After listening to Li Muyang, a clamour of voice broke out from the crowd.

Some sympathised with Wanli Escorting Establishment and the guards, and some people condemned the savage act of the desert bandits.

The bearded man hesitated for a moment before he continued: "let me see the

contract.”

Li Muyang passed over the contract.

The bearded men took the contract and tore it loudly in half.

“We won’t be doing this business.” The bearded man said. He was still smiling at Li Muyang. “People that we are not familiar with, we won’t do business with them, what happens if the goods are not as it is? What if the herbal ingredients you have are not good quality? If it’s like that, then how about you take it back with you—-”

Li Muyang looked at him blankly, waiting for him to finished talking.

As expected, he had more to say.

The bearded man was made uncomfortable by Li Muyang calm and collected face but he must finish what he was saying.

He looked at Li Muyang and said: “you said the escort guards of Manli were all killed by desert bandits, then who are you? How did you come here? How did you get the goods?”

“As I said, I’m a friend of Gan Yang.”

“Friends? You’re not a bandit, right?” The bearded-man said coldly.

As he spoke, everyone at Shimen Town Square slid their sword out of its sheath, ready to rush forth.

They are merchants; they depend on this Shimen Town Square to earn a living. If a desert bandit came here and cut off their road for earning money, they would certainly fight them with their lives.

Li Muyang’s expression remained indifferent and not in the slightest altered by the bearded man’s infuriation.

He took a quick glimpse at the paper torn to shreds on the ground before he said: “Just to earn a living, why did it end up like this? In order to send this cargo, the thirty-two men of Wanli died tragically, the six management staffs also died —-this is what they exchanged their life for? This is also the last time they could

earn money for their family. You give me the money and I'll give you the goods. What do you say?"

The bearded man was not swayed, he said in a cold voice: "I already told you, I won't accept this order. Us, desert people value comradeship, I said I would trade with that person then I will trade with that person; I never go back on my words——What if you happen to be a bandit, you guys murder people and rob goods. What if you also take away our goods and money? How can I let my comrades down? How can I face the escort guards of Wan Li?"

"What do you want?" Li Muyang looked at him and asked.

"It should be what do you want." The bearded said, his voice biting-cold: "The first option: you take the goods back. Where it is shipped from, you bring it back to them the same way. Or ship it back to your home, the desert bandits' base. Second, you can give us the goods and we will agree on a different price——"

This was attempting to rip him off.

If he did as they said, deliver this batch of medicine back, then besides the many dangers along the way and whether he could stay alive, the number of breakage along the way is astronomical——At that time, what will this batch of medicine be worth? Where would the money for the herbal ingredients come from? Where would the money for the escort guards come from?

As for give them the goods and negotiate a new price, that is the same as robbing the owner while his house is on fire.

They thought Li Muyang wouldn't be able to bring this batch of medicine back so he must dispose of the goods at Shimen Town. Besides them, other businessmen would not come and steal the goods——In that case he just need to give him a little money to send him away and take this large batch of goods off his hands? You know, herbal ingredients are valuable; if shipped to the town of Loulan it is worth hundred-fold more.

"What if I don't agree with both of these two option?" Li Muyang said aloud.

The many companions of the bearded man burst into loud laughter. He looked at Li Muyang and asked: "what do you want to do?"

"Why do you have to force me? " Li Muyang glanced to the sword strapped at

his waist, muttering: “why do you have to force me? Those bandits forced me, so I killed them all. Now you’re forcing me——”

Screech—

Understand Heaven Sword flashed out of its sheath, its bright light sparking off the razor-sharp blade dazzled the eyes of everyone in the town square.

The bearded man’s face became overcast as he asked: “you said—— you killed all those bandits? ”

“Yes.” Li Muyang looked at the bearded man and replied. “I killed those bandits and their clansmen——”

“You———” The bearded man still did not believe him. Li Muyang is only a person, and he is so young too, even if he started training when he was an infant, is it possible for him to be that strong?

He is well aware of the ability of the bandits and the sheer number of bandits. Even if he was to just destroy a group of them, it would take a great deal of power.

“I don’t like to explain——” Li Muyang raised his sword horizontally over his head, looking at the bearded man as he said: “either give me money or give me death.”

“————”

————

————

Guanzhong. Manli Escorting Establishment.

The old leader sat slumped on the floor, his arms wrapped around a large box of money, his eyes dull and filled with sadness, and his voice lacking strength: “No, no——”

An old and small courtyard.

A woman was sitting on her bed sewing when she heard the sound of footsteps outside. A smile of happiness curved her lips. She cheerfully shouted: “Liangzhi, Liangzhi, you’re back———”

After a long while, an unfamiliar voice replied: “I am not Liangzhi, I am Liangzhi’s friend——he’s working, he told me to give you something.”

Li Muyang walked over to the bed and placed a bag of gold coins in her hand.

“Liangzhi’s friend?” The woman looked at Li Muyang with a puzzled expression on her face, asking: “Where’s Liangzhi? Where did Liangzhi go?”

“He went to———Jiangnan.” Li Muyang said, turning around, his voice hoarse and tears streaming down his face. His tall and straight figure scampering to the outside, as he said: “he said his father has been to Jiangnan, it is the most bustling and rich city he’s been to——he and the entire team of guards travelled there to travel.”

“Liangzhi———” The wailing of the woman’s anguished voice echoed throughout.

Chapter 111: Yan Xiangma said!

The moment Li Muyang opened his eyes, he could still feel the uncontrollable hatred in his heart.

He knew it was just fantasy, an illusion, a nightmare; however, the dream was too real and unforgettable.

He could not forget the horrifying scene of those black-clad bandits lifting their sabres overhead and hacking everybody in sight to death, he could not forget the serious and honest expression on Gan Yang's face when he said to him 'I saved you from Mangrove Woods so you owe big brother a favour, I want you to live well'. He even more could not forget Gan Liang's death and the anguished wailing of the ill woman the moment she heard her son has gone to Jiangnan.

So what if he gave her all the gold coins? Could it buyout the despair of losing her beloved son? Would it regain her hope in life and her confidence tomorrow?

Sorrow penetrating deep into bone, pain entering into the heart. That was all there was.

This is not a story; it is what Li Muyang experienced.

"Student——" Right in front of his eyes was a round, podgy face.

Li Muyang jolted awake, only to find himself lying on top of a huge platform. The platform, being enveloped by a sea of mist and with low hanging clouds rolling in rapidly, changing in both shape and colour, looked like the immortal pond in the heavens.

Li Muyang's eyes swept around, asking aloud: "Where is this? And who are you? What do you want to test me in this time?"

"Student——" A fat man in a gray suit repeatedly waved and said: "Student, don't get me wrong. I'm not an examiner, I won't be testing you anything—— Congratulations, you have successfully passed the four trials and scale Broken Mountain to become a student of Starry Sky Academy."

Successfully passed? Scaled the mountain?

Li Muyang pondered seriously for a moment, his profound knowledge of wine culture impressed the elderly wine expert so he successfully passes the wine

trial. He gave his life to save Cui Xiaoxin but he was still dragged down the cliff, was that a success or failure?

After that, he was saved by escort guards and encountered desert bandits, all the escort guards were wiped out—-was that the temper or avarice test?

What were the assessment criteria? What were the criterias for him to pass? Is there a model answer?

Does that mean that at Starry Sky Academy, when they say you have passed then you have passed, and when they say you have failed then they will immediately send you home —-isn't that a bit too informal?

Where is the moral credibility? Where is the fairness?

Of course, even though there are one million questions in Li Muyang's mind, he would never ask aloud.

Since he has been told that he has passed then why would he not let go? What if they think you're immature and send him to some other assessments such as wind, rain, thunder and lightning or gold, wood, water, fire and earth?

He has not yet experienced the coolness of Starry Sky Academy but he has already deeply learnt from experience the idiotness of Starry Sky Academy.

How could they cause inflict such sufferings to their own students?

"Thank you." Li Muyang said. "Where is this place?"

"This is the Stage of Appointing Commander." The fat man said with a smile.

"The Stage of Appointing Commander? What army?"

The chubby man's lips pursed into a smile, saying: "Choosing strong people as commander, gathering people to slay dragons, this is not something an ordinary military could be compared to."

"Gather to slay dragons?" Li Muyang's heart suddenly felt a coldness in his heart, he smiled and asked: "Why do we need to slay dragons?"

"I do not know." The fat man smiled kindly. "Too long ago, who knows? However, there must be reason. Otherwise, the strong people wouldn't do something like this——Everyone is very busy, isn't that right?"

“Yes, yes yes.” Li Muyang nodded repeatedly in agreement, saying: “otherwise, who would have that much time to slay dragons? I haven’t asked for big brother’s name?”

“Don’t call me big brother—-you’re a new student of Starry Sky Academy, in the future you would become one of the most dazzling figures in the entire Starry Sky. I’m just an odd-job worker, don’t call me big brother——you can call me He An.”

“Brother He An—-” Li Muyang did not care whether he was an important person or simply an odd-job worker; fatty Gongshu Yuan said to him when he left: grab onto any thick thighs. He just now noticed He An’s thighs, they are also very thick—-Maybe he is a strong person? Maybe he was sent here by Starry Sky Academy to test him?

Li Muyang has lost faith in Starry Sky Academy, who knows if there would be another test after passing the four trials, who knows whether this is fantasy or reality——after he scanned around the surroundings, it felt more like fantasy than fantasy.

“No, no——” He An hurriedly waved his hand. “Student, I don’t deserve this.”

“Brother He An don’t be polite, I’m also from a poor family, my family opens a pastry shop——I’m unfamiliar with this place and the people, and the other classmates also don’t seem to like me. So, I will need big brother to look after me.” Li Muyang said with utmost sincerity.

This time he wasn’t lying, compared with other students who traveled on hummingbirds here, he really is ‘from a poor family’. Also, those students did acted high and mighty and did not seem to like him at all. A girl with purple hair said to him that she would wait for him at Starry Sky but a dark-haired young man said to him ‘don’t let me see you in Starry Sky Academy’——facing this kind of bullying at school, Li Muyang did not know what to do. Being looked after by an acquaintance, his life should be a little better, right?

He An nodded solemnly in agreement: “the school makes no social distinctions in teaching but for some particular historical reasons, we can’t anger some students because of their identity and background. But you do not need to worry too much, you are at Starry Sky Academy, regardless of their background

and whether they are a young master or a prince, this is a place where justice can be found. I can't help you with anything major but if there's anything I can do then let me know——What is your name?"

"My last name is Li, I'm called Muyang. Li Muyang." Li Muyang said with a smile.

"Student Muyang, I will now take you to register and select your academic program, then I will take you to your dorm. You can rest there for the time being and wait for the instruction to be called up." After listening to Li Muyang, He An felt much closer to Li Muyang.

"Thank you Big brother He An." Li Muyang said with a smile.

The Stage of Appointing Commander really is too big, Li Muyang did not know how long he had walked in the clouds until he finally came to stop in front of a simple and unadorned ancient building that was similarly shrouded in ethereal clouds and mist.

"Come this way." He An beckoned to Li Muyang.

Walking in front, he pushed open a door into the main hall, where two odd-job workers in grey shirt were busy working.

"A new student is here to register." He An shouted.

"What's the student's name?" An elder who looked experience and knowledgeable asked aloud.

"Li Muyang." Li Muyang once again called out his name.

"Li Muyang——" The elder flipped through the notes made of filaments of bamboo, and as expected found Li Muyang's files. He said with a smile: "A good name. Student Muyang you arrived early——"

"Early?" Li Muyang stood stunned for a moment before he exclaimed in surprise: "the other students have not arrived yet?"

"Except you, no other students have arrived." The elder said with a cheerful smile.

Li Muyang smiled to himself thinking: could it be I am the first person to pass all four assessments? Could it be I am not only the first in West Wind Kingdom but also first in Starry Sky Academy—-

Then, he became alarmed; it's the taller trees in the woods that get their tops blown off. He is so remarkable and also performed so well, what if other students envy him?

For example at the bottom of the mountain he came across many wealthy masters and ladies, if they weren't annoyed and irritated because he's rich and tough, why did they make things difficult for him?

Just as Li Muyang was lost in various fancies and conjectures, the main entrance to the hall was again pushed open.

"A new student is here to register——this young lady should be the first to arrive at stargazing building for registration, right?" A thin odd-job worker in grey shirt led a pretty young lady into the hall. The young lady had bright purple hair, beautiful facial features and looked cold and elegant, like a royal princess here to visit.

"Oh, someone is earlier than us?" The thin odd-job worker glanced over at Li Muyang, a look of astonishment crossed his face.

"Just a little bit earlier——" Li Muyang gestured by bringing his thumb and index finger together then hurriedly explained: "in fact it was more or less the same time. I'm not that much better than her."

"It's you?" Lu Qiji glared furiously at Li Muyang. She smoothly passed the three assessments, wine, women, and avarice but the last 'temper' assessment wasted her a lot of time and energy. Even so, she still thought she would be the first to arrive, and the thought of someone being ahead of her never crossed her mind. Moreover, it's that Li Muyang—-Enemies often cross each other's path, right?"

"It's me." Li Muyang grinned foolishly: "You said you would wait for me at the peak of the mountain but how could I let a beautiful girl wait for a boy, so I climbed up here first—-it's only right for a boy to wait for a girl."

Li Shinian said before, never be late at a date with a girl and never let a girl wait for you. Also, must not be disgruntled just because you waited for a girl for more

than an hour.

Therefore, Li Muyang often waited for Li Shinian for more than an hour——-

But Li Muyang came to understand what she meant, he has to arrive in advance at a date. This time it was no different.

He thought by saying this she would be happier and would hate him a little less.

After all, he really didn't want to form enemies now.

Lu Qiji's eyes were filled with murderous rage as she snapped: "You're insulting me?"

"No, no." Li Muyang repeatedly waved his hand. "We are classmates, classmates should love each other and take care of each other. Friendship is first, competition is second—-it's not important who was the first to climb the mountain. First and second-what's the difference? The old saying goes: who have the last laugh, laughs the best. Your smile is more beautiful than me—-"

"You're lucky this time. Don't you dare climb ahead of me again." After listening to Li Muyang, Lu Qiji was infuriated even more. This jerk actually dares to show off in public, watch how I take care of you later.

"I never thought of climbing ahead of you." Li Muyang became worried. What's the matter with this girl, why does it always seem like she had eaten hundreds of sword. Whenever she speaks it feels like she would kill anytime. "My good friend, Yan Xiangma said men don't want to climb ahead of a women, they just want to climb on a women's body——-but I think he is wrong."

"———-"

112 – I want to slay dragons!

“Damn pervert.” Lu Qiji was burning with anger.

She has been in this world for so many years, no one ever dared to say something like that to her. The words she said, ‘don’t you dare climb ahead of me’ was referring to their accomplishments, meaning she will absolutely not let Li Muyang be better than herself and tread on her head.

He deliberately distorted her meaning and moved in the direction of men and women.

“Yes. Yan Xiangma is a pervert——” Li Muyang nodded with a serious look on his face. “I also told him that I don’t agree with his remarks. There should be sincere and pure feelings between men and women, only then can the extremely complicated matter can happen. Although I don’t know what it is. His starting point is wrong, as if men and women only interact with each other to climb onto each other——Anyway I don’t think so.”

“I’m going to take your dog life.” Listening to Li Muyang’s long-winded discussion of the difference between ‘head and body’, Lu Qiji could no longer restrain her fury. If it was not for the presence of the other people, she would have long killed him on the spot.

This was not flirting but harassment. He looks honest and simple but underneath he is so despicable.

“Classmate, what you said is wrong. We are both students of Starry Sky Academy and are admitted into the school at the same period, that means we are friends of the same year——Even if we do not love each other, or support each other, you don’t have to say ‘I will take your dog life. If you frequently resort to violence, how could the teachers tolerate you? Especially because you’re a freshman, people will have this question in mind—-‘A student with that character, how could she be admitted into Starry Sky Academy? It is said Starry Sky Academy was established to train elites? Why is there such a huge difference between what we imagined’—-isn’t that right?”

“Li Muyang——” Lu Qiji’s chilling, cold eyes glared at Li Muyang, her hand

exploding with red lights. She was ready to make her move.

“Brother He An, she’s trying to kill me——” Li Muyang turned to He An with a exceedingly pitiful look on his face and cried aloud. Now that he has held onto thick thighs and came to know a big brother, whenever little brother runs into danger it is obviously the time for big brother to step forward. Otherwise what’s the point in getting to know big brother?

He An also felt Lu Qiji went too far, where are we? This is the stargazing building, it is the place where new students register. Also, it is the place where students have their first impression of Starry Sky Academy—-How can there be a murderous atmosphere?

So, He An stepped forward, used his large body to block Li Muyang and said primly: “Student, if you have something to say, you should say it nicely, and not yelling to kill all the time——Starry Sky has its own set of rules, Starry Sky also have its own system, how can I let you do this kind of thing here?”

Lu Qiji obviously was not afraid He An, said in a cold voice: “He utters indecent words, did you not hear him?”

“I heard it.” He An nodded. “But student Muyang have said it very clearly, those words were said by his friend—-What was he called? Ah, that Yan Xiangma. He already stated he does not agree with his friend’s view. He has expressed his stance, what more do you want him to do?”

“You are biased towards him, is that the rules of Starry Sky?”

“Student, whether or not I have sided with anyone, is decided by the disciplinary hall. They judge all students and staffs who broke the rules. If you are dissatisfied, you can file a complaint to them.” He An stood tall and straight, not afraid of any slanderous attack, arguing strongly for what he felt was right.

“Qiji, what’s wrong?” A young man clad all in black came over; it was Chu Xun whom Li Muyang had met at the bottom of the mountain and had a very unpleasant time with.

Lu Qiji kept silent, staring viciously at Li Muyang, as if she could kill him by doing so.

Chu Xun’s line of sight also shifted over to Li Muyang. “What? This kid bullied

you?”

“Let’s go register.” Lu Qiji said aloud.

“What?” With a puzzled look, Chu Xun turned and looked at Lu Qiji. This clearly did not match with Lu Qiji’s temperament. She is the kind of woman who sees everything is not worthwhile. Ordinary people and things she would never pay any attention to; therefore the people and things she attaches importance to are not ordinary at all.

The fact before us is clear, Li Muyang is important, what he did also angered Lu Qiji. But she rather avoids trouble and complicates the situation. Does that mean Lu Qiji’s temperament and fear have been oppressed by the authority of Starry Sky?

However, given Starry Sky Academy’s impressive reputation, he felt Lu Qiji did not do anything wrong.

Thus, Chu Xun nodded, saying: “There’s plenty of time later. We will remember this for now and settle it later.”

Li Muyang whispered to He An: “brother He An listen, they will retaliate later ——–If anything was to happen to me, you must report it to the school that they are the culprits. I can’t die in vain, even if I am a ghost I will go find them———-”

He An anxiously watched Lu Qiji and Chu Xun, thinking to himself that if they were really going to retaliate behind, there really isn’t anything he could do. I am just an odd-job worker, what can be done?

However, he still smiled and nodded. “I will do my best, you have to be careful ———-if there’s nothing important then stay up the mountains and study, try not to head down the mountain.”

“I understand.” Li Muyang nodded. He would avoid going down the mountain anyway since he has such a powerful enemy outside waiting for him. The Cui family must have lie in ambush down the mountain so he was determined not to head down before he learnt something.

He An felt Li Muyang is also very pitiful, how did he anger the pupils with

powerful backing the very instant he arrived at the school?

He patted Li Muyang's shoulder comfortingly: "But you don't have to worry about it, nothing will happen. If you feel you're in danger, then you can also tell your teacher—-I think they can come up with a better solution."

With his face filled with gratitude, Li Muyang said: "Thank you big brother He An."

"Go register now." He An said with a smile. "Select a good discipline, put in extra effort and one day you will become a strong person of Starry Sky."

Li Muyang nodded, then headed back to the elder before, asking: "What can I choose to major in? ""

"Take a look." The elder shoved a bamboo filament paper in front of Li Muyang. "There's Buddhist scripture taught by senior monks, there is Taoist sutra teaching, there's also sorcery, astrology, classes about war and conflicts, economics, music, painting, and ancient literature——Also, there's the operations of the kings but only a very few people are able to learn the operations of the kings. Oh, and dragon slayer, a famous teacher teaches 'Dragon Language, 'the Descendants of the Mysterious Dragons', and 'the one hundred and twenty seven possibilities of slaying dragons'——-you can select one or select many. If you are enthusiastic you can even choose all the selected rows. However, don't bite off more than you can chew. The majority of the students choose a subject of interest to major in and then minor in the others. They only need to attend lectures once in a while. It won't need too much work or time."

"Refining pill in front of Mount Lung Fu, six days are enough to make the demon's blood run cold. Ever since the crane return to the mysterious province, the Tao way is thriving around the world." A handsome man in an outfit whiter than snow pushed open the door and entered, his loud and clear voice resounded across the hall. "What is happy? What is freedom? Tao begets One, One begets Two, Two begets Three, Three begets the myriad of living things. Their techniques take emptiness as the foundation and adaptation as the application. The have no regular forms nor are disintegrated, and so are able to penetrate to the true basis of living things. Because they neither take credit for

nor rule over myriad things, they are able to become the masters of all living things. Taoism is mysterious and wonderful. Once learned, there are endless uses and you can enjoy its benefit all your life.”

“I don’t agree with you.” A man crowned with a tall hat marched in, exclaiming: “As we all know, the scriptures of the world came from Buddhism. It is said: The dharma of condition arising is called emptiness, also called name of unreal or the essence of the middle way. It is also said there is no one single dharma that does not arise because of dependent co-arising. Thus, among all dharmas, there is no one that is not empty——-Who you are? Where do you come from? Where will you go? Don’t tell me you are not a bit curious of these issues? Don’t tell me you do not want to get know the origin and development?”

“The Tao system was torn into fragments for the world. Insight meditation, remain in silence, keeping thoughts, abstain from eating cereals, sacred teachings, the law of repentance, abstain from meat and wine, rituals, spells, curses, reclusion, expel demons and devils, subdue monsters, remove misfortunes, pray for calamities, bedroom arts, and immortal technique—–The three thousand collected Taoist scriptures are wide-ranging and profound. Even by learning little knowledge one can roam the Starry Sky, becoming immortal ———”

“Who is immortal? Which Taoist can’t die? Tell me one of them——”

“There’s so many immortals on your side, but I haven’t seen you drink tea and discuss scriptures with them before——-”

———

Xiahou Qianbai and Kong Li, the two rivals are brought into a fight once again.

A simple-and honest-looking bookworm stood at the door. Because he looked too common, except from Lu Qiji who swept her eyes over him, the other people did not even notice his presence.

The fight was too intense, attracting all eyes of the hall.

It wasn’t until they gasped for breath, did that Bookworm finally have the chance to talk.

He did not look into both of their eyes, instead in a timid voice said: “teachers

——-we must not interfere with the student’s choice of course, this is the school rule.”

“Who interfered with who?” Xiahou Qianbai glowered at him, saying: “did I point the sword at the student’s neck and forced them to choose Taoism?”

“Exactly, us Buddhist sees utmost importance in fate, can the predestined relationship be forced?” Kong Li held his head high.

Bookworm simply smiled foolishly. “Both teachers——are right.”

“Bookworm, what did you come here for? Don’t tell me you think someone would be stupid enough to choose that subject you teach? Why don’t you think about how many years you have not received a student to teach?”

Bookworm’s face flushed with embarrassment. “I just came to see——-the lively atmosphere. “

“Hmm.” Xiahou Qianbai arrogantly turned away.

Lu Qiji walked over to the elder and said in a loud and strong voice: “I want to slay dragons.”

“———-”

Chapter 113: I am one！

“I want to slay dragons.”

A tossed stone raises thousand ripples, a brief remark resonated across the entire observatory.

Lu Qiji’s choice left everyone stunned, even Bookworm who studied dragons for several decades had a look of disbelief: there really is a fool who wants to major in my dragon slayer course? She didn’t eat the wrong medicine, right?

Kong Li and Xiahou Qianbai took a brief glimpse at Lu Qiji then at Bookworm. They could hardly believe their eyes.

This girl won’t be hired by Bookworm, right?

Yes, a beauty trap. He intentionally hired a beautiful, young female student to choose the Slay Dragon as major in front of Li Muyang, then Li Muyang would obviously follow in the footsteps of the female student——Why is there so many students in the music and painting classes? It’s precisely because there are most girls in these two classes.

Girls study these two subjects in order to improve their personal qualities and character; boys study these two subjects purely to find a cultured and beautiful wife.

“This bookworm is too shameless. In order to snatch Li Muyang he could do anything, he came up with such a dirty scheme.”

Kong Li and Xiahou Qianbai exchanged meaningful glances with each other, affirming each other’s thoughts.

Even though they knew that Starry sky academy could not possibly recruit a student that would act and do such a thing, they still had to accuse the stupid bookworm with all sorts of crimes and misdeed. After all, whose fault was it that he was able to become the confidant of the Dean at such a young age?

Although back then when they observed the scene in the magic mirror of Water Moon cave, their attention was mainly on the dark horse Li Muyang most of the time but a student who passed the four trials at roughly the same time as Li Muyang is also quite extraordinary.

Lu Qiji is beautiful and gifted, how can such a remarkable student waste her time with the Dragon Slayer course?

Kong Li came close to Lu Qiji and said to her: “Student, you must be careful when choosing your major——because your major will determine your future direction. You should choose Buddhism; in the future you will naturally learn the sacred and mysterious martial skills of Buddhism. If you major in Taoism, there are three thousand scriptures waiting for you to analyse. If you choose music or painting, you will likely to become one of the most remarkable musician or artist of Starry Sky—-Of course, the number of students in music or painting who became famous are few. For example Li Qiubai and Du Ruofu who became famous from poetry, they are well known throughout the continent. For a girl, they are both very good careers.”

“But why did you choose to slay dragon? Do you know what the Slay Dragon course learns? Do you know how many years the Slay Dragon course did not manage to recruit any students? Where are dragons? ——There isn’t even a dragon, what’s the use in learning to slay dragons?”

Xiahou Qianbai deeply believes it to be so. A smile formed on his handsome, flawless face as he gazed at Lu Qiji, trying to use the ‘pretty boy trap’ to crack Bookworm’s ‘beauty trap’.

“Student Qiji, as a teacher of Starry Sky, we are not in a position to help the student make their choice, that is, no matter what you choose as your major, we can only accept——However, I think a good teacher should guide students, allow them to see the reality, so they are not seduced by some small gains and not blinded by some villain. Your selection determines the rest of your life——so, again tell the clerk what your real choice is?”

“Dragon Slaying.” Lu Qiji said without the slightest hesitation, thinking to herself: these guys are idiots, right? I said it very clearly, why do I have to choose again?

“———-”

Bookworm was suddenly beaming all over with happiness as he trotted over to Lu Qiji. Because Lu Qiji is so beautiful, he became a little shy. He awkwardly met her gaze directly for a fleeting moment: “student Lu Qiji, welcome——-I believe

Dragon skills will come in handy one day. The secret skills passed down from ancient times, we must bring it to great height.”

Lu Qiji took a quick glance at Bookworm, said indifferently: “I’m glad you are pleased.”

“＿＿＿＿”

Bookworm felt as if a pot of ice-cold water was splashed over his face, but cold water still couldn’t douse the flame in his heart. Even thinking about the fact that he now has a student to teach, he was beaming with excitement——Except from the student he taught several years ago, there were never any freshmen willing to follow him to study how to slay a dragon.

It is said that even now, the student he taught was still wandering in the mountains and around rivers looking for a real dragon without succeeding. Instead, his skill in finding ancient dens had greatly improved – there had always been guilt in the bookworm’s heart.

Even the elder has some difficulty accepting. He looked at Lu Qiji and asked again: “young lady, are you sure you want to select Slay Dragon as your major?”

He swept his eyes over at Bookworm before he continued: “you know, dragon is just a myth——in thousands of years no one had ever seen a real dragon. Not to mention that whether or not people are able to slay a dragon—-As long as you are certain I will record it to your file and give you your room number.”

“I’m certain.” Lu Qiji said without the slightest hesitation.

Helpless, the elder can only let out a long sigh. But he deftly wrote down Lu Qiji’s name on the file, then handed her a wooden plate and said: “You will live at the first room with the symbol dragon.”

Lu Qiji took the plate, turned and walked towards the outside.

Chu Xun saw Lu Qiji leaving, he immediately dashed over to the elder. “Quick, register me—–Chu Xun, major in Dragon slaying..”

“＿＿＿＿”

Fatty’s eyes reddened, beads of tears gathering in the corner of his eyes.

Two students, he now has two students——this was the highest number of students enrolled into his course in his ten years of teaching how to slay dragons.

Since Lu Qiji already registered, the elder did not try to persuade anymore. He quickly wrote down Chu Xun's name, handed him a wooden number plate and said: "You live at the second room with the symbol dragon."

Chu Xun grabbed the plate, trotting after Lu Qiji.

Kong Li's and Xiahou Qianbai's face turned red from embarrassment, they still do not have a student but Bookworm has two students now. Thinking of before when they told Bookworm that he'd never recruit any students, they felt as if they had been slapped in the face in public.

Fortunately, student Li Muyang whom they both have a preference on has not yet made a final choice.

So, both Kong Li and Xiahou Qianbai's eyes were fixed on Li Muyang.

"Student Li Muyang, have you decided? Buddhism is practiced all around the world, come to our side? I promise I will teach you everything I know——Did you not achieve first place in West Wind Kingdom? You're good at liberal arts, I guarantee later you will become a strong person of Starry Sky like Li Qiubai and Du Ruofu——-" Kong Li held onto his tall hat as he said amiably.

"Taoist is free and unconstrained, free to do as they wish. Practice is even straightforward, you may only need to dream while you're sleeping, then when you wake up, you will become one of the strongest in the world. Choose Taoism, I promise you will not suffer, not be fooled———"

"We Buddhists pay particular attention to a moment of enlightenment, such as picking up and obtain a red-spider lily overnight."

"Sun and moon are bright without being ignited, stars exist without being arranged, birds and animals are born without being man-made, wind automatically blows without fanning, water flows without being pushed, vegetation grows without being planted, breathe without breathing, heart beats it self, and so on———Everything in existence is reasoned."

Li Muyang was nearly swayed when he thought about his physical condition.

Taoism may be able to help him dispel his doubts?

“Teachers———” Bookworm became dissatisfied with the noise the two teachers were causing, which would affect the image of the school. “It’s the student’s own choice.”

“You shut up.” Kong Li snarled. “Li Muyang is my disciple.”

“Hey, is this robbery now? He is already my disciple.” Xiahou Qianbai began to fight back.

“What evidence do you have?”

“What about you, what evidence do you have?”

“————” Bookworm was once again not left with an opportunity to uter a word.

———-

Li Muyang stood in front of the elder, his lips curved into an awkward smile as he said: “That——is there tuition fees to be paid after admission?”

“Tuition fees? No there isn’t. Clothing, food, housing and transport are provided by the school. Of course, this is only to ensure your basic needs, if you want to enjoy a better life, it is necessary to pay yourself——-some students bring their own cook.”

“I understand.” Li Muyang nodded then whispered: “I was the first place in West Wind Kingdom’s imperial exams, is there scholarship?”

“———”

Seeing that the elder did not answer, Li Muyang quickly waved his hand and said: “Never mind, I was just asking casually——-I have also decided to major in Dragon Slaying.”

“What?’

Kong Li and Xiahou Qianbai, in the midst of fighting, yelled out at the same time, even Bookworm standing next to them was stunned by Li Muyang’s words.

“Li Muyang, why are you like that?” Kong Li felt his heart aching: “Where does dragons exist in this world? Learning a true ability is the smart move here.”

“Although the legend of dragon warriors resounds throughout the continent, but legend is a legend after all, legend will always be a dream——there’s no dragons, it will be useless learning it. There’s still time to change your mind, I can personally be your teacher, mentor, and make sure you receive the scholarship every year——”

“Student Li Muyang, teacher is doing this for your own good———”

“Even if you don’t select my course, choose Buddhism——If not, then study music and painting or even ancient literature. If you become famous through music and painting, you may also have the opportunity to became a mighty person, If you’re like this——it’s the same as giving up and abandoning yourself ——-Li Muyang, there’s no dragon, this world has no dragons—–” Xiahou Qianbai’s eyes were turning red, why does these students don’t cherish themselves? Decades later when they think of this day they will regret it so much.

“———I am one.” Li Muyang wanted to pat his chest loudly and shout at the top of his voice.

Chapter 114: Give up on yourself！

“Once upon a time, in the distant past, there lived a powerful race, the dragons. They possessed the inherent ability to grow scales and magical claws, and could travel through clouds and swoop down into the sea. With one sneeze——oh heavens, they could blow a city into smithereens. They had countless valuable treasures and had a lifespan equal to the Heavens. One day, the dragon princess was bored and wanted to try a new dish. What did she want to eat? Yes, it’s the human heart. She said the human heart is the most complicated thing, so it must be very tasty after cooked slowly over a low heat, right? She commanded her dragon bodyguards to find one hundred humans for her to taste——Dragons are brutal and ruthless, in order to protect the human race from being eaten, elites gathered together to kill the dragons. They severed their heads, snapped off their claws. The blood of the dragons flowed into the river, leaving the river stained red for years. The dragon warriors became super heroes well-known across the Starry Sky, their blood-racing stories were rewritten as poems—-”

This is one of the stories of the brave dragon slayers that had spread far and wide across the divine continent.

Li Shinian had listened to this story numerous times as a child, so much that when Li Shinian was not willing to sleep, Li Muyang was compelled to tell her this heroic story over and over again.

Every time after she listened to the story, Li Shinian would say with her eyes shining: “In the future I want to marry someone like the dragon slayer heroes.”

Li Muyang could only smile and say to her that there are no dragons in this world, so there won’t be any Dragon Slayers.

And then the brother and sister would nestle close together.

Yes, no one had ever seen a dragon. Even the story teller at the restaurant secretly said to Li Muyang that there are no dragons in this world, his stories are just legends. Legends are obviously not true.

After hearing what the storyteller said Li Shinian was upset for a long time. Later, Li Muyang told her the story of ‘The Seven Swordsmen of Changbai’, she then said she would marry Changbai’s seven swordsmen——but there are seven

swordsmen, so who does she wants to marry?

This time she did not tell Li Muyang who she liked the most, afraid that Li Muyang would ask the storyteller whether the seven swordsmen of Changbai was real or not—-At that time, Li Muyang simply did not want his baby sister to be deceived, without realising that destroying a little girl's dream is a very cruel thing to do.

However, whether Li Muyang believed it or not, or whether Li Shinian would grow up to marry a dragon slayer or not, tales related to the ruthlessness of the dragons or the courageousness of the dragon warriors are still retold in every house within the continent.

Back then Li Muyang unswervingly believed that dragons are not real. He thought that it's impossible for dragons to exist in the world. However, ever since his body began to function abnormally, he became the first in the imperial exam from a worthless trash, and ever since he was jolted awake by the same nightmare over and over again, he could vividly see a pair of pitch-black eyes and feel his chest torn open by a dragon—-

He clearly felt there was a black dragon within his body.

Although he can't accept this reality.

In this world and era, where everyone dreamt of slaying a dragon, Li Muyang felt his life has been very hard and stressful all along.

"Teachers—–" Bookworm's faced flushed with anger, the other two teachers had gone too far. The school has the rule that no teachers are allowed to influence a student's choice. Moreover, they attacked his own Dragon Slayer class, this clearly shows they do not attach any importance to him and his Dragon Slayer class? "How could there be no dragons in this world? There are clear written records in the 'Dragon Chronicles': Dragons are long-lived creatures and social hierarchies exist among them. Back then they were the masters and the ones who controlled the divine continent—-I believe that, even now, they are hiding in an unknown corner. As long as we work hard, we can find them—–"

"Find them for what?" Kong Li shot a glance at Bookworm: "After learning the 'dragon language' with you for a few years, then one can communicate with dragons, drink tea and chat with them? After studying the 'descendants of the

dragon', one can differentiate the different species of dragons and the ranks among them? Learning the 'one hundred and twenty seven possibilities of slaying a dragon', one will be able to use the one hundred and seventy ways to slay a dragon?"

"My theory is still in the research phase, it's a slow process——"

"Do you even believe the words you just said yourself?" This time, Xiahou Qianbai was on Kong Li's side.

"You———-" Bookworm knows he is no match for them so instead he argued: "It must be the student's own choice, right? This is the school's rule."

"Don't tell me what the rules are, rules are dead, we are alive, we can't let a good student be ruined you——Li Muyang, come with me."

"Why does he has to go with you? He's coming with me——"

"Xiahou Qianbai, do you want to fight again?"

"If you want a fight, then let's have afight. Do you think I'm afraid of you——"

"Come on, this time let's go to Flower Language Plains——"

"Yes, to the Scorpion Valley at Flower Language Plains—I will tear you to shreds to feed those red scorpions—-"

——

"I'm choosing the Dragon Slayer class." Li Muyang stood in front of the elder, whispering. He did not want to provoke the two teachers into a heated argument. They seemed too passionate and also without bad intentions, which made Li Muyang extremely worried.

He did not have any money on him, if they wanted a gift as payment, what would he do? When he was studying in Jiangnan, his parents often gave presents to the teachers.

"What?" The elder responsible for the registration of students was completely taken by surprise: "Student—-have you considered carefully? Kong Li and Xiahou Qianbai violated the Academy's rules, but their words are not without sense—-I

have been given the responsibility to handle the registration here for nearly a century, the previous students who studied how to slay dragon are said to have become Feng Shui masters, helping kings and tycoons to search for auspicious sites—-Ah they were all good students, it's unfortunate——"

"——-"

He An also came over to try to persuade him: "Student Muyang, you must think about it carefully— you cannot choose the same profession as a girl, even if she is pretty. I'm telling you, the classes with the most beautiful girls are music and painting classes, even royal princesses take those classes. You must think carefully, don't be impulsive."

"Brother He An, I have thought about it carefully——" Li Muyang looked firmly at the elder and said without the slightest waver in his voice: "I choose the Slay Dragon class, I ask you to register me."

"What?" Kong Li and Xiahou Qianbai finally stopped their quarreling.

Kong Li grabbed Li Muyang's shoulder with one strong grip, tears streaming down his cheeks: "Li Muyang, why do you—-give up on yourself?"

"Because I think——" Li Muyang's cheeks flushed slightly, his lips curled into an embarrassed smile. "I have to protect myself. "

"If you want to protect yourself, then you certainly cannot be majoring in Dragon Slaying—-Taoism is powerful and we have countless magic weapons and mysterious techniques, once you have learnt them you will have the ability to destroy the heavens and earth——"

"Stop exaggerating. I have not seen any Taoists jump out to destroy the heavens and earth——"

"Kong Li you want to die——"

——

Watching the two Starry Sky teachers quarrel again, Li Muyang could only let out a gentle sigh.

This school—-it's not as good as others have said?

"Li Muyang——" Bookworm whispered, tugging at Li Muyang's sleeve, his eyes

twinkling brightly. “Don’t worry, I’ll take care of you———”

Chapter 115: Cultivate both Buddhism and Taoism!

Li Muyang nodded and replied with a simple and genuine smile: “I have not asked for teacher’s name?”

“My surname is Yang, my first name is Xiaohu.” Bookworm said, seemingly slightly embarrassed.

However, his parents gave the name so he did not want to change it. Although he was not like a tiger at all but he insisted on using the name ‘Xiaohu’. (TN Note: Xiaohu means little tiger)

“Teacher Yang, nice to meet you.” Li Muyang said, bowing respectfully to Yang Xiaohu: “I will need teacher Yang to take care of me in the future.”

“Of course.” Yang Xiaohu patted his thick chest as he exclaimed. “I will teach you everything I know to thank you for trusting me today.”

“My dream since I was young is to be a dragon slayer, I admire the dragon warriors the most—-” Li Muyang whispered, grinning foolishly: “Teacher Yang, I heard you guys talk about the ‘one hundred and twenty seven possibilities to slay dragon’——If I learned everything, is there really one hundred and twenty seven ways to slay a dragon?”

“According to the theory it’s possible.” Yang Xiaohu replied confidently.

Li Muyang could feel his heart racing as he asked: “It really is so amazing?”

“The secret dragon slaying techniques are left behind by the former sages, I just summarised them and then did some systematic research and organisation —-the sages in the past used these secret techniques to slay dragons and have been successful. What they can do back then, how can we be outdone? Student Muayng, you have to believe me, believe in our Dragon Slayer course—-I will make you become the most dazzling dragon slayer in Starry Sky, make your childhood dream come true.”

Li Muyang was ‘emotionally touched’ that his eyes were brimming with tears of excitement. He tightly clenched Yang Xiaohu’s fat hand and cried aloud: “Thank you teacher—-I will certainly study hard and live up to teacher’s high expectations. Teacher, you must never hide anything. Any secrets or dragon

slaying techniques must be passed down, be sure to teach me them in a timely manner—-prevent me from being killed by the dragon. ”

“Of course. Of course.” Yang Xiaohu laughed heartily, he seemed thrilled to bits.

While Kong Li was extremely disappointed with Li Muyang’s self-defeating behaviour, pointing to Li Muyang he said: “Boy—–the vicious tendency in your heart is too heavy and your killing intent is too strong, if you do not use the sacred Buddhist method to guide you back to the right path, afraid you may have more trouble later and brew a big disaster.”

“Taoist mental cultivation methods are governed by non-interference with nature. He should be majoring in Taoism——the ‘sonorous hum’ is a supreme method of meditation.”

Kong Li was at the end of his patience with his stupid teammate next to him. He huffed: “Xiahou Qianbai, you idiot, Li Muyang has been snatched away by Bookworm, but you’re still arguing with me?”

Xiahou Qianbai paused for a moment, then shifted his furious glare to Bookworm once again: “Bookworm, you are secretly manipulating the student’s freedom of choice, I will definitely report this matter to the academy—–”

Bookworm was beaming from ear to ear as he bowed his head respectfully to Xiahou Qianbai and Kong Li: “Teachers—–thanks for letting me win.”

“Who let you win?”

“You cheat—–”

Xiahou Qianbai and Kong Li suddenly dashed forward to attack.

Li Muyang immediately leaped out, blocking Kong Li and Xiahou Qianbai who was in a state of rage: “Teachers—it’s not that I don’t want to learn Buddhism and Taoism scriptures. Buddhism and Taoism are both such lofty mountains I wholeheartedly admires. The grandfather who treated my illness when I was a child—-he is also a Taoist. I liked being with him. However, the reason I chose Dragon Slayer is because I have my own difficulties so I have to act against my will.”

“What difficulties?” Kong Li asked. “Tell us, maybe we can help you.”

“——It might not be too convenient now.” Li Muyang said, hesitating. “However, I can still practice Buddhism and Taoism—-”

“Huh? You changed your mind?” Xiahou Qianbai exclaimed in delight.

“Not that.” Li Muyang shook his head: “The elder said earlier, I can study dragon slaying and also attend other classes——As long as I have the energy and the interest, why not?”

Kong Li’s brows furrowed into a frown. “Don’t tell me you want to minor in Buddhism and Taoism? Just so you know, their spells and techniques are profound, wide-ranging, and difficult to understand, countless people have been unable to get a glimpse of its true face even in their entire life. Those who can break the door are highly treasured. If one wants to master them, then they must study diligently and put in much more effort than others—-Those who could stand at the top are geniuses. You’re so young yet you dare to say that you want to practice both Taoism and Buddhism? You must know that if you covet all you lose all, I fear that when you’re older you still won’t achieve anything and regret how you wasted your whole life. ”

Kong Li’s words were honest and sincere, he simply did not want to see a talented student taking the wrong step and become an ordinary person. If that was the case, it would be due to his negligence as a Starry Sky teacher and also the negligence of Starry Sky Academy.

How to maximise a student’s potential is something they have to do.

Li Muyang brushed his clothes before he respectfully saluted: “Thank you teacher. Teacher, I will keep it in mind—-I only dared to say something like that was because I’m willing to put in more effort than any other person. I am willing to endure hardship and suffering. As long as I try hard, pay two or three times more effort than others or even ten times the energy and time—it is the only way I can protect my family and keep them alive.”

“Huh?” Kong Li looked at Li Muyang’s eyes that were welled up with tears: “Is there something wrong?”

“I angered some strong enemies on my way here, my family’s life are in grim danger. My heart is torn with worry but I can’t stay by their side at all times—-I enrolled into Starry Sky Academy and is protected and cherished by many teachers, so my safety is not a problem. But my father and mother, and my sister —-I’m extremely worried about them. I fear the enemies will seek revenge from them.”

“Outrageous.” Kong Li was infuriated. “Someone dares to bully a student of Starry Sky?”

“Exactly.” Xiahou Qianbai’s language was even more direct: “They really are seeking their own death. If I run into them, I would take their skulls with my sword.”

Kong Li pondered for a brief moment before he said: “Starry Sky has its own rules, we are not allowed to interfere with affairs of the outside world. However, if you are constantly worried, then of course, it would be hard to concentrate and learn. A gifted student is wasted like that, it is a very unfortunate thing. That’s it, where are your family? I’ll see if I can do something to help.”

“Thank you teacher. Thank you teacher.” Li Muyang repeatedly bowed once again. “My father is Li Yan, my mother is called Luo Qi, my sister is called Li Shinian, they live at Hu Bu lane in Jiangnan city of West Wind Kingdom—– Respected teacher, please help me keep my family safe.”

Kong Li waved his hand dismissively: “It’s a piece of cake.”

Li Muyang then immediately bowed to Xiahou Qianbai: “Although teacher Xiahou won’t help but I am still thankful——I still admire Taoism greatly. I will certainly learn well and not disappoint teacher Xiahou.”

Xiahou Qianbai looked furious as he said aloud: “Who says I won’t help? The things the Buddhist can do, do you think us Taoist can’t? You wait and watch me call on the disciples of the Taoist sect to protect your family——-”

Chapter 116: The land dragons perished!

What someone lacks is what one wish for the most.

Li Muyang believed that his intelligence was not high so he particularly liked to interact with smart people.

Back then he always listened to Li Shinian; whatever Li Shinian told him to do he would follow without question, he really was rarely wrong—-except when Li Shinian pushed him out to take the blame.

On his way here he met fatty Gongshu Yuan, who he also thinks is a wise person. Li Muyang still do not know when or how he helped Gongshu Yuan that made him feel like he owe Li Muyang something. This wise person told him to grab hold of thick thighs when he reaches Starry Sky Academy—- [TN Note: Thick thighs literally means latching onto someone who will support you]

Li Muyang knows nothing at all about Starry Sky Academy, he even did not know who the thick thighs in Starry Sky Academy are. But there is one thing he was certain of—everyone has thicker thighs than him.

So, at the same time he chose the Slay Dragon course, he did not want to lose the thick thighs Kong Li and Xiahou Qianbai——no, the guidance from these two famous teachers.

So he took this opportunity to suggest himself to cultivate in both Buddhism and Taoism. If he did that, they would have the impression that he is a diligent student——-Don’t teachers like this type of students?

As expected, Kong Li and Xiahou Qianbai’s attitude toward Li Muyang drastically changed, one after the other, they expressed their willingness to help Li Muyang solve his family’s safety issue and ease the worry on his mind, so that he could wholeheartedly practice and learn at Starry Sky Academy.

After obtaining Kong Li’s and Xiahou Qianbai’s promise, Li Muyang was moved to tears. Facing the two teachers of Starry Sky Academy, he bowed deeply, crying: “Saving a life is better than building a seven-storey pagoda——Now that my family is under your protection, I have nothing to worry about. Your kindness, I will never forget it.”

Kong Li looked at him with a sincere expression on his face. “Since you’re admitted into my Starry Sky, then you’re my student. How can we let you be bullied?”

“Exactly. It’s only us who bully people, how could you be bullied like that? Even if you didn’t ask me, I also can’t let them off easily—-Yes, who did you anger? I also have some connections, if it’s someone I know, I could write a letter to them, explain the situation and ask them for a personal favour, that way we can get things done once and for all.

“Tiandu’s Cui family.” Li Muyang said in a low voice.

“So it’s the Cui family——I know them. What did you do to them?”

“The Cui family was going to kill me.”

“Outrageous, the Cui family is abusing their power and connections to bully people—-What happened in the end?”

“I killed the person who bullied me. ”

“——-”

——

Li Muyang received the wooden plate with the dragon character and the number three, which meant he would be living next to the annoying purple-haired woman Lu Qiji and a more annoying black-robe youngster Chu Xun.

Li Muyang tried to switch his room but in the end was refused by the registrar, stating that the allocation of rooms is according to the time of arrival and must not be changed as he wishes. Otherwise, if other students also make a request like that then the management would be messed up.

Having finally solved his family’s safety issue, Li Muyang felt refreshed and free of worry, even if he could not change his room he was still fine with it; at the worst he just won’t interact with them.

After Li Muyang said goodbye to the two teachers Kong Li and Xiahou Qianbai, He An led him to the building where he would be staying at.

In order to emphasise Li Muyang’s importance to him, Yang Xiaohu personally accompanied him to his residence.

Li Muyang felt warm, like Starry Sky Academy is really a first-class education establishment——although it does not have much of a reputation with ordinary people, and even with a graduation certificate he may not be able to find a good job such as an official.

Li Muyang glanced over at Yang Xiaohu walking beside him, asking: “Teacher Yang, I heard Broken Mountain was slashed off by the first dean of the school ——is this true?”

“Of course.” Yang Xiaohu said proudly: “Haven’t you noticed? As we walked here, the top of the mountain is particularly flat——this is the power of the sword.”

Yang Xiaohu had not taught a student in several years but his professionalism informed him that he should encourage the student at this moment. He gently patted Li Muyang’s shoulder and said in a serious tone: “As long as student Muayng work hard, one day you can also slash a mountain in half and become a well-known person——-Teacher believes in you. ”

“———” Li Muyang thought to himself: This chubby man looks simple and honest, but in fact, there are many cunning plots in his stomach. Such empty talk and lies, who would believe him?

The summit of Broken Mountain is too big, when Li Muyang finally reached the student’s residence at the West Cliff, his legs were already very tired.

Quaint small courtyards were built side-by-side, the front gate was made of pine and the inside of tall bamboo. The red lacquer entrance door was tightly secured and on both sides were the head of a qilin.

Although the area of the small courtyard is small, but the surroundings and environment are beautiful.

Yang Xiaohu sighed sorrowfully: “Back then, four students would share one courtyard. Now students can have the whole courtyard to themselves——It is so empty. Dragon Slayer, mankind’s greatest profession. Now it is in decline. But what can we do?”

“———”

The nearer they approached the small courtyard, the more Li Muyang was shuddering with fear.

Like someone was ruthlessly stabbing a sharp sword through his heart, and then, holding the hilt of the sword, stirred vigorously. His heart was broken into pieces, hacked into millions of small bits.

Li Muyang was in immense pain, large beads of sweat forming on his forehead.

“Student Muyang, what’s going on with you?” He An, walking beside Li Muyang, noticed the changes in Li Muyang’s face, hurriedly held onto him and asked.

Hearing the yelling behind him, Yang Xiaohu immediately turned and also supported Li Muyang’s other arm: “Quickly get inside——you would feel better if you lie down in the house. Maybe it’s the residual memories of the four assessments——Several students have been left in torment and distress by the magic mirror after they entered into the school. Some even turned crazy and delusional, and some still have not recovered——-”

Creak——-

He An sped forward, pushed opened the gate of a small courtyard with a wooden sign with the symbol three and helped Li Muyang into the bedroom.

When they entered the bedroom, Yang Xiaohu and He An supported Li Muayng down into his bed to rest.

Yang Xiaohu pushed the window fully open, pointing to the red area in the distance: “That’s Nujiang——also known as the land where dragons perished.” [Nuijang= literally translate to the raging river].

Li Muyang jolted up, sitting up straight in bed.

In his line of sight was a fiery-red ocean that was not masked even with the dense clouds and fog.

Waves upon waves surged up violently.

Thunder rumbled in the distance, sounding like an unwilling roar of a red-fire dragon.

Tears streamed down Li Muyang’s cheeks endlessly, like he had returned to his

homeland.

Chapter 117: Water spirit beauty!

Xishi Restaurant.

A group of young students gathered at the pavilion outside a restaurant, drinking tea, chatting and enjoying the beautiful view of the great lake.

Someone was painting the autumn scenery, on his piece of white paper was the breeze-ruffled loti at the winding garden.

Someone was playing the flute, its sound was mellow and airy, and changed constantly.

Someone was reciting a poem: West Lake is at its best after the season of bloom when petals fall in disarray—-Good words, good words, there is a beautiful scenery before my eyes but I cannot inscribe a poem, I have to keep the words in my mind. It's regretful, I am poetic and wealthy in knowledge but there is no use for it—-

——

As the boys were showing off their skills, their gaze wandered over to the northeast corner of the pavilion from time to time.

Sitting there was a girl as beautiful as a flower, and her each and every little movement made their heart beat faster.

She is not Xishi, she's more beautiful than Xishi.

However, girl, why are your eyes filled with sorrow?

Li Shinian sat in the corner of the pavilion, beside her were a few of her good friends. She is known as the big sister in high school, there is not one girl in her year who does not know her and no one dared to offend her. Whenever she appeared she would be surrounded by people front and behind, she is hundred times more imposing than her 'trash' brother. And because of this, many people could not believe Li Muyang is Li Shinian's brother——

The girls around her were chatting cheerfully, eating the array of fruits and snacks the male students had ordered for them.

"I think Zhu Jianting is really handsome—-he also paints very well, I heard that

the famous painter in Jiangnan Zhu Feihong wants to take him as his apprentice —”

“I like Xu Huawei more, look how charming he is when he plays the flute. If any girl went out with him for a year and listened to him play the flute amidst flowers and under the moonlight and heard his touching words of love, she would definitely be charmed——”

“Zhao Dafu—-this man, his head is empty and he’s an idiot but his father is a famous wealthy man in Jiangnan City, it is said that they eat goose liver—-”

“Would they not have a fatty liver?” Someone jokingly asked.

“Liu Caicai, you’re really annoying—-”

——

Li Shinian’s lips simply curled into a faint smile as she quietly listened to their conversation, without any intention to join in.

They complimented the boys greatly in front of her, which meant that either they have received benefits from them or they were persuaded by them——Li Shinian understand more about this tactic than they do. She also taught his brother Li Muyang this tactic, if he wants to capture a girl’s heart, he has to convince her friends first. If all the girl’s friends think you’re good, then the girl would also automatically think you’re good too.

Even if she thinks you’re a pile of crap before, you still should not be a pile of crap forever——

She knows they had good intentions and there were no other motives. It was just the same as she had given love letters to her idiot brother Li Muyang on behalf of the girls in her class.

Thinking of brother Li Muyang, Li Shinian’s heart felt empty.

They had almost never separated from each other.

She looked after him growing up, this may sound somewhat exaggerated and that idiot brother would be unhappy, however, it really is the truth.

Whenever he could not walk, she supported him.

Whenever he could not eat, she fed him.

When he secretly hid his medication in the corner, she told on him—-

First thing she would do when she leaves the house was shout: “Brother, I’m going out’; the first thing she shouted when she returns home was “Brother, I’m back.”

She had pushed open his bedroom door many times and pushed open the bathroom door countless number of times. When she knew he wrote love letters to a beautiful girl in the school but hid them under the chest box in his room because he did not have the courage to give it to her, Li Shinian ripped the love letters. She thought there was no reason for him to give it out because it would only bring humiliation to him——She had already found the girl and asked her directly; in that girl’s eyes Li Muyang is just a pile of crap.

She knew he secretly read her teen magazines, some of the magazines she likes to read herself but some magazines were for her brother. After all, he has to grow up and become a man.

When he was here, Li Shinian simply thought he is the air. She breathes it all the time but do not see its importance.

However, now that he is away, Li Shinian came to realise he is the sun. Whenever he is not by her side, the world seemed to be obscured by black clouds and smog.

There is a popular saying in the school: accompanying someone is one of the strongest love confessions.

Li Shinian thought to herself: since she and Li Muyang have been living together for so many years, does that means she is confessing to him every day?

No, no, no, he’s the one confessing to her everyday.

Li Shinian then thought again: fortunately, that idiot guy is her brother, otherwise the other boys would be jealous.

“Sister Shinian—-” Liu Caicai waved her hand in front of Li Shinian’s face, asking: “what’s going on with you?”

“Oh—-I’m fine.” Li Shinian once again was brought out of her daze. Recently,

she was often off in another world and only rarely snapped out of her distant, empty distractions.

The summer holidays have started for quite some time now; students are also bored from staying at home all the time. Therefore, the students have organised some autumn outings.

The boys organised this outing, it was obvious they have ulterior motives. They first invited the girl closest to Li Shinian, Liu Caicai, and also other girls, before asking these girls to convince Li Shinian to participate in this outing. Li Shinian could not refuse and had to come with them.

Although she was physically here but her mind has drifted elsewhere. There was nothing her friends around her could do.

“Sister Shinian has been like this all the time lately, is there something on your mind?”

“Must be there’s a boy she likes, girls are easily lost in thought when there’s a boy they like—-Sister Shinian don’t like to talk anymore but before she was lively and cheerful—”

“Sister Shinian, who do you like? Quietly tell us?”

——

Liu Caicai looked at Li Shinian and asked: “Shinian, did you hear us? Which boy do you think is the most handsome?”

“I think they are all handsome——Everyone’s tastes are different, what’s important is that you like him.” Li Shinian said with a smile. How would a question like that pose a problem to her?

“What about you?” Liu Caicai knows of Li Shinian’s craftiness, she refused to let her off so easily. She asked again: “who do you like the most?”

“Me?” Li Shinian’s eyes lit up and her lips curved into a smile. “I like my brother.”

All the girls let out a long sigh.

A girl then said: “Yes, Shinian’s brother is so excellent, it’s hard for her to take notice of other boys?”

“You say, how come not one of us confessed to Li Muyang before? He might be the most valuable diamond in the rough in the world, we have Shinian as our spy, they say those on the waterfront are the ones first to see the rising moon —-”

“Blame Shinian, she has such an amazing brother but she didn’t tell us——- each day when I go to school I would stand at the school gate by the motto stone for a while, ‘journey with wise people’, there is so much philosophy in these words——Two years ago when I visited Li Shinian’s house, I also had dinner with Li Muyang. At that time I already know Li Muyang is not simple, he is a man of few words but he is hardworking——”

————

Li Muyang became a school legend.

Those who ignored Li Muyang before, are gathering information about him, wanting to know what kind of guy he is.

Those who bullied him, are coming to Li Shinian to make up for before——If they do not take the initiative now, what if he comes back on his crane for revenge?

The ones who were most upset were the girls, they had no idea that the charcoal head would break out of his shell and become a dazzling gem, and this precious gem has gone far away and most likely would fall into some other girl’s hand—-

Li Shinian smiled: “You can’t blame me. Back then, didn’t I always said my brother is amazing? But you did not believe me and rolled your eyes—-”

Lui Caicai also smiled: “Who knows what you said was true? When you told us your brother is amazing, we met up and sneaked glances at him—-In the end we were left disappointed.”

Remembering all the funny things before, the girls broke into a loud laughter once again.

Chen Jing's expression was serious as she looked at Li Shinian, asking: "Honestly Shinian, when will your brother come back?"

"What?" Li Shinian warily stared at her and asked: "what do you want?"

"What can I do? I'm a girl, he's a boy——we've known each others for so many years, shouldn't he buy me a cup of tea?"

"Hey, Chen Jing, are you not too thick-skinned? You like him, but you want him to invite you for tea? When Li Muyang comes back, I will live at Li Shinian's home, and wear sexy clothes in front of him every day—-"

"You might as well be naked—-"

"You go die——"

——

The girl once again burst into laughter.

"You wolves, I won't tell you when my brother comes back—-my brother is simple, he would be a sheep around a pack of wolves——"

"Your brother is a sheep? He is a shepherd—How about let him herd me?"

"——"

On the surface of the lake, in between the lotus leaves.

There were faint ripples, like fish randomly flicking their tails.

In the midst of the water ripples, a tapered head broke the water surface without the slightest sound.

A pair of green eyes stared silently at a girl in the pavilion, even among all the girls, she was still the most dazzling that people could identify at a glance.

It puckered its lips, letting out a faint sound of breathing.

Ordinary people could not hear this noise and only their kind could understand.

Whoosh—

Countless tapered heads emerged, like countless toads floating to the surface.

They remained on the surface of the lake, motionless, and did not make the

slightest sound.

Instead quietly waited for their order to attack.

In the pavilion was a group of ugly girls.

Yes, going by the taste of the water spirits, these humans are indeed ugly and intolerable to their eyes.

However, they would be a delicious meal.

Chapter 118: One side is in trouble！

People are good at finding and using their strengths.

Zhao Dafu knows his strength is his money, if he was to compare his looks and talent with Zhu Jian and Xu Huawei it would only end up bringing humiliation to himself.

Just as Zhu Jian was still concentrating on his painting and Xu Huawei was still playing the flute, Zhao Dafu, who was still having difficulty reciting the poem on his mind, trotted over to Li Shinian's side, flipped open his folding fan and said with a smile on his face: "beautiful girl and beautiful scenery—-this trip has been well worthwhile—-Shinian, are you hungry?"

Li Shinian smiled, shaking her head: "I'm okay. I just had two pieces of cakes."

Zhao Dafu glanced at the plate of cakes, before he said: "We came here in a hurry, so I only had time to ask the kitchen to prepare a few cakes. If Shinian doesn't like them, I can ask the kitchen to make something else—-Shinian what is your favorite? It must be the red bean paste lotus cake, right?"

"I like to eat osmanthus cake." Li Shinian answered.

Pa—

With the closed fan in his hand, Zhao Dafu gently tapped it against his palm as he said: "like I said—me and Shinian like the same things, we both like the refreshing fragrance of osmanthus. The flavour is strong and it's not heavy, it's very hard to get sick of it. Shinian if you like, I can bring a box over to you tomorrow."

"Zhao Dafu, you're so mean—-there's so many other girls here but you're only giving it to Shinian, are we invisible?"

"Exactly, we also want some—-my taste is different to yours, I like to eat red bean cakes —-"

"I like glutinous rice cake—-"

——

Zhao Dafu flipped open his paper fan and laughed loudly: "Yes. Yes. Just a few

boxes of cakes, if you like, I can tell someone to bring it over to all your houses ——”

“Did you hear, there’s a difference. Shinian’s cakes are personally delivered by Zhao young master but he will ask ‘someone to bring it over’ for us—-”

“It’s because sister Shinian is beautiful. If you were as beautiful as sister Shinian, people would also treat you the same——”

“Exactly, this is a society that only cares about looks—it’s too cruel—”

——

With a full smile on his face, Zhao Dafu turned to look at Li Shinian and said in a gentle voice: “Shinian what do want to eat for lunch? The freshwater fish at Shou Mian Pavilion is pretty good. I know the young boss there, I can ask them to save us two puffer fish. The roast duck at Yi De Restaurant is also good, it’s carved into thin slices and rolled up. It melts in the mouth. Of course, if you have other suggestions—do not hesitate, I am paying today.”

Li Shinian shook her head: “I can’t eat lunch with you, I have to go home. I did not tell my family when I went out, they are waiting for me to come back.”

“Is this not a trivial matter? I can just send someone to your house and let them know? After we have lunch, we could tour around Sunset Lake——Watch the setting sun at Sunset Lake with classmates and friends, it really is a joy.”

Li Shinian still shook her head. Seeing this, Liu Caicai grabbed her hand and whispered in her ear: “Shinian, let’s go—-it’s rare for Zhao young master to treat us to a good meal.”

“Exactly. We should go to eat roast duck, their roast ducks are famous—-”

“I want to eat pufferfish—-”

——

Li Shinian still shook her head, she firmly said: “you guys go eat, I really have to go back——If I don’t my parents will be worried.”

Before Li Muyang left Jiangnan, many things have happened at their home. Luo Qi and Li Yan had been cautious and anxious all the time, worried that their children would meet with another accident.

Li Muyang was not around anymore so they were unable to take care of him. But they still cared for Li Shinian in every possible ways——Although Li Shinian felt that they were a little too strict, she understood her parents' kind intentions.

So, she tried her best to stay by her parents' side the majority of the time. During the long summer holiday, she seldom went out.

Even her close classmates and friends were puzzled by her actions, Li Shinian is confident and outgoing, back then she often went sightseeing all over the place with her friends —-

"Shinian——" Zhu Jian and Xu Huawei also walked over. Zhu Jian offered the scroll in his hand to her and said: "help me take a look, where else do I need to make changes?"

Li Shinian did not reach out to pick it up, instead said: "Zhu Jian, you're embarrassing me. You know I don't know anything about painting——"

"I've seen you draw—-"

"I was just doodling. "

Xu Huawei held onto the bamboo flute and said with a charming look: "Shinian, the other classmates are going to stay, you should also stay and have fun together——if you leave now everybody would be sad, right?"

Li Shinian already stood up, with a sweet smile on her face she replied: "I'm sorry, but I really have to go back——you guys have fun."

With that, she hitched up her skirt and dashed towards the broken bridge.

After she passed over the broken bridge she will reach the bank of the lake, then by following the path along the bank she will reach home. There is a big difference between her and Li Muyang.

Li Muyang is a boy who is weak on the outside but is even weaker in the inside; he could adjust his ideas and goals at any time according to his requirement.

He does not have strict demands on himself.

Li Shinian is weak on the outside but tough in the inside, once she had came to

a decision it is near impossible for her to change her mind.

“I can arrange a car to take you home.” Seeing that there was no way he could persuade Li Shinian to stay, Zhao Dafu immediately changed his strategy.

Li Shinian refused with a smile: “No. You look after Caicai and the others——It’s only a short distance home.”

She waved her hand in the air and ran in large strides.

“Hiss—-”

A sharp sound suddenly echoed across.

Just as Li Shinian was still in doubt of where the sound came from, a shocking scene occurred before her eyes.

In the depths of Xishi lake, where the lotus leaves clustered densely on the surface, a monster with a frog-like head and a human-like body leaped out of the lake.

Its feet looked like duck webs that could step across the water at a rapid speed.

It treaded across water without a trace, like a ghost.

Water spirits!

An extremely vicious creature that is rarely seen in the divine continent.

This creature can live on both water and land, and are mainly found in the area of the Lake of Death

With their frog-like face and human-like body, they resemble devilish ghosts—-Whoever caught sight of them would think it’s a ghost.

At first it was just one, then very quickly many water spirits, one after another, rose out of the water.

They clenched onto a black, shiny fish spear as they pounced over to where Li Shinian was situated on the broken bridge.

The group of water spirits rushing forth looked like a huge army of frogs in migration.

Of course, the former was infinitely more horrifying than the latter.

Li Shinian was frozen in fear by this scene.

She had never seen such evil creatures, more importantly, had no idea why would they attack her—-

Her eyes were opened wide, her mouth hung open, her legs quivering and her body unable to shift in the slightest.

“Hiss—-”

The water spirit in front came close to her as it opened its mouth, revealing an extremely long tongue, while the fish spear in its hand lifted high up, thrusting towards the stomach of the little girl paralysed with terror.

Chapter 119: Help came from all sides！

“Li Shinian, hurry run——” Zhu Jian yelled at the top of his voice.

“Shinian—-ghosts—“ Xu Huawei shouted, a tremble in his voice, as he launched the bamboo flute in his hand at the water spirits with all his power.

But because of his lack of strength, the bamboo flute only flew across a short distance before it sank to the ground. It did not even touch the water spirits, let alone be able to hurt them.

“——” The muscles in Zhao Dafu’s throat moved up and down and his face took on a look of horror. As if he wanted to shout something, his mouth was gaped open, but no sound came forth.

———

The girls were aghast at the sight. Their eyes were wide as they stood petrified, utterly unable to respond.

A critical moment!

If the fish spear in the water spirits’ hand pierced through Li Shinian’s chest, most likely a beauty would die on the spot. Her dead body would be dragged into the lake by the water spirits and they would enjoy a good meal—-Of course, Li Shinian’s body is too small, given the number of spirits, it is obviously not enough to feed them all.

As their long tongue flicked around in the air, revolting yellow juices splattered all over the place and the stench of rotten fish filled everyone’s nostrils.

The smell lingered in the air was too sickening, Li Shinian all of a sudden snapped awake from her blank state.

She shut her eyes and punched out.

Bang—

‘Ouch’. With a loud miserable scream, the water spirit that dashed in front was sent flying into the air.

‘The Art of the Breaking Body’ Breaking Fist！

This is the martial technique Li Shinian was most skilled at but also the only

technique she could use to protect herself.

Although one water spirit went flying but more water spirits came rushing forth.

Whoosh–

The instant they began to tread across the surface of the water, the fish spear in their hands was thrown in the direction of Li Shinian.

More and more water spirits threw the spear in their hands. The spears descended like rainfall and shrouded the area around Li Shinian.

Clang–

All of a sudden, a large copper shield dropped from the sky, exactly shielding Li Shinian from the shower of spears.

The fish spears jabbed into the copper shield with a couple of loud clangs, but then helplessly plunged into the lake.

A burly figure in a black-robe stood behind the copper shield, with a flick his sleeve, the subsequent incoming spears coming from all directions were all deflected.

The water spirits' body is extremely slimy, allowing them to swiftly tread across water with ease. They skillfully avoided the spears and raced over to where Li Shinian and the black-robed man were standing behind the copper shield.

"Hiss—hiss, hiss——"

With their tongue hanging out, they made a sharp screech, the language that only they could understand. It was an encouraging cry to each other.

"Are you okay? The black-robed man turned, looked at Li Shinian and asked aloud.

"I'm fine——" Li Shinian answered, shaking her head. That moment back then was too dangerous, thousands of spears were flying across in her direction—- Her Breaking Fist was also not up to par, she could only throw out one or two punches at most. Even if she was able to throw out ten punches, when in the face of weapons dropping down like the rain, how could she guard against them all by herself?

So this huge stone, as well as the burly man on the huge stone are her saviour.

“Master Muyang has entrusted me with the task to protect Miss.” The man in black cupped one fist in the other, unwilling to reveal his identity.

“My brother?” Li Shinian said in a surprised tone of voice, as she thought to herself: didn’t my brother go to Starry Sky Academy to study? How can he delegate someone else to protect me? Also, how did he know I would be in danger?

However, thinking that her brother, who was thousand of miles away, still thought to protect her, Li Shinian felt warm, but then the thought that she almost could never see her father and family crossed her mind, tears ran down her cheeks.

“Miss be careful——-” The black-robed man said in a deep voice. With the giant copper shield a similar size to his body in his hand, he stared unsmiling at the water spirits that were flocking together.

They crowded into a large group and then a bright flash emitted from the fish spears.

Whoosh–

A shrill sound pierced the air.

One of the water spirits in front went flying. A huge long arrow stabbed accurately through its chest and then darted towards the other water spirit behind, again piercing through the body, then immediately flew across the air in the direction of another water spirit——-

Clang—–

The bodies of the water spirits formed a long line and then plunged into the lake, one after another.

In the center of Xishi Lake was a pool of bright red blood, while their bodies already vanished into the lake without a trace.

Water spirits that passed away are no longer water spirits, they also lost their ability to manipulate water.

On the roof of the pavilion was a man clad in a white hemp garment and a straw hat. In his hand was a giant crossbow and in a quiver slung over his shoulder were arrows just as big.

The tail of the arrows was feather-free and the arrows were made of iron.

Every one of his arrows precisely pierced through the chest of a group of water spirits and sent them flying.

With the three arrows he fired consecutively, three groups of water spirits were shot dead without any resistance.

His attacks struck fear into the water spirits, in panic they scattered in all directions, afraid that his long arrows would also skewer them.

The power of the three arrows frightened the entire group.

The look of sheer terror was across their face as they stared at the master archer standing on the top of the pavilion. They clutched tight onto their fish spears but did not dare to come close to him.

Even the burly man wielding the giant shield in front of Li Shinian stared warily at the archer, from the way the archer launched his arrows it was clear he's here to help them——However, he does not know him; what if he shot an arrow at him?

He could easily withstand the water spirits, but he did not have full confidence to block the arrows of the extremely skilled archer.

Therefore, the giant shield of the black-clad man shifted in the direction of the skilled archer as he shouted: "Brother, what is your name?"

"I'm just a nobody, no need to remember me." The master archer said solemnly: "I am entrusted by master Muyang to come here to protect Miss Shinian."

"It's really busy here today." A young man clad in a blue Taoist robe walked over from the woods, a smile on his face. As he began to spoke he was still hundreds of metres away but before he finished one word, he already reached the edge of Xishi Lake.

Shrinking the earth into a distance of inches, the mysterious technique of

Taoism.

Once practiced to a certain state, thousands of miles can be completed with one step.

The man in the Taoist robe walked to the edge of Xishi Lake but did not come to a stop instead continued walking into the lake.

Only one foot was seen stepping forward but his body suddenly appeared in front of a water spirit.

He pushed out his palm, his hand glowing with a golden light.

Bang——

The water spirit was directly incinerated by the power of his palm, turning into an untouchable and invisible puddle of water and air.

As he once again took one step forward, he, all of a sudden, appeared in front of another water spirit.

The water spirit thrust its spear, while the Taoist man threw out his palm. The water spirit and its spear both vanished at the same time.

“I didn’t know old Taoist Zhiji would be here, if I did, I wouldn’t have come here to join in the fun——” The voice of a tough man echoed above their heads.

A blue-robed man came over, riding on the wind. He shouted loudly: “Where is Miss Shinian? I was asked by master Muyang to protect her.”

As he pushed out his palm, a huge ball of light descended from the sky.

Bang—-

A giant, deep hole emerged in the center of Xishi Lake, in the deep hole there was neither water nor fish, and even the water spirits that stacked together also vanished from sight.

120 – Come and go like a shadow!

The man seemed around thirty-years-old, dressed in a robe and a square cap with a green jade tassel attached to the centre. He looked like a rich jewel businessman from Jiangnan city.

As he pushed out his palm, a golden ball of light descended from the sky.

The ball of light instantly incinerated everything it touched, the water of Xishi Lake and the water spirits on the surface all disappeared.

The rise and fall of water is undetectable, this commonly used phrase was evidently incorrect in this scenario.

Because he pushed down with his palms out, a massive black hole emerged in the center of the surface of Xishi Lake. The black hole was of unfathomable depths as if leading to the eighteen levels of hell. The surrounding water was rippled by the wind, but no water flowed into the hole.

It looked as if the lake was enclosed by a transparent cover and the location of the black hole was an absolute forbidden space.

It wasn't until the power of the ball of light disappeared and the aftermath of the essential qi dissipated, that the surrounding lake water came crashing into the black hole.

Crash——

The force of the water was fierce. The terrifying crashing noises continued on without any hint of stopping.

From this it was evident that the black hole was abnormally deep, that could not be filled in a short amount of time.

"I did not expect Zhao Caishen to be here." Taoist priest Zhiji sent a spirit flying with his palm before he raised his head, looked at landlord Zhao hovering in mid-air and said with a smile: "Zhao Caishen has many properties and businesses, who has the honour of inviting you here in person? However, that move 'nine palace palm' you used back then, is that not wasting such a great technique? Is there a need to exert yourself like that when dealing with those little evil

spirits?”

As if without any respect to Taoist priest Zhiji, Zhao Caishen retorted: “You also made it seem like your ‘shrinking into inches’ technique is worthless—Only you Mount Lung Fu sect are allowed to set fires but others are not allowed to light candles?”

“Sounds of Heaven Temple has an abundant collection of books, its techniques are well known all over the world. Even if you kept it a secret, do you think other people dare to look down on it?”

“Are you implying I’m showing off?”

“I did not say that, you were thinking it yourself—-See through but not reveal, is this not the supreme state in Buddhism?”

Zhao Caishen was enraged, snarled: “When did us Buddhists say ‘see through but not reveal’?”

“Oh, really? You didn’t?” Zhiji shook his head as he flung his sleeves, deflecting the spears lunging at him with ease: “I do not understand your Sounds of Heaven Temple. I thought all the obscure and ambiguous phrases in the world, pretending to be mysterious, came from you monks since you have nothing better to do——”

“Old Taoist Zhiji, you want to fight?”

“Let’s battle, see who’s afraid of who?” Zhiji looked fearless, his finger pointing to the water spirits in front of them: “However, I’m sick of the sight of these evil spirits, why don’t we get rid of them first? We have to do our best in what was entrusted to us, to maintain our honour.”

“You wait here.” As Zhao Caishen spoke, his body raced over to a group of water spirits.

He consecutively threw out his palm, over ten balls of light darted over to the water spirits.

The booming noises lingered on until a number of water spirits were wiped out in the explosion. Of course, the fishes inside the lake and the lotus roots also suffered along with them.

Not willing to be outdone, Taoist Zhiji treaded across the water surface, his shoes looked as if they did not made contact with the water surface at all. With each step he took, he magically appeared in front of a water spirit, no matter how far or how fast the water spirits were. Then, he pushed out his palm, water spirits were instantly incinerated, disappearing into thin air.

Just as Zhao Caishen and Toist Zhiji were competing to see who kills more water spirits, the skilled archer clad in hemp clothing was still standing on the top of the pavilion, he still had that wooden look on his face, his hand clasping a specially-made crossbow, every time he fired an arrow, a group of water spirits were skewered like dried fish—-

Finally, the burly black-robed man guarding in front of Li Shinian with a large shield also felt the unnecessity of him being here, he did not even had the chance to show his moves.

So, he specifically focused on shielding Li Shinian, like a responsible and diligent imperial bodyguard.

“Are you cold?” The burly man asked aloud.

“I’m cold.” Li Shinian said in a timid voice.

Thus, the burly man wrapped her in his clothes; he also felt a little cold.

No one could bear all these methods of killing, the water spirits were on the verge of a breakdown.

They came here to kill. They never thought it would turn out to be a one-sided massacre.

This was too much!

Even if your numbers and force are greater, you don’t need to humiliate us like this?

Spirits also have dignity.

The expression on their face looked more and more frightened, the more terrified they were, the more ghostly their face was.

Water spirit, water spirit, this name is indeed appropriate for them.

Their leader's voice became hurried and anxious, its 'hiss hiss' noise also became much louder. It stared at everything in disbelief and then all of a sudden drilled into the lake, escaping far away.

The remaining few water spirits blinked their eyes nervously, also wanting to flee the scene; however, just at that moment Zhao Caishen smashed a ball of light over— they really turned into 'water spirits'.

The wind stopped and the water became calm again.

A faint, delicate scent crept into the air from the few remaining loti, everything resumed its previous state—-just like nothing happened.

Zhao Caishen descended onto the broken bridge, quickly followed by the confident Taoist priest Zhiji.

The skilled archer on the pavilion had already left. He had no intention to greet Li Shinian at all.

"You—-my brother asked you to come here?" Li Shinian watched everything happening i3n front of her with wide eyes, even until now she could not react.

"We were indeed asked by master Muyang." The burly man in black answered honestly. He is a man of few words, he never says more than is necessary.

"May I ask your name, later I'll tell brother——"

"No need." The burly man refused: "We shall see each other again someday."

"__"

Zhao Caishen chuckled aloud, looking at Li Shinian: "Miss Shinian, no need to keep it on your mind, someone will repay this favour."

"This is the karma you Buddhism talk of? After doing someone a favor, you expect them to repay you?" Old Taoist Zhiji said with a grin. "Our Mount Lung Fu do not have such nonsense, we help voluntarilyy, we do not seek reason and more importantly do not ask for return."

Zhao Caishen sneered out loud: "If you were not asked by someone, and also it's someone you Zhiji could not refuse, I don't believe you would travel

thousands of miles down Mount Lung Fu to Jiangnan city, and by a lucky coincidence arrived at Xishi Lake to save a young girl——Do you Taoists not have a sense of shame.”

“What about you guys, where were you going?”

“It seems like this can’t be settled without a fight.”

“Let’s begin now then.”

“Miss Shinian, we shall meet again someday.”

“Miss Shinian, we will meet again——-”

——

Zhao Caishen disappeared, old Taoist Zhiji was also gone.

Li Shinian twisted around to look at the burly man who defended her from the danger of the thousands of spears with his large shield, only to find that he also left without her knowing.

“You—-” Li Shinian has a tinge of regret that she never had the chance to thank them properly. “Do not know much about etiquette.”

———

Li Shinian’s classmates finally were responsive to their surroundings, trotted over to where Li Shinian was situated on the broken bridge.

“Shinian, are you alright? Are you hurt?” Liu Caicai grabbed Li Shinian’s hand, her eyes welled up with tears. That scene back then was indeed too tense and too terrifying, it’s no surprise that ordinary people could not react or know what they should do.

Now that the crisis is over, water spirits have fled, and the heroes have dispersed, they finally regained consciousness.

“Yes Shinian, who were those ugly monsters? Why did they look for you?”

“Who were those people? That Taoist priest was so handsome—-priests can marry, right?”

——

Xu Huawei bowed deeply at Li Shinian. “I have the heart of a hero, but I do not have the power of a hero—-I feel ashamed.”

Zhu Jian’s face was red with embarrassment: “Shinian, I’m sorry, I—-am also too weak.”

They turned around to find Zhao Fu and discovered that this rich young master had already fled the scene to some unknown place.

“Thank you.” Li Shinian looked at them sincerely. “It was dangerous back then, but you guys did not run away, instead stood there waiting for me, I’m really thankful—–actually you should have left immediately.”

Zhu Jian sneered: “if we ran away, then will we not be the same as that young master Zhao?”

“Exactly.” The girls nodded in agreement that Zhao Dafu’s personality is a disgrace.

“Shinian, those people just now—- they were entrusted by Master Muyang to come protect you. That Master Muyang is not your brother, right?”

“Fanghua, isn’t that nonsense? How many Master Muyangs are there in this world?”

“I knew it was him, I just couldn’t believe that Li Muyang——big brother left a couple of days ago, but had made friends with so many strong people. It’s so impressive. It seems Starry Sky Academy really is amazing.”

“Ahh, back then I never really talked to him, I should have asked for his signature—–”

———

Li Shinian could no longer refuse her classmates’ kind intention to walk her back to her house at Hubu lane.

After parting at the entrance of Hubu Lane, Li Shinian hurried back home, eager to tell her parents of the horrifying incident today. Although this would make them worry even more about her safety, but some situations are better if anticipated.

Although Li Shinian is intelligent, she is just a student; she did not think she

would be better than her parents in dealing with this kind of dangerous affairs.

At the entrance to the small courtyard, several black carriages were parked outside.

Before Li Shinian came near, two youngsters in black clothing immediately approached, obstructing her path.

“Who are you looking for?” A man clad in all black asked in a cold voice.

Chapter 121: You better leave!

Li Shinian's fiery temper showed itself.

This is the grounds of my house, it's the entrance to my house, not only was I intercepted on my way home, I was rudely asked who I'm looking for—-

Li Shinian clenched her fist, but realised her body was too weak now; she lacked the strength to gather a breaking fist. Then, the phrase crossed her mind: 'good women don't fight with men, one should bide one's time and wait for the right opportunity to seek vengeance', the scowl on her face disappeared, transforming into a sweet smile, and her little face reddened in embarrassment: "This is my house—-I want to go home."

"Miss Shinian, right?" A middle-aged man in a black robe walked out from the front of the carriage, clasping a giant sword and smiling at Li Shinian as he asked.

"I'm Shinian, excuse me who are you?" Li Shinian looked curiously at the black-robed man. So many things have happened today and she encountered too many strange people. Whether these people are her friend or foe, she could not distinguish at all—-but they seemed to be her 'friends'. After all, the people today who jumped out to protect her also called her 'Miss Shinian', only those ugly monsters who wanted to kill her called her 'hiss hiss'.

"Please come inside Miss, your family is waiting inside." The black-robed man did not introduce himself, grinned and made an inviting gesture.

Upon seeing this, the youngsters clad in black, hurriedly stepped forward to help open the vermilion door.

The instant the door was pushed open, Li Shinian smelled a fishy stench.

This smell was familiar to her, it was the same smell as when an assassin attacked their house.

It's the smell of blood.

As expected, several bodies were piled in the corner, while two young men

dressed in black with sword strapped to their waist were cleaning up the mess.

It seemed their house was attacked again, but these ‘friends’ suddenly came to the rescue.

Could they also be reinforcements big brother called?

Seeing their exposed wounds, Li Shinian felt nauseous, hastily skipping past the yard.

“Mother——Mother—-” Li Shinian shouted anxiously. She knew something happened here, and it’s possibly the same as what she encountered outside.

Who did they offend this time? Is it related to big brother?

Otherwise, how could he knew what’s going to happen beforehand despite being thousands of miles away, and also he coincidently found so many skilled masters to protect them?

“Shinian——” Luo Qi came out of the house.“Did you not say you’re going to the lake with your classmates? How come you’re back so early?”

Li Yan also followed after, looking at Li Shinian strangely without saying a word.

“Mum, I encountered some ugly monsters, they tried to kill me—-” Li Shinian exclaimed hurriedly. “What happened at home? Did someone—-”

Luo Qi did not reply, but pulled Li Shinian into the house by her hand and said: “We have a guest.”

Li Shinian’s already noticed the guest, it was a women dressed in beautiful black clothes with a black robe draped over.

Because she did not wear a hat, Li Shinian saw her head was full of hair.

She is a beautiful woman, the most beautiful woman Li Shinian had ever seen.

Her mother Luo Qi is beautiful too but a different kind of beauty.

Her mother’s beauty is gentle and mild. She’s a pretty daughter from a humble family and is commonly seen.

But this woman’s beauty is noble, graceful and difficult to ignore.

Li Shinian once thought about how her friend Cui Xiaoxin would look like ten years later. She imagined her to look like this woman right now———

“You’re Shinian?” The woman’s lips curved into a gentle smile as she came over and held Li Shinian’s hand, then glanced at Luo Qi and said brightly: “it’s obvious she’s a clever girl.”

Luo Qi opened her mouth to speak but did not know what to say in the end.

She didn’t even know what Li Shinian should call her.

“Shinian, say Lady—-” Li Yan reminded.

“Say auntie.” The lady in black immediately corrected him. “Luo Qi and I are as close as sisters, don’t make our relationship so distant.”

Although the woman said don’t make the relationship so distant, Li Yan still dare not be too ‘familiar’, and said respectfully: “Yes, Miss.”

He used to be the lady’s driver. Having worked for the lady for so many years. The respect he has towards her and the master and servant relationship that remains=ed in his heart can’t be erased so easily.

“Mum, this is?” Li Shinian stared at the woman with a puzzled expression on her face. Their family does not have many relatives, from what she could remember, they only have a distantly related uncle who came and ask for help. In other times their family were almost in complete isolation.

Sometimes Li Shinian and Li Muyang also found it strange that other people have grandparents and many uncles and aunties, how come they don’t have any relatives? When they were bored, they also wanted to have an uncle or aunt’s house that they could visit.

They have asked Luo Qi this question before. Luo Qi said she’s an orphan who married their father Li Yan who is also an orphan, so they are the children of two orphans.

Li Muyang and Li Shinian felt deep sympathy toward their parents’ life, they thought their parents are so pitiful and hoped they could live happily now.

“How come now I have an ‘auntie’?”

Li Shinian could not bring herself to call this woman ‘auntie’.

“Say auntie.” Luo Qi said aloud, firmly.

Without any other other choice, Li Shinian bellowed: “Auntie.”

“Good girl.” The woman said, her eyes glistening and her voice choked with tears.

Li Shinian was baffled by this woman, I just called you ‘auntie’ but you’re this happy?

All of a sudden, a bolt of lightning flashed to mind. She suddenly had a very bad feeling.

Li Shinian’s body became tense, her heart pounded fast.

She has heard many similar stories before, some parents don’t like to have daughters because in the end they would marry and become someone’s wife, so they thought it’s useless to bring them up and give their daughter away—-Could she also be abandoned, but now her family is here to collect her back.

This woman——she is not my biological mother, right?

Seeing the woman heart-broken and with tears pouring down her face, Li Shinian became more and more terrified, increasingly convinced that her conjecture was right.

“How could you? Back then you did not want me, but now you want to take me back—-What do you want?”

“My father is Li Yan, my mother is Luo Qi, they are my biological parents——I don’t know you.”

“I will never come with you, I will never go back with you, you did not want me back then, now you can’t come find me—-no matter what you say, I’m not going to listen——”

———

Li Shinian felt frustrated.

Li Shinian was extremely upset.

Li Shinian started to sob uncontrollably.

Tears overflowed her red eyes and ran down her cheeks.

The noble woman saw Li Shinian sobbing along with her and felt even more distressed.

She wrapped her arms around Li Shinian and whispered: “Good girl, my good child——-”

Whatever she said was no longer important, Li Shinian was already shocked to the core that her soul almost left her body. At that moment she could not gather her feelings but still forcefully pushed the woman away and yelled: “Leave, you better leave, I don’t want to see you——”

“———” Li Yan and Luo Qi looked at each other, puzzled. Which sad play are they acting out?

Chapter 122: Cut flesh with a blunt knife！ 第一百二十二章、那是割肉！

“You better leave, I will never go back with you. You don’t need to say anything, I won’t listen, I won’t listen——”

Li Shinian burst into tears and cried uncontrollably.

The world is too cruel, that it makes people give up all hope.

Why did something like this happen?

Why did I have to know the truth after it happened?

Why can’t they let me live a simple and happy life?

Those elders, they are so selfish—-how could they have the nerve to come and acknowledge me now?

“Shinian, what are you talking about?” Luo Qi scolded quietly. “How could you talk to MIss—-auntie like that?”

Li Shinian pushed the noble woman forcefully, ran to Luo Qi and hugged her tightly: “Mum, I’m not leaving, I won’t go with her——”

Luo Qi was startled, stuttered a reply: “you—know?”

She still haven’t decided yet but Li Shinian was able to guess what’s on her own mind——how could her child be this smart?

“Mum——” Li Shinian cried even harder. “I will not go with her. I don’t care who she is. I don’t care where she’s going to take me. I will not go with her. I’m your daughter, I used to be, and I always will be. I’m not going, I’m not going anywhere, I will always stay here by your side——”

Luo Qi tightly wrapped her arms around her daughter, then let out a long sigh: “silly girl, you’re not the only one going, all of us are going—–”

“Together?” Li Shinian looked at her mother, her eyes wide with surprise: “you and father——will come with me?”

“Yes.” Luo Qi nodded. “We came from that place, in the end we have to go back—-we can’t live in Jiangnan city anymore.”

“Mum what’s going on?” Li Shinian’s eyes were wide open and her mouth

slightly hanging open, like a curious baby waiting for her mother's explanation.

Luo Qi's eyes shifted over to Li Yan. "You explain to our child."

Li Yan said awkwardly: "this kind of thing, it's better if you explain it. I'm stupid, I'm afraid I will explain it badly."

"——-"

Without choice, Luo Qi looked at Li Shinian and carefully explained: "you also know that recently a lot of things have happened. Last time an assassin attacked us we were all wounded. If it weren't for that young master Yan Xiangma, our family would have died. Today, some people appeared suddenly in our house and aimed their sword at your father and me. If these people did not arrive in time, we would have been slashed to death and you wouldn't see us when you came back——"

"Lady knows we're having a difficult time in Jiangnan, so she came to collect us back to Tiandu. Your father and I originally had some hesitation, after all, we've lived in Jiangnan for so many years, we have deep feelings to everything around us. But you came back and said you encountered some ugly monsters at the lake and they tried to kill you—-We can't live in Jiangnan any longer. I thought about it, this time we will go back to Tiandu with Lady."

The woman in black exclaimed joyfully: "Luo Qi, you promise?"

"MIss——" Luo Qi said with a complicated expression on her face. "I kindly ask for Miss's protection."

The woman in black held Luo Qi's hand, her eyes welled with tears: "what are you saying? You and I are like sisters, also—-also I owe you a lot. No matter what I will protect you. Otherwise, I wouldn't have travelled such a long distance to Jiangnan. I know your temper, I know other people won't be able to ask you to come back, so I personally came here—-This time those people were not fully prepared but next time it would be different. Jiangnan is dangerous now, the sooner you leave the better. We could take care of you in Tiandu. You shall live in the Liu mansion, no one can hurt you there."

"We put ourselves completely in your hand." Luo Qi nodded.

"Good. You should pack now, we will set out immediately." The woman in

black said.

“Mum, I am—-your daughter?” Li Shinian’s glance swept over to the woman in black then back at mother Luo Qi as she asked aloud.

Luo Qi smacked Li Shinian’s head and scolded loudly: “what are you thinking? Hurry, go pack.”

“——-”

Inside the room, Li Yan and Luo Qi were busy packing.

They have been in Jiangnan for over ten years now and have lived in this house for more than ten years. Now, all of a sudden, they have to leave, they were not mentally prepared at all. They felt sad and emotional.

“Did Shinian have any misunderstanding?” Luo Qi asked aloud.

“Perhaps.” Li Yan was a little unsettled. “She asks if she’s your daughter—-Is she doubting whether she’s your daughter or not?”

“This girl always likes to think about all sorts of strange things.” Luo Qi snappily said. “But her words touched me. Used to be my child and always will be—-If Muyang encountered the same situation as today, what would he do?”

Li Yan sighed: “Don’t think about it too much, Muyang would do the same as Shinian—-”

“If Muyang said those few words to me, even if I die, it’s worth it.” Luo Qi’s eyes were glistening with unshed tears as she fought the urge to burst into sobs.

Deep down she knew clearly, once they returned to Tiandu, once they entered the Lu family, the two families could no longer remain separate anymore. Her son, Muyang, she also can’t keep forever.

The thought of going through that kind of scene, she felt her heart aching badly.

Like a blunt knife cutting her flesh!

——

——

Creak—

The wooden door of the first room was pushed open.

Chu Xun angrily stomped in. “That idiot actually lives next door to us, he also chose the dragon slayer course. What dragon is he going to slay? What does he have to be a dragon slayer?”

Standing in the backyard watching the cloud rolling across the sky, Lu Qiji did not turn around and said in a muffled voice: “He chose the dragon slayer course—-isn’t that the right choice?”

Chu Xun thought for a brief moment before he answered: “that’s true. He’s good at nothing anyway, other choices would be just as bad. Anyway, there are no dragons in this world, which means he won’t have to put himself in danger—-it is a wise choice.”

“What about you?” Lu Qiji asked abruptly: “Why did you choose the dragon slayer course?”

“Because you chose dragon slayer.” Chu Xun looked at Lu Qiji, affection beamed from his eyes.

Of course, Lu Qiji did not see the expression in his eyes. Because from the start her back was facing Chu Xun.

Lu Qiji did not answer. She dislikes these topics of conversation.

Chu Xun knew that she didn’t like it, quickly explained with a smile: “My father is a carefree prince, so I was also destined to be a carefree prince—-I don’t dare to choose the way to authority, if I major in that my father will immediately send someone up here to take me back. I also cannot choose courses to do with military affairs or my cousin would ask whether I have any thoughts or ambitions on the affairs of West Wind Kingdom. Buddhism and Taoism also means nothing to me, the martial techniques passed down the Chu family is enough for me to practice——Apart from these, if I have chosen painting or music, what’s the difference to dragon slayer?”

“Chu Xun——”

“Huh?”

“We’re not the same kind of people.” Lu Qiji said in a serious tone of voice.

“I know that.” Chu Xun said smilingly. “We’re not the same kind of people. You’re better than me, smarter than me. But I believe one day you will come to realise that there was one person who stood by your side all along and never left you, that kind of reassuring feeling——you would think: it’s him. Even if it’s because I’m someone you’re used to or I am someone you’re settling for, I would still happily accept that feeling.”

“That is your choice.” Lu Qiji remained indifferent and uncaring. “I will not take responsibility for your life.”

Chapter 123: Dare to furtively learn secret techniques!

Fog rolled thickly over the area, waves reared high and crashed down.

Li Muyang stood by the window in stunned silence before his eyes welled up with tears yet again.

He turned around, clutching at his chest, and said with sadness in his voice: “I can’t, I can’t, I’m crying again——”

He An could not bear to watch any longer, handed him a silk handkerchief. “How about I help you apply to another room that can’t see Nujiang—-according to the old rules and regulations, when Starry Sky was established, The dragon slayer course was the most powerful and respected faculty. Therefore, Starry Sky gave students of dragon slayer the best living environment and the best team of mentors. Because one person especially likes Nujiang, so the dean allocated all the best rooms facing Nujiang for the dragon slayer students.”

“Later, when the dragon slayer faculty decreased in popularity, many departments had their eyes on this building. But for some unknown reason, they were not successful. The dragon slayer department did not recruit students for several years, and these dorms were left empty—-There have been widespread discussion in the school but of course, no one said anything in front of the dean.”

Li Muyang wiped his tears with the silk handkerchief, asking: “This is Nujiang, but it’s clearly the river of tears? If this continues, I will cry my eyes blind. I thought I’m an emotional person. I feel sad for the autumn leaves and feel happy because of the flowers blooming in spring. I did not expect that even after I entered Starry Sky Academy this problem would become more apparent. Just why would am I tearing up when I look at Nujiang?”

“Some people may not see the redness. You see that Nujiang is as red as blood and the colour is too bright that it hurts one’s eyes. Many people also said that the river is dyed red from dragon’s blood. Haha, I don’t believe it, how many dragons would be needed to dye the river red——maybe something is wrong with your eyes, is there sand in your eyes?”

“I washed them a few days ago, and also sand from where?” Li Muyang

strongly refuted the statement ‘something is wrong with your eyes’. He thought about the legends of the origin of Nujiang. The legend says that Nujiang was formerly called Qianjiang and after it was stained red by dragon’s blood, it looked like an angry dragon, so it was called ‘Nujiang’[1].

[1] Nu means angry and Jiang means river.

Then, he thought of the giant black dragon inside him, wondering whether it’s connected to this matter?

Could it be the legends are true? Nujiang—was it really formed from dragon’s blood?

If that’s the case, I am at the graveyard of the Dragons?

The thought of that he would be living on the edge of the graveyard, Li Muyang’s mood worsened. More tears flowed out of his eyes.

“Don’t cry. Do you want to change rooms? As long as you nod, I’d do my best to help you. Rules are dead, people are living, the living can’t be suffocated by the rules, right?”

“Don’t change it.” Li Muyang said, wiping away the tears. “I’m staying here.”

“You shouldn’t. If you lived uncomfortably, how could you learn well?”

“Bitter cold gives a strong fragrance to plum blossoms, this will ensure I maintain a clear head and study hard.”

“If you say so—-fine.” He An finally decided not to force him.

After He An finally left, Li Muyang heaved a sigh of relief.

He needed to stay here; this was the voice that echoed from his heart.

He wanted to know, just what he is.

He even more wanted to know what he could do here.

Li Muyang walked to the edge of the window once again, listening intently to the sound of waves crashing. Just then a mountainous red wave rolled high up like a magnificent red dragon shaking the earth.

Roaring and struggling, letting out the grievances of a thousand years of unjust treatment.

Tears sprang to his eyes anew.

Li Muyang shut his eyes and listened attentively to the waves, feeling the sad emotions echoing in his heart.

As if it happened to himself！

The next day, Li Muyang woke up early in the morning and as usual practiced ‘The Art of the Breaking Body’.

The sky was still slightly dark and mist shrouded the area.

Li Muyang strolled around the courtyard a few times following the steps of ‘The Art of the Breaking Body’ and then practiced ‘breaking fist’ according to his own summarised process.

After his training, he noticed it was still early -the sky was still dark.

It was all peace and silence, not a single sound nor sights of any creatures.

Li Muyang pushed open the door and walked towards the east cliff. At that moment, only the east sky displayed a horizontal strip of red light.

As Li Muyang walked over, he was instantly attracted to the view.

The dark sky looked like a black canopy with spears of red piercing through. Just like stars streaking across the sky or blazing flames.

Wind whistling in his ears, clouds whipped around his feet. The high mountain seemed dangerous, with jagged rocks piled up like a monster hiding in the dark.

“Beautiful.” Stunned by the view in front, Li Muyang unknowingly exclaimed out loud.

“Who is it?” A cold voiced echoed.

But before the voice arrived, a sharp blade flashed across.

Li Muyang dodged to one side, the blade whizzed past right beside his ears.

Chi——

The blade hacked into a thousand years old pine tree, creating a huge gap at the trunk. The force was that powerful that it penetrated such a thick, sturdy

tree.

“It’s me, it’s me.” Li Muyang hastily shouted. “A student of Starry Sky——”

Li Muyang was still unsure who was hiding inside the rock but to be capable of a shot so ruthless and evil, they can’t be good person.

Good people reason things out. This was the most important thing Li Muyang came to realise all this time.

A stunning woman dressed in white like a fairy emerged from the clouds and mist.

“This woman is really beautiful——-” This was Li Muyang’s first reaction.

But the instant he saw the bright purple hair, Li Muyang’s impression drastically changed. He thought to himself: “Turns out to be that woman, why is she following me like a ghost——If I knew she would haunt me like this—I would never have taken off my pants in public, I didn’t expect it to give me so much trouble——-”

“You followed me?” Lu Qiji said, pinning a cold glare at Li Muyang, her eyes filled with murderous rage.

“Who’s following you?” Li Muyang was enraged. Does this girl have any shame? I can understand that you like me, but why do you have to make false accusations and push all the blame to me? Do you know, the more you do that the more I would not accept you? “I came here to look at the scenery——-”

“Look at the scenery?” Lu Qiji’s eyes panned Li Muyang’s face: “You dare to furtively learn my techniques, are you not afraid I will kill you?”

“Furtively learn your techniques? Are you kidding me? My family’s ‘Art of the Breaking Body’ is the best cultivation technique in the world, I also have teacher Yang, teacher Kong Shi and teacher Xiahou as my teachers, would I need to learn from a little brat like you? Do you have anything worth to learn from? Even if you let me learn——I would not even take a glimpse at you——-”

Lu Qiji’s purple eyes flashed, her hand clasping a red light and her voice sounded like it was from the netherworld: “Let’s put an end to this.”

Chapter 124: First time meeting Qiandu!

Never go see the people you hate in the morning because it would affect your mood for the entire day.

Li Muyang had no intention to provoke or anger anyone, simply wanted to stroll around and gaze at the scenery. He did not expect to run into this extremely unlikeable, vicious purple-hair girl.

Before I finished my words, she threw a dagger over.

Fortunately, I'm the nimble and skillful Li Muyang, and not some dog or donkey that does not know martial arts, or I would have been hacked to death?

I did not even demand an apology from you yet you accused me of furtively learning your techniques—please, I don't even know where you were hiding, how could I learn?

This is too much！

The tiger doesn't show his power so you treat him as a little lamb.

Li Muyang decided to teach this arrogant woman, otherwise she would climb onto his head and take a shit—-he did not know why humans have such bad habits.

Li Muyang shot a furious glare at Lu Qiji and snapped at her: "You smelly woman, ugly woman, do you have a brain? Do you have eyes? I just came over, I have yet to see whether it was a human or devil hiding here, how could I learn your techniques?"

"You didn't say a word and started to hack people, what if you hurt innocent people? How can you be so barbaric? Do you have any conscience at all? What did your parents taught you? If I met your mum and dad, I would definitely teach them how to educate their children—–because they don't deserve to be parents."

"Li Muyang——-you want to die?" The purple colour in Lu Qiji's eyes intensified, the jewel-like red light in her hand suddenly expanded into a round red ball of light.

Seeing the red light in her hand, Li Muyang asked: "What cultivation state are

you at?”

Lu Qiji looked surprised, said brusquely: “What has that got to do with you?”

“Empty Valley?”

“Are you going to fight or not?”

“High Mountain?”

“Stop the nonsense——”

“Free Clouds?”

“———”

“Seems like it’s the Free Clouds.” Li Muyang thought to himself.

“I’m only telling you this because we’re classmates, if you were someone insignificant to me I would not even take a glimpse at you——-Since you said we should put an end to this today, then let’s end it today.”

Li Muyang lifted up his shirt and tried to rip a piece of fabric from it. In the end, he realised the material was too sturdy, without any cutting tool it was really difficult to tear.

So, Li Muyang reached up, grasped a branch from a tree, snapped into two sections and said in a righteous tone: “Let the feelings in the past, like this branch——be broken, and never contact each other in our lives.”

Li Muyang tossed the branch in his hand, proudly turned around and strode ——no, sprinted away.

Lu Qiji stood still, watching Li Muyang’s back figure sprinting into the distance, her hand jerked up, smashing the red ball in her hand into the clouds and mist in the distance.

Bang—

Clouds were set into flames by the red ball of light, the fire grew stronger and stronger, spreading towards the distant horizon.

Waterside Park, Ocean View Building.

Li Muyang’s first dragon slayer class was here.

Yang Xiaohu, the teacher of the dragon slayer course was emotional almost tearful, his face flushed with excitement.

His gaze panned across the students in front like they were treasures, over and over again, then finally said in a high, excited voice: “there’s a great number of talents in the dragon slayer course, we are great in strength——because this year we have seven new students joining the dragon slayer course.”

“———” Li Muyang curled his lips, thinking to himself: there were dozens of students in my class just when he was attending school. One department only has seven people, it’s most likely the smallest department in the continent, right? How did he have the nerve to say ‘great number of talents’ and ‘great in strength’?

Chu Xun also evidently felt the same way, his lips curved into a strange smile. But when Li Muyang’s eyes met directly with his, as if he immediately understood what Li Muyang was thinking, he thought to himself: me and this idiot actually laughed at the same thing, I really must maintain my dignity.

Consequently, the smile on his face rapidly faded away, turning into a serious, stern expression.

“Before the formal lecturing behins, I want students to get to know each other. Everyone stand up and introduce yourself. This is the rule of the dragon slayer department——” Yang Xiaohu stood straight on the stairs of the stage, behind him were the rolling white clouds and the lofty mountains. In the distant edge was an unseeable black sea, like a large mass of ink between heaven and earth.

With the stunning landscape as backdrop, Yang Xiaohu’s chubby body and his unsymmetrical triangular eyes looked much more tall and handsome. Unexpectedly, he radiated an air of superiority and power as if the world was his.

Of course, this was the main reason for Yang Xiaohu to have the first lesson in Ocean View Building.

Since the students were all beautiful and handsome, and also looked arrogant and unruly, he was worried that he would not be able to control and keep the class in order.

Clothes make the man, Starry Sky teachers also have no sense of shame.

Standing on the top of the giant stairs, Yang Xiaohu said in a loud voice: “My surname is Yang, my first name is Xiaohu——”

The students burst into loud laughter.

Yang Xiaohu blushed slightly from embarrassment. “My name was given by parents, I could not bear to give it up. So I have used it ever since. I was a former Starry Sky student and currently a Starry Sky teacher. I have spent seventeen years at Starry Sky Academy and I plan to continue to stay here. I have many hobbies: music, painting, flower arrangement, tea ceremony, go, beautiful women——no, no, no, no women, no beauty.”

“Teacher Yang, men like beautiful women, why don’t you like them?” A big man with pigtails said chuckling. He wore a cloud-pattern Starry Sky robe, but because of his tall stature and large chest, the casual and elegant Starry Sky robe looked like a tight warrior armour on his body.

From his height and appearance, he seemed to be the most talented dragon slayer student.

Li Muyang was extremely wary of him

“It’s not that I don’t like beautiful girls, I mean——I don’t like beautiful girls.” Yang Xiaohu was ashamed. How could he carelessly talk about his desire? “Men should have high ambition. I wholeheartedly studied the dragon culture, never knew I had this desire in my heart——I hope to personally slay a dragon, be remembered like the heroes of Starry Sky and be written into a poem.”

Li Muyang felt he did not like Yang Xiaohu, but he really likes the song by one of the greatest musician of the kingdom Jacky Cheung ‘your name is my surname’.

Of course, his name is the surname of Yang Xiaohu. [The ‘yang’ in Li Muyang is the same as the ‘Yang’ of Yang Xiaohu].

“I would also like to slay a dragon.” The big man gulped down a big bowl of elixir, excitedly blurted out: “my name is Tie Muxin, from the desert——It is said

that the hero of the desert Ge Landuo is a dragon warrior, my dream is to be like him.”

“Student Tie Muxin have this ambition, your dreams will come true.” Yang Xiaohu said enthusiastically. Then, his eyes shifted to the other students: “other students should also stand up and introduce yourself.”

“My name is Lin Canghai, from Dawu country.” A very young, sweet-looking, youngster said with a gentle smile. He looks cute, with pale, soft skin just like a beautiful girl. Even Li Muyang could see the ‘sweetness’ in him.” My dream is to become a dragon slayer.”

Li Muyang also did not have a favourable impression with this Lin Canghai. A wimpy little boy, how could he have the nerve to call himself Lin Canghai[Canghai means vast sea], why don’t you call yourself Lin Tianshan? [Heavenly mountain].

With Li Muyang’s current attitude, it was most likely difficult for him to form good relationships with the other students.

“My name is Cai Pa from the Heavenly province.” A girl of about the same size as Tie Muxin said in a rough and loud voice.

“Chu Xun. From West Wind Kingdom.” Chu Xun said, expressionless. This self-introduction made him felt very official and boring.

“Lu Qiji.” Lu Qiji said without the slightest change in her expression. Her eyes, nose, and face showed no discontent but even more displayed no interest at all.

Something like this was not necessary, so her mind was not even present.

“Li Muyang.” Li Muyang also wanted to radiate a high and mighty demeanor. But he felt it was too rude, quickly added: “Slaying dragon is dangerous, we need to be cautious. Hope we can become good friends. Support each other and help improve each other.”

“Pff—-”

A girl chuckled charmingly out loud.

Li Muyang twisted around, his eyes fixed on a girl dressed in a Starry Sky robe, with pink glowing cheeks and a dewy, radiant complexion, sitting relaxed and confidently. An enchanting smile broke out over her face.

Have to say, this was the third most beautiful girl Li Muyang have seen.

Although Lu Qiji is very beautiful but Li Muyang never thought she's beautiful.

Not only did he feel she is not pretty, but she's incomparably ugly and extremely annoying. Even if she paid him, Li Muyang would still not let her have her way.

This girl's demeanour and appearance were strangely comfortable like the gentle wind and light rain, and not too stunningly breathtaking that it dazzles the eyes, but instead is pleasing to the eye.

Like the first ray of sunlight in the morning, the first dewdrop on the stem of a flower, a white flower found on the high mountains and valleys, and the only one thriving branch of a tree.

Except Cui Xiaoxin and Li Shinian, practically no one is more beautiful than her.

Li Muyang has been wondering: why did that sweet and gentle girl come to study dragon slayer. Don't tell me in the one hundred and twenty seven ways to slay a dragon, there's also a beauty trap method lying within?

If that were the case——Li Muyang wouldn't mind challenging his weaknesses.

Yang Xiaohu pretended to look calm as he turned to the girl, smiled and said: "Student, it's your turn to introduce yourself——-the other students have all finished."

The girl rose to her feet and said with a smile: "Qiandu from the Peacock Dynasty."

She turned to face Li Muyang. "I think we can be good friends. After all, we're both going to slay dragons."

Li Muyang nodded repeatedly. "Yes, Yes. Qiandu classmate, nice to meet you ——"

125 – Face of a human, heart of a snake!

Qiandu's lips pursed into a smile. "If we're going to slay dragons, we need to take care of each other. Classmaate Muyang is a boy, so you will have to protect us girls from being bullied by dragons."

Li Muyang nodded repeatedly. "Yes, Yes. Rest assured, leave it to me, I'm going to protect you from harm—-of course, you also have to protect me from being attacked."

Li Muyang does not miss any opportunities to set up defences for his personal safety.

Yang Xiaohu applauded vigorously: "What student Muyang said is right. The divine dragons can fly up to the ninth heaven and dive down into the vast sea. They are tremendous in size and power. To slay a dragon, we must work together, gather the strength of all the strong people. So, this requires each student to stand shoulder-to-shoulder, back-to-back and defend each other, disregarding your own safety. Only through this way we would have the chance to kill a dragon, and not be burned to ashes by the dragon's breath."

Lu Qiji's cold eyes swept across Li Muyang, a sneer on her face.

There are too many fools in this world, it really is a sad thing.

"Teacher Yang is right. I, Tie Muxin's skin is rough and my flesh is tough, I can be the shield in front." Big Tie Muxin flicked his braids and said courageously. The desert nation is brave and obstinate; once they set their mind on something they are willing to sacrifice everything. Even their lives.

However, it's precisely because of their bravery and stubbornness, that they are frequently in conflict with neighbouring countries. The history of the desert nation can be said to be full of bloody battles.

They have extensive experience in battle and adding to this, the most powerful cavalry in the continent.

"I will study hard." The sweet-looking boy Lin Canghai said with a smiling face. Then, shyly sneaked a glance at Qiandu. "I will protect big sister."

“If there really is a chance to slay dragons, I want to be in a team with Lu Qiji ——” As a diehard fan of Lu Qiji, Chu Xun wanted to help her fight back her position. “My life is her life, I am willing to die with her.”

Everyone was in an uproar!

It’s a blood oath.

A freshman is confessing in front of a teacher and many students, this needs courage and immense support.

He’s brave enough to say such a thing in public, but if during a mission Lu Qiji was accidentally killed—-he also must die along with her.

Otherwise, how would he have the face to come back and see the witnesses to his vow?

“Student Chu Xun, we understand your feelings for student Qiji, but I think ——” Yang Xiaohu attempted to persuade him. These students are so egotistical and act so recklessly. When they’re young they make promises without thinking, but when they’re older, they would start calling it ‘bragging’.

Pa Pa Pa—–

Li Muyang applauded loudly.

李牧羊用力地鼓掌。

His eyes red, looking deeply moved by the words. “Chu Xun classmate is our role model. Us men should learn from him—-if you love someone you have to say it out loud. That’s a real honourable man.”

Li Muyang is a simple, straightforward guy; he simply assumed that if these two bad guys were to die together, it would be a brilliant and joyous occasion.

Tie Muxin came close to Chu Xun, clapped him on the shoulder before he laughed heartily. “Good boy, you have soft, smooth skin like a woman but possesses an outspoken and forthright personality like us desert people. If you like something, you should say it out loud, if not how could you be called a man? Let’s go, I’ll treat you to a drink.”

Chu Xun was in pain from the loud smack but was too embarrassed to display his agony, keeping a straight expression he said: “I don’t know about the others,

I just did what I needed to do.”

“Student Tie Muxin, don’t be so excited——–the lesson is not finished.” Yang Xiaohu jumped out again to show his authority.

“Oh. Sorry teacher, I forgot.” Tie Muxin sat back down on his bench.

Yang Xiaohu stood straight on the huge stone step, his eyes panning across at the number of students, and said in an enticing voice: “Boys and girls, do you know why we want to slay dragons?”

“Because dragons are too strong, they will bring danger to humans.”

“They like to eat the human heart, have a violent nature and may wipe out the human race—-”

“The title of dragon hero, that had always been my dream———–”

———

“What you said is right. Dragons are really too strong, the book ‘Dragon Chronicles’ had accurately and completely recorded the scene of a dragon in fury, their claws can knock down the stone walls of a city, their tail could whip up giant waves, and their breath can destroy a city——The picture above is the scene of people screaming and howling in grief. Dragons are our predators, our most powerful threat, we must slaughter them, also we will slaughter them. Only then the human race can live peacefully for millions of years ——”

Yang Xiaohu flung his arms wide, asking loudly: “Do you know how to slay a dragon?”

The audience shook their head simultaneously.

If they knew how to slay a dragon, why would they come to Starry Sky Academy to study?

“The [Treasure and Weapons] scroll has documented that there are three treasures that are effective against dragons: a frightening dragon bow, constructed using the tremendous dragon rib as the body of the bow and the dragon’s tendon as the bow string, then steeped in fresh dragon’s blood for three hundred years and finally hid in the deep snow of Kunlun Mountain for another three hundred years. The power of the bow is said to be so powerful

that it could destroy the heaven and earth.”

Everyone’s eyes gleamed with excitement. “Teacher Yang, where can we find the frightening dragon bow?” Tie Muxin asked impatiently.

“The legend states it last appeared in the hands of the master archer Yi De. Thousands of years have passed since then.” Yang Xiaohu sighed helplessly.

Everyone looked disappointed, if they have the bow in their hands, all the dangerous places in the world, where could they not go?

“Teacher Yang, since the bow has disappeared for thousands of years, is there really such a thing?”

“Exactly, is it just another legend? After all, no one had ever seen it——-”

“It seems it’s hopeless for us——for thousands of years, many strong people have been unsuccessful in their search, do you think we would be able to?”

“This kind of thing depends on luck.” Yang Xiaohu said with a serious look on his face, trying to cheer the students up: “Everything documented in the ‘Treasure and Weapon’ book is obviously real. Or it would not be included. Of course, the mysterious weapons that are listed in the book are generally unobtainable by ordinary people. Which previous owners were not famous for their powers?”

Hearing Yang Xiaohu talk of using a dragon’s rib bone as a bow, the tendons as the bowstring and then soaked in dragon’s blood, Li Muyang was filled with overwhelming apprehension and his chest suddenly throbbed with pain.

“Frightening Dragon Bow?” Li Muyang felt this name was somehow familiar.

However, he was certain that this was his first time hearing the name.

Then, where did he hear it before?

Something came to mind but the memory was too distant and blurry. Like a tiny firefly in the sky, the moment you reach out to capture it, it already disappeared without a trace.

The harder he tried to recall, the more he could not grasp the tail.

Li Muyang refused to let it slip away, desperately tried to search for it, find that firefly that appeared in the night sky——

“Li Muyang——Li Muyang——”

Pa—

Yang Xiaohu smacked Li Muyang’s head, a cool and refreshing air wind awakened his entire body.

Li Muyang finally snapped out of his daze, with a look of surprised stared at the teachers and classmates in front.

The other people were even more stunned watching Li Muyang.

“Teacher Yang—-” Li Muyang asked aloud.

“Li Muyang, what’s going on with you?” Yang Xiaohu asked, his face looking worried. “Is there something wrong?”

“Not at all.” Li Muyang answered. He lightly touched his sleeve, only to find his clothes were soaking with sweat.

Li Muyang was drenched like he just leaped out of a river.

It wasn’t until then that Li Muyang became scared, knowing that he almost stepped into an unknown world.

“Are you really fine?” Yang Xiaohu was still concerned. “He An told me the problem, when you open your eyes to look at Nujiang, you can’t help but cry——is there a reason for that? How about I help you transfer to another room that can’t see Nujiang?”

“The closer to hometown, the more one feel timid in their heart.” Lu Qiji said coldly. “Perhaps, after Li Muyang classmate heard the legend of Nujiang he felt sad and was unable to restrain his tears. Li Muyang classmate must have felt sympathy for those dragons killed by the humans? ”

Li Muyang was infuriated by this woman, shouted bluntly: “Yes, I am an emotional man. Unlike some women who always want to kill——no compassion, no sympathy, and treats her classmate like an animal. A woman like that, can she even be called a woman?”

“Li Muyang———–” The sword strapped at Chu Xun’s waist flashed out of its sheath. “If you insult Qiji again, I will kill you.”

Li Muyang lips curled. “You say it like you wouldn’t kill me if I don’t humiliate her——-Lu Qiji, you are an ugly woman with the heart of a snake.”

“Li Muyang———” Chu Xun’s patience had reached its limit, the sword tight in his hand thrust towards Li Muyang.

“Chu Xun—”

“Li Muyang, be careful—-”

Clang—–

The long sword landed right between Lin Canghai’s two fingers.

He gazed in admiration at the tip of the sharp blade trapped between his two fingers as he repeatedly said: “good sword, a really good sword———–”

“—————–” Chu Xun reddened in embarrassment, his heart pounding with fear.

This adorable little boy who did not look threatening at all, without any signs of movement, how could he so easily intercepted my sword attack———–just what cultivation state was he at?

126 – This person is too hateful!

Chu Xun suddenly pulled his sword out of its sheath. This made Yang Xiaohu jumped up in fright.

If a fight broke out between his students on the first day of his class, he definitely would be ridiculed by Kong Li and Xiahou Qianbai, saying that he lacked the ability to discipline these students and that these students were blind- why would they choose dragon slayer, a course of dubious worth, it's wasting their own time—-

Seeing Lin Canghai leap out to stop the danger, Yang Xiaohu heaved with a sigh of relief before he rushed over and scolded: "Chu Xun, if you have something to say, say it nicely, how could you draw your sword and attack your classmate?"

Chu Xun's lips twisted into a scornful smile. "Teacher Yang, you also saw what happened now. Li Muyang insulted one of his fellow students for no reason, he went too far. If I don't release my anger, I can't calm myself down."

Yang Xiaohu could not understand why is it that the school session had just started but freshmen are already like fire and water. He stood between them, trying to pacify the situation: "Take a step back and there will be a bigger world in front. It's just a little quarrel? Is there a need for this? I just said I want you to stand side-by-side, back-to-back, and be good friends, good comrades, but you want to kill each other over a small matter—–"

"Teacher, he raised his sword to stab me, I don't have a sword nor did I lash out at him—–" Li Muyang argued.

"——" Yang Xiaohu felt these students were hopeless and couldn't be taught. Each and everyone one of them won't become successful.

Lin Canghai relaxed his grip on the sword between his fingers, looked at Chu Xun with a bright smile and said: "Big brother Chu Xun, your sword is made by Zhangsun Ji the famous sword master of West Wind Kingdom, and the material is the black stone of Beihai, right?"

"That's right." Chu Xun said in a low voice. An ordinary unprepossessing-

looking little boy was able to defend his sword; he was too embarrassed.

“It’s top-grade.” Lin Canghai said impressively.

In the divine continent, weapons are ranked into nine different grades. The majority of weapons, being made from ordinary iron and rough workmanship, are not graded. Ones that are slightly better are graded at the bottom three, ones that are much better are in the middle three and the best are in the top three grades. The frightening dragon bow Yang Xiaohu mentioned, which is an historical artefact, is not classified by the grading system.

“Thank you.” Chu Xun’s glance swept across the sword at his waist. “You like this sword?”

“Yes” Lin Canghai nodded repeatedly. “I have always been fond of good swords.”

Chu Xun untied the sheath strapped to his waist and slid the sword back into the sheath. With both hands, he handed the sword to Lin Canghai: “I’ll give it to you.”

“No, no, no—–” Lin Canghai hastily waved his hand, his face turning red as he said: “A gentleman should never take something others love. Besides, I don’t deserve this, I have done nothing to earn it. I can’t accept your sword.”

“You made me understand myself clearly, isn’t that a great merit in itself?” Chu Xun said with a smile.

“Understand yourself?” Lin Canghai remained puzzled, asked aloud.

“I’m from the West West Kingdom, because I am well-known since I was born, I had been flattered ever since. I always told myself not to care but I still felt I was walking on air. Today, you deflected my sword with just your fingers, I was deeply shocked but also extremely touched.

“In the divine continent, brave warriors are abundant as the clouds. People who achieved a little success are still a tiny firefly under the Starry Sky. Even if they try their best, others may not see them—–The sky is endless, there are thousands of people with remarkable powers. We must work even harder and fulfil our reasons for coming to Starry Sky.”

“Time should not be wasted, now is the moment to chase the stars. To a man, is there anything more important than that?” Chu Xun once again offered the sword in his hand. “Please accept it. If this sword was gifted away, it would be much more meaningful. The fact that I lost my sword would remind me that I need to work harder.”

Yang Xiaohu applauded as he said with a smile: “Good, student Chu Xun have this awareness, it is indeed a happy thing——Canghai, since student Chu Xun would like to give you his sword, then you should happily accept his offer. In the future, when both of your names resonate throughout the Starry Sky, what happened today will definitely be spread far and wide.”

“Yes, yes. Accept it, I also like those stories where heroes give away their sword ——” Tie Muxin laughed heartily.

Li Muyang also laughed, but something else was hiding beneath that smile.

He looked thoughtfully at Chu Xun, thinking to himself: this guy is not simple at all. It was clearly an embarrassing situation for him, and he was in an unfavourable position, if he lashed out at Lin Canghai, he would look graceless. If he did not get angry, then he would seem weak and cowardly.

He handled the situation perfectly, it shows courage for one to admit fault.

Lin Canghai finally reached out and accepted the sword: “then I’ll take it—-”

Chu Xun vigorously patted Lin Canghai’s shoulders, the two men looked at each other and laughed.

“This is great.” Yang Xiaohu said beaming ear to ear. “Chu Xun, you and Li Muyang should also turn hostility into friendship, an argument can affect the relationship of fellow schoolmates. In the future, there will be many tasks that require both of you to work together——-”

Chu Xun glared coldly at Li Muyang, saying: “Teacher Yang, this would be difficult to do. He is lucky I did not kill him today, it’s impossible for me to be friends with someone who insulted Qiji——-because Teacher Yang is here, this matter I will forget about it for the time being. However, one day I would make him face the consequences of his actions.”

Yang Xiaohu lightly sighed. “You——–You two are making it difficult for teacher. However, now that it has happened, we can’t let it sink to the bottom of our heart, hatred is the same as moss, it can thrive in the corners of our heart. Today we’re going to solve this problem——”

Yang Xiaohu glanced at Li Muyang, asking: “Li Muyang, how can we settle this matter today? What can we do to make you and Chu Xun erase everything in the past, become classmates and friends again—-”

“You ask him.” Li Muyang said, pointing to Chu Xun.

Yang Xiaohu then shifted his attention to Chu Xun, asking: “Chu Xun, how can you forget the animosity between you and Li Muyang classmate?”

“If he was able to take three of my sword attacks.” Chu Xun said in a low voice.

Yang Xiaohu again turned his head back to Li Muyang, asking: “Li Muyang, what do you think?”

Li Muyang’s lips pursed into a smile: “Teacher, being friends should be from the heart, we should treat them with true sincerity——If we could become real friends, go through fire and water, and sacrifice for each other, then Muyang would not hesitate.”

Without even taking a glimpse at Chu Xun, he said firmly, his voice loud and clear: “We all know, a forcefully harvested melon is not sweet, in the same way, a forced friend does not last——Some people are not meant to be friends. In that case, it’s better to maintain a distance.”

“I could withstand thirty of your swords, but the word ‘friend’——is not something that can be traded in a deal.”

“———” Chu Xun wanted to draw his sword again. But it was only when his hand touched his waist that he suddenly remembered his sword was gifted to Lin Canghai.

This person is too hateful!

Chapter 127: Tear of the dragon king!

Chu Xun knew Li Muyang made him to be a fool once again.

However, the embarrassment he felt couldn't be known by anyone.

He deliberately asked teacher Yang to ask me how to settle this, but after I stated my demand, he said friendships cannot be used as a deal——what does that mean? His friendship can't be use to make deals, but my friendships can?

Comparing his status with mines, just who does he think he is?

I am a little prince of the West Wind kingdom, a royalty. To put it bluntly, if anything was to happen to my cousin, I would have the opportunity to ascend to the throne—-Of course, I can only secretly think of this, it's almost impossible for it to happen. With my understanding of my uncle and cousin, they would never hand me that position. If I show the slightest desire for the throne, they will not hesitate to sentence me to death. Not even my father could stand up and defend me.

Don't tell me being friends with a prince is not as good as with a commoner?

Chu Xun has seen how crafty this guy is, he knew he lost this match but that doesn't mean he

should give up. Otherwise, it would make it look like he had lost badly.

Thus, pinning a cold glare at Li Muyang he said: "Very well. As you said, forcefully harvested melons are not sweet. Since we can't be friends, we will become lifetime rivals. You said you can withstand thirty of my sword attacks, then shall we set a date for battle—-how about at the middle of this month?"

Li Muyang nodded. "It doesn't matter to me."

"Very well." Chu Xun turned to Yang Xiaohu, saying: "Teacher Yang, me and Li Muyang mutually agreed to battle at the middle of this month. I ask Teacher Yang to allow us to do so."

Yang Xiaohu hesitated for a moment, before he continued: "Starry Sky Academy does not restrict competition between students. It is only by practicing with each other, improving each other, that you would become a strong person. Since both of you have decided, I can only agree along—-However, the battle

must be held at the Starry Sky practice pavilion, in which I will be the judge. Do you both have any objections?”

“That’s fine.” Chu Xun said.

“Teacher Yang is the judge, I raise both hands in approval.” Li Muyang said, smiling: “in my heart, teacher Yang is fair and impartial. ”

“—–”

Chu Xun could never bring himself to say something as shameless as those words. He couldn’t say it out loud, but he extremely disliked Li Muyang’s brazen look. He thought to himself: I’ll let you be arrogant for a few more days, when the battle date is here, watch how I sever you into pieces.

With the challenge issued, Chu Xun’s anger naturally faded away for the time being.

Yang Xiaohu waved his hand. “We’ll continue the lesson. Just now, I said there are three sacred treasures effective against dragons, the first is the frightening dragon bow. Now I’d like to talk about the second treasure, this is more powerful and also more mysterious, it first appeared in a distant era—-The spirit of Weak Water. First, I want to ask everyone a question, who knows what is Weak Water?”

“I know.” Tie Muxin said, raising his hand into the air. This student was very enthusiastic in class, it was clear he belongs to the ‘good student’ group. “Ancient myths and legends say it’s the most evil and the most difficult body of water to cross, not even feathers could float on it and nothing could pass.”

“Pretty good.” Yang Xiaohu glanced at Tie Muxin and said with an appreciative smile. “This is the world’s most dangerous body of water, feather can’t float and no living things could cross. No matter what, it would sink immediately. If people were to fall in, they will disappear immediately. However, someone once entered the weak water, retrieved its heart and constructed it into the Spirit of Weak Water. It is said the Spirit of Weak Water can withstand against all attacks, is the strongest shield in all legends. If we could obtain this scared weapon, we could defend against the dragons’ fire breath and frost breath attacks. Weak water soul is ranked third in the sacred weapon list in the [Treasures and Weapons] book.”

Everyone exclaimed aloud.

“Teacher Yang, is that not too exaggerated? You said the Spirit of Weak Water can withstand against all attacks, then why is it only ranked third in the sacred weapon list?”

“Exactly. You just said the frightening dragon bow can destroy heavens and earth, if it was put against weak water soul then would it also not become scrap metal?”

“Teacher Yang this is contradictory—-like the businessmen of the Chu nation that sell shields and spears, they say their shield is incomparably solid and that no spear can pierce through. But then they also say their sharp spears are invincible, and that there are no shields that it cannot pierce through. A crowd of people asked the same question: ‘What would happen if you use your spear to jab your shield, the man did not answer.”

——

Yang Xiaohu said with a smile: “When I first read [Treasures and Weapons] I also had the same thought as you. Is frightening dragon bow more powerful or is it the Spirit of Weak Water? If frightening dragon bow was put against the Weak Water spirit, what would the outcome be? However, this was written in the [Treasures and Weapons] book, so there is bound to be a reason.”

“Teacher Yang, what is ranked first in [Treasures and Weapons]?” Lin Canghai asked curiously.

“I don’t know.” Yang Xiaohu said.

“Don’t know? How could you not know?”

“Exactly. Teacher Yang, you said you’ve read [Treasures and Weapons]?”

“Teacher Yang must be hiding something and refuses to teach us——”

——

Yang Xiaohu spread his arms out helplessly: “Back then I was also very curious, I quickly turned to the first page to look at what the most powerful sacred weapon is. I found that the first page was a blank page. Not a word, nor a

picture.”

“How could that be?”

“Who wrote this book? They also do not know what is ranked first?”

“The first is a hidden sacred treasure? It can’t be known to the world?”

——

“Teacher Yang, you don’t know the best sacred weapon, then the second strongest weapon you should know, right? I’m curious what could be ranked higher than the frightening dragon bow and the Weak Water Spirit” Qiandu said with a smiling face. The girl’s clear and sweet-sounding voice makes people feel comfortable like they’re bathing in the spring breeze.

“I know what’s second.” As expected, a smile of delight lit up Yang Xiaohu’s face, his glance shifted to Qiandu as he said: “In second place is the tear of the Dragon King.”

“Tear of the dragon king?”

The students exchanged glances with one another.

More and more mysterious, the tear of the dragon king is second in the sacred weapon list in the [Treasures and Weapons] book, even if they obtained the frightening dragon bow and the Weak Water Spirit, what’s the use? There is still no way to slay dragons.

The moment Li Muayng heard the words ‘tear of the dragon king’, his mind was jolted.

As if the firefly he was searching for all along once again released a glimmer of light.

128 – Must have ambition!

Students started murmuring and whispering to their neighbours, thinking that Yang Xiaohu taught something wrong.

If the tear of the dragon king is really second in the sacred weapon list, then who would be able to slay a dragon in this world? Are the legends of the dragon slayer that they heard when they were young, true? The dragon warriors, that seemed within reach, really exist?

Yang Xiaohu understood what they were thinking. He breathed a light sigh before he explained: “Dragons are the most powerful creature in the world. Compared to humans they have an incomparably long life span, they possess the magical ability to overturn the seas and cause storms. Dragons can be big or small, can fly or conceal themselves. Big dragons can soar to the sky and swallow clouds; small dragons can change form and hide. The can soar to anywhere in the universe or hide within waves. In ancient times, they were the most powerful masters of the divine continent. The roar of the dragon echoes to the ninth heaven and hordes of demons bow their head to them—-They have the ability to destroy mankind. Wipe out the entire human race. That’s why people always wanted to slay dragons, because it is only when dragons are extinct that humans could live at ease for eternity on these lands. This has nothing to do with grudges, feelings or resentment, but purely for survival.”

“Humans live together in groups, while dragons are divided into social groups. Dragons are independent but also sociable creature, they share caves to reside in and divide land to rule. Although they are united, they have a strict hierarchy. Among the dragons, there is a king that leads them. He is what we call the dragon king or the dragon god——Dragon king is their boss, also their spiritual leader. Every dragon king was the most powerful dragon of them all, and also the most intelligent of the dragons.”

“The tear of the dragon king is not an ordinary tear; rather the power and wisdom of the king compressed into the soul before he dies and then released through the eyes. It’s a crystal-clear liquid that looks like a crystal——it’s not just a drop of tear, it represents a gigantic dragon, the dragon king, it’s majesty. If

you have the tear of the dragon king, it is equal to having the dragon king battling alongside you. The tear of the dragon king being second is well-deserved ——”

“Tear of the dragon king——” Li Muyang muttered. “Tear of the dragon king ——”

“Teacher Yang, where can I find the dragon king’s tear?” Tie Muxin asked, his eyes gleaming and his face flushing. So looking forward, so exciting, if I could obtain the dragon king’s tear, inherit the ability of the dragon king——would I not be invincible in this world? What windborne list, what blue cloud list, what Starry Sky list, I would be the strongest in the entire Starry Sky——

“Teacher Yang, when was the last time the dragon king’s tear was seen? And in whose hands?” Lin Canghai was bursting with excitement. The dragon king is said to possess countless secret collection of books and mastered numerous secret techniques. Each dragon king has a hidden treasure, inheriting the dragon king’s tear is the same as inheriting the treasures that are handed down——there must be plenty of mysterious swords passed down? There must be sword techniques unknown to us, even thinking about it makes people’s blood racing.

Lin Canghai loves swords like it’s his life, loves sword technique like he’s crazy. His attention was entirely on the dragon king’s treasure, the swords and sword techniques, as for the other rare treasures he did not care in the slightest.

“Teacher Yang, hurry tell us—-we’re really curious.” Qiandu smiled abruptly and said.

Seeing everyone enjoying his class, Yang Xiaohu was beaming ear to ear.

His triangular eyes scanned the audience, his lips curved into a smile. “I don’t know.”

“What? Teacher Yang, how would you not know?”

“Teacher Yang, you’re not hiding something again, right?”

“Teacher Yang, why don’t you just take out the [Treasures and Weapons] book for us to see, we could look at it together.”

——

Yang Xiaohu shook his head in refusal: “You guys can’t see the [Treasures and Weapons] book for now, but Starry Sky library has an abundant collection of books, you can go and borrow some to read——However, even if you read [Treasures and Weapons], it’s useless, because it won’t answer your questions. It does not state the last appearance of the weapons, or whose hands it appeared in——-Think about it, finding a dragon is already difficult. Let alone search for a drop of tear of the dragon king——it’s several thousands times more difficult than fishing a needle from the sea, right?”

Everyone slumped to the bench.

“It seems there’s no hope.”

“Exactly, where can I find a drop of tear? Even if we could see it, how would we know it’s the dragon king’s tear——”

“Forget it, I will go and search for the frightening dragon bow instead, this is the easiest on the list, the other sacred weapons probably only exist in the legends—— No one could find it in millions of years, how would we be so lucky?”

———-

“Exactly.” Li Muyang said aloud. “I don’t have any expectation. Whether it’s the frightening dragon bow or the weak water soul, or even the tear of the dragon king, I don’t have any hopes. As long as I receive a somewhat sharp sword, I would be happy.”

Yang Xiaohu felt Li Muyang’s attitude was not desirable and did not radiate a young man’s enthusiasm and vitality. 羊小虎覺得李牧羊的心態不可取，沒有一點兒年輕人的上進心和朝氣。

He looked at Li Muyang and said with a stern face: “Student Muyang, if a man does not have a dream, then what’s the difference between a man and a rotting fish? You must have ambition, if——I mean what if one of these days you obtained one of the three sacred weapons? Only if you search for it, then it would fall into your arms. You don’t even have the faith to chase after it, how would the sacred weapons fall into your arms by themselves?”

Li Muyang nodded. “Teacher Yang is right. From now on, I’ll just dream of

acquiring all three weapons one day.”

Everyone burst into laughter, thinking that Li Muyang is a lunatic for taking them as idiots.

Acquiring all three sacred weapons, is he sleep-talking again?

The class ended, and the students dispersed slowly.

Lu Qiji, with her head held high, was first in front. Chu Xun closely followed behind, everyone knows he’s a diehard fan of Lu Qiji.

After Qiandu greeted the classmates one by one, she trotted along beside Li Muyang and said with a smile: “Muyang classmate, where are you going now?”

“I want to go to the Starry Sky library to take a look.” Li Muyang said aloud.

“I see.” Qiandu said, her eyes squinted into the shape of a crescent. “Then we’ll go together. I also want to go to the library to look up some information.”

“Big sister, can I come with you?” Standing beside Qiandu, Lin Canghai asked expectantly. “姐

“Of course you can.” Qiandu answered.

“I’m not going to the library, my head is dizzy whenever I see books, I’ll doze off while reading——-” Tie Muxin said with a painful expression on his face. “I might as well go and look around the campus. I just arrived at Starry Sky Academy, I’m not too familiar with this place yet.”

“I’ll come with you.” Cai Pa, who has stayed quiet all this time, said aloud.

It wasn’t until all the students left that Yang Xiaohu could relax his back that was kept straight all along. As a teacher, he has to maintain the dignity and imposing manner in front of the students. To persist for so long really is not easy.

He walked down the giant stone steps and just as he was tidying his hat and clothes dishevelled by the strong wind, sensing something behind, he twisted around, instantly bowed deeply to a small and thin figure and said: “Dean, why did you come?”

“That Li Muyang—-” A deep voice slowly sounded over, asking: “is not bad, right?”

129 – Sand covers the eyes!

Biting-cold mountain wind blew and clouds rolled across the sky.

Standing on a huge boulder on the cliff, it was much harder to see the vast green Flower Language Plains at the foot of the mountain.

The wind was too strong; the fog was too dense.

With the heart in the sky and the body in the midst of fog and clouds, the distance the eyes could see was limited.

The petite old man was wearing the school's white uniform, the same style as the school teachers but without clouds on his lapel. Instead there were a row of seven stars. The stars were arranged in a spoon shape, it's the Big Dipper.

Starry Sky's battle robe!

In the entire Starry Sky Academy, only he was allowed to wear the Starry Sky battle robe.

Originally there was also a woman, unfortunately the woman had disappeared for a long time and even now there's still no signs of her whereabouts.

No one knew where she was; this little old man has been very tight-lipped about this matter.

Because the Starry Sky battle robe was a relaxed fit, so his petite figure looked even thinner and smaller. His waist and back were slightly bent, like an old bow with its string pulled back, it seems the weight he carried was out of proportion to his body size.

His face looks like a kind little old man, but when you look closely into his eyes, his eyes are as deep as the ocean bed, yet at the same time as clear as rays of sunshine.

Anyone who sees this pair of eyes would feel that this is a kind little old man.

Yang Xiaohu respectfully stood in front of the old man and answered his question seriously: "Li Muyang is very good, he was the first student to climb Broken Mountain, he's one of the best among the hundreds of freshmen this

term——Dean really have great eyes like a torch. He was personally signed and admitted by you. Although Li Muyang haven't shown any amazing talent for the time being, but with a little coaching, hard work, this pearl will let off a dazzling radiance."

With a kind smile, the old man said: "Coaching is a must, but it also depends on the person's nature and insights——"

"Dean, student does not understand." A puzzled expression crossed Yang Xiaohu's face, like a primary school student seeking help from a teacher. The old man was indeed his teacher back then, when he first started at Starry Sky Academy, this old man taught him [Dragon Language] and [Dragon Nature]. Although dragon slayer is not as popular as before, and many people often proposed to abolish the dragon slayer course, the old man stood his ground and went against the opinion of the masses, and retained not just the dragon slayer course but also set aside the best resources for them.

It's also because of the teacher in front that Yang Xiaohu could persist till now and never doubted or lost faith.

He believes there must be a reason for his teacher to continue supporting Dragon Slaying; therefore, he was convinced that dragons exist in this world.

Exactly as the Dean also believed that dragons still existed.

"What do you not understand?"

"Student does not understand why you are treating Li Muyang so differently? This year, there are students that are the members of the royal family, outstanding youngsters of the tycoons of the nine nations, gifted disciples of Mt Lung fu and Sound of Heaven Temple, and also talented youngsters from several prestigious families—-There's also talents recruited through various special tests from the desert, prairie and other prefectures. Which of these young people would not have a chance to become strong? Which of them is not likely to become a famous person of Starry Sky? The future of the divine continent is in Starry Sky Academy. However, student doesn't understand why Dean only care about Li Muyang?"

The old man turned around, facing the pine and fir trees and the snowy-white ocean, as well as the more distant, unknown world.

“What do you see?” The little old man asked, pointing to the distance.

Yang Xiaohu looked carefully before he answered: “Nujiang.”

“What do you hear?”

“The anger of Nujiang.”

“Why would Nujiang be angry?”

“——–”

“It endured thousand years of unjust treatment, how would Nujiang not be angry?” The old man sighed heavily. “Besides Nujiang, I also see the deep swamp outside of Nujiang. Besides the wrath of Nujiang, I also hear the unwilling bellow of the demons and the bloodthirsty roar of the evil spirits. You all know about the legend of Starry Sky Academy, know that a dragon slayer immortal traveled here and because he liked the atmosphere, slashed off the top of the mountain with his sword and gathered the strength of the nine nations to build Starry Sky Academy on this cliff. Have you ever thought about whether the dragon slayer immortal really just slashed off Broken Mountain because he likes it here? The royal family of the nine nations really used all their riches to build an academy here because they were afraid of the dragon slayer immortal?”

“Dean——” Yang Xiaohu looked aghast. What dean whispered was the same as lifting open the world’s real and the most frightening page.

This world, it really is not as it’s written in the history books.

Yes, why was Starry Sky Academy built here? Was it just simply because the dragon slayer immortal liked the atmosphere here?

The royal family of the nine nations are not weak, why would they be willing to build an academy with all their power in such a remote place?

Just what kind of secrets were hiding beneath the surface?

Also what are the demons and the evil spirits in the deep swamp that dean mentioned? Could they also pose a risk to them?

“Tens of thousands of years of sand can cover our eyes but cannot hide our

hearts.”

Yang Xiaohu became more and more shocked. Just as he was about to ask more, he found out the dean had already disappeared without him knowing. Just like when he had arrived.

“Dean——” Yang Xiaohu muttered to himself. “What you said to me———– What does it have to do with Li Muyang?”

————

————

Lu Qiji entered into her own courtyard and after she walked into the living room, lifted the teapot, poured a cup of herbal tea and sipped gently.

There were no servants in Starry Sky Academy, the prince and princesses also have to take care of themselves. Even if Lu Qiji comes from the noble Lu family of the West Wind Kingdom, she was no exception.

Chu Xun followed her into the courtyard, sat directly opposite her and watched Lu Qiji with a look of wanting to say something but then hesitated.

“What do you want to ask?” Lu Qiji glanced at him as she asked aloud.

“Qiji——” Chu Xun made up his mind to ask out what’s puzzling him, if not, his thoughts would run wild and he would tire himself out. “You and Li Muyang know each other?”

Lu Qiji looked at Chu Xun without any expression, asking: “Why do you ask?”

“I feel you two know each other.” Chu Xun said seriously: “I know you, I know what kind of person you are——if it was an ordinary person, you won’t even care about them. However, when facing Li Muyang you get angered so easily——-”

“Do I?” The corner of Lu Qiji’s mouth rose slightly as she said indifferently.

“What’s even more hard to understand for me is that you were obviously dissatisfied with him and seemed very angry but you never hit him——-When we were in Tiandu, when did you ever controlled your temper and endured silently? Whatever was not pleasing to your eyes, you would draw out your whip. When were you ever afraid like you were today?”

“Is it because this is Starry Sky Academy? Are you worried about the school’s punishment? Qiji, I understand you——you’re doing this because that damn guy did something that hurt you. In that case, you don’t need to have mercy. If you’re worried about the school’s punishment, then I will receive punishment with you. If you’re worried about the school expelling you, then we can go back to West Wind University———I hope you can keep your frank and sincere personality, and is still the girl that stands up against injustice. Now you are not like the original you.”

After a pause, Chu Xun said aloud: “If there is anything you’re not willing to do, then leave it to me——I’ll do it for you. I have no scruples.”

“Would you do it?”

“I would.”

“Good. Then kill Li Muyang.”

“＿＿＿＿”

Chu Xun carefully studied Lu Qiji’s face, the expression in her eyes was serious.

Chu Xun placed down the cup in his hand, immediately turned and walked away.

“Come back.” Lu Qiji shouted.

“What?” Chu Xun asked. “Don’t kill?”

“You can’t kill him.” Lu Qiji said in a calm voice.

“＿＿＿＿”

Chapter 130: Heart of a phoenix!

Chu Xun felt he was slapped across the face, and before he could fight back and say it hurts, a knife was stabbed through his chest———-

It was Lu Qiji, the cold-hearted, the Lu Qiji that was blunt and never shew any mercy.

Chu Xun turned around and snapped: “What? In your heart I am not as good as that stupid Li Muyang?”

“You’re below him.” Lu Qiji said without the slightest emotion on her face. Her mood was extremely calm, which makes people believe what she said was was the truth. “He is my opponent, not yours.”

“I don’t understand.” Chu Xun’s face darkened. The woman he likes thinks another man is better than him, it’s hard for any man to accept. “You’ve never seen him before, why is he your opponent?”

“Destiny.” Lu Qiji answered.

“——” Chu Xun felt he was stabbed in the chest once again.

What is destiny?

It can be said to be the enmity of previous life, and also said to be the ill-fated relationship of previous life.

As long as there is a fate, it proves that there are feelings.

Chu Xun could not stand the thought that LI Muyang and Lu Qiji might have feelings for each other in their previous life anymore—–he refused to believe that they knew each other in previous lives.

“What is this explanation? How could there be destiny in this world?” Chu Xun was on the verge of exploding. “It’s the first time I saw him, it’s also the first time you saw him, for no reason at all, how could he be what you just said—-destiny? Even if there is such a thing as destiny, that should be me—-Did you come into contact with him somehow before? Did you see each other before?”

“In this life, no.”

“——” Chu Xun felt he could no longer understand what Lu Qiji was saying.

This woman is not insane, right?

He examined Lu Qiji's expression carefully and very seriously stared into her eyes, realising that she was not crazy and was the same as always.

Then am I crazy? If not, how come I don't understand these words like a normal person?

Lu Qiji lightly sighed, looked Chu Xun and said: "No need to think too deeply, you won't understand."

"If you don't say it clearly, of course I won't understand." Chu Xun retorting, sitting down opposite of Lu Qiji: "Qiji, what is it, tell me. I'll share the burden with you."

"You can't bear the burden." Lu Qiji said. "This is something between me and him."

"——-" Chu Xun felt as if he's been stabbed all over his body. What is 'between me and him', I hope there is something between us, okay?

He did not mind, as long there's still place on his body to be stabbed, he would pluck up the courage and step forward once again. "I will help you kill Li Muyang, is this not something you've always wanted to do?"

Lu Qiji remained silent.

"Do you agree?"

"We discussed this question already——" Lu Qiji finally knew the appropriate words, her tone of speaking also much gentler: "Why bring humiliation to yourself?"

"——-"

Chu Xun wanted to lie down on the ground.

He felt he had lost excessive just blood now, he was dizzy and needed to recuperate for a year or so to be fine.

Chu Xun left.

In a daze he forgot to close the gate.

But he quickly returned and helped Lu Qiji close the gate before leaving once

again.

Lu Qiji stood up, strolled to the backyard, gazed at the blood-red waves of Nujiang surging incessantly and said in a cold tone of voice: “You and I have been fighting for thousands of years. We have seen transformations in the sun, the moon and the stars. My body is shattered but I still hold onto the heart of the phoenix. Your soul have scattered, your skills and wisdom are formed into the tear of the dragon king, and fallen onto a useless boy——You paved this path, because you feel injustice? Thousands of years ago you committed many evil crimes, now you want to come back and do so once again?”

Lu Qiji’s purple eyes flashed, as if her body was situated in a sea of burning flames.

“That Li Muyang——can he really inherit your ability and will? The day that he awakens—” Lu Qiji clenched her fist tight.

She said fiercely: “No, I will never let him awaken. You, just give up.”

——

——

Li Muyang recalled carefully the time he took off his trousers at the bottom of the mountain, only Lu Qiji and very few people were present, and Qiandu definitely was not around.

So, for this girl to be kind to him was quite bewildering.

This made Li Muyang vigilant.

What does she want? Is she an assassin sent by Tiandu’s Cui family?

Otherwise, why would such a gentle and beautiful girl, and with such an empathetic temperament would take the initiative to be nice to him? This behavior simply overturned student Li Muyang’s more than ten years of outlook on life.

“Muyang classmate, do you have any hobbies?” Qiandu asked softly.

“Sleeping.” Li Muyang said. Back then, he really did liked to sleep.

“Well, that’s a really unique hobby—-do you have any other hobbies? Such as music, painting or something like that.” A gentle and warm smile spread over Qiandu’s face, like she’s always extremely patient with everything.

“Does singing counts?” Li Muyang asked. When Li Shinian could not sleep, she would run to Li Muyang’s room and force Li Muyang to sing her lullabies. After he was forced several times, Li Muyang’s singing voice improved—-This could be said to be his only strong point, right?

“Muyang classmate knows how to sing? That’s amazing. I want to listen when there’s a chance. You can’t keep it all to yourself.” Qiandu looked at Li Muyang and asked with an imploring face.

Li Muyang turned extremely shy, blushing intensely he said: “I can only sing lullabies—–for my little sister.”

“Oh. Is that so.” Qiandu said, a hint of a smile lifted the corner of her lips. “In that case, it’s not suitable for me to listen. My ears are not tha fortunate it seems.”

“Big sister Qiandu, I can sing.” Lin Canghai scampered over and said with a sweet smile: “I can sing Dawu’s famous ballad. Also, I can sing some very passionate fighting songs, it’s songs that warriors like to listen—-if big sister like, I’d love to sing for big sister.”

“That’s very good.” Qiandu nodded repeatedly, reached out her hand and caressed Lin Canghai’s head, like a big sister spoiling her little brother: “I’ll wait patiently.”

“Big sister Qiandu, I won’t let you down.” Lin Canghai laughed.

Qiandu turned to Li Muyang, saying: “Muyang classmate has to come and listen too.”

Lin Canghai thoughtfully looked at Li Muyang and smiled in silence.

“I definitely will come.” Li Muyang nodded. Then, took a glimpse at Lin Canghai, saying: “If it’s not too inconvenient.”

Li Muyang began to worry again, that he would find himself trapped in a love triangle.

Although it was not very apparent from the situation right now.

131 – Take in things calmly!

The three of them were not familiar with the way to Starry Sky library, but luckily along their way there was a grey-robed staff who they could ask for directions.

Under the guidance of the grey-robed staff, they finally arrived at the entrance of Starry Sky library. In stunned silence, Li Muyang opened his mouth wide, which was currently big enough to stuff a whole egg in.

Starry Sky library was built on the edge of the east cliff of Broken Mountain. It was a large towering building complex. The rear hangs in mid-air, looking like it may drop and fall off at any time.

At this moment the sun was rushing into the building and the outside was glowing with a golden-colour. There were clouds drifting across and groups of cranes flying past.

A majestic sight, extremely stunning.

“So beautiful.” Li Muyang couldn’t help but exclaim out loud.

Qiandu and Lin Canghai were also both amazed by the grand design of Starry Sky library but not as stunned as Li Muyang. With a faint smile on their face, they calmly scanned the landscape in front of them.

Realising the difference between them, Li Muyang abruptly closed his mouth, his expression becoming more natural. He pretended as if the Starry Sky library was just like a building similar to those next to his house. But he could not suppress the excitement in his voice as he said: “We should go in and take a look.

“Alright.” Qiandu smiled and nodded. “There must be a lot of good books. We won’t be bored even after staying here for a few years.”

“Yes.” Lin Canghai smiled as he nodded: “I hope to find some good sword books.”

They were allowed to come in and out of Starry Sky library as they wish, but to borrow books they must register with the librarian at the door.

A senior clad in a cloud-pattern robe would be working at the entrance, they only need to show their number plate that they received during registration. This is their accommodation document but also their document to borrow books. During Li Muyang's three years in Starry Sky Academy, this would be his most important item of identification.

After entering into the inside, it was even more dazzling. Li Muyang stood in awe; he has never seen a library with this many books.

His mouth sprung wide open, wanting to gasp in amazement again, but seeing Qiandu's and Lin Canghai's calm appearance, he was forced to contain his excitement—- I must maintain calm, I must show I am accustomed to seeing such scenes..

Standing in the hall on the first floor of the library, watching the endless bookshelves arranged in criss-cross, as well as various collections of ancient books, Qiandu said with a smile: 'We should split up and meet here again in an hour."

"Okay." Li Muyang was bursting with excitement: "I also want to find some books to read."

"Big sister, I'll come with you." Lin Canghai said with a smile, it seems he was very clingy to his 'big sister' Qiandu.

Li Muyang was somewhat unpleased with Lin Canghai, he thought to himself: this kid only attracts girls by acting cute, does he not have a little manliness? Do you think girls will like that kind of little man?

Furthermore, isn't it just pretending to be cute? Who can't pretend to be cute?

My sister Li Shinian is cuter than you one million times.

Li Muyang waved his hand in the air, saying goodbye to Qiandu and Lin Canghai. And then entered into the mountain of books.

Starry Sky library has quite an abundant collection of books, it's complex but not chaotic.

From astronomy to geography. Poems, songs and The Hundred Schools of

Thought. Painting, music, and even spring harvest; everything could be found.

There are cloths, bamboo, paper, and even leaves, stones and tiles—-

There was a vast array of writing materials, it was utterly breathtaking.

Everytime Li Muyang sees a different type of material he let out a ‘wow’ sound.

Since Qiandu and Lin Canghai were not here, and no one around him knew him, being by himself he could ‘wow’ as much as he wants.

He’s a common youngster from Jiangnan city; the biggest bookstore he has ever seen was the reading room next to the mansion of the lord of Jiangnan’s city.

Of course, at that time, he had no concept of bookstore, purely because Li Shinian dragged him to go shopping and they ‘ran into’ her little friends—- Although her little friends were easy to ignore.

As a result, Li Muyang, standing inside a bookstore on the verge of collapse, regretted why he came out, he thought he might as well take a nice nap at home.

Li Muyang felt Qiandu and Lin Canghai were somewhat acting, somewhat ‘fake’. Such a big library, you’ve seen it before?

Young people, we must be straightforward and frank, have the courage to express yourself——you must be surprised and curious with the things around us.

Li Muyang looked up and down as he made his way forward and then finally came to a stop in front of the wooden sign ‘Divine weapons’.

Teacher Yang said that there is no way he could bring the book [Treasures and Weapons] for everyone to read, in other words it should belongs to some private collection of someone or Starry Sky library, and that ordinary people are not qualified to see it.

Li Muyang did not expect to borrow [Treasure and Weapons], but hoped there are some other books that documented the tear of the dragon king and that kind of sacred weapons.

Li Muyang could clearly feel the changes within his own body, he used to be an ignorant fool, was always the last place in the school’s tests, a trash constantly

bullied—-At that time whether or not he would enter a good school, or whether a school would accept him was unknown. Mother Luo Qi said to him countless times: ‘you really can’t, later you will take over the shop, you will always have a skill to support the family with.’

Bakery shop owner Li Muyang, perhaps that is his true identity.

In a month’s time, his grades improved drastically, he achieved the first place in the West Wind Kingdom’s imperial exam, and he entered Starry Sky Academy. Not only is he smarter but also stronger. He was able to defeat his enemies with one punch, he was able to win against people in the realms of the free clouds and could do many other things.

Li Muyang knew clearly, his body had changed.

He repeatedly had the same dream, dreamt of a black dragon looking at him with grief and despair, then silently charged towards him and his chest was torn in half, with it becoming a part of him—-

Li Muyang felt a divine dragon possessed him, even though this is frightening and shocking, in that even if he told someone no one would believe him—-He also doesn’t believe it himself.

Today, when teacher Yang mentioned the tear of the dragon king, Li Muyang felt his heart stirred.

He felt very familiar with it, like a crystal ball he accidently lost when he was a child.

Li Muyang wanted to find out more, what kind of treasure is the dragon king’s tear.

Also, what kind of relationship it has with him.

Being the only person who knew of this, he could not ask anyone for help or share with others.

He became a man full of secrets. Even the people closest to him, like his sister and parents, were not targets which he could divulge his secrets to—–a life like that is very long and it could possibly continue like this all his life.

Thinking of this possibility, Li Muyang's heart felt heavy.

A safe and long-living trash waiting to die or a genius with many ups and downs who may lose his life at any time, which one would you choose?

"The second option." This was Li Muyang's answer.

Deep inside he was discontented with his life; he does have ambitions.

He also wished he could have a spectacular career, he also hoped his name will be written in poems and he would become the main protagonist in countless legends.

Li Muyang！

He wants his name to be heard by anyone with ears, seen by anyone with eyes, and anyone with a heart to be grateful to him.

"I'm thinking too much." Li Muyang shook his head to clear his thoughts and started to search from the top shelf.

[List of Sacred Weapons in the Divine Continent], [Detailed Explanation of the Classification of Weapons], [Record of the Famous Swords], [Weapons documented by an unknown person]——

Li Muyang skimmed each book edge and finally his line of sight fixed on the scroll [Weapons documented by an unknown person].

The scroll was made from leather and was yellow in colour. It looked like it was quite old.

But the contents were intact and no handwriting has faded.

Li Muyang's placed special attention on this scroll because the handwriting felt familiar to him.

Like the inscription of an old friend. Although he does not remember its appearance but he could recognises it at a glance.

He carefully unrolled the scroll, that familiar feeling was even much stronger.

The writing was strong and forceful, and documented the feeling and understanding of the sacred weapons in the world.

'Tear of the dragon king, a sacred weapon in the world and also a lethal

weapon in the world. By inheriting the dragon king's magical powers, one will also inherit the dragon king's will and belief. Good fortune lies within bad, misfortune lurks within good. Treat all matters calmly, these four words are the solution.'

"Treat all matters calmly." Li Muyang mumbled these four words over and over again. Then, angrily scolded: "what is the tear of the dragon king? What shape is it? Where is it hidden? When—-No, how does it behave when it shows its power? What distinctive features does it have? How could I know whether it's the tear of the dragon king and not tear of crocodiles? There are no details. How could they write a book?"

Li Muyang clatched onto the [Weapons documented by an unknown person], ready to borrow it to investigate thoroughly and scrutinise it daily.

Li Muyang continued to look for books related to the tear of the dragon king, unfortunately the weapons documented in the other books were all ordinary weapons, the sacred weapons like the tear of the dragon king, frightening dragon bow or the weak water soul were rarely included. Even if there was, it only brushed slightly over the subject and was not detailed enough.

Obviously, people who wrote these books did not know much about sacred weapons.

Li Muyang glanced out of the window and came to realise one hour has passed already.

He remembered he, Qiandu and Lin Canghai have said to meet back after one hour at the entrance of the library. Time flies, he still achieved nothing after coming here.

But he was in no hurry, this is a treasure, it's the knowledge and insights of all the geniuses in the entire divine continent gathered together. He planned to come here daily to ask for guidance from them.

Just as Li Muyang was ready to meet up with Qiandu and Lin Canghai, he heard voices of people quarrelling. Moreover, it was a voice that sounded very familiar.